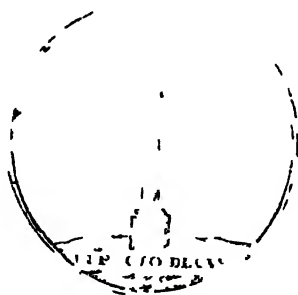


THE
MODERN PART
OF AN
Universal History,
FROM THE
Earliest ACCOUNT of TIME.
Compiled from
ORIGINAL WRITERS.
By the AUTHORS of the ANTIQUITY PART.
VOL. XLIII.



L O N D O N :

Printed for T. OSBORNE, C. HITCH, A MILLAR,
JOHN RIVINGTON, S. CROWDER, B. LAW and
Co. T. LONGMAN, and C. WARE.

M.DCC.LXV.

ADVERTISEMENT.

THE indulgence shewn by the public to the Modern Universal History, claims the most grateful acknowledgments of the proprietors, who, at the same time, think it necessary to acquaint their subscribers, and those who intend to be purchasers, that there remains one volume in folio, and one in octavo, both including a copious index, to complete both editions, which will be published as soon as the indexes can be finished.

To accommodate the reader with the most effectual assistances for perusing a work containing so vast an extent, and such variety, of territories, they likewise intend to publish a collection of maps, adapted to both editions, describing the countries mentioned in the body of the work; which, they apprehend, would be imperfect without so material an improvement and auxiliary, of historical knowledge. To which will be added, a general preface to the work.

It is with pleasure the proprietors reflect, that the public has seen few remarks upon the execution of this history, but what have tended to establish its reputation; and hope, that the vast difficulties attending the execution of so large and so expensive a work, will be considered as the best apology for some inaccuracies and repetitions, which they flatter themselves are few, and owing to the unavoidable necessity they were under, of employing different authors in writing the history of different states, at the same period.

THE
CONCLUSION
OF THE
Modern History.

INTRODUCTION.

Wherein the geography of the globe of the earth is considered in a new light, with a view to future discoveries.

THE surface of our earth is not like that of the planet *Jupiter*, divided alternately by belts and parallels to the equator, but from pole to pole by two tracts of land, and two of sea. The principal tract is the old continent, whose greatest length is found by measuring in diagonal from the easternmost point of *North Tartary*, along the borders of the *Linchidolen Gulph*, where the *Russians* have a whale-fishery, to *Tobolski*; from thence across the *Caspian* and *Red Seas* to *Monemugi* and the empire of *Monomotopa*, and from thence to the *Cape of Good Hope*. This line, the longest that can be measured on the old continent, is about 10,800 miles, and is no-where interrupted, except by the *Caspian* and *Red Seas*, whose extent are very inconsiderable in an enquiry which includes the whole surface of the globe, as divided into four parts.

THIS extraordinary length could neither be obtained by measuring in meridians, nor by lines parallel, or nearly so, to the equator. The longest on the former plan, from *Cape North*, in *Lapland*, to the *Cape of Good Hope*, in *Africa*, is only
MOD. HIST. VOL. XLIII. B about

The Conclusion of

about 7,500 miles; and on the latter plan, from *Brest*, in *Britany*, to the easternmost coast of *Cochin-China*, about 6,900 miles: whence it is evident to demonstration, that the greatest length of the old continent, from the easternmost cape of *North Tartary* to the *Cape of Good Hope*, is about 10,800 *English* miles.

THIS line must, therefore, be regarded as the middle, or center line of that tract of land distinguished by the name of the *Old Continent*, because, in measuring the surface of the earth on both sides of this line, the part on the left is found to contain 7,413,278 square miles, and that on the right 7,409,061 square miles, a surprising equality, which is next to a demonstration that this line is not only the longest, but the true middle line of the old continent, which, according to this admeasurement, contains about 14,822,339 square miles, somewhat less, indeed, than a fifth of the surface of the whole globe; but yet a vast tract of land inclined to the equator in an angle of 30 degrees.

THE new continent must also be regarded as an immense tract. Its greatest length should be taken from the mouth of the river *Plata*, to that swampy country, which lies beyond the lake of *Affinobois*. The line of admeasurement strikes from *la Plata* to the *Lake Caracares*, from thence through the country of the *Mataguais* and *Chiriguani*, to *Pocono*, *Zongo*, and *Zamas*; from thence to *St. Fé* and *Carthagena*, through the *Gulph of Mexico*, crossing *Jamaica*, *Cuba*, and the peninsula of *Florida*, to the *Apalachian* mountains; from thence to *Fort Louis*, in *Louisiana*, and lastly to the people that dwell beyond the lake of *Affinobois*, where it terminates in land not yet discovered.

THIS line, which is interrupted only by the *Gulph of Mexico*, a kind of mediterranean sea, is in length about 7,500 *English* miles, dividing the new continent into two equal parts, of which that on the left contains about 3,207,858 square miles; and that on the right 3,212,778 square miles. This continent, like the other, is inclined to the equator in an angle of 30 degrees, but in an opposite direction; the old continent stretching from north-east to south-west, and the new from the north-west to the south-east. The sum of these two continents, taken together, amounts to no more than 21,242,979 square miles, not a third of the surface of the whole globe, which is computed at seventy-five millions of square miles nearly.

It is besides observable, that these two lines which traverse the old and new continents, dividing each into equal parts, both determinate in the same degrees of latitude, as well.

well to the north as to the south; and it is no less remarkable, that the two continents lie opposed to each other in contrary directions.

It is likewise very remarkable, that the countries bordering upon these lines, that is, within a moderate distance of six or seven hundred miles on each side of them, are more ancient, generally speaking, than those at a greater distance. Whoever will take the pains to pursue this idea, may be convinced that *Europe*, and perhaps *China* and the eastern parts of *Tartary*, are new countries compared with *Arabia the Happy* and *the Desert*, *Persia* and *Georgia*, *Turcomania*, *Circassia*, and the innermost parts of *Tartary*. Thus, in the new continent, the *Terra Magellanica*, the eastern coast of *Brazil*, the country of the *Amazons*, *Guiana*, and *Canada*, are new to *Tucumen*, *Pery*, the *Terra Firma*, *Mexico*, and *Mississippi*. To these observations may be added two very singular facts; the first, that as the two continents are opposed to each other, the old is more extended to the north of the equator than the new; and on the contrary, the new stretches farther to the south than the old: thus, by each having its center, the one in 16 or 18 degrees of north latitude, and the other in 16 or 18 degrees of south latitude, they seem both designed by Providence as a counterpoize to each other. The second fact is, the remarkable conformity between the two continents, in that both are nearly divided into two parts, each of which parts would be encompassed by the sea, were it not for the two little isthmus's of *Suez* and *Panama*.

THESE are the principal remarks which an attentive inspection into the general division of the earth has produced. It may, however, appear too precipitate to form a new hypothesis upon these premises; but as none hitherto have considered the division of the earth in the same point of view, it will not be improper to add a few reflections.

It is certainly very singular, that the line which gives the greatest length to the terrestrial continents should likewise divide them into two equal parts; and, it is no less remarkable, that these two lines should begin and end in the same degrees of latitude, and have both the same degrees of inclination to the equator. These conformities may lead in general to something which may hereafter be discovered, and of which we are now ignorant; but we shall proceed to illustrate what has already been observed, that the most ancient countries are those which are the highest, and approach nearest to these lines, and that the last inhabited are the lowest and farthest removed from them. Thus, for example, in *America*, the country of the *Amazons*, *Guiana*, and

The Conclusion of

Canada, appear to be the last peopled. By casting an eye over a map of those countries, any one may see, that the waters every-where overspread them; that they abound in lakes and wide rivers, certain indications of new inhabited lands. On the contrary, *Tucuman*, *Peru*, and *Mexico*, are high lands, extremely mountainous, and border on the line which divides the continent. In like manner, the interior parts of *Africa*, on the old continent, appear to be high and mountainous, and are without doubt very ancient, in comparison of which even *Egypt*, *Barbary*, and the western coasts, as far as *Senegal*, may be regarded as new lands. *Asia* is likewise an ancient country, and perhaps the most ancient of any yet mentioned, especially *Arabia*, *Persia*, and *Tartary*; but the irregularities of that vast tract of land, as well as those of *Europe*, would require a separate treatise to explain. Let it suffice in general to observe here, that *Europe* is a new country; the tradition concerning the migration of its people, and of the first introduction of arts and sciences into it, is an almost incontestable proof of the truth of this assertion. Besides, it is not many centuries ago, since it abounded with marshes and lakes, and was covered with forests; whereas in the oldest inhabited countries, there are but few forests, fewer stagnations of water, no swamps, but on the contrary, much heath and furz, and vast ridges of mountains, whose summits are dry and barren, but whose sides abound in pastures, and are fertile to this day to a degree of luxuriance scarce known to new countries. Nothing is more certain, than that men cut down forests, drain off waste waters, deepen the shallow currents of great rivers, and, in process of time, give the earth a quite different face to that of other countries uninhabited, or but lately peopled.

The ancients were acquainted with a very inconsiderable part of the globe: the whole continent of *America*, the arctic countries, the *Terra Australis*, and *Magellanica*, a great part of the inland countries of *Africa*, were entirely unknown to them; neither were they certain that the torrid zone was habitable, notwithstanding they had in their navigations surrounded all *Africa*, as appears from what *Herodorus* reports, that *Neco*, king of *Egypt*, about 2270 years ago, built ships for the *Phenicians*, with which they sailed from the *Red Sea*, coasted along the eastern shores of *Africa*, doubled the *Cape of Good Hope*, and having spent two years in this navigation, entered the third year into the straits of *Gibraltar*, and finished their voyage by the *Mediterranean Sea*. This is the more wonderful, as the ancients were wholly ignorant of that amazing property of the loadstone in pointing to the poles, although

they knew that of its attracting iron. They were equally ignorant of the general cause of the flux and reflux of the sea, and were doubtful whether the earth was encompassed by the ocean, or was connected by necks of land, like that of the isthmus of *Suez*. Some, indeed, supposed the terrestrial globe to be one vast island; but upon such slender proofs, that none of them ventured to assert, or even to suggest, that it was possible to sail round it. *Magellan* was the first, who, in the year 1519, attempted this grand tour, and performed it in 124 days; *Sir Francis Drake*, in 1577, made the same voyage in 1056 days; and after him *Sir Thomas Cavendish*, in 1586, sailed round the globe in 777 days. These renowned voyagers were the first who demonstrated physically the sphericity and true measure of the circumference of the earth, which the ancients could never ascertain, notwithstanding all their endeavours to determine it. The monsoons, or what is commonly called the periodical or trade winds, with the means to be made use of in the prosecution of long voyages, in seas remote from land, were points of which the ancient navigators had no adequate idea. It is not, therefore, to be wondered, that so little progress was made by them in geography, when at this day, notwithstanding all the helps that have been added by the improvements in mathematics, and the discoveries of navigators, there still remain many things to find out, and vast countries yet to be discovered. Almost all the lands about the south pole are at this hour unknown to us; what we know concerning them is, that they exist, and that they are separated from all other lands by the ocean. There are likewise many other countries yet undiscovered about the north pole, and it must be acknowledged, though with regret, that, for more than a century past, the humour for discovering new lands has been declining, and men have preferred, perhaps with reason, the utility of improving those already known, to the glory of discovering others, and making new conquests.

• NEVERTHELESS, the discovery of the *Terra Australis* (A) would be a grand object of curiosity as well as use; we have

(A) *M. de Maupertuis*, in a letter to the King of Prussia, on the advancement of the sciences, says, in regard to the *Terra Australis*, "It is universally known, that there is, in the southern hemisphere, a large unknown tract, where it is possible there may be a new part of the world, more extensive than any of the other four. No potentate has yet had the curiosity to search into it, or to discover whether it consists in land or seas, even in an age when navigation has been carried to so

The Conclusion of

have a very superficial knowledge of the polar parts of the globe, and it is very unfortunate that all the navigators, who have

high a degree of perfection. In the first place, as there is not in any known part of the globe so large a space as this entirely covered with water, it is highly probable that part of it must be land : add to this, the relations of those, who, in their voyages in the southern hemisphere, have discovered points, capes, and other signs of the adjoining continent. The number of those who agree in these particulars, is too great to be here inserted ; some of the capes are already marked in several of our charts.

“ The *French India* company sent a few ships some years ago, in search of lands, to the south, between *Africa* and *America*. Captain *Lozier Bouvet*, who had the command of this expedition, sailing towards the east, between these two parts of the world, observed frequent signs of adjacent land, during a course of 48 degrees ; and in latitude 52 discovered a cape, where he could not land on account of the ice. We have an account of the voyage of one *Gonneville*, of *Honflur*, who, in 1503, having been driven by a tempest towards the *Cape of Good Hope*, was cast away on a continent, where he spent half a year in a most fertile soil, amongst a civilized people, subject to a king, whose son, named *Mssowernu*, he brought with him to *France*. This relation, whether true or false, encouraged *Lozier* to make his voyage.

“ If these southern lands were only looked for with a view of

discovering a port for the navigation to the *East Indies*, as seems to have been the design of that company, it were easy to shew that proper measures were not taken for this purpose ; that the enterprize was too soon abandoned ; and it were, perhaps, as easy to point out by what means it might have succeeded better. But, as we ought by no means to confine the discovery to the utility of such a port, and as this, indeed, should be one of our least incitements to it, those lands, which lie to the east of the *Cape of Good Hope*, should seem much more worthy of our search, than those between *Africa* and *America*. One sees, indeed, by the capes already discovered, that the southern lands to the east of *Africa* approach much nigher to the equator, and extend as far as those climates, where we meet with the richest and most valuable productions of nature.

“ It would be difficult to form any probable conjectures concerning the produce and inhabitants of these countries ; but there is one observation sufficient to excite our curiosity, and to give us room to imagine that we should meet with some things here entirely different from what we find in the other four parts of the globe. We know that three of these parts, viz. *Europe*, *Asia*, and *Africa*, form but one continent. *America* is, perhaps, united to them ; or, if divided, it is only by a very narrow passage. Here

have attempted the discovery of the southern countries, tho' they descried the coasts, have generally been prevented, by the

must, therefore, always have been a communication between them all. The same plants, animals, and men, must, from time to time, have approached nearer to each other, as the difference of climates permitted them to multiply, and they could receive no alteration but what this difference must have occasioned. But the case ought to be very different with the inhabitants and productions of this part of the world: they must have been confined to their own continent. Many persons have gone round the globe, and every one of them has left the southern lands on the same side. It is certain, therefore, that they must be detached from all other lands, and form, as it were, a world by themselves, wherein we cannot possibly foresee what may be found. The discovery of this country may therefore be of the most service to trade and commerce, and at the same time afford the most wonderful phenomena for the instruction and entertainment of the natural philosopher.

" Besides, the *Terra Australis* is not confined to the large continent situated in the southern hemisphere. There is, probably, between *Japan* and *America* a number of islands, the discovery of which might be of great importance to us.

Can we imagine that those valuable spices, now become so necessary to all *Europe*, grow only in a few of those islands, which our nation is now in possession of? This very people

are, most probably, acquainted with many others that produce the same commodity; but this is a knowledge which it is their interest to conceal.

" In the islands on this sea, navigators assure us, that there are wild men, all over hair, with long tails; a kind of middle species of animals between us and monkeys. I had rather have an hour's conversation with one of these, than with the greatest wit in *Europe*.

" But if the *India* company wanted to find a harbour in the south, between *Africa* and *America*, they ought not to have been discouraged by the small success of the first attempt. On the other hand, I cannot but think that the account of captain *Lozier's* voyage is of itself sufficient to excite them to a more vigorous pursuit of it. He was satisfied that there was land there; he saw it, though prevented from coming close to it, by obstacles which might, perhaps, now be avoided, or entirely removed. He could not land on account of the ice, which he was surprised to meet with in the 50th degree of latitude, and during the summer solstice. He might have known that, *cæteris paribus*, the cold in the southern is more intense than in the northern hemisphere; because, though under the same degree of latitude with regard to both, the position of the sphere is the same, yet the distances of the earth from the sun, are different in the corresponding seasons. In our hemisphere,

The Conclusion of

the ice from making land. The fogs, which prevail to an astonishing degree, near unfrequented lands, have been another great obstacle; but, notwithstanding both these inconveniencies, there is still reason to believe, that, by sailing from the *Cape of Good Hope*, at different seasons of the year,

sphere, the winter comes on when the earth is at its least distance from the sun; a circumstance which diminishes the intenseness of the cold; whilst, on the other hand, in the southern hemisphere, they have their winter when the earth is at its greatest distance from the sun, which naturally increases the cold. Add to this, that in the southern hemisphere the winter is longer by eight days than in our own. But it would have been still more necessary to remark, that in all those places, where the sphere is oblique, the hot season does not come on till after the summer solstice, and always so much the later, in proportion to the coldness of the climate. This is well known to naturalists, and all those who have sailed towards the poles. In the northern hemisphere one often sees ice spread, even in the midst of the solstice, over those seas where, a month afterwards, there are not the least marks of it; nay, where one may feel intense heat; and this is the time, that is, at the coldest season of the opposite hemisphere, when we should endeavour to come at those lands which are near the poles. In these climates, as soon as the ice begins to melt, it melts very quickly, and in a few days the sea is intirely freed from it. If, therefore, Mr. *Lincoln*, instead of arriving during the solstice, at the latitude where he went in search of land, had got

there a month later, he would most probably, have met with no ice at all.

"But further, with regard to landing, ice is by no means to be considered as an obstacle that is invincible. If it floats the whale fishers, and all those who have made voyages northward, know that it is no impediment to sailing; and as to the ice that adheres to the coast, the inhabitants on the borders of the gulphs of *Finland* and *Bothnia*, have paths over it all the winter, which they even prefer to those by land. The people who live thereabouts have withal a method equally safe and simple, to preserve themselves on the ice when it begins to thaw, by carrying along with them small light boats wherever they go, in which they can easily support themselves from one piece of ice to another. All these things are well known in the northern countries; and if those whom the *Dutch* company sent in search of lands to the south, had been better acquainted with the nature of cold climates, and the methods there made use of to prevent or lessen every inconvenience, it is to be supposed that by going later they would have found no ice at all, or that what they did find, would not have hindered their approach to that land, which, according to their own account was not above a league or two from them."

some part of those lands may at length be approached, which at this time make a separate world.

ANOTHER method there is to be pursued that perhaps might prove still more successful. As the ice and fogs appear to be the impediments that have prevented all the navigators, who have hitherto attempted the discovery of the southern countries, by the *Atlantic* ocean, from making land; and, as the ice has been found to exist in the summer, as well as in other seasons, why might not an attempt by the *Pacific Sea* be attended with the wished for success? By sailing from *Baldivia*, or any convenient port on the coast of *Chili*, and crossing the *Pacific Sea*, under the 50th degree of south latitude, there is not the least reason to apprehend that the voyage, though it has never been made, would be dangerous; but, on the contrary, the highest probability, that, in this course, new lands will be found, since the tract that remains to be discovered on the side of the south pole, is so considerable, that, moderately speaking, it may be estimated at a fourth part of the superficies of the whole globe; insomuch, that there may exist in those climates, a terrestrial continent as large as *Europe*, *Asia*, and *Africa*, taken all three together.

As we know nothing of that part of the globe, it is impossible to ascertain the proportion there may be between the surface of the land and that of the sea; only, if we may be allowed to reason from what we know of other lands, we may conclude there is more sea than land.

To form an idea of the enormous quantity of water which the seas contain, let us suppose them all of one common depth of 200 fathoms only, or the fourth part of a mile; and then by nice calculation, it may be maintained that there will be water enough to cover the whole globe, to the height of 600 feet; and if we reduce this body of water into one intire mass, it will be found to make a globe of more than 180 miles in diameter.

NAVIGATORS pretend, that the southern climates are much colder than those of the same latitude about the north pole: but there is not the least appearance that this opinion is just; and it is probable that it has been adopted by voyagers, because they found ice in a latitude, in which it is seldom or never found in the north sea, which might be owing to many particular causes. We find no ice after the month of *April* on this side the 67th or 68th degrees of north latitude; and the *Indians of Canada* and *Hudson's Straits* affirm, that when the ice is not wholly sunk in that month, it is a presage that the rest of the year will be cold and rainy. In 1725, they had, if one may be allowed the expression, no summer,

The Conclusion of

summer, the rain pouring down from the clouds almost incessantly ; and it was remarkable in that year, that the ice of the north sea not only remained unfunk in the month of April, at the 67th degree of latitude, but that it was buoyant till the 15th of June, in the latitudes of 41 and 42.

A VAST quantity of this floating ice is found in the north sea, especially near land. Whole islands of it come from the sea of Tartary into that of Nova Zembla, and into other places from the icy sea ; so that it is not peculiar to the seas in which it is generated. To avoid, therefore, the inconveniencies arising from the frequent obstructions occasioned by it, captain Monson, in king James's time, instead of seeking a passage into China between the north lands, directed his course to the pole, and approached within two degrees of it, and there found a high sea without ice ; but being opposed by the ship's company, was obliged to return. This proves, however, that ice is found at or near land, and never in the high sea ; for could we suppose, contrary to all experience, that the cold could be so excessive near the poles, as to freeze the surface of the sea, we should still be at a loss to conceive, how such enormous islands of ice as are found floating, should be accumulated without some resting place at land, from whence they might afterwards be separated by the heat of the sun.

† *Mentioned in the note.*

THE two † vessels, which the French East India company sent out in 1737, for the discovery of the Terra Australis, found ice indeed in the latitude of 47 and 48 ; but this ice was at no great distance from the shore, because they could plainly discern land from the mast-head, though they were unable to reach it. The ice-hills might come from the inland bays, nearest the south pole ; and it is no improbable conjecture, that they are brought down by the currents of the many huge rivers, with which these unknown countries may be watered, in like manner as the Oby, the Tanais, and other vast rivers that fall into the north seas, bear down the ice-hills that choke up the Straits of *Mycoris*, and render, by that means, the Tintarian sea unapproachable by that course, during the greatest part of the year ; at the same time, that beyond Nova Zembla, and much nearer to the poles, where there are scarce any rivers, and but little land, the ice-hills are less common, and the sea more navigable ; inasmuch, that were navigators again to attempt a north passage to China, or Japan, they would do well to direct their course to the poles, and keep the highest seas, where certainly they would meet with little or no ice to obstruct their passage, for it is well known that salt-water, without freezing, is capable

capable of becoming much colder than fresh water congealed and, consequently, that the excessive cold of the pole may render the water of the sea under it much colder than ice, and yet not freeze the surface. Add to all this, that at 80 and 82 degrees the surface of the sea, though mingled with vast quantities of snow and fresh water, is never frozen even near the shores. From all that can be gathered from the testimony of voyagers, concerning the passage from *Europe* to *China* by the north sea, it appears that there is such a passage (B), and that the reason it has so often been attempted

(B) Agreeable to these notions is the opinion of the above cited author *M. de Maupertuis*: "After finding out the *Terra Australis*, another discovery, says he, directly opposite, would remain to be made in the northern seas, viz. that of a shorter passage to the *Indies* than by doubling the southern points of *Africa* or *America*. The *English*, the *Dutch*, and the *Danes*, have made many attempts to discover this passage, the utility of which has never been doubted, though the possibility of making it is still undetermined. It has been sought by the north-east and the north-west, but without success; those attempts, however, tho' fruitless with regard to the adventurers, may be serviceable to those who come after them. They have at least taught us, that if there is a passage, either one way or the other, it must be extremely difficult; and that it must be through some of those straits, which, in the northern seas, are almost always blocked up with ice. Most of those who have gone in search of it, seem to be of opinion that it must be attempted by the north. Through fear of

too near the pole, they have not sufficiently kept off from land, and generally found the seas shut up with ice, whether it was that the places through which they wanted to pass were nothing in effect but gulphs, or whether they were really straits. It may be esteemed a kind of paradox to assert, that nigher the pole they would have met with less ice, and a milder climate; but besides several accounts that we have, assuring us that the *Dutch*, by advancing near the pole, found open and calm seas, and a temperate air, natural philosophy and astronomy serve to confirm it. If the regions near the pole are all covered with large and wide seas, we shall certainly meet there with less ice than in places less northward, where the seas are shut up by lands; and the continuance of the sun in the horizon for six months, must cause a greater degree of heat, than can be lost by the smallness of his meridian altitude.

I should therefore imagine that the best way of discovering this passage, must be close to the pole itself. At the same time that a discovery of this nature would be of infinite ser-

ed in vain, is because navigators have dreaded to leave the land, and have regarded the polar course, as the broad way to certain destruction.

WILLIAM BARNET, who miscarried, as well as many others, in his voyage, makes no manner of doubt but that there is a passage; and that, if he had steered from land, he might have found an open sea without ice. The *Russian* navigators sent by *Peter the Great* to reconnoitre the north seas, report, that *Nova Zembla* is not an island, but part of the main land of *Tartary*; and that to the north of *Nova Zembla* there is a free and open sea. A *Dutch* voyager assures us, that the sea frequently throws up whales on the coast of *Casca* and *Japan*, on whose backs are found sticking sometimes *English*, and sometimes *Dutch*, harpoons.

ANOTHER *Dutchman* pretends to have sailed directly under the pole, and assures that he found it there as warm as at *Amsterdam* in summer. One of our *English* captains, by name *Goulden*, who had made three voyages to *Greenland*, informed king *Charles II.* that the masters of two *Dutch* vessels, in whose company he sailed, having been disappointed in their fishery off the *Ile of Edges*, resolved to try what discoveries they could make farther north; that on their return

vice to commerce, it must afford an agreeable insight into the knowledge of the globe, to learn from hence whether the point round which it turns is on land or sea, to observe the several phenomena of the loadstone, on the very spot whence it is supposed to draw its original influence, and to determine whether the *Aurora Borealis* is caused by a luminous matter from the pole, or, at least, whether the pole is perpetually overflowed with that matter from which the aurora is supposed to proceed.

"Nothing need be said concerning the dangers and difficulties attending the navigation of these seas. The nearer we approach the pole, the pilot's skill is less serviceable; at the pole itself it can be of very little consequence. We should,

therefore, avoid this dangerous point; but if we once got there, we should begin our course, and leave it, as it were, to fortune, till we had got at such a distance from it, as would permit us once more to follow the established rules of navigation.

"If a great prince would appoint two or three ships every year for enterprizes of this kind, the expence would not be very considerable. Independently of their success, they would be useful in forming captains and pilots, and preparing them against all the events of long voyages; and, it is hardly possible to imagine, that, amongst so many things that are still unknown on this globe, we should not, by this means, light upon some important discovery."

in about fifteen days, they told him they had been as far as the 89th degree of latitude, within one degree of the pole; and that they found there no ice, but a sea free and open, very deep, and much like that of the *Bay of Biscay*; in proof of which they produced him four journals of the two ships which all agreed, as near as could be, in the same particulars. It is, moreover, reported in the *Philosophical Transactions*, that two navigators, who had undertaken to discover this passage, steered a course of 300 leagues to the eastward to *Zembla*; but that being about to return home, the *East India* company, who had an interest that this passage should not be discovered, detained them in *India*, and secreted their journals. The *Dutch East India* company, however, were of another mind; and having fruitlessly attempted a passage from *Europe*, endeavoured to find it from *Japan*; and, in all probability, would have succeeded, had not the emperor of *Japan* prohibited to strangers all navigation with the lands of *Jesso*.

From all that has been said it may be concluded, that this passage may be found by steering a direct course from *Spitzberg* to the pole, or rather by keeping the middle of the high-sea, between *Nova Zembla* and *Spitzberg*, under the 79th degree of latitude. If this sea is of any considerable breadth, there is no fear of interruption from the ice in that latitude, much less under the pole, for the reasons already alledged. In short, there is no example of a wide sea being frozen at any considerable distance from shore; the only instance of a sea being wholly frozen over, is that of the *Black Sea*, which, being narrow and scarce salt, and receiving an infinite number of rivers, from the high lands of the north, that bring down with them innumerable islands of ice, is sometimes entirely frozen to a considerable depth; and, if historians may be credited, in the reign of the emperor *Copronymus*, the ice was thirty cubits thick upon it, without including twenty cubits of snow, which covered its surface after it was frozen. Though this relation seems exaggerated beyond belief, yet it is certain, that this sea is frozen over, almost every winter, at the same time that the high seas, situated some thousands of miles nearer the pole, are not frozen at all. This can only be owing to their greater saltness, and to the few ice islands they receive by the floods, in comparison to the enormous masses carried into the *Black Sea*.

THESE ice-hills, which may be considered as the great barriers that oppose the navigation towards the poles, and have hitherto prevented the discovery of the *Terra Australis*, prove not only, that there are immense rivers in the vicini-

The Conclusion of

ty of those climates, where they are most frequent ; but also that there are vast continents, at no very great distance, from whence those rivers derive their origin ; and therefore navigators, so far from being discouraged by their appearance, should be animated to surmount every difficulty, and endeavour to accomplish the end by perseverance, or, by attempting the discovery in some other part, it being next to impossible that in the immense circle which terminates the *Terra Australis*, on the side of the equator, every part can be alike defended by such vast congelations.

THE description which *Dampier* and other voyagers have given of *New Holland*, agrees very well with the observations already made, that this part of the globe, which lies contiguous to the *Terra Australis*, is a new country in comparison with that : *New Holland*, according to them, is a low country, without mountains, and full of swamps ; whose natives are savages, without laws and without industry ; a kind of proof, that, in the bordering continent, there are some such beings as the *Amazons* of *Paraguay*, and the savages of *Canada* : while at the same time, there may be found in the elevated parts of it, a people formed into society, civilized by laws, and improved by science ; in like manner, as in *Peru* and *Mexico*, there were found kingdoms and empires, magnificent buildings, and curious decorations, while the few inhabitants of the low and remote countries were rude and uncivilized, with little more reason than the beasts that perish.

THE innermost parts of *Africa* are as much unknown to us as they were to the ancients. They, as well as the moderns, had made the tour of the coast, though they have neither left us chart or description of it. *Pliny*, indeed, informs us, that the *Greeks*, in the time of *Alexander*, made the tour of *Africa*, and found in the *Arabian* sea the wreck of a *Spanish* ship ; he likewise reports, that *Hanno* the *Carthaginian* general, made a voyage from *Gades* [*Cádiz*] to the *Arabian* sea, a relation of which voyage he had left in writing, though it has never been transmitted to us. *Strabo* too takes notice, that, in his time, a person named *Eudoxus*, being persecuted by king *Lothurus*, was obliged to fly his country ; and that having sailed from the *Arabian* gulph, he at length arrived at *Gades*. But, notwithstanding all these concurrent testimonies, it is yet a question, whether any of the ancients ever doubled the *Cape of Good Hope*, that course having always been considered as a new discovery made by the *Portuguese*, in their way to the *East Indies* ; but to solve this inqui-

ry, let us hear what *Abuziel*, an historian of the ninth century, relates of a fact that happened in his time.

“ THERE has, says he, been discovered in this our time, a thing quite new, and altogether unknown to those who lived before us. No-body ever believed that the sea which stretcheth from the *Indies* towards *China* had any communication with the sea of *Syria*, neither could it have entered into any one's mind. But see what has happened in this our time: according to the best information I can get, there has been found in the sea of *Roum* [*Mediterranean*] the wreck of an *Arabian* vessel, which a tempest had cast away, and every soul on board perished. The billows having dashed the ship to pieces, the fragments were carried by the winds and waves quite into the sea of the *Cozars*, and from thence to the strait of the *Mediterranean* sea; from whence they were at length cast on shore on the coast of *Syria*. This shews that the sea encompasseth all the coast of *China* and *Cila*, the extreme parts of *Turquestan*, and the country of the *Cozars*; that at last it runs through the straits as far as where it washes the coasts of *Syria*. The proof is drawn from the construction of the vessel, which was plainly a ship of *Siras*, whose fabric is such that the seams were not caulked, but closed in a particular manner, as if they had been sewed; whereas all the vessels of the *Mediterranean*, and the coast of *Syria* are caulked, and are not closed in that manner.”

THE translator of this ancient relation adds these observations upon it: “ *Abuziel*, says he, remarks as a thing new and strange, that a vessel could be driven from the *Indian* sea upon the coasts of *Syria*. To find a passage into the *Mediterranean*, he supposes a large extent of sea below *China*, which has a communication with the sea of the *Cozars*, or *Muscovites*. The sea beyond *Cape Coriantes* was utterly unknown to the *Arabs*, by reason of the extreme danger of the navigation, and the rudeness of the inhabitants on the coasts, whom they could neither subdue, nor civilize by commerce. The *Portuguese*, from the *Cape of Good Hope* to *Sofala*, found no *Moods* settled on the coasts, as they afterwards did in all the maritime towns from thence to *China*. *Sofala* was the last town the ancient geographers knew, but whether there was a communication from thence to *Barbary*, by sea, they knew not; and therefore contented themselves with describing the coast as *Zingo*, now called *Cafferie*. Hence it is evident, that the discovery of the passage from that sea by the *Cape of Good Hope*, is to be attributed to the *Europeans*, under the conduct of *Vasco Gama*, or at least to some who made the same voyage a few years before him. To strengthen

The Conclusion of

strengthen this latter opinion, there are, it is affirmed, sea charts to be produced more early than this navigation, where this cape is marked by the name of *Fronteira da Africa*. *Anthony Gafu* affirms, upon the credit of *Francisco de Sousa Tavares*, that, in 1528, the infant Don *Ferdinand* shewed him such a chart, which that prince found in the monastery of *Acoboca*, and which had been drawn 120 years before, perhaps from one said to be at *Venice* in the treasury of *St. Mark*, and which is believed to have been copied from that of *Marco Paolo*, which likewise marks this point of *Africa* according to the testimony of *Ramusius*." The ignorance of the age in which this ancient relation is said to be written, with respect to the navigation round *Africa*, is, perhaps, less to be wondered at, than the silence of the editor with respect to the passages from *Herodotus* and *Pliny*, already cited, and which seem to prove, that the ancients had made the tour of *Africa*.

BE this as it may, the coasts of *Africa* are now well known; but the attempts that have been made to penetrate into the heart of that country, have not yet so far succeeded as to furnish any satisfactory account of its inhabitants, productions, or commerce. It were, however, greatly to be wished, that by means of the river *Senegal*, or some other great river, a settlement could be established far up in the country, from whence surveys might be made from time to time, till a thorough knowledge is acquired of its contents, the richest perhaps in the world; for it is well known, that the rivers of *Africa* bring down much gold, and, as it abounds with stupendous mountains, many of them rising directly under the equator, there is not the least reason to doubt, but that they afford mines as valuable as those of *Peru* and *Brazil*; and gems and precious stones equal to, if not surpassing, all that have been yet discovered. This immense continent of *Africa* is situated in the finest climate of the world, and was formerly inhabited by mighty and populous nations, and filled with magnificent cities. Upon the whole, if we consider the immense riches of the old world formerly drawn from those parts, we shall be inclined to think that the discoveries which might be here made, would be of great use to our trade; and, if we attend to what is recorded in ancient history, concerning the arts and sciences of the inhabitants; or if we reflect on the monuments of them still remaining, all along the coast of *Egypt*, we shall no longer doubt, that this part of the world is an object fully deserving of all our toil and assiduity in the search of it.

THE vast country of *North and East Tartary* has but very lately been perfectly known. But, if the *Russian* charts may be depended upon, we know at present the coasts of all this part of *Asia*; and it appears, that from the easternmost point of *Tartary* to the westernmost in *North America*, the distance cannot be more than 500 leagues; nay, by the latest discoveries, it should seem to be much less; for in the *Amsterdam* of *January* 24, 1747, it is said, in an article from *Petersburg*, that M. *Steller* had discovered beyond *Kamtschatka*, one of the isles of *North America*; and that he had made it appear, that one might go from thence to a port in *Russia*, by a very short passage. The jesuits and other missionaries have also pretended, that they have found in *Tartary* savages whom they had catechized in *America*, a circumstance that seems to prove, in effect, that there is a passage still shorter. *Charlevoix* goes still farther, and even pretends that the two continents are joined by the north. He says, the latest *Japanese* navigators give room to think that the passage in question is no other than a bay, above which one may pass by land from *Asia* to *America*. But this merits confirmation; because it is presumed, and with great appearance of truth, that the continent of the north pole is intirely distinct from every other continent, as well as that of the south; and from the very structure of the earth, so far as it is known, there is the highest presumptive evidence, that all the four great continents are, for wise purposes, disconnected from each other by tracts of sea.

ASTRONOMY and navigation are now brought to so great perfection, that we may reasonably hope to have one day an exact knowledge of the intire surface of the globe. The ancients, as has already been observed, knew but a very small part of it: for want of the mariners compass, they could never venture upon long voyages in the high seas. It is, indeed, pretended, that the *Arabs* were long acquainted with the use of this instrument, before it was known in *Europe*; and that they used it in trading from the *Indian* sea to the coasts of *China*; but this opinion needs no farther refutation than this, that there is no word in the *Arabic*, *Turkish*, or *Persian* languages, to express a compass, and therefore they made use of the *Italian* word *bussola*; nay, they do not at this day know how to make a compass or arm a loadstone, and purchase all they use of the *Europeans*. Father *Martin* pretends, upon no better grounds, that the *Chinese* have known the use of the compass for more than 3000 years; if that be true, how happens it, that they have reaped such slender advantages from it? Why do they, in their voyage

MOD. HIST. VOL. XLIII. C

The Conclusion of

to *Cashin-China*, go twice as far as they need? Why do they, in making their voyages, the longest of which is to *Java*, or *Sumatra*, always coast it, without venturing out to sea? And, why have not they, as well as the *Europeans*, made discoveries of new countries and new islands, so many of which lie within their reach, and court them by a luxuriance of the richest productions of nature, to come and take possession? It was but a few years after the discovery of the wonderful property of the loadstone, that the *Europeans* undertook the longest and most hazardous voyages; they doubled the *Cape of Good Hope*, traversed the *African* and *Indian* seas; and while the generality of navigators were directing their views to the east and to the south, *Christopher Columbus* was meditating his grand enterprize to the west.

IN ruminating upon this vast project, the conclusion was just and natural, that there must be immense tracts of land towards the west; for, revolving in one's mind a known part of the globe, and comparing the distance, supposing from *Spain* to *China*, with the periodical revolutions of the earth or heavens, one could not help seeing that there remained a far greater space to be discovered towards the west, than what was known eastward. It could not therefore be for want of astronomical knowledge, that the ancients did not discover the new world, but solely for want of the mariners compass. The passages of *Plato* and *Aristotle* that speak of lands far beyond the *Pillars of Hercules*, intimate that some navigators had been driven by tempest as far as *America*, from whence they had returned with infinite labour and difficulty; and we may even venture to assert, that had the ancients been fully convinced of the existence of a new continent, by the relation of these navigators, they would have deemed it wholly impracticable to shape any direct course towards it, without some better guides than the stars, or, indeed, without the knowledge of the mariners compass.

WITHOUT the assistance of this instrument, the most skillful navigators of the present times would be as much at a loss as the ancients were, to navigate the high seas; and were any of them now hardy enough to attempt to make a known part of the new continent without it, they would, in all probability, be disappointed.

THE astrolabe was an instrument well known to the ancients, by the help of which they could steer from one point of the old continent to another. It was, doubtless, owing to this, and always keeping the polar star to the left, and, often taking observations, to keep them nearly in the same parallel;

parallel, that the *Carthaginians*, mentioned by *Aristotle*, found means to return from those distant regions, to which they had been driven by a tempest; nevertheless, we should now look upon such an enterprize as extremely hazardous, and none would attempt it but by necessity.

It must not be forgotten, that after the discovery of the *Azores*, the *Canaries*, and the islands of *Madeira*, by *Christo-pher Columbus*, the winds having long set in from the west, the sea threw upon the coasts pieces of wood of a foreign growth, the like of which had not been seen in *Europe*, and even dead bodies that were known, by many essential discriminations, to be neither *Europeans* nor *Africans*. *Columbus* remarked too, while he remained upon these islands, certain winds that blew from the west, and continued only a few days, which he therefore concluded were land-winds. Nevertheless, with the advantage of these and many more observations, and with the help of the compass besides, the difficulties he had to struggle with were so great, that nothing but the success could justify the enterprize: for, supposing the continent of the new world to have been only 500 leagues farther to the west than in effect it is, a thing which *Columbus* could neither know nor prevent, he could never have reached it; and, it is more than probable, that if he had then miscarried, this vast country had still been undiscovered. This remark will appear of more weight, when it is known that *Columbus*, though the ablest navigator of his time, was seized with fear and astonishment in his second voyage to this new world; for, having at first only found islands, he shaped his course in his next attempt more to the south, in order to discover, if he could, the main land; but was suddenly stopt in his career by currents, whose extent was so considerable, their direction so full, and their opposition so great against him, that he was constrained to change his course, and pursue his discoveries to the west. He fancied that the obstacle which prevented his progress to the south, was not so much the currents as the rising of the sea towards the canopy of heaven, which, for aught he knew, it might touch towards the south; so true it is, that in the greatest enterprizes, the least unfavourable circumstance may turn the wisest head, and enfeeble the stoutest heart.

We shall now proceed to the divisions of this volume, beginning with *Asia*.

S E C T. I.

Of A S I A.

C H A P. I.

Of Asia in general.

Asia in general, described.

Its preference to the other three parts.

ASIA is allowed to be, in all respects, by far the most considerable part of the world, and though our innate fondness for our own country makes us give the preference to Europe, yet Asia has many singular advantages, which may justly intitle it to the first rank. It was in Asia that the great Author of nature planted the delicious garden of Eden, in which he placed the first man and woman, from whom the rest of mankind were to spring. Asia became again the nursery of the world after it had been destroyed by the flood, from which the descendants of Noah dispersed their various colonies into all other parts of the globe. It was in Asia, that God made choice of the delicious Canaan, to place his favourite nation the Hebrews in. It was here that the great and merciful work of our redemption was accomplished by his divine Son; and it was from hence that the light of his glorious gospel was carried into all nations, by his disciples and followers. Here it was that the first Christian churches were founded; the first councils held, the first bishoprics erected, and the Christian faith miraculously founded, promulgated, and watered with the blood of innumerable martyrs. Lastly, it was in Asia that not only the first edifices were reared, and the first cities built, but likewise where the first kingdoms and monarchies were founded, whilst the other parts of the world were, if at all, inhabited only by wild beasts.

Fertility and richness.

NOR are these advantages the only this part of the world has over the other three; but it exceeds them in the largeness of its territories, the richness and fertility of its soil, the serenity of its air, the deliciousness of its fruits, the salubrity of its drugs, the fragrant and balsamic quality of its plants, spices, and gums; the quantity, variety, beauty, and value of its gems; the fineness of its silks and cottons; the richness of its metals, and many more of the like nature: upon all which accounts it was always esteemed so charming and delightful an abode, that it was the constant

stant seat of the greatest monarchies in the world. It must be owned, indeed, that since the *Turks*, enemies to science, politeness, and liberty, have been masters of so considerable a part of it, it has quite therein lost its ancient splendor, and from the most polite and fruitful spot in all *Asia*, is become a wild uncultivated desert, and only considerable since that time for the rich commodities it affords; on which account it is still visited and resorted to by merchants of other nations. But those who have escaped the *Turkish* tyranny are still in a flourishing condition, which is rather to be attributed to the richness of the soil, than the industry of the inhabitants, who are justly censured for their natural indolence, effeminacy, and luxury.

THIS effeminacy is chiefly owing to the warmth of the Asiatics, climate, though perhaps heightened by custom and education, and the symptoms of it are more or less apparent, as they are seated nearer or farther from the north. It is plain that the southern climates are not productive of such robust natures as the northern; whence it may be inferred, that those *Asiatics*, who live near the same latitude with us, cannot be much inferior to us in this respect; at least, it appears that several of them, particularly the *Turks* and *Tartars*, are men of as much strength and courage as any we know of. As to those who live in the more southern regions of *Asia*, what is wanting in the robust frame of their bodies, seems, in a great measure, made up to them by the vivacity of their minds, and ingenuity in various kinds of workmanship, which our most skilful mechanics have in vain tried to imitate. Whether the reflection commonly cast on all *Asiatic* nations be altogether just, that they are naturally excessive admirers of monarchy, we will not pretend to determine, their princes having always kept them in such abject slavery, that they never had an opportunity of displaying their love of liberty, which, otherwise, we must suppose to be as natural to them as the rest of mankind. Thus much, however, is certain, that many of those nations, upon the coming of the *Dutch* among them, could not conceive how it was possible for any nation to live under a republican government, or, indeed, under any other form of it than a despotic monarchy, which is the only that obtains in all the parts of this extensive division of the globe. We shall have occasion hereafter to make some reflections on the consequences of this despotism.

IN religion they still shew stronger marks of stupidity, a great part of *Asia* being over-run with *Mahomedanism*, as *Turkey*, *Arabia*, part of *Tartary*, and *India*. In *Persia* and

the Mogul territories, they profess the same, but are of the sect of *Hali*, which differs in some particulars from the *Turks*, though both own *Mohammed* for their lawgiver, and the *Alcoran* for their divine rule of faith and life. In other parts of *Tartary*, in *China*, *Japan*, *Siam*, &c. they are generally heathens and idolaters, entertaining strange notions of the Deity, or rather of their deities, and using the most extravagant rites in their worship of them. It may be said, however, that their multiplicity of idols and superstitious ceremonies to them, are only regarded by the populace, for whom they are chiefly calculated by their priests, in order to serve the purposes of gain; but there are many excellent men, of too philosophical a turn of mind not to despise them in their hearts, whatever countenance they may seem to give them in outward appearance.

Sees of the followers of Zoroaster.

BESIDES these, there are several sects of the ancient *Persians*, or followers of the great *Zoroaster*, dispersed all over *India*, and other parts of *Asia*, who acknowledge but one supreme Deity, and are distinguished by the title of fire-worshippers, because they worship it under the symbol of that element: these are enemies to all kinds of idolatry, imagery, temples, and the like, which they look upon as derogatory to the Supreme Being, who neither can nor ought to be represented by images, nor confined in temples. The *Brachmans*, reckoned the most considerable amongst those sects, are of a very humane disposition, lead a contemplative life, feed only upon vegetables, and are so far from killing any living animals for their use, or even noxious ones in their own defence, that they build even hospitals for the maintenance of such, especially the domestic, as are decayed through age, accident, or other infirmities.

Christianity early planted in Asia.

ASIA, as above observed, was the theatre of the first promulgation of Christianity, which spread itself with such surprising celerity and success, that even in the apostolic age, it had reached as far as *India*, if not beyond, and was almost every where received and professed. But, as the unworthiness of those converts, produced that denunciation revealed to *St. John*^a, the churches of *Asia Minor* were abandoned to persecution, and in the end, utterly destroyed by the inundation of the northern barbarians, *Saracens*, *Tartars*, and *Turks*. And, though the pure light of the gospel could never be totally extinguished by any of them, great numbers of Christians having continued faithful to it, in most parts of *Asia*, yet the tyranny of the *Mohammedan*

^a Apocal. ii. 5.

governments has always so endeavoured to obscure it, and to keep its professors under such servile subjection, that their condition, even at this day, is rather a state of oppression and misery, than of pity and toleration.

ASIA is situated between 25 and 148 degrees of eastern *Situation* longitude, and between the equator and 72 degrees of north *and limits* latitude; and is divided from *Europe* by the *Archipelago*, the *Black Sea*, and the *Palus Mæotis*; and thence by a line from the river *Tanais*, or *Don*, almost to the river *Oby* in *Muscovy*: from *Africa*, it is separated by the *Red Sea*; and from *America* by the great *South Sea*, or *Pacific Ocean*. It is bounded on the west by the *Black Sea*, and the *Mediterranean*; on the south and east by the *Arabic*, *Persian*, *Indian*, and *Chinese* oceans; but how far it reaches that way is not known; and on the north by the frozen ocean: so that almost on every side it is surrounded by the sea; only it must be observed, that its limits northwards were not discovered till the reign of the late czar *Peter the Great*, from whose survey a map of all *Russia* was afterwards printed at *Amsterdam*. According to which this northern sea begins at a little beyond the 70th degree of latitude, and extends eastward from *Greenland* along the coasts of *Muscovy*, *Siberia*, &c. till it joins the oriental, or *Japanese*, sea; yet how far it may reach northward is not yet known with any certainty.

ASIA comprehends to the amount of about 39 monarchies Asiatic or sovereignties, four of which are styled entire empires, as *empires* *Persia*, the territories of the great *Mogul*, *China*, and *Japan*; and kingdoms the most considerable share of two other empires, as *Thurky* *doms*. and *Russia*, is in *Europe*. It has next to these 33 kingdoms, 24 of which are on *Terra Firma*, and the other seven in islands.

Of the inland kingdoms are those of, 1. *Yemen*, and 2. *Sartach*, in *Arabia*. 3. *Vizapor*. 4. *Golconda*. 5. *Bijnagar*. 6. *Cairat*, and 7. *Cochin*, in the peninsula on the other side the *Ganges*. 8. *Siam*. 9. *Cambaya*. 10. *Ava*, or *Pegu*. 11. *Achem*. 12. *Arachava*. 13. *Tunquin*. 14. *Cochin China*, and 15. *Jaor*, in the peninsula on the other side the *Ganges*. 16. *Barantola*, or *Lassat*. 17. *Neckbat*. 18. *Cogua*, or *Great Thibet*. 19. *Nanyu*. 20. *Little Thibet*. 21. *Kalghar*. 22. *Corca*. 23. *Samarcand*, and 24. *Becha*, in *Great Tartary*. 25. *Mizrelia*, and 26. *Georgia*, in *Georgia*.

THE insular kingdoms are, 1. the *Maldivia Isles*. 2. *Candi*, in the isle of *Ceylon*. 3. *Achem*. 4. *Maceran*. 5. *Bornco*, in the islands of those names in the Sound. 6. *Massar*, and 7. *Ternate*, in the *Molucca Islands*.

BESIDES these, we may reckon three dominions established here by the *Europeans*, as 1. of the *Spaniards* in the *Philippine Islands*. 2. Of the *Portuguese* in *Goa*, and other coasts of *India*; and, 3. Of the *Dutch* in *Batavia*, *Java*, *Ceylon*, and other isles and coasts. To these we may add the *English*, *French*, and *Danish* settlements, particularly on the coasts of *Malabar* and *Coromandel*, with some independent ones, or, as they are called, vagrant nations, because they have no settled abode, but move their tents from place to place, as occasion offers, or fancy leads them: the most considerable of them are the tribes called *Bengobres*, *Bedwins*, and some others in *Arabia*, and the *Kalmucks* in *Tartary*, who live in hords independent of each other.

Asiatic languages. IT might seem an endless task to enumerate the different tongues and dialects which are spoken in this vast extent and variety of nations; and yet it may be said in general; that *Asia* has by far the fewest of any other part of the world. This is chiefly owing to its vast over-grown empires, which commonly strive to introduce an uniformity of language amongst their respective subjects. The principal are the *Arabic*, *Persian*, *Tartaric*, *Chinese*, *Japanese*, *Malayan*, and *Malabaric*. As for the *European* languages, as well as some of the learned, they are known to few of the natives, and are only used by those foreigners who have introduced them for their own convenience.

Climates. THERE must be a great variety of climates in *Asia*, as it extends quite from the equator to the polar circle, and beyond, or, for aught we know, even to the pole itself; for it comprehends all the temperate, the greater half of the torrid, and good part of the frigid, zones; so that it enjoys no less than 24 climates: yet, upon the whole, if we except some parts of *Arabia* and *Tartary*, and some of the more northern tracts, the whole country is rich and fruitful, and some parts of it exceedingly so. Next to *America*, it is the largest quarter of the four; its length from east to west may be computed at 4800 miles, some say 6000; and its breadth, as far as it is known, from north to south, 4200.

How divided in general. IN the division of this part of the world, we shall consider it with respect only to the different dominions it is at present subject to; as, 1. *Turky*; 2. *Persia*; 3. *India*; 4. *China*; 5. *Russian Tartary*; and, 6. the *Islands*. It may, indeed, be here objected, that *Tartary* is not under one government; that *India* beyond the *Ganges* is independent of the great *Mogul*, as *Arabia* is also of the *Turks*, and that *Georgia*, *Mingrelia*, &c. are subject partly to the last, and partly to the *Persians*.

sians, and consequently, that each should be divided into their respective parts. But we think it more eligible to avoid clogging the reader's memory with too many distinctions, for which reason we shall follow the same easy method in the following general view of the whole.

1. *TURKEY* in *Asia* is divided into *Western* and *Eastern*. On the The western comprehends *Anatolia*, or *Asia-Minor*, *Syria*, *continent*, *Palestine*, and the *Turkish Arabia*.

THE eastern contains *Durbeck*, *Turkomania*, and *Georgia*. They all lie from south to north.

2. *PERSIA* is divided into *Northern*, *Southern*, and *Middle*.

THE northern contains the provinces of *Schirvan*, *Gilan*, *Cheressen*, &c.

THE southern, *Cusistan*, *Fars*, *Kirman*, *Mauv*, &c.

THE middle, *Erack*, *Sablestan*, *Sigistan*, &c.—All lie from west to east.

3. *ASIATIC Russia* comprehends part of *Great Tartary*, *Siberia*, and *Samoieda*.

4. *CHINA* is divided into *North* and *South*, the former of which contains the six following large provinces, including *Leautung* without the great wall; as, *Leautung*, *Xantung*, *Pekin*, *Xanfi*, *Honan*, and *Xenfi*.

THE southern contains the ten following; as, *Nanking*, *Chikiang*, *Kiangsi*, *Tokien*, *Huquang*, *Quantung*, *Suehern*, *Quicheu*, *Quangsi*, and *Yunan*.—All these extend from east to west.

5. *JAPAN*, and the land of *Nippon*.

6. THE *Mogul Empire*, in which are many petty kingdoms, but chiefly those of *Deli*, *Agra*, *Cambaja*, and *Bengal*, so called from their several capitals.—The two first are inland, the others on the coasts.

7. *INDIA* comprehends, 1. the peninsula within the *Ganges*, containing the kingdoms of *Decan*, *Gouda*, *Bisnagar*, and *Malabar*, which are situated mostly northward. 2. The peninsula beyond the *Ganges*, containing those of *Pegu*, *Tanquin*, *Cochinchina*, and *Siam*, which last is subdivided into *Martaban*, *Siam*, and *Malacca*.—They lie from north to south.

THE *Asiatic* islands are divided into two classes, viz. Asiatic

1. THOSE in the *Indian* ocean, which are, *Ceylon*, the *islands*, *Maldives*, the *Sunda Islands*, as *Sumatra*, *Java*, *Borneo*, &c. the *Spice Islands*, as *Banda*, &c. the *Moluccas* as *Tinian*, *Tidor*, &c. those of *Ambryna*, *Ceram*, *Gilolo*, &c.

2. THOSE on the *Eastern* ocean; as the *Ladrones*, *Bornaja*, and the *Philippine Islands*.

C H A P. II.

Of Anatolia, or Asia-Minor.

Anatolia
described.

ANATOLIA had formerly the name of *Asia* simply; and by way of excellency, as being the best spot in all this part of the world, and being adorned with very many noble and opulent cities, and considerable states. At present it is distinguished from the whole *Asiatic* region, by the epithet of *Minor*, or *Lesser Asia*: the name of *Anatolia* was given to it on account of its eastern situation from *Europe*,

Its limits.

and is still called the *Levant*. It is a large peninsula, of a considerable breadth and length, which juts out between the *Mediterranean* on the south, and the *Euxine* or *Black Sea* on the north, quite to the *Archipelago* on the west, and the sea of *Marmora* on the north-west: so that it is bounded on the north by the *Euxine Sea*, or, as the *Turks* call it, *Kara Denghi*; on the north west by the sea of *Marmora*; on the west by the *Thracian Bosphorus*, the *Propontis*, and *Archipelago*; on the east, by the eastern part of the *Mediterranean*, and on the south by the river *Euphrates*, which divides it from *Turcomania* and *Diarbeck*, or *Diyarbeckr*. It extends from the 27th to almost the 40th degree of east longitude, and between the 37th and 41. 30. of latitude. Its utmost length from east to west, is computed to be about 600 miles, and its breadth from south to north, about 320.

Provinces.

ANATOLIA, in its largest sense, comprehends the ancient provinces of *Galatia*, *Paphlagonia*, *Bithynia*, *Pontus*, *Mysia*, *Phrygia*, *Lydia* and *Meonia*, *Æolis*, *Ionis*, *Caria*, *Doris*, *Pamphilia*, *Pisidia*, *Cappadocia*, *Lycia*, *Laconia* and *Cilicia*. At present geographers commonly divide it into four parts, according to their situation. 1. *Anatolia*, properly so called, on the western part. 2. *Caramania*, on the southern. 3. *Aladula*, on the eastern; and, 4. *Anafia*, on the northern.

How divided
by the
Turks.

The *Turks*, who call this country *Anadolu*, *Nadolu*, and *Anatol Vilaiete*, divide it into five districts, which are under the government of five beglerbegs, whose residence is in the capital of each district, which are *Cotayoun*, *Tocat*, *Trabezond*, *Maresh*, and *Iconium*. These five governments are again subdivided, each into a number of sangiacates, which take their denomination from the places where each sangiac resides.

Still fertile,
yet

THIS whole country is naturally rich, fertile, and healthy, though the *Turkish* tyranny has almost reduced it into a desert.

part. Our *English* merchants travelling thither on account almost of trade, have often the curiosity to visit the antiquities of quite new this once noble and famous country, and scarce finding any neglected thing but ruins, can only lament so dreadful a change. The very fields, though naturally rich and well watered, lie yet uncultivated; and those grounds which, if rightly cultivated, would produce the greatest plenty of corn, and variety of fruits, herbs, and other commodities, are over-run with weeds and brambles. Those few plains and dales that are cultivated, though after the careless and slovenly *Turkish* method, yield, notwithstanding, excellent corn of several sorts, fruits of all kinds, exquisite grapes and wines, the fairest olives, citrons, lemons, oranges, figs, dates, &c. besides abundance of coffee, rhubarb, balsam, opium, galls, and other valuable drugs and gums. To which we may add their twisted cotton, silk, grogram, yarn, goats hair, carpets, and tapestries, calicuts and cordavans of several colours, quilted coverlids, all which are from thence imported into *Europe*. Trade and manufacture.

THE only natural rarity worth mentioning in this country is a certain kind of earth, which boils up out of the ground, and is always gathered before sun-rise, and in such quantities, that many camels are employed in carrying loads of it to soap-houses at some distance, where being mixed and boiled with oil for several days, it becomes an excellent soap. The *Franks* call it soap-earth, and it is found in the neighbouring plains about *Smyrna*. The soap that is manufactured of it is in great request, for which reason it is a considerable article in the trade of the inhabitants.

ARTIFICIAL curiosities are here in great number, if we may call by that name the remains and ruins of ancient public and private buildings, cities, and palaces. Such as, 1. The vestiges of an ancient *Roman* circus and theatre near *Smyrna*, in the environs of which are often found variety of *Roman* medals. 2. About two small days journey from that city are some remains of the ancient *Thiatyra*, as appear from twelve remarkable inscriptions still extant. 3. At *Mylassa*, (formerly *Mylasso* in *Caria*), among other noble remains, are a magnificent marble temple, dedicated to the goddess of *Rome*, and built in honour of *Augustus*, as appears from an inscription, still entire, on the front, and a stately column called *The Pillar of Menander*, with a curious temple, but by whom, or on what account erected, is not known. 4. At *Ephesus* are still to be seen several ancient churches, particularly that of *St. John*, the most entire of them all; now a *Turkish* mosque. 5. At *Lodicea*, now only inhabited by wild beasts and fowls, are still extant three noble theatres of white

white marble, and a stately circus, all so entire, that they might be taken for structures of modern date. 6. At *Sardis*, now a poor mean village, though once the seat of the great and rich *Cræsus*, are the remains of some ancient stately edifices, with several imperfect inscriptions. 7. At *Pergamos*, famed for being the first inventress of parchment, are the ruins of a palace of the ancient *Atalic* kings, with the ancient Christian church of *St. Sophia*, now converted into a mosque.

*State of
the Greek
church.*

CHRISTIANITY being barely tolerated among the *Turks*, and the patriarchs, archbishops, and bishops, whether *Greeks* or *Armenians*, as well as their sects, churches, and flocks, being not only kept under a state of deplorable poverty and servitude, but the prelates deposed, changed, promoted, or oppressed, according to the arbitrary will of the sultan and his ministers; it would be in vain to expect an exact account of those ecclesiastical dignities, whether nominal or real; so that we shall content ourselves with the bare mention of the most considerable of them through all the parts of *Asiatic Turkey*.

*Patriar-
chates.*

THE chief *Greek* patriarchates, besides that of *Constantinople*, are those of *Jerusalem*, *Alexandria*, and *Antioch*. The *Armenians* have two patriarchs, the first of which resides at *Ecmesan*, a monastery in *Georgia*, and the other at *Sis*, in *Aladulia*. The *Nestorians* are allowed one, whose residence is commonly at *Mossul*, in the province of *Diarbek*.

*Archbi-
shoprics.*

THE archbishoprics belonging to the *Greeks*, are those of *Heraclea*, *Sabnik*, *Athens*, *Malvostia*, *Amphipolis*, *Neapoli di Romania*, *Larissa*, *Adrianople*, *Corinth*, *Nicosia*, *Janna*, *Mombasfia*, *Kathmina*, *Phanarion*, *Patras*, *Preconesus*, *Amassia*, *Scutari*, *Tyre*, *Tyana*, and *Berytus*.

Bishoprics.

THE chief bishoprics of the same *Greek* church, are *Ancyra*, *Cyzicus*, *Ephesus*, *Chalcedon*, *Nice*, *Nicomedia*, *Smyrna*, *Trebizonde*, *Drama*, *Mitylene*, *Serra*, *Christianopolis*, *Iconium*, now *Cogui*, *Nova Cesarea*, *Chios*, *Rhodes*, and *St. John d'Acree*. As for those of the *Armenians*, *Nestorians*, and titular *Roman Catholics*, they are of little or no note.

*No uni-
versities.*

UNIVERSITIES, or any seats of learning, can hardly be expected under a government whose religion inspires men with a contempt for all kind of literature: so that if we except some few academies which the jesuits and some other orders of the church of *Rome* have, with great difficulty, been allowed to erect here, and some few *Greek* and *Armenian* schools, where their children are sent to learn to read, or perhaps to write, there are no other seminaries for learning.

in all this vast country : and in general, the clergy of all denominations are very ignorant, except those who have travelled, or come thither from foreign countries.

THE chief languages spoken in this country are the *Turk-Languages* *ish*, *Greek*, and *Armenian*, the *Latin* among the *Catholics*, and the *Lingua Franca*, a kind of mixt medley of language, common to the inhabitants.

ANATOLIA, properly so called, considered by modern *First* *di-*
geographers as the first part of this country, is divided into *vision* of
the following districts: 1. *Bithynia*. 2. *Myfia*. 3. *Æolis*. *Anatolia*.
4. *Ionis*. 5. *Caria*. 6. *Doris*. 7. *Lydia*. 8. *Phrygia*. 9.
Galatia. 10. *Pamphlagonia*.

1. *BITHYNIA*, the nearest province to *Turky* in *Eu-*
rope, is parted from it only by the small strait called the
Thracian Bosphorus. *Prusa*, called by the *Turks* *Bursa*, still
preserves a great share of its ancient opulence, though some
say that its commercial concerns are much decayed, and the
great concourse of merchants so much lessened, that the
place is going to ruin ; but this seems to be a mistake ; for
a caravan goes every two months from thence into *Persia*,
and it is also a stage for several others that go from *Aleppo*,
Constantinople, &c. to *Ispahan*. The *Bersine* is a large edi-
fice, well built, and filled with ware-houses and shops,
where are exposed to sale all kinds of merchandizes, which
are brought hither from the *Levant*, besides those which are
manufactured in the city itself. It is well known that the
Bithynian silk, by far the finest in all *Turky*, is, for the most
part manufactured here, besides considerable quantities
brought from *Persia*, which, though much inferior in fine-
ness, is yet wrought by the *Pyusan* workmen, who are al-
lowed to be the best in *Turky* for weaving of hangings, tape-
stry, carpets, and the like, which are in great request, and
therefore carried into all parts of *Europe*.

NICE, called by the *Turks* *Isnich*, and *Nicar*, tho' much
fallen from its ancient grandeur, has a convenient haven on
the sea of *Mormera*, opposite *Misampala*. The country
about it affords very good fruits, and excellent wines. It
contains about 10,000 inhabitants, including *Greeks*, *Arme-*
nians, and *Jews*, as well as *Turks*, who all drive a consider-
able commerce in corn, fruit, fine cloth, tapestry, and other
Levantine manufactures.

NICOMEDIA, by the *Turks* named *Ismia*, and *Isnigimid*,
is a large and populous city, with rich and beautiful bazars,
or ware-houses, markets, halls, and other public edifices.
It is situated on a fruitful and delicious hill, the corn, wines,
and fruits, that grow thereon being reckoned inferior to none
in

The Conclusion of

in *Turky*. It is computed to contain about 30,000 inhabitants, *Turks*, *Jews*, *Greeks*, and *Armenians*, all carrying on a considerable trade in manufactures of silks, cottons, woollen and linen cloths, earthen ware, and glass of all sorts, which make it one of the most opulent cities in these parts. The greatest part of the saics, barques, and other trading vessels, belonging not only to this city, but even to the merchants of *Constantinople*, are built here.

CHALCEDON was once a city of great note, but is now dwindled almost to nothing.

2. *MYRIA* and *Lesser Phrygia* have the *Propontis* for their northern boundary; the *Hellefpont* on the west; *Phrygia Major* on the east; and *Lydia* and the *Archipelago* on the south.

THE *Marmora Islands* abound with corn, wine, fruits, cotton, and pasture grounds, whereon are bred great quantities of cattle. *Prænessus*, the largest of them, is famed for its marble quarries.

LAMPSACUS, now *Lampsco*, was formerly celebrated for the excellent wines it produced; and the territory about it is still covered with fine vines and pomegranates, which the *Turks* cultivate under pretence of preserving the raisins, but in fact make good wine and brandy of them.

3. *ÆOLIS* has *Phrygia Minor* on the north; the *Ægean* or *Æolian* sea on the west; *Ionia* on the south, and *Lydia* on the east. It is scarce now remarkable in any respect; neither does it seem to enjoy any branch or article of trade.

4. *IONIA* is the next province to *Æolis*, about the boundaries of which geographers differ. Its only considerable city is,

SMYRNA, by the *Turks* called *Ismyr*, one of the finest ports in the *Levant*, being situated at the bottom of a bay capable of containing the largest navy in the world; and, by its general and flourishing trade, being one of the greatest and richest cities in the *Asiatic Turkey*. The commodiousness of its harbour has rendered it the common rendezvous of the greatest merchants in all the four parts of the world, and the staple of their merchandize.

It was very considerable in the time of the *Romans*, and has all along been famed for its great commerce with all nations, especially the *English*, many of our considerable merchants residing in it, and having a consul to protect them.

THIS city is reckoned to contain 15,000 *Turks*, 10,000 *Greeks*, and near 2,000 *Jews*, besides *Armenians*, *Franks*, and others. The whole trade here, as well as in all *Turky*, is managed by the brokerage of the *Jews*, the *Turks* never transacting

transacting any bargain with Christians in any case, but leaving it to those subtle brokers, who are all wealthy, and live very handsomely, and some of them splendidly, by it. The whole town is a continued bazar, or fair, where nothing that can be wished for is wanting, either for cloathing, sustenance, or pleasure; because all the best commodities of *Asia* and *Europe* are brought hither, and sold at cheap rates.

THE territory about *Smyrna* is very fertile, with fine olive trees and vines; and the wine that is made is excellent. The *European* consuls live here in great state and magnificence.

THIS city suffered by a very extensive and devouring fire, on the 6th of *August*, 1763, which, by some fatal accident, broke out at midnight, and lasted 26 hours, involving in its progress the whole *Frank* quarter, inhabited intirely by the different factories of the foreign nations, particularly the *English*, *French*, *Dutch*, *Venetian*, *Imperial*, *Swedish*, *Danish*, and *Ragusean*. Not one merchant's nor consul's house was left standing, except the *English* consul's, and that not entire, nor without suffering great damage. Even the magazines, and the repositories of all the various merchandize, which before had been looked upon as fire-proof, burst thro' the intense violence of the flames. The scene of desolation was on all sides terrible; and the loss sustained, reckoned at a million and half of *Turkish* dollars, or near two hundred thousand pounds sterling.

5. *CARIA* is bounded on the north by *Jonia*, and the river *Mæander*; on the east by *Great Phrygia* and *Lydia*; and on the south and west by the *Icarian* sea.

6. *DORIS* projects into the sea, and by being surrounded by it on three sides, is only joined to *Caria* on the north. It has the island of *Scio*, or *Cos*, and that of *Rhodes*, on the south and south-west.

7. *LYDIA*, or *Mæonia*, bordered to *Phrygia* on the east, to *Mysia* on the north, and to *Caria* on the south; but its limits, strictly speaking, lie between *Æolis* on the south-west, *Mysia* on the north-west, *Caria* on the south, and *Phrygia Major* on the east. In this province is the river *Pactolus*, famed for its golden sands, and the mountain *Tmolus*, celebrated for its saffron and excellent wines.

THE country round *Thyatira*, called by the *Turks* *Akifhar*, is covered with cotton-trees and corn-fields, and a part of it, though uncultivated, with tamarisks.

MAGNESIA, and *Sipylum*, called by the *Turks* *Surleteffer*, is reduced from a once large and populous city, to an ordi-

The Conclusion of

ordinary town, subsisting chiefly on the manufacture of cotton yarn.

LAODICEA, once one of the most considerable towns in *Asia*, especially for the exchange of money, is now nothing but a vast heap of ruins.

DINGHISHLY is large and well peopled, and has a considerable trade.

8. **PHRYGIA MAJOR** has *Pamphylia* on the south; *Mysia* on the west; *Bithynia* on the north; and *Galatia* on the east. This country would be vastly fruitful if well cultivated.

COTYÆUM, now *Chiutaina*, is a large, populous, and flourishing town.

SYUNADA was anciently much famed for its fine marble, which was of a beautiful white, spotted with red and purple, and of great value.

9. **GALATIA**, by the *Turks* now called *Chiagre*, has *Phrygia Major* on the west; *Pamphlagonia* on the north; *Pamphylia* on the south; and *Cappadocia* on the east. This country was anciently esteemed a rich fertile one, and was famed for producing the amethyst stone in great quantities. *Ancyra*, called by the *Turks* *Angcური*, formerly the capital of *Galatia*, and a noble city, is still populous. The city of *Aphion*, has its name from the quantities of opium which are made in and about it, the whole territory producing great crops of poppy, from which that excellent drug is extracted.

10. **PAMPHLAGONIA**, by some made a part of *Galatia*, together with *Pontus*, lies on the north of *Galatia*, and is divided on the east from *Cappadocia* by the river *Halys*, and on the west by that of *Parthenissus*. At present it is called by the *Turks* the country of *Pender*, or *Boli*.

HERACLEA PONTI, now *Penderachi*, or *Eregri*, is quite sunk from its ancient splendor.

AMASTRIS, now *Anastro*, from being a famed sea-port under the *Roman* and *Greek* empires, is now dwindled to nothing, by reason of the loss of its commerce.

TEUTHRANIA, now *Tripoly*, is still a good port-town.

SINOPE, now *Sinape*, maintains a very profitable fishery. The country about it is fertile, if it was well cultivated; witness the many olive-trees of considerable bigness that grow in it. *Strabo* long since observed, that, in all the coasts from this city quite to *Bithynia*, there grew great numbers of trees, such as olive, maple, and wallnut, with some of which the inhabitants used to build ships, and others,

others; such as the maple and walnut, they made fine tables, cup-boards, and other utensils. The same is done at present, except that instead of tables, which the *Turks* do not use, they make sofas, and other sorts of flooring, wainscoting, and other household ornaments.

AMASIA, the second part of *Asia Minor*, is bounded on the north by the *Euxine Sea*; on the east by *Armenia*; on the west by *Anatolia Proper*; and on the south by *Caramania* and *Anadulia*. The town of *Amasia*, called *Amnasan* by the *Turks*, has a river which falls about sixty miles below it into the *Euxine Sea*, and is navigable and large enough to carry ships of great burden. Yet nothing of any moment is here transacted, notwithstanding its proximity to so fine a river and the sea. This province is divided into the following districts.

1. *PONTUS Polemoniacus* lies along the same *Euxine* coast, having the *Gangeticus* on the west, and the *Cappadocicus* on the east.

NEOCÆSAREA, or *Tocat*, is the capital of this district, and is looked on as the center of the *Asiatic* commerce. The caravans of *Diarbeck* come hither in eighteen days; men on horseback perform the journey in twelve; and those that go hence to *Smyrna*, without turning to *Prusa* or *Angora*, take up about twenty-seven days on mules, and forty on camels. These caravans are often exposed to the freebooters that infest these roads; for which reason they not only go well armed, but are also escorted by *Turkish* troops.

THE country about *Tocat* produces a great variety of excellent plants, and particularly some fossils, or subterraneous vegetations, of surprising beauty. They are something like our flints, inclosed in matrices; which, when broken, display some of the finest crystallizations that can be imagined. The greater part of the people about *Tocat*, even as far as thirty or forty miles round, are employed in iron or copper manufactures. They have their copper from the mines of *Trebizond* and *Castamboul*; the former about three, and the latter about ten days journey from their city. About a mile out of *Tocat* is a large village, chiefly inhabited by Christians, who are mostly employed in tanning of leather.

2. *PONTUS Cappadociæ* extends from the *Polemoniacus* eastward, quite to *Colchis* and the frontiers of *Georgia*, having the *Lesser Armenia* and the river *Euphrates* for the southern, and the same *Euxine Sea* for the northern, boundaries.

ANADULIA, the third division of *Asia Minor*, in its third division, comprehends *Cappadocia* and the *Lesser Armenia*.
MOD. HIST. VOL. XLIII. It *Anatolia*.

The Conclusion of

It joins to the country, or beglebergate of *Trebizond* on the south, and is by the *Turks* called the beglebergate of *Munit*, or *Murafch*, and sometimes *Dulgadir*. The territory of this province is unfit for tillage, but has abundance of fine pasture grounds, on which the inhabitants breed a vast number of cattle, especially horses and camels, besides vast herds of sheep and goats.

1. *CAPPADOCIA*, besides the great pasture grounds, produces wines and fruits in great quantities, and the mountains with which it abounds, especially that long and-high chain of them called *Antitaurus*, have mines of silver, copper, iron and allum.

MARASCH and *Casarea* are well built and populous cities. The latter is the stage of all the caravans of the east, which here disperse themselves, each to their respective cities. The bazars are handsome and well-stored, and the inhabitants quite polite.

2. *ARMENIA the Lesser*, the other district of *Aladulia*, so called to distinguish it from the *Greater Armenia*, which belongs to *Persia*, has *Greater Armenia* on the east, *Syria* on the south, the *Euxine* on the west, and *Cappadocia* on the north.

Fourth division of Anatolia. *CARAMANIA*, the fourth division of *Asia Minor*, situate on the southernmost part, extends from north to south along the *Mediterranean* coast, which is its southern boundary, and comprehends the ancient countries of *Lycia*, *Pamphylia*, *Pisidia*, and *Cilicia*. The *Turks* call the whole province *Caraman Ili*.

1. *LYCIA*, now *Menteſiti*, is bounded on the south by the *Mediterranean*; on the north by *Phrygia Major*, and part of *Pamphylia*; on the west by *Caria*; and on the east by *Pisidia*. The mountain named *Olympus*, situate near the city of its name, was anciently famed for the excellent saffron that grew wild upon it.

2. *PAMPHYLIA*, another maritime part of *Caramania*, has *Lycia* on the west, *Cilicia* on the east, *Pisidia* on the north, and the *Mediterranean* on the south. The maritime parts and the low lands are naturally rich, if well cultivated. Nor are the in and up-lands, nor even mountains, unprofitable, since they serve to breed numerous herds of goats, whose hair makes excellent camblets. The territory about *Satalia*, called by the *Turks* *Satalyati*, is delightful to a high degree, being covered with citron and orange trees, which grow spontaneously, without any care, and are large, beautiful and of exquisite fragrance. Here is likewise the storax produced in large quantities; and it may be said of the ground in

in general, that a little labour would make it capable of bearing every fruit and herb that could be desired, either for use or delight. The haven is now only fit, whatever it might have been formerly, to receive small vessels.

3. *PISIDIA*, which lies on the north of *Pamphylia*, is small and mountainous, being situate on the west side of *Mount Taurus*, but has a good many fertile plains, and its hills afford some minerals. *Seleucia* here was anciently stiled *Ferrea*, perhaps from some iron mines or manufacture.

4. *LYCAONIA* and *Isauria* lie on the north-east of *Pisidia*, having *Cilicia* on the south, *Greater Phrygia* on the west, and *Galatia Propria* on the east. The country is flat, and naturally fertile.

5. *CILICIA* is bounded on the north-west by the long ridge of mountains which separate it from *Isauria* and *Lycaonia*; on the north by *Cappadocia* and *Lower Armenia*; on the east by *Comagene*; and on the south by *Syria* and the *Mediterranean*. The eastern part of it is a fine flat fertile country, the other very hilly, rocky, and barren. The *Cilicians* were the inventors of a kind of manufactory of hair-cloth, chiefly of goat's hair, called sack-cloth, and much used in the penitential humiliations of the *Jews* and primitive *Christians*. *Adana* is much resorted to from other towns of *Cilicia*, especially from the mountain-side, for its wines, corn, and other fruits, which are hence dispersed into the most barren parts.

CH A P. III.

Of Syria.

SYRIA, the second considerable province of *Turky* in *Asia*, and lying next to *Anatolia*, on the south-east side of it, was originally so called from the capital *Tzor*, or *Tzur*, which the *Greeks* and other nations have since softened into *Sur* and *Tyre*. It was one of the four first grand monarchies, and was promiscuously called by prophane writers, *Syria* and *Assyria*. Sacred writers always mention it as distinct from *Assyria* and *Canaan*. The *Turks* at present call it *Shurie*, or *Souristan*. *Syria described.*

SYRIA, in general, is blessed with a serene, temperate, and healthful air; a soil deep, rich, and fertile; level, delightful, and productive of every thing desirable for the uses and pleasures of life. *Air, soil, products, of Syria, &c.* It would at least be so, if the *Turks*, too much addicted to voluptuousness and sloth, did not so shamefully neglect it, as they commonly have all their rich conquests,

The Conclusion of

quests, and let the greatest part lie waste and uncultivated. It is notwithstanding so rich naturally in many places, that still with the least care it produces plenty of corn, wine, oil, grapes, figs, lemons, oranges, melons, honey, canes, dates, cotton, and even when left to lie at rest, abundance of aromatic and medicinal herbs. It has also abundance of rich pasture grounds, which feed vast herds of cattle; especially a fine breed of sheep, whose tails, wool, and fat, weigh together between twenty-five and thirty pounds, and would be spoiled by trailing on the ground, were they not laid on a light kind of sled, which the sheep draw after them. There is likewise a beautiful kind of *Syrian* goat, whose ears are wide and long, and hair long and of a beautiful colour. Besides these, there is a great number of buffaloes and other oxen, camels, dromedaries, wild boars, deer of several sorts, &c. &c. nothing of hares, rabbits, and other game, and a great variety of wild fowl, such as partridges, quails, pigeons, pheasants, turtles, &c. The ground is watered by a good number of rivers, the most celebrated of which are the *Euphrates*, *Jordan*, *Casimeer*, *Orontes*, *Adonis*, *Cherscus*, and some others of less note. The maritime parts have good convenient harbours, and the whole country is under a temperate, that is, under part of the fifth and sixth climate, and between the thirty-third and thirty-seventh degrees of north latitude: so that even in the months of *June*, *July*, and *August*, which are generally very hot and sultry, when no wind stirs, they are, as by a constant miracle of Providence, relieved by cool westerly breezes from the *Mediterranean*. Here are indeed several barren and rocky mountains, such as few countries of that extent are free from; but they are so inconsiderable in comparison of the vast spacious plains, that they may be considered as of no account; and so fat and tender are these plains, that many of them are tilled up with wooden coulters, and the plough drawn only by a single horse, or a couple of bullocks: so that, upon the whole, it may be affirmed, that were it not for the continual invasions of the *Arabs*, the tyranny of the *Turkish* government, and the frequent revolts occasioned thereby, *Syria* would be one of the richest and most delightful spots in all *Asia*. It must, however, be owned, that all these beauties and excellencies are terribly eclipsed by the many and various melancholy objects which present themselves to the eyes of travellers, such as the great number of large opulent and stately cities, to say nothing of a much greater number of goodly towns and villages, formerly in a most flourishing condition, exposed and inhabited, and carrying on a considerable trade in

but now quite depopulated and laid in ruins; many ancient and magnificent christian churches, once adorned with every thing that was elegant and costly, and now either converted into mosques, with all their noble architecture and statues defaced, or reduced into ruinous heaps, and become the ordinary residence of beasts and birds of prey.

THE most remarkable mountains in this country are, the *Libanus* and *Antilibanus* in *Celo-Syria*; the former on the north, and the other on the south, both of a prodigious height and extent, though it is still a matter of controversy, whether the vallies between those ridges run directly from east to west, as the ^b ancients affirmed, or from north to south, as some ^c moderns imagine. The misfortune is, that to be fully assured would require some time to examine their course, at different points, and better instruments and more exact maps, to take and regulate observations from; all which is rendered next to impossible, by the frequent incursions of the wild *Arabs*, who infest these parts, and make them in some measure inaccessible.

LIBANUS was always famed for its lofty cedars, with which it furnished all the neighbouring nations, particularly *Judea*, ever since the time of king *Soleman*, who built the temple of *Jerusalem*, and several of its palaces and other edifices with them; to say nothing of the vast quantities which the kings of *Syria* have since drawn from it for the same uses. At present they are reduced to a small number, and the higher parts of the mountain appear so hard and rocky, that they seem to have never borne any; and on the lower are seen only twigs of a monstrous bigness, some groupes of a ^d m^{ore}, and many more of a small size or bulk, intermixed with each other. These trees bear leaves much resembling our juniper, and are green all the year. In the large ones the top spreads into a perfect round, but the smaller ascend in form of a pyramid, like the cypress. Both small and great have a fragrant smell, but the latter only bear the usual fruit, which is a kind of large apple, like that of the pine, only smoother, and of a deeper brown; and which, besides exhaling a very grateful odour, contains a kind of transparent and insipidated balm, which at proper seasons oozes out at some crevices of the fruit, and falls by drops. These apples always appear in clusters at the end of the branches, and with the point upwards. *La Rocque*, a late traveller into those parts, who took some pains in examining the cedars, ^e which that the largest he met with was about seven feet high up ^f *Libanus*.

Cedars described.

2 MAU (DRELAP

L) 12

in

The Conclusion of

in circumference; but the branches, which extended in a circular form, made a circumference of about 120. As to the height of the tree, it does not rise above six or seven feet from the ground to the first branches, but from thence forms, by the spreading of such a number of branches upwards, a prodigious yet beautiful round, seemingly cut by art. The bark, except below about the trunk, is very smooth and sleek, and of a fine brown. The wood towards the outside is white and soft, but harder and browner towards the middle, and of a reddish colour, and so very bitter, that no worm will breed or harbour in it, which is the cause of its being incorruptible.

As to the chain of mountains which bears the name of *Libanus*, though represented by travellers as continually covered with snow, and extremely cold, *M. Roque* assures us he saw no snows thereon; and so far from feeling any cold, he with his company spent the night under those cedars, without any other shelter or covering. The *Maronites* say, that those snows do not begin to fall till *December*, and continue thawing from *April* to *July*; so that the permanency of snow may be only found in some deep cavities of those mountains, where perhaps the sun hardly, if ever, shines; and it is from thence it is conveyed into most parts of *Syria*, for cooling their wines and other liquors. There is one singularity which the inhabitants recount to strangers concerning the cedars, that though the tops of them appear of that perfect round figure above described all the summer long, yet so soon as the snow begins to fall, they gradually contract and erect their branches in form of a pyramid, without which it would be impossible for them to bear the weight of the snow during so many months without breaking; but in proportion as the snow melts off of them, they resume their former and exact roundness.

The terrestrial
paradise
placed
here.

THE cedars and fine sheep mentioned a little higher, may be regarded as two great natural rarities in your country. A great many more of the same sort might be added, particularly that spot, which is still shewn at the place where stood the garden of *Eden*, or *Terrestrial Paradise*. And indeed it is in all respects so beautiful and rich, and yields so delightful a prospect from the adjacent hills, that there is hardly another place in the world that has a fairer title to the name it bears. Its proximity to *Damascus*, the capital of *Syria*, near the fountain head of the *Jordan*, its situation between the *Tigris* & *Hiddekel* the *Euphrates*, the *Orax* or *Phison*, the *Araxes* or *Gihon*, (which last rises in the ground from its own rapidity above all other known riv- in

dering upon the land of *Chus*, famed for its fine gold; all these and many other marks specified by *Moses*, together with its charming and surprising fruitfulness and constant verdure, have induced a great number of commentators to style that celebrated and so much sought after spot here, and to deem it the most valuable of all the natural rarities of this country. We shall only add one more to them, which are the several reservoirs or cavities among the inland mountains, wherein are found great quantities of rain water perfectly petrified by the heat of the sun.

THE artificial rarities of this country consist chiefly in noble ruins of cities, temples, palaces, towers, churches, and in some other fine works done in ancient times by some of the great princes that reigned in those parts. Of the first sort are the ruins of the city, castle, temple, and palace, of the once famed *Palmyra* or *Tadmor*, which, though now intirely in ruins, has still such remains of the finest marble and porphyry pillars excellently wrought, and stones of so prodigious a length, breadth, and height, as fully demonstrate the ancient magnificence of the place. 2. Several noble Christian churches lying in dismal heaps, with variety of stone coffins above ground, a great number of repositories for the dead, hewn out of the firm rock, but without any remaining inscriptions, all which may be seen in the road between *Aleppo* and *Alexandria* or *Scanderoon*. 3. The ruins of the city *Tyre*, once so famed for its trade, strength, and opulence. It seems still at a distance to retain something of its ancient glory; but upon a nearer inspection, exhibit nothing but a dismal confusion of broken walls, pillars, vaults, and other ruined edifices: not so much as one fire house is left standing. The present inhabitants bring only a parcel of poor wretched fishermen, who harbour among those ruins, as if preserved there by a particular providence, to verify the sentence of God denounced against that proud city, "that it should become as the top of a rock, a place for fishermen to dry their nets upon." However, the east end of the once stately cathedral of *Tyre* is still standing and tolerably intire. 4. The ancient cisterns near *Roselawn*, said to have been built by king *Salomon* to supply *Tyre*, *Hiram's* capital, with water. They still bear this name, though they seem to be of later date, and probably since the time of *Alexander the Great*; for the aqueduct which conveys water from one to the other, crosses that neck of land by which that conqueror joined the

Artificial
rarities.

which is described in the first vol. of this history. • EZEKIEL.

city

The Conclusion of

city to the land. One of these cisterns is of an octagonal figure, twenty-two yards in diameter, and raised nine yards above ground. The natives pretend that it is bottomless, though a ten yards line shews the contrary. It contains, however, a large quantity of excellent water, and is so well supplied by its spring, that though it throws out a sufficiency to keep four mills going below it, yet it is always full. On the east side of this cistern is the aqueduct that conveyed it to *Tyre*, but has been since stopped up by the *Turks*, who have made an outlet on the opposite side, to gain a stream for grinding corn. 5. In the spacious plain of *Antioch*, computed forty-five miles long and nine broad, is a stately causeway crossing almost the whole breadth of it, and passing over several arches, under which some pleasant rivulets glide. This causeway is said to have been begun, and finished in six months by Sultan *Achmet's* Grand Vicer, for the speedier passage of his forces to suppress the frequent revolts in the eastern parts of this empire. 6. Two noble manuscripts of the Gospels in the custody of the Jacobite patriarch at *Aleppo*, written on large parchments in *Syriac* characters, and these in gold and silver, adorned with great variety of curious miniature. These manuscripts are the more remarkable, as the *Greek* clergy in general throughout *Turkey* laboured under an excessive want of those sacred books, till supplied with a considerable number of them in queen *Anne's* reign, by the *English* society for the propagation of christian knowledge, which they received with uncommon tokens of joy and gratitude.

THE language spoken by the present *Syrians* is a kind of corrupt *Arabic* or *Moresco*; besides which, most of the inhabitants of the trading cities speak a kind of mixed and corrupt *Italian*, without either connection or grammatical construction; and yet they understand each other with ease, which is more than any *European* could do without long practice, neither could he be understood if he used a greater regularity in speaking.

General
division of
Syria.

MODERN Geographers divide *Syria* into three provinces, 1. *Syria*, properly so called. 2. *Phœnicia*. 3. *Judea*, or *Palestine*; according to which, the limits of *Syria* in general will be, on the west the *Mediterranean*; on the north *Mount Amanus*, and a branch of that of *Taurus*, which parts it from *Armenia Minor* and *Cilicia*; on the east, the river *Euphrates*, which parts it from *Mesopotamia* or *Diarbeck*, or *Arabia* the Desert; and on the south *Arabia Petrea*: so that, according to those limits, the whole extent of *Syria* may be the ground to stretch 400 miles, and from east to west some

The Conclusion of

kind of commerce vastly richer than it has been since. It still however continues to be the mart for the richest commodities of *Europe*, which are brought hither chiefly by the *English*, *Dutch*, *French*, *Venetians* and *Genoese*, by the *Mediterranean*, and hence conveyed to *Persia* and other countries. And here also are found the best merchandizes from these parts, as raw silk, cotton, grograms, yarn, galls, and a great variety of drugs.

THE *English* merchants have a consul at *Aleppo* as well as at *Smyrna*, and are civilly treated by the *Turks*, *English* cloths being in great esteem amongst them. The *French*, *Dutch*, *Italians*, *Arabs*, *Persians* and *Indians*, have also their consuls, and all of them have free access to the government to complain of any injuries or grievances, which seldom fail of being redressed, especially if the application is attended with some considerable present; for the place of *Turkish* government or commandant is his harvest, and he never fails of making the best use of the sun-shine.

THE city is about three miles in circumference, has twelve gates and three large suburbs, and is divided into forty-five wards. The walls, which form an oval figure, are neither high nor strong, but are founded on the rock and flanked with towers, at the distance of sixty paces from each other. The castle, besides its garrison, is mounted with thirty cannon, is about five or six hundred paces in compass, and has but one gate, which is on the south side, and without a draw-bridge. The gates of the city are likewise without any. The suburbs are large and well built, and chiefly inhabited by christians of different denominations. The whole amount of the inhabitants, *Jews*, *Turks*, and *Christians*, in the city and suburbs, is computed at about 250,000 souls.

THE *Turks* have about 120 mosques within and without the walls, and of these seven or eight are very magnificent. The principal of them, supposed to have been built by the empress *Helena*, mother of *Constantine*, the Great, a sumptuous edifice, and has a large court before it paved with black and white marble, and a great basin with a dome in the middle, supported by six marble pillars, and on the south a fountain covered with another dome of the like structure. Round this court runs a noble gallery of seventeen arches on one side, and eleven at each end, under which the *Turks* say their prayers after they have washed themselves. On the north side, against the middle of the front, is the *tax* pulpit of *John Damascene*, who formerly preached in the church. Some *Turkish* monasteries here are also very

some, and one of them is a most stately building, ornamented with a noble fountain, a large hall paved with grey marble, and covered with a large dome, as is likewise the fine mosque belonging to it. In one of its courts is a spacious fish-pond and canal faced with white marble, and well stored with fish of several sorts; but the *Turks* suffer none of them to be caught, on pretence that those who may eat of them will fall sick. This place is shut in with a thick stone gate, and the hinges are said to be of a piece with it. There are besides three colleges in this city for teaching grammar, some branches of the liberal sciences, and a sort of philosophy and divinity, all suitable to the *Turkish* taste, and agreeable to their religion and genius: the professors have a settled salary, but the number of students is inconsiderable, the people here being more addicted to the culture of their commercial concerns than that of the muses.

THE kans or inns, the bazars, divans, and other public edifices of *Aleppo*, are in like manner very fair and elegant, and generally make a much better figure within than on the outside, being not only very richly furnished, but adorned with variety of marble work of different fashions and colours, with fret-work ceilings, golden inscriptions, and many other embellishments. The streets are well paved, except the bazars, where the merchants and mechanics have their shops, which indeed are narrow, and have only a foot causeway on each side with a horse-road in the middle.

THE rest of the houses are in general better built than they commonly are in most parts of *Asiatic Turkey*, being chiefly of white stone, one story high, with terraces and small rooms on the top. The inhabitants are industrious, and carry on several considerable manufactures, particularly one of fine *Turkey* leather, which they suffer no stranger to see them prepare. Gall nuts, especially that shell of them which they call *valanede*, is one of the principal ingredients in their leather-dyeing. Their manufactures of silk, camblet and *clap*, are also very considerable.

THOUGH the country in the environs of *Aleppo* is very mountainous and rocky, yet it produces great plenty of corn of all sorts, particularly in the chalky valleys; but little grass or oats are met with, the ground being too dry, and for the better part sandy. The harvest begins about the end of April or beginning of May. The lower grounds are covered with olive and other fruit trees, culinary plants and pulse, which, short with the finest variety of every thing desirable for use or respect, either for exquisite taste or beauty.

The Conclusion of

2. *ALEXANDRETTA*, now called *Scanderoon*, the port of *Aleppo*, is situate on the gulph of *Ajazzo*, near the sea coast, in latitude 36. 34. east longitude 36. 40. It stands on such a marshy and unhealthy ground, that at present it is but a confused heap of wretched wooden houses, inhabited mostly by *Greeks*, who entertain all the seamen and ordinary travellers that come hither: as for merchants and persons of higher rank, they are generally lodged by the consuls of their nation, who have built themselves handsome houses about a mile or two from the town, which are now increased so as to appear like a little city. During the hot months, few, who have the misfortune to come here, escape being seized with some acute disease, if they do with their lives. The very inhabitants are forced to retire to the village of *Beylan*, situate on a high hill, about four leagues off, and abounding with fresh water and excellent fruits. This hill has an opening, which yields a free passage to the north-east wind, and when it blows hard, all the vessels in the harbour commonly weigh anchor and make to the open sea, to prevent being dashed in pieces.

THIS port has a governor and some few soldiers, and is defended by an old castle, but of small use were it to be attacked by any force; insomuch that it is a matter of wonder that the pirates, who swarm on this coast, never attempt it. Pidgeons taught to fly with letters about their necks, keep up an expeditious correspondence between *Aleppo* and this place; so that the rise and fall of merchandizes are soon known in both. The country round *Alexandretta* is flat and very fertile, and beyond it is a spacious plain, called the plain of *Antioch*, watered with a number of little rivers, brooks, and canals, and abounding with most necessaries of life, particularly with cattle, which are turned in there to fatten.

3. *ANTIOCH*, formerly the metropolis of *Syria*, situate about thirty miles south from *Scanderoon*, and fifty-four south-west of *Aleppo*, in latitude 36. 6. and east longitude 36. 35. The *Turks* now call it *Antackia*, and have reduced it to a poor condition to what it formerly was, when the seat of the kings of *Syria*. It stands on the *Hasi*, anciently *Orontes*, which river widens its waves gradually as it flows nearer the city, so as to appear of a considerable breadth before it. Nothing can be a more surprizing and at the same time delightful sight, than to come to it by that river, and to view at some distance a city, as it were in a forest, or a forest in a city, from the prodigious number of plantanes, poplars, syces, gum and other trees that grow in and about it, as well

fruit ones that grow in the gardens and other uninhabited parts of the town. The ancient *Greek* and *Roman* authors styled *Antioch* the third city in the world, the pearl, the eye, the head of the east. It was the first place where christians had that sacred name given them, and chiefly on this account, the emperor *Justinian* who repaired it after it had been destroyed by fire, called it *Theopolis*, or the City of God. It was the residence of several emperors, the seat of learning and politeness, and remarkable for many magnificent buildings, and every thing that could raise the lustre and glory of it; all which serve only now to render the present dismal prospect it yields to those that visit it more surprising and melancholy, as it retains very little of its ancient splendor but the ruins of its walls, temples, a spacious canal, and some few other broken remains. As the walls still retain their ancient circuit, it is known that the city was 10,000 paces in compass, and situate partly on flat and partly on high grounds, and on these last were built the greatest part of its stately edifices. Within the thickness of the walls at a certain place there is a space left open, with a gradual and imperceptible ascent, by which loaded waggons, or any kind of carriage, may easily be drawn from the bottom of the wall quite up to the castle. Hence a competent judgment may easily be made of the strength and thickness of these walls, formerly flanked with 400 square towers, of which a good number still remain, each with a cistern in the middle, quite intire to this day.

4. *APAMEA*, situated about sixty miles almost south of *Antioch*, and about ninety from *Aleppo*, in latitude 35. 6. east longitude 37. 18. It is almost surrounded with a deep lake formed by the river *Orontes*, and has therefore no communication with the land but by a small neck or isthmus. The *Greeks* at present call it *Hama*, and though above one half of it lies in ruins, there are still several noble edifices public and private. Near the river is a superb mosque, partly encompassed with a spacious garden, and before the front stands a stately marble column adorned with bas reliefs of exquisite workmanship, and representing human figures, beasts, birds, flowers and other curiosities. The city, which now extends less towards the hills and more upon the plain than formerly, is every where watered with the same river, which runs quite across it. The water, by means of a machine of eighteen large wheels, is conveyed through ducts into every part of it, and into the gardens that lie without its precinct opposite to it. Here, a place which, though much decayed, is large and built up on an eminence, with large square stones, black

The Conclusion of

black and white intermixed. *Apamea*, formerly only a commandery, with a few soldiers, is now under a *basba*, whose government is pretty extensive.

5. *EMESA*, now *Chems* and *Aman* or *Haman*, is the last considerable town in *Syria Proper*. It is at present under the beglerberg of *Damascus*, who keeps a deputy-governor and a garrison in it; and it is surrounded with good strong walls, with six handsome gates and stately towers at proper distances, and a good large ditch. Its castle, which appears to be a *Roman* work, stands on an eminence commanding the town and adjacent parts. Its ancient cathedral, now a *Turkish* mosque, is a spacious structure, supported by thirty-four marble columns, adorned with bas-reliefs and *Greek* inscriptions, but for the most part quite defaced. It is supposed to have been built by the empress *Helena*. The other public buildings, as the *hans*, bazars, *bezestans*, *caravanserais*, are also very elegant and well built. The chief commerce of this place consists in silk, and some fine sorts of needle-work of silk mixed with gold and silver thread. The gardens about it, as well as the neighbouring country, are exceedingly fertile and delightful, abounding with fruits of all sorts, especially with mulberry-trees for feeding their silkworms, which are planted in rows of considerable length, and in great regularity.

The second
division of
Syria.

PHOENICE, or *Phœnicia*, the second province or division of *Syria*, lies along the *Mediterranean* coast, being bounded by it on the west, by *Syria Proper* on the north, by part of the same, which some geographers call *Cœl-syria*, and by *Bactanea* on the east, and by *Palmyra* on the south. It is but a narrow slip of land from east to west, but has made a considerable figure in history, as well by the number of its maritime cities and commodious ports, as by the industry and ingenuity of its inhabitants, to whom are generally attributed the invention of letters, art of navigation, astronomy, merchandizing, making of glass, and many other useful discoveries. In navigation particularly they were such expert masters, that they carried on a very extensive commerce, became exceeding wealthy, and established colonies in several parts of *Europe*, *Asia*, and *Africa*, among which, that of the *Carthaginians* was one of the most considerable. There are good grounds also for believing that they have left visible traces of the *Phœnician* tongue in almost all the islands and coasts of the *Mediterranean*.

THE name of *Phœnicia* is unknown in the *Hebrew* text, and only found in the *Greek* version. The sacred Hebrews call it *Canaan*, and the inhabitants *Canaanites*.

derive the name of *Phœnicia* from the quantity of palm-trees with which it abounded, the Greek word *Phoenix* having that signification; others from the *Red Sea*, from the coasts of which they originally came to those of the *Mediterranean*; whence the *Puniceus Color*. They were dispossessed in a great measure of their country by the *Israelites* under *Joshua*, and it is thought many of them fled from him into *Africa* and other parts; at least we are told by *Procopius*, that two marble columns were found in *Tingitania*, erected near a famed fountain, with an inscription to this purpose, "We are some of those who fled from that great robber *Joshua* the son of *Nun*."

THE places of chief note in the modern *Phœnicia* are, 1. *Tripoli*, *Tarabolos*, or *Tripolis* of *Syria*, to distinguish it from that of *Barbary* on the coast of *Africa*, and some others of the same name in other parts, was so called from its forming three cities, each at the distance of a stage from the other; one of which belonged to the *Aradians*, or ancient kingdom of *Arad*, the second to the *Sidonians*, and the third to the *Tyrrians*; but at present they are so well incorporated, that it is very probable those interstices were filled up long ago with new buildings, though the town is still divided into the upper and lower. It is pleasantly and commodiously situated in latitude 34. 30, and east longitude 36. 15. at the foot of *Mount Libanus*, whence flows a small river with a fresh stream, which supplies all parts of it with fresh water. Its distance from the sea is about a mile and a half, and it has a commodious haven, which comes up within less than half a mile of the west part of it. On each side of this haven are a good number of warehouses, in which the merchants' goods are deposited. The major part of the town is built between two hills, one on the east, on which stands the castle, a strong fortress, and the residence of the beglerberg; the other on the west, between it and the sea; and this last is said to have been first raised, and still increasing by the constant effusion of the sand blown to it from the shore. The whole town is surrounded with stout walls, and fortified with seven high and strong towers, besides the castle, which commands on all sides. The port is rather an open sea than inclosed harbour, except that it is partly defended by two small islands, which lie about two leagues from it: but for a further security against pirates, six square castles or towers are built along the shore at proper distances, armed with some cannon. These, at the approach of any ships which they suspect to be of the corsair kind, immediately light up fires, to give notice to the trading vessels to secure them-

The Conclusion of

themselves within the port. On all these accounts *Tripoli* is reckoned the metropolis of *Phœnicia*. It is computed to contain about 8000 houses, and between 50 and 60,000 inhabitants, *Turks*, *Jews*, and *Christians* included; but the streets are mostly narrow and the houses low. The river which runs through it has a good stone bridge, and turns a great number of mills with its stream; and there is scarce a garden but has some fine fountain or cascade, and even the very chambers have water conveyed into them. The people spend most of the summer-time in their gardens, where they busy themselves with their silk-worms, which is the greatest manufacture they have. The air is extremely clear and healthy, and the country round about very rich and fruitful, so that the town is supplied with everything it wants or can wish for.

TRIPOLI was very famous in the time of the holy war, being one of the capital cities the Christians held in their parts. It has still some handsome buildings, among which the great mosque, formerly a Christian church, is a large and stately edifice. The jesuits have an elegant college in it, and other Christians some monasteries and chapels, especially the Capuchins, who are the chaplains or curates of the French nation.

2. *BERYTUS*, now *Baruti*, or *Beroet*, situate in latitude 33. 58. and east longitude 36. 13. forty miles south of *Tripoli*. It was anciently so much a favourite place of *Augustus*, that he beautified and bestowed some considerable privileges on it, and called it *Julia Felix*. *Herod* and *Agrippa* did the same, so that it was then in a most flourishing condition, being conveniently situated on the same coast with *Tripoli*, in a most delightful and fertile territory, and just high enough above the sea to be out of all danger of its impetuous waves. It is also supplied with plenty of fresh water from a number of neighbouring springs and small rivers that run through it. The streets are narrow, dirty, and dark, and the houses mostly mean and ill built; yet it was once an episcopal see, and the residence of the Emirs who governed this country. These emirs are princes of the old *Drusians*, who fled to the mountainous parts to avoid the *Turkish* yoke, and were suffered to live in peace because they could not be easily subdued. Here *Faccardine*, the fourth emir, had his residence and palace in the reign of sultan *Morat*, having enlarged his dominions beyond those mountains where his three predecessors had lain bleaching so long, and extended them as far along the sea-coast as from *Beroet* to *Acra* of *Ptolemais*. A length the sultan grew so jealous of his success and increasing

power, that he drove him back to his ancient abode, where his posterity have continued ever since. However, the ruins of that prince's palace, which are still to be seen on the north-east part of the city, consisting of several stately courts, the curious and noble marble fountain at the entrance, the stables, dens for lions, and other wild beasts; the gardens and orangery, and many other beautiful remains, shew him to have been a person of exquisite taste, both in gardening and architecture, and to have been worthy of a better fate.

THERE is another garden with several ruins of statues and other architecture, and a tower sixty feet high, with walls twelve feet thick; from the top of which there is a full view of the whole city, though it now presents little to the sight but old ruins, among which are those of a noble amphitheatre, supposed to have been built by king *Agrippa*.

BERYTUS is still a place of good trade, and a stage of the caravans that go to and from *Grand Cairo*. Its chief articles of merchandize consist in fine tapestry, silks, camblets, cinnamon, nutmegs, ginger, pepper, cassia, rhubarb, and cochineal. The sea-banks abound with mulberry, pine, lime, and other trees, and with gourds, and prodigious quantities of colocynth.

3. *SIDON*, now *Sayd*, the most ancient city and metropolis of *Phœnicia*, famed both in sacred and profane history, and dignified by the title of great, is seated in a fertile and delicious soil, between the sea on the west, and *Mount Libanus* on the east, about thirty miles south of *Berytus*, in latitude 33. 40. and east longitude 36. 7. It is said to have extended formerly about three miles along the coasts, but at present does not take up above one quarter of that room. The square market for cotton, all built of free stone, with great arches on every side, warehouses underneath, and a large gallery over them, is now one of its finest edifices, having a great number of handsome chambers round in form of a cloyster, for the use of the merchants, and a noble terrace on the top eighty feet long, from which there is a prospect of the city, country, and sea. The other buildings of any note are two fine inns, the public bagnio, and the great mosque, a handsome and large structure, and in good repair. The number of the inhabitants, consisting of *Turks* and *Christians*, is computed at about 6000. One of the chief commodities of the place is that of raisins, which the basha lets to proper farmers, but obliges them to be moderate in their prices: the other merchandizes are oil, ashes, *Egyptian* soap, rice, blue silks, *Turkey* leather, cotton, senna, pistaches, and buffaloes skins. Provisions of all sorts are in great plenty and cheap, their

The Conclusion of

bread white and good, and the air so clear and pleasant, that it attracts wild beasts and birds in great numbers into the adjacent country. The suburbs abound with gardens planted with olive, mulberry, tamarinds, sycamore, and other trees. The silk-worms are kept in little huts under the mulberries, and thrive very well, unless disturbed by violent claps of thunder. The *French* consul of this place has also the title of consul of *Jerusalem*, and is obliged by the *French* king to visit that city every *Easter-tide*, under pretence of preserving the sanctuary from violation, and the friars who have the care of it, from the exactions of the *Turks*. The fortifications of *Sidon* are for the better part in a ruinous condition. The haven is unsafe, though large; and it is reported that the emir *Faccardine* above-mentioned, who had made this place his chief residence, caused the entrance into it to be stopped on the side of the town, to prevent being surprised by the grand signior's galleys: this now obliges ships to ride under a small ridge of rocks about a mile from the shore, on the north part of the city.

4. *ACRE*, or *Acco*, the last and most southern city on the *Pœnician* coast, in latitude 32. 55. east longitude 35. 47. By its excellent situation it seems to enjoy all possible advantages both by sea and land, being encompassed on the north and east sides with a spacious and fertile plain, on the west by the *Mediterranean*, and on the south by a large bay, extending from the city to *Mount Carmel*; notwithstanding which it was never able to recover from the dreadful overthrow it received from the *Turks*, when they took it from the knights of *Jerusalem*. If we except a large inn for the *French* factors, a mosque, and a few cottages, nothing now is to be seen but vast spacious ruins, yet such as sufficiently demonstrate its strength and opulence in former times.

5. *DAMASCUS*, called by the *Turks* *Scan*, stands about forty-three miles from the sea, being parted from it by a long chain of mountains, and about forty-five almost east from *Sidon*, sixty-five south-east from *Tripoli*, and about eighty-two north-east of *Acre*, in latitude 33. 37. east longitude 37. 4. Its situation is in a fertile plain, encompassed with hills, and upon the celebrated river ~~which by the ancients~~ *Chrysorrheus* or *Golden River*, by the *Syrians* *Parphar*, and now *Barady*, which contributes to enrich the city and country with all kind of plenty and pleasure; insomuch that *Julian* the apostate used to call it the city of *Jupiter*, the eye of the east; adding, that it excelled all others in the

magnificence of its temples, temperate seasons, excellent fountains, number of its springs, and fruitfulness of its soil. All which is so far true, that the country produces the best corn, wines, and fruit-trees of all sorts, most of which bear all the year, and render the place so exceedingly delightful, and rich, that *Mahommed* beholding it from a neighbouring mountain, dared not venture to proceed farther, lest he should be too much taken with a place which gave him such delight even at that distance; alledging that, as there could be but one paradise designed for man, he would not enjoy his in this world: but one of his successors, less scrupulous, made no difficulty of chusing it for his royal seat not many years after.

DAMASCUS is famed in scripture for having been the residence of the *Syrian* kings during 300 years. The *Turks* have been in possession of it since the beginning of the sixteenth century, and it is in a much better condition than most of their other conquests. It is governed by a begler, or basha, who has ten sangiacs under him, besides agas, cadis, and other officers, with 15000 janissaries, of whom 500 are appointed to guard the city, 500 to escort the caravan to *Mecca*, and 500 to attend the grand signior when he goes to *Bagdad*.

ALMOST in the heart of the city is a high castle of an oval form, mostly built of square stone, and flanked with fourteen large square towers, in which are some cannon. There is but one entrance to it, which is on the east side with a draw-bridge, kept up by stone chains of admirable contrivance, each chain consisting of sixteen links, each link about two fathom long, and one and a half wide, all cut out of one stone; and the walls of this castle and its towers are fourteen feet thick. The city was formerly surrounded with three walls, two of which are now in ruins, and one only left standing. It has eight gates, adorned with marble portals curiously carved and inlaid; and on the inside there is generally a large square court, embellished with trees and fountains. The streets about the town are arched to keep off sun and rain, and so are most of the suburbs, in both which appear many stately houses, mosques, and delightful gardens. However, the city is far from answering within to its outward appearance, the streets being narrow and the houses low, and built of no better materials than either sun-burnt brick, or downright mud, as coarsely laid on as in our meanest cottages: hence the great inconvenience, among many others, that upon any violent rain the whole city becomes a mere quagmire. This is not done through any

The Conclusion of

scarcity of stone, which is very plenty in all the neighbouring mountains, insomuch that these mud houses are ornamented with handsome portals, and some of them even of marble; and though this may seem an oddity to *Europeans*, there is nothing more common here than this uncouth mixture of mud and marble, of elegance and slovenliness. But the greatest contrast is between the external appearance and internal disposition: the latter is commonly diversified with the beauties of a large square court, which consist of a pleasing variety of fragrant trees and flowers, and marble fountains, environed with stately apartments called *duans*, all elegantly and richly furnished. These *duans* are finely floored, and embellished on the sides with variety of marble mingled in mosaic work and mazes; the ceilings and traves richly painted and gilt, and the floors decked out to the height of luxury, with cushions and carpets; to which we may add the artificial fountains playing into a marble basin before these *duans*, which are so disposed that at one end or other of them sunshine or shade may be enjoyed as is best liked.

THE public buildings bear a much better outside than the private. The chief of them all is the great mosque, formerly a Christian church, built by the emperor *Heraclius*, in honour of *Zachariah*, the father of *John the Baptist*, who is said to be buried in it. It is 300 paces long, and 60 broad, and has a stately court before it, at which the *Turks* pull off their sandals when they go through it. The pavement is with transparent stones resembling a looking-glass, and round about are pillars of marble, porphyry, and jasper of exquisite beauty and workmanship, which support an arch curiously painted in mosaic. The porch has twelve large copper doors embossed with figures, and supported by porphyry pillars with gilt capitals. The walls are painted with curious figures in gold and azure, and against one of them is a hole grated with gilt iron bars, before which are a great number of lamps continually burning in honour of *Zachariah*, whose head is said to be preserved in it. This mosque is reckoned one of the stateliest in all *Turky*, and it is death for any but a musfulman to enter it. The several bazars and exchanges, kans, and public bagnios, are also very fine. The largest of the bazars consists of eighteen arches, and two rows of shops on each side.

THE city has separate wards for every trade and calling, which are shut up every night by gates, and by day with an iron chain to keep off beasts of burden. Upwards of 20,000 of the inhabitants are employed in making scimitars, sword-blades, knives, and other cufery work, which are in great request.

the Modern History.

request throughout *Turky*, on account of the fine temper their water gives the metals. Their other commodities are wines, raisins, prunes, raw and wrought silk, and all other merchandizes of *Turky*, *Arabia*, and *India*, most of which are brought by the caravans, which go and come from *Constantinople*, *Egypt*, *India*, *Aleppo*, *Bagdad*, and *Mecca*.

ON one side of the city lies a spacious grass field, called *Meidan* or *the Green*, encompassed with gardens, through which runs a branch of the river *Barady*. About the middle is a pillar four feet high, where they pretend *Adam* was created. On one side of the green is a noble spacious hospital for pilgrims of all religions, where they are entertained for some time at the grand signior's charge. On another side is a large house where they bake biscuit for the pilgrims that travel to *Mecca*: the sultan allows them two hundred camels load of this biscuit, and the same quantity of water. There is an odd custom here of not suffering any one to ride with both legs on the same side of the horse, and for this wise reason, that *Gog* and *Magog*, who rebelled against God, rode in that manner.

6. *BALBEC*, or *Balbeit*, situate about thirty miles north of *Damascus*, and much about the same distance east from the sea coast, in latitude 34. 5. east longitude 36. 45. This is the same place that was formerly known by the name of *Heliopolis* of *Phœnicia*, and sometimes, to distinguish it from other ancient cities, *Heliopolis* by *Lebanon*. The names *Heliopolis* and *Balbec* are words of different languages, which have nearly the same signification. The sun was worshipped by the ancient inhabitants of this country under the name of *Baal*. *Balbec* signifies the vale of *Baal*, *Balbeit*, the house of *Baal*, and *Heliopolis* the city of the sun.

THE buildings at *Balbec* appear by their ruins to have been formed on the boldest plan of architecture yet extant; but neither the age nor the founder are now certainly known. The inhabitants of the country confidently believe, that the buildings both at *Palmyra* and *Balbec* were erected by *Solomon*; an opinion which may probably have been produced, or at least confirmed by his character for wisdom and love of pleasure, with both which the magnificence, beauty, and disposition of these buildings perfectly agree; and by the mention of "*Tadmor* in the wilderness, and the tower of *Lebanon*, looking towards *Damascus*," which are said in the Old Testament to have been built by his direction.

SOME have supposed that these ruins were a temple of the sun, built by the *Phœnicians*, because it is certain that the sun was worshipped at this place when the *Phœnicians* were

The Conclusion of

in their most flourishing state. Others have thought that these buildings were erected by the *Greeks*, who succeeded the *Phœnicians* in the possession of this country, because they are of the *Corinthian* and *Ionic* order. But as they are not mentioned from the time of *Alexander's* conquest till that of *Pompey*, there is great reason to suppose that they are of later date. And this opinion is confirmed by the testimony of *John of Antioch*, surnamed *Malala*, who says that *Ælius Antoninus Pius* built a great temple to *Jupiter* at *Heliopolis*, near *Libanus* in *Phœnicia*, which was one of the wonders of the world. This indeed is the only historical authority that has yet been discovered with respect to the buildings at *Balbec*. It is probable, however, that they did not exist when *Pompey* went through *Heliopolis* to *Damascus*, because the writers of that time, who mention less remarkable structures with admiration, take no notice of any such building; and it is certain that they did exist in the time of *Caracalla*, because *Heliopolis* is to be seen on many of his coins; and vows in favour of him and his empress are recorded in two inscriptions, the remains of which are still to be seen on the pedestals of the columns of the great portico of the temple.

If the buildings at *Balbec* were erected between the time of *Pompey* and *Caracalla*, it is probable in the highest degree that they were the work of *Antoninus Pius*, as the taste of the architecture is like that of his time, and there is the positive evidence of *Malala* in his favour. It may perhaps be objected, that this temple is not mentioned by *Julius Capitolinus*, who wrote the life of *Antoninus*, and enumerates his buildings; but it must be considered that the work of *Julius Capitolinus* is known to be so extremely defective, that though *Antoninus* reigned one and twenty years, and transmitted to posterity the character of one of the best princes that ever ruled, yet the particulars that merited such extraordinary praise are utterly unknown.

ABULFARAGIUS says that a temple was built here by *Constantine*, and adds, that he abolished a custom permitting the promiscuous use of women.

It is in vain to search for any information on this subject among writers of later date, for church history affords little more than the names of bishops and martyrs of *Heliopolis*; and as soon as Christianity was driven out by *Mahomedanism*, this part of the country fell under the government of the caliphs, called the omniades, an incurious and therefore ignorant race, during whose time nothing is recorded of *Balbec*, but that it was then a considerable city. The ancient name *Balbe*, during this time was restored, instead of

Heliopolis, which was probably a translation of *Balbec*, or at least substituted for it when it passed out of the possession of its own native oriental inhabitants.

THE remains of this temple were by the caliphs converted into a fortress. It must, however, be remembered, that at *Balbec* there are two great ruins, and that nothing certain can be determined to which of the two the information which may be collected from the preceding citations and reflections should be referred, except that the great temple appears never to have been completely finished; that the two buildings are so similar, as to render it highly probable, that one was an imitation of the other, and that there is no appearance of great difference in their antiquity.

HERE it may be not amiss to observe, that something is discoverable in the climate, soil, and situation of these ancient seats of idolatry, which would naturally influence peculiar deviations from the true worship of one, eternal, self-existent Being, the father of nature, most merciful, and mighty.

THUS, in countries where the violent heat of the sun is destructive of vegetation, it was natural to suppose that the worship of that planet would be the effect of fear, an act of homage paid rather to power than beneficence, and attended with propitiatory sacrifices, as we find it was at *Heliopolis*, even of the human kind.

IT is natural also to suppose, that the gentle and lambent light of the stars would produce an act of adoration, in which love was rather predominant than fear. The manner of life, which in these countries has been, during many ages, exactly the same, naturally drew the attention of the people to those objects, which in the bold figure of eastern eloquence, are called the host of heaven. They have always been used to sleep upon the house-top, with no covering but the sky, which unavoidably presents itself, with all its stars, upon every interruption of rest, when silence and solitude strongly dispose the mind to contemplation. If the night happens to be devoted not to sleep but to travel, as the heat of the climate frequently makes necessary, those who traverse the desert, dreary and boundless, without tree or water, mountain or valley, must necessarily be agreeably relieved from such a prospect, by looking upward to that cheerful brightness, which measures their time, directs their course, and illumines their way.

THE *Jews*, in their passage through the wilderness, seem to have caught the infection of idolatry from the same cause; and *Job*, as the strongest test of his integrity to God; declares,

E 2,

"That

The Conclusion of

“That his heart had not been secretly inticed, nor had his mouth kissed his hand, when he beheld the sun as he shined, or the moon walking in her brightness.”

UPON the whole, however unconnected the natural history of a country and its mythology may seem, even *Egypt* had some objects of divine worship, which were so peculiarly the growth of its soil, that they could never be transplanted, notwithstanding the fondness of antiquity for all the absurdities of that country,

As superstition travelled northward, she changed her garb with her country, and the delightful mixture of hills and vales, groves and water in *Greece*, gave birth to *Oreades*, *Dryades*, and *Naiades*, with all the varieties of that fanciful mythology, which only such a poet as *Homer*, in such a country, could have wrought into that system, which the poets of every other nation have thought fit to adopt.

BUT to return to *Belebek*: though its ruins strike the mind with an air of grandeur beyond any thing extant, and are an eminent proof of the magnificence of the ancient architecture, yet its present state is inconsiderable, being but meanly built and poorly inhabited. It lies on the east side of a well watered and fruitful valley, and is surrounded with a wall of square stone, to the extent of about a mile and a half in circumference.

Third division of Syria.

PALESTINE is the third province or division of *Syria*. It is indifferently called *Palestine*, *Judea*, the *Holy Land*, and the *Land of Canaan*. The first name was given it on account of the *Philistines*, who possessed a great part of it; but the word *Palestine*, commonly taken in a larger sense, signified the whole *Land of Canaan*, otherwise called the *Land of Promise*, because God had promised it to *Abraham* and his posterity; and in this sense it comprehended all the land of *Judea*, on both sides of the river *Jordan*; having the *Mediterranean* on the west, *Syria* and *Phœnicia* on the north, *Arabia Deserta* on the east, and *Petrea* on the south. The name of *Judea* was given to it from *Judah*, whose tribe was the chief of the twelve, and possessed the most fertile part of the whole land. The Christians style it by way of excellence, the *Holy Land*, partly on account of the signal favours it had received from the Divine Providence, who made choice of it for the habitation of his holiness (in which sense the *Jews* did also dignify it with that title) but much more for its being the scene of *Christ's* birth and preaching, and in which he finished the great work of our redemption.

extent, ITS extent is from 31 $\frac{1}{2}$ to 33. 20. of latitude, and 34. 50. to 37. 15. of east longitude; so that it lies under the fourth and fifth,

fifth climates, and its longest day is about fourteen hours and fifteen minutes.

So rich and fruitful was this once happy spot, that it is *Ancient* emphatically styled in holy writ, a land that floweth with *fertility.* milk and honey; a land of brooks and waters; of fountains and depths that spring out of the vallies and hills; a land of wheat and barley; of vines, figs, pomegranates; of oil, olives, and honey; a land where was no scarcity of any thing; whose stones were iron, and out of whose mountains they digged up brass; all which the *Israelites* found to be literally true. To these we may add the excellent temperature of its air, which was never disturbed with excessive heats or colds; the natural saltness and fertility of its soil, which neither required dunging nor manuring, could be plowed with a single yoke of oxen, and spontaneously produced a great variety of fine flowers, herbs, plants, and *aromatics.* The excellency of its corn was so sweet to the taste, that the bread of *Jerusalem* was preferred to all others; and the great plenty of it was such, that it not only nourished all its numerous inhabitants, but could furnish other neighbouring kingdoms with great quantities of it, besides oil and other of its commodities. It likewise abounded with pulse of all sorts, and with fruits of all kinds, of exquisite taste: the latter might in some sense be called perpetual, because the new buds appeared on the same boughs, even before the old fruit was ripe. Of those buds they made very delighful pickles, and noble sweetmeats of their citrons and apples of paradise, which last commonly hung by hundreds in a cluster as large as eggs, and of an excellent taste and flavour. Their vines yielded grapes three times a year, and their best wines were those that were made about *Bethlehem.* They had also great plenty of dates, melons, sugar-canes, cotton, cedar, cypress, and other trees that produced excellent turpentine and balsams, besides their so much celebrated balsam of *Gilead.*

AT present; the greatest part of this country lies so barren *Present* and neglected, that except a few figs, pomegranates, palm- *barrenness* trees, oranges, and some vines, there remain no traces of *whence* its ancient fertility and plenty. If any part is better cul- *occasioned.* tivated, it is that which is governed by *Arabian* princes, tributary to the grand signior; but even the best of these come so vastly short of what we read of it, when in its flourishing state, that many of our modern travellers have found their faith much staggered at the sight of so many naked rocks, mountains, precipices, wildernesses, barren and parched up plains; and have thought it difficult to conceive, how such a country,

The Conclusion of

a country, considering its small extent, should have been able to maintain such a prodigious number of people as we read were in it; much less how it could supply other countries with such quantities of provisions. But it must be considered that it was then inhabited by an industrious nation, who improved every inch of their land; that those naked rocks and barren places were formerly covered with fruitful earth; that the kings of it were not above encouraging all kind of agriculture, even by their own example, and that they had the blessing of God annexed to their endeavours; whereas now it is inhabited by a poor negligent set of people groaning under intolerable slavery and oppression, and every way discouraged from making the best of their ground, had they a less natural aversion to agriculture than they have: to which we may add, that there is no forming any idea of its ancient state, when under a blessing, from its present one under a visible curse; and if we had no other, nor better authorities, that alone of the emperor *Julian* the apostate, a sworn enemy to the *Jews* and *Christians*; as well as to all the sacred books, would be more than sufficient to remove all those difficulties, who speaks often in his epistles of the perpetuity as well as quantity and excellence of the fruits of *Judea*, and highly commends the country for its richness and fecundity.

MODERN *Palestine* is governed by a begleberg, whose seat, as before mentioned, is at *Damascus*, and has under him seven sangiaks, the first for *Damascus*, the rest for *Jerusalem*, *Aglum*, *Babura*, *Scifat*, *Gaza*, and *Nabolos*.

Modern *Jerusalem* described. *JERUSALEM* in its modern state, called by the *Turks* *Cudsembaric*, and *Gudscherif*, is reduced by their oppressive tyranny into the condition of a poor thinly inhabited town of about three miles at most in circumference. It is situate on a rocky mountain, with very steep ascents on all sides, except to the north; the vallies at the bottom are deep, and at some distance environed with hills. The soil is for the most part stony, yet affords corn, wine and olives, where cultivated; but scarce any thing except grass, heath, and other spontaneous herbs and shrubs, which are left to run un- to seed, grow at a distance from the city.

THE emperor *Adrian*, after its destruction by *Titus*, built a new city upon part of the old one, and called it *Elia Capitolina*; and the *Christians*, in opposition to the *Jews*, being permitted to live in it, were accordingly in possession of it about 500 years. Towards the middle of that epocha it was rebuilt, enlarged, and adorned with many magnificent structures, by the empress *Helena*, mother of *Constantine the Great*, and

and by birth a *British* lady. Her piety having induced her to visit the theatre of that grand transaction, the redemption of the world, and having found the city running to decay in many places, she caused all the rubbish which had been heaped on the sacred spots where our Lord suffered and was buried, to be cleared away; and, as the historians of those times relate, found the cross on which he died, with those of the two thieves who were crucified with him, and a miracle shewed her that of the saviour of mankind. The rubbish being thus removed from *Mount Calvary* and other sacred places, she caused a magnificent church to be built upon it, spacious enough to inclose them all.

THIS church is still standing and in good repair. Its walls are of stone, the roof of cedar; the east end includes *Mount Calvary*, and the west the holy sepulchre, which is covered with a stately cupola, supported by sixteen massive columns, incrusting with marble. The center of this dome is open at the top just over the sepulchre; and over the high altar at the east end is another cupola: the nave of the church constitutes the choir, and in the inside isles are shewn the places where the most remarkable passages of our Lord's passion were transacted, together with the tombs of *Godfrey* and *Baldwin*, the two first Christian kings of *Jerusalem*. In a chapel, after an ascent of twenty-two steps, is shewn that part of *Mount Calvary* where Christ was crucified, and the very spot where his cross was fixed. Here is a sumptuous altar with three crosses, and before it hang forty-six lamps of great value, which are kept continually burning. Adjoining to this is another small chapel, fronting also the body of the church: at the west end is that of the sepulchre, which is hewn in that form in the solid rock, and has a small dome or lanthorn on the top, supported by pillars of porphyry. The cloister round the sepulchre is divided into sundry chapels appropriated to the several sects of Christians that reside there, such as *Greeks*, *Armenians*, *Maronites*, *Jacobites*, *Copts*, *Abyssines*, *Georgians*, and some others; and on the north-west are the apartments of the *Latins*: those who have the care of the church are obliged to reside there continually, the *Turks* keeping the keys of it, and not suffering them to go out, so that they are even under a necessity of receiving their provisions in at a wicket. At *Easter* the pilgrims paying a fee, are admitted to see the ceremony of that festival performed. Great numbers of them go in on the eve of *Good Friday*, and continue there till *Easter Monday*. That time they employ in visiting all the sacred places, and assisting at all the religious ceremonies performed in them.

Great church described.

The Conclusion of

THIS church is the chief support of the town, the whole trade of the place consisting in accommodating the pilgrims with conveniencies; and the fees which they pay to the government for the liberty of going into it, yield a very considerable revenue; upon which account the sangiac resides here with his officers and soldiers, who, besides the usual dues, frequently extort money from the Franciscans, whose convent is the common receptacle of all pilgrims, and for which they have considerable allowances from the pope and other princes, besides the presents those strangers usually make them at their departure.

Other edifices. BESIDES this great church, some others and a number of chapels were built by the same empress over those places, where any remarkable transactions had been performed, either in or about the city; as one where Christ eat the last supper, having been since destroyed, a *Turkish* mosque was erected over it: another, where the palace of *Caiaphas* stood, and where our saviour was buffeted and mocked; and another at the sepulchre of his blessed mother at *Bethlehem*. These are the principal; but at the south-east part of the city, upon *Mount Moriah*, there is an edifice commonly called *Solomon's Temple*, standing indeed in the place where it anciently stood; but as we are well assured that it was so totally destroyed by the *Romans*, according to our Saviour's prediction, that one stone was not left upon another, it is not easy to guess by whom this mock fabric was raised. The entrance to it is at the east end under an octagonal building, adorned with a cupola roof and lanthorn, and forward towards the west is a fair direct aisle, like that of a church, the whole surrounded with a large square court walled on every side. The extent of this place is 570 common paces long, and 370 broad. In the midst, where stood the *Jewish Sanctum Sanctorum*, there is now a *Turkish* mosque, neither considerable for its largeness nor structure, though making a stately figure by the advantage of its situation. This spacious inclosure is held in such veneration by the *Turks*, that a stranger cannot approach the borders of it without being in danger of forfeiting his life, or, which is worse, his religion. It lies on the top of the mount, opposite that of *Olives*, having the valley of *Jehosaphat* between them; and one may still discern marks of the immense labour it must have cost to level such a spacious area upon so strong and rocky a mountain.

Pilate's house. NEAR this temple is the sangiac's house, said to have been formerly that of *Pontius Pilate*, and before the castle *Antonia*, built by *Herod the Great*. Here are shewn the stairs

the Modern History.

stairs which our Saviour ascended, (at least new ones instead of them; for the old, called *Scala Sancta* are pretended to be at *Rome*); the window or gallery where he was shewn by *Pilate* to his implacable enemies, with the contemptuous words, *Behold the man!* The way he passed through to the place of his crucifixion, called the *Dolorous way*, the spot where he was assisted by *Simon the Cyrenian* in bearing his cross; that where his blessed mother fainted away at the sight of so tragical a spectacle, and where a church was formerly built, but is now gone to decay; and that where *St. Veronica* wiped the sweat off his face with her handkerchief, which received the impression of it. Besides these, a great many other antiquities are shewn to strangers in the city and its environs, particularly the valley of *Jehosaphat* and *Gehinnon*, the field of blood, that part of the garden on *Mount Olivet* where *Christ* prayed in his extreme agony, the place where *St. Peter* denied him, and where he wept for his apostacy.

MOUNT OLIVET Mount Olivet. ^lands near the city on the east side, and is reckoned near a mile in height. On the summit is a chapel built over the place of our Saviour's ascension, on the floor of which, in the solid rock, is shewn the print of one of his feet. The building is but twelve feet in diameter, being of a round form, with a cupola supported by pillars of white marble, and still kept in good repair. It was built by the empress *Helena*, together with a stately temple over, and a monastery contiguous to it, both which are now gone to total decay. The city of *Jerusalem* is still walled round, and has an old castle on the west side; but neither are of any great strength at present, whatever they might have been formerly.

BETHLEHEM, a famed city in its ancient state, but Bethlehem. ^now reduced to a sorry village, is seated on a hill, in a pleasant and fertile plain, about seven miles south from *Jerusalem*. It is still justly celebrated for having been the place of our Saviour's birth, and for the great concourse of Christians who resort to it for visiting the humble grot and manger where he was laid. *St. Helena* erected a noble temple over it, the roof of which is cedar, supported by four stately rows of white marble pillars, ten in a row, and the wall is faced with the same stone. *Hebron*, now called *Elkabil*, the Hebron. ^ancient seat of *David* before he took *Jerusalem*, stands on a ridge of mountains, which overlook a most delicious valley twenty miles south from *Jerusalem*. The old city is now in ruins, but near it is a village with a handsome church, built by *St. Helena*, over the cave where the old patriarchs were buried.

It is now converted into a mosque, and held in great veneration both by *Turks* and *Christians*. *Hebron*, inconsiderable as it is in all other respects, is still the capital of a district called, "The territory of the friends of God," and consisting of about twenty-five other villages.

BESIDES the places just mentioned, there are scarce any other of note in *Palestine*, except *Joppa*, now *Jaffa*, and *Gaza*; the first, once a famed city and *Mediterranean* port, now retaining nothing of its ancient beauty but its charming situation and prospect; and the second, still remarkable for many noble monuments of its former grandeur, such as marble colonades and other fragments; and burying places, with all the tombs of the same stone curiously wrought.

Late
earth-
quakes in
Syria.

BEFORE we conclude this article, it is necessary to observe in regard to *Syria* in general, that it suffered greatly by earthquakes in the year 1759. The spring of this year was unusually dry, the summer temperate, and the autumn, though the rains came on towards the end of *September*, might be esteemed much drier than in other years. On the morning of *June 10*, a slight shock of an earthquake was felt at *Aleppo*; *October 30th*, about four in the morning there was a pretty severe shock, which lasted somewhat more than a minute, but did no damage. In about ten minutes after there was a second shock, but the tremulous motion was less violent, and did not last above fifteen seconds. It had rained a little in the preceding evening, and when the earthquake happened, the west wind blew fresh, the sky was cloudy, and it lightened.

THE same shock was felt at *Damascus*, *Tripoli*, *Seidon*, *Acra*, and along the coast of *Syria*; and *Damascus*, *Acra*, and *Seidon*, had suffered some injury from it. But this was only an alarm to what happened on the 25th of *November*. The morning had been serene, some clouds arose after noon, and the evening was remarkably hazy, with little or no wind. About half an hour after seven at night the earthquake came on: the motion at first was gently tremulous, increasing by degrees, till the vibrations became more distinct, and, at the same time, so strong as to shake the walls of the house with considerable violence; they again became more gentle, and thus changed alternately several times during the shock, which lasted in all about two minutes. In about eight minutes after this was over, a slight shock of a few seconds duration succeeded. The thermometer at *Aleppo* was at 50, and the barometer stood at 28.9, the mercury suffering no

alteration. Excepting a few old walls, *Aleppo* received no fresh marks of ruin; none of the oldest minarets, or spires of the *Turkish* mosques having suffered. Its effects at *Antioch* were more formidable, many houses having been thrown down and some few people killed. It proved fatal to *Damascus*; one third of the city was thrown down, and some accounts made the loss of the inhabitants to amount to 30,000; but in circumstances of such general horror and confusion, little accuracy can be expected, and more especially from the eastern disposition to exaggeration. *Tripoli* suffered rather more than *Aleppo*; three minarets, and two or three houses were thrown down, while the walls of numbers of the houses were rent. At *Seidon*, great part of the *Frank's* *kane*, or inn, was overthrown, and some of the *Europeans* narrowly escaped with their lives. *Acra* and *Lazikia* suffered little, besides rents in some of the walls; but *Saphat*, not far from *Acra*, was totally destroyed, together with the greater part of the inhabitants.

THESE earthquakes occasioned a universal panic all over *Syria*; several other shocks were felt in *December*, and a few very slight ones in *January*; since which time all has been quiet.

C H A P. IV.

Of A R A B I A.

CONTIGUOUS to the provinces we have just now described, lies *Arabia*, the third and last division of the western *Asiatic Turkey*. This country is of very considerable extent, reaching from 13 degrees to $31\frac{1}{2}$ of latitude, and from 43. to 60. of east longitude; that is, $22\frac{1}{2}$ degrees, or 1350 miles from north to south, and 28 degrees, or 1620 miles from east to west. Some modern geographers give it a much greater extent, and others a less; and considering how little we are acquainted with that country, it is no wonder if we find some difference amongst those who have written of it. Whatever its true breadth is, which is computed from *Jodda* on the west, to *Cape Roselda* on the east; it is much contracted in the middle and both ends, especially on the north side, where it runs into a narrow point between *Syria* and *Palestine*, and *Diärbek*. *Arabia* lies between the second, third, fourth, and fifth climates; so that their longest day in the south is about fourteen hours and a half, and in the north eighteen hours and a half. This vast difference

Extent of
Arabia.

Climates.

ference of climates, joined to the nature of the soil in many parts of it, makes the country to be mostly barren, hot, and dry; to afford but little sustenance to man or beast, and consequently to be but thinly inhabited. Such as it is, it is bounded on the east by the *Arabian* or *Persian* gulph, and part of the *Arabian* sea; on the west by the *Red Sea*; on the north by *Palestine* and *Syria Proper*; and on the south by part of the main ocean.

Whence the name of Arabia. THIS country has all along preserved its ancient name among most nations; but when it had it is not agreed. Some derive it from the *Hebrew* ערבי *Harabi*, which signifies a robber or free-booter; as that nation is known to have always been; others from another signification of that *Hebrew* word implying mixture, or a mixt-multitude, which sense is no less agreeable to their character; for there is no room to doubt, but that they have been much intermingled with other nations, and are accordingly styled by the prophet *Jeremiah*, the mixed people that dwell in the wilderness. They were again mingled with the *Sargens*, whose name imports both a thief and inhabitant of a desert; to say nothing of those *Canaanites*, who likewise incorporated with them on being driven out of their country by the *Israelites*.

Division of Arabia. THIS country, though so very large and remote, is perhaps the best described by ancient geographers of any in *Asia*, which is the more remarkable, as its inhabitants are not known to have made any figure in the world, till the decline of the *Roman* empire, when *Heraclius*, then emperor of the east, made use of them against the *Persians*, and formed them to military discipline, of which they appear to have been quite ignorant till then. The whole country is by both ancients and moderns divided into, 1. *Arabia Deserta*, or *Desert*. 2. *Arabia Petraea*, or *Stony*. 3. *Arabia Felix*, or *Happy*. Joined together, they make the largest peninsula in the known world, and under some of the hottest climates of it, part being under the *Torrid-zone*, and the *Tropic of Cancer* passing over *Arabia Felix*. The air on the northern part is vastly hot during the six summer months, the sky being seldom or ever overcast with clouds; but on the southern it is much more temperate, being qualified with refreshing dews, which fall almost every night in great abundance. The very names of the three *Arabiae*, as lying between the second and fifth equinoxes, sufficiently declare the nature of their soil; the northern being extremely barren, and incumbered with high and formidable rocks, the other overspread

with vast mountains of sand: but the southern, deservedly styled the *Happy*, is blessed with an excellent soil, and is extraordinary fertile in many places. Yet, upon the whole, the country is but poorly watered, having very few fountains, springs, or rivers, and these small and shallow, and very little rain, or any other moistening to the land than the dews just mentioned: and, though a little is sufficient to satisfy nature, yet the far greater part of the country does not yield enough for its support; the best of it is found about the sea-coasts, and along the banks of rivers, which are consequently better inhabited; but here even they are obliged to hold most of their markets in the night, by reason of the excessive heat of the day.

THE product of *Arabia* is aloes, cassia, spikenard, frankincense, myrrh, manna, and other valuable gums; cinnamon, pepper, cardamum, dates, oranges, lemons, pomegranates, figs, and other fruits; honey and wax in plenty; and in their seas they have great quantities of the best coral and pearls. Among other domestic animals in this country, the camels, (C) which it breeds in great numbers, are of singular use for carriage, especially for the caravans, and seem purposely created by divine providence for this dry and sultry

(C) There are four sorts of camels, which are thus distinguished: the *Turkman* camel, the *Arab* camel, the dromedary, and the camel with two bunches on his back.

The *Turkman* camel is much stronger, larger, more hairy, and of a darker colour than the others. Its common load is 800 weight, but it sometimes carries much more. This animal cannot bear heat, and is therefore never worked in June, July, or August.

The *Arab* camel seldom carries above 500 weight, but can endure heat, and will subsist on the dry thistles and other plants which it picks up in the deserts as it goes along with its burden. Some have been known to travel fifteen days without water; but if they are suffered to drink as much as they will after such

an abstinence, it is great odds that the quantity will kill them.

The dromedary is only a high breed of the *Arab* camel, from which it differs only in being of a lighter colour and more elegant make, except that instead of the solemn walk to which the others are accustomed, it paces and will go as far in one day as they will go in three.

The camel of two bunches is of the *Persian* breed, and differs only in this single particular from the *Arab* camel. The great strength of these creatures, and their usefulness as beasts of burden, has probably concurred with other causes to prevent the use of wheel carriages in most parts of *Asia*, for few are found, except a clumsy machine used to bring large stones from the quarries.

soil, which affords no water in many days travelling. This creature is so formed and supplied by nature, that it can throw up the liquids of its stomach into its throat, so that during three days it requires no water, and can even subsist a whole fortnight without any. The camels usually carry 600 weight upon their backs, which need never be taken off during the whole journey; for they naturally ~~lact~~ ^{lact} down to rest, and in due time rise with their load. Here are also horses and very fleet, but small and ill shaped, used mostly by those *Arabs* who live upon spoil and robbery.

Complexion and character of the Arabs.

THE *Arabs* in general are of a swarthy complexion, mean stature, raw-boned, and very swift of foot; their voices are effeminate as well as their temper; they have no settled habitations, except those that live on the sea-coast, but rove from place to place, sleeping under tents, which they pitch at night, wherever their conveniency or fancy leads them. *Annianus Marcellinus*, a judicious *Roman* author, gives us the following character of them. "They are a people whom we are neither to wish for our friends nor our enemies; a martial people half naked, clad as far as the groin with painted cassocks, ranging up and down on camels and swift horses, as well in peace as in troublesome times. They are neither used to plow, plant, nor till the ground, but wander from place to place without either house or home, or any constant habitation. They neither are governed by any laws, nor can brook any restraint. They cannot even endure to be long confined to the same soil and climate; their manner of living being always fleeting like ravenous kites, who snatch up their prey in their flight, but never tarry if it requires any time to carry it off. Their food is commonly such venison and fowls as they catch, or milk, or such herbs as fall in their way, knowing nothing either of corn or wine. Their wives they only hire for a time; who, though for a shew of matrimony, they present their husbands with a spear and tent, yet can easily part with them whenever they please. Both sexes are excessively addicted to lust; the women as loose as the men, married in one place, and brought to bed in another, leave their children where they fall, without any farther care of them." This character exactly tallies with their present, as may appear from the relations of those travellers who have had an occasion to visit this country, or the misfortune to fall into their hands. All are unanimous in representing them as a rude and rapacious crew, strolling about in droves, constantly watching after their prey, catching at all that comes within their reach, sly and silent, falling upon you before you are aware, and fleeing

fleeing before you can think of pursuing; sparing neither life nor any thing that falls in their way, but plundering whole countries and caravans, and murdering all that make head to resist.

The *Turks*, however, who have subdued the greater part of them, exert frequently their utmost to keep them in awe. But though *Arabia* is reckoned under their government, it may notwithstanding be more properly said to be rather under their protection than dependence. The cherif of *Mecca*, reputed a descendant of *Mohammed*, is still possessed of very large dominions; and a number of other *Arabian* princes hold themselves independent. Those in *Arabia Felix* are indeed kept under some restraint by the *Turkish* gallies on the *Red Sea*, but the rest are left to range on the mountainous parts; some in the desarts of *Lybia* and *Thebais*, others in the frontiers of *Idumea*, *Syria*, and *Palestine*. These the *Turkish* bashas do what they can to suppress, and often cut off such as fall into their hands. But multitudes still subsist there, by retiring into the mountains and desarts, where no army can come at them. Some nearer *Syria* are a little more orderly, and seek a livelihood by the making of pot-ash; they are *Mohammedans*, of the sect of *Abulmazar*. The rest, more out of reach, being supplied by *Persia* with powder and fire-arms, are the most formidable and mischievous to the *Turks*. Those on the borders of *Egypt* are the poorest and most miserable, except some few to whom the *Turks* give lands, to defend the frontiers against the rest. The grand signor keeps generally 30,000 men in pay to defend the pilgrims that go to *Mecca* and *Medina*, and the caravans against the *Arabs*; and for the same purpose, makes very considerable presents to the cherif of *Mecca*, the greatest of all the *Arabian* independent princes: but notwithstanding all these precautions, they often boldly assail the caravans, and it is not long since they cut off one of no less than 7000 pilgrims, who were on their return from performing their devotions at the tombs of their prophets.

THOUGH the far greater number of the *Arabs* are in effect guilty of the immoral practices attributed to them; yet many of them shew the reverse in their conduct of life, especially such as live in towns, and apply themselves to trade and commerce, to arts and sciences, in which they generally excel. This is more particularly true with respect to the ancient *Arabs*, whose extraordinary performances in physics, astronomy, and mathematics, shew them to have been men of great genius and application. They are even to this day allowed to be very ingenious, subtle, witty, generous, and

The Conclusion of

and great admirers of poetry and eloquence; though, on the other hand, reckoned very superstitious and vindictive. And, as to their living upon plunder, those that reckon themselves the immediate descendants of *Ishmael*, are so far from disowning or being ashamed of it, that they repute themselves the only nation entitled to that way of living; because *Abraham*, the father of their progenitor, is recorded to have sent him away without any portion, from which they infer that he left him the whole world to range in at pleasure. We must not, however, forget that the (D) figures we use

(D) The following letters on the *Arabic* numerals, may not be unacceptable to the curious reader.

Letter from Mr. *M. Jones*, Secretary to the Society of antiquarians in *London*, to Dr. *Bewis*; in which were inclosed some ancient dates found in their willow down part of *London-bridge* in 1758.

S I R,

“I had about two years ago, in some remarks on a date found among the rubbish in taking down the *Black-swan* inn in *Hollorn*, given my opinion, that our numerical characters were first brought into *England* at the return of *Richard I.* from the holy wars, (1) and that probably our people had learned them among the *Saracens*; but that it was some time after this that they were received among us, or our people were convinced of their utility.

Now having looked further into this matter, I continue still of the same mind, and would willingly be informed from you how early the characters were introduced into astronomical manuscripts in *England*, as I know you must have sought after such in the libraries: for

how astronomers could carry on their calculations in the *Roman* way of notation, I am not able to conceive.

The *Arabic*s and *Persians* are said to have had these characters many ages ago; and it is certain they are to be met with in *Arabic* books of great antiquity; but then it is held, that they had them from the more eastern nations: perhaps some of your foreign correspondents may be able to clear up this point.

I shewed you and Sir *Hans Sloane* a little manuscript of recipe's in physic, wherein there are abundance of numeral characters for expressing the subdivisions of weights, used about the time of *Henry III.* The marks are so odd and many, that I cannot represent them without a copper-plate, as we have no type or letter to exhibit them withal. One thing is very singular, that when their number went beyond ten, they were obliged to put the *Roman* numerals over them, to shew their point and value, as

xi xix xx c lxxx m
10.1, 10.9, 20, 100, 1000, 10000,
vi. m. &c.

(1) He came back to *England* in 1124.

in arithmetic are not only allowed to have been invented by them, but do actually retain their ancient form; and, if we may believe the *Portuguese*, who traded with them, several of their princes have fine libraries, with many *Greek* and *Latin* authors complete, of which we have only fragments.

The

soon after, or about this time, they changed the *Arabic* five, 10, to 4 or 9, or drew a stroke through it thus, ④, or ⑨. The invention of printing finally settled their form, as they have remained ever since.

The earliest date in *Arabic* characters that I have met with here, was published in quarto, in the year 1734, by my late worthy friend Mr. *David Casley*, among 150 specimens of various manners of writing (some few of which are still to be disposed of by his widow) is 1297, (2) which some read 'one thousand two hundred ninety-seven'. From the similitude of the last figure, to our present 7, though I think it like enough to the second figure to stand for 'one thousand two hundred ninety-two'.

Some will have it that the *Moors* brought the *Arabic* figures into *Spain* and *Portugal*, in the beginning of the eighth century, when they over-run those countries, from whence we learned them; this I think too far back, as we had then but little commerce; besides, had it been so, we should have met with them frequently in manuscripts of any other times than we do. However, this I chuse to submit to your judgment, and am,

Sir, yours, &c."

Dr. *Bewis's* answer to the foregoing.

Dear Sir,

I am so little versed in matters of antiquity, that I do not know to whom you could have applied, less qualified to give you satisfaction than myself. All I can say is, that it seems to me probable enough that king *Richard's* return from the East might bring us the first notice of the *Indian* or *Arabic* numerals; I always thought the proofs Dr. *Wallis* adduces for their much greater antiquity among us, too precarious to be relied upon; and I find that far better judges are of the same opinion. The oldest manuscript I can remember to have seen, penned in *England*, where these characters are used, was in the library of the late *William Jones*, Esq; R. R. S. and I suppose, passed after his death, with his whole most valuable collection of mathematical books, into the hands of the Earl of *Norcesfield*: it is a large folio, written by *Richard Wallingford*, monk, and afterwards abbot of St. *Albans*, finished in 1326, and intitled *Albion*, consisting of astronomical canons or rules, and tables; the figures of four and five being very like those you have specified in your letter.

(2) See the original in the Cottonian Library Vespasian A. 111. or a strict copy in plate xv. of Mr. Casley's book.

Language.

THE vulgar language used in the three *Arabias* is the *Arabesque*, or corrupt *Arabic*, which is also spoken with some variation of dialect over a great part of the eastern countries. The true ancient *Arabic* is a dialect of the *Hebrew*, and esteemed as very necessary for understanding the Old Testament: it is not commonly spoke, but taught in schools, as

Græc.

After all, perhaps the *Arabians* themselves were not perfectly acquainted with the use of the characters in question, above a century or two before *Richard's* return; in support of which conjecture of mine, I will offer one plain fact to your consideration. We have in the *Bodleian* library an *Arabic* manuscript of *Younis*, a famous astronomer, who flourished at the latter end of the tenth century, as we know from his observations of some eclipses near *Cairo*, recorded in another manuscript of his, brought into *Europe* by *Goliut*, and deposited in the public library at *Leyden*. All the numerals employed in the *Oxford* book, as our learned friend the Rev. Mr. *Cosford* assures me, who collated it at my request, are the *Arabic* figures; and, what is very remarkable, wherever any number is expressed by them, it is immediately after explained in words at length; thus, if 23 is set down, "one hundred twenty and three", immediately follows.

Yours, &c.

Account and representation of the ancient inscriptions before mentioned.

These old dates, as has been said, were found in pulling down part of *London* bridge, in order to its repair, in the year 1758.

N^o. I. is *Anno Domini* 1447, the stone 9½ inches deep, and 16½ inches wide, the letters raised.

N^o. II. is *Anno Domini* 1509, the stone 10 inches deep, and 13½ inches wide. The final character supposed to be the old mark for *Southwark*.

N^o. III. is *Anno Domini* 1514, the stone 9½ inches deep, and 11½ inches wide. The marks between which the date is inclosed, are supposed to be Sir *Roger Achiley's*, lord mayor of *London* in 1511, and, in 1514, senior alderman, perhaps of *Bridgeward*.

It is like they were laid in at three several repairs, in the years specified by their respective dates. They are all as fresh as if new cut, and then in the possession of Mr. *Hudson*, the bridge master.

I.

II.



Greek and Latin among us, and this is the language only of the learned, and that which the *Mohammedans* in general have adopted for their worship.

CHRISTIANITY was first preached in *Arabia* by St. Paul and some others of his eminent disciples, so that it received the light of the gospel from the earliest time; but this light, in many parts was much clouded, if not totally eclipsed, long before the great professor *Mohammed* appeared, whose religion the *Arabs* soon embraced as most suitable to their wicked inclinations. Religion.

THE barrenness of the adjoining parts of *Arabia* to the neighbouring countries, may be a natural reason why it was never conquered; otherwise the spices, balm, gums, and other valuable products of *Arabia Felix*, which they were all sufficiently acquainted with, must undoubtedly have tempted some of them to have made a conquest of it. *Mohammed*, by broaching his new religion, laid the foundation for a new monarchy among the *Arabs*, who before had stood under their own government, divided into many kingdoms, states, and tribes; and since a more illustrious epoch, his religion found so many admirers, that it spread itself over the greatest part of *Asia* and *Africa*, and even over some considerable provinces of *Europe*; for they were his disciples who conquered and founded the four great monarchies or empires of *Asia*, *Perſia*, *Morocco*, and *Fez*, and the great mogul, to say nothing of the several countries they hold in *India*, in all which *Mohammedanism* is universally professed. Progress of the Mohammedan religion.

MOHAMMED was a person of obscure birth and mean fortune, but having had the good luck to get into the service of a wealthy merchant of *Mecca*, and after his death, into the favour of his widow, so far as to be accepted of for her second husband, he saw himself at once secured in the possession of a plentiful estate, which for some years he improved by the advantages of a considerable traffick. Having had little or no education, he was consequently very illiterate, but so far compensated that defect by his subtle and aspiring genius, or rather immoderate ambition, that he quickly grew into the reputation of a prophet and law-giver. It is said, that the falling sickness he was subject to, did, in a great measure facilitate his design, by pretending it to be supernatural, or rather his of divine transports, wherein his soul was waſhed up to heaven, and converted with the deity. A monk named *Sergius*, banished his country for *Nestorianism*, and a person of more learning than honesty, became intimately acquainted with him, and by the help of a renegade *Jew*, assisted him in forming his new religion, which became thus

thus a motley mixture of *Arianism*, *Judaism*, and *Gentilism*; yet so artfully contrived; that it had the appearance of a new religion, not so much founded upon, as levelled against the other three.

THE ground-work of this pretended revelation was, that the *Pagans* were miserably corrupted by their polytheism and idolatries; that the *Jews*, instead of keeping, having perverted the law of *Moses*, God sent the next great prophet *Jesus*, to enforce the true observance of the *Mosaic* law, and to instruct them in a more sublime doctrine; and that the *Christians* having corrupted the doctrine of *Jesus Christ*, which had also been rejected by the *Jews*, God had now sent his last and greatest prophet *Mohammed* with a new and more excellent law, which he was to enforce the acceptance and observation of, not by miracles, as *Jesus* and *Moses* had done, but by the power of the sword. Thus, by acknowledging *Moses* to be a prophet and lawgiver, he endeavoured to gain the *Jews*; by granting *Jesus Christ* to be a greater prophet, which was almost all that the *Arians* allowed him to be, he sought to make proselytes of many of them; and by declaring peremptorily against *Pagan* idolatry and the use of images in *Christian* churches, he obliged the *Iconoclasts*, who with the *Arians* had been expelled the *Roman* empire, and were become very numerous and turbulent in *Arabia*. In another point of view, and of singular consequence, by allowing polygamy, with other carnal irregularities and gratifications, and by promising a profusion of the same pleasures in his paradise, he captivated the libertines and effeminate, insomuch that he found the number of his disciples and adherents to increase much beyond his expectation, though his principal dependance was upon his last and most cogent motive, the sword, as it must force into his religion effectually those whom the other means could be only a kind invitation to. And indeed, he not only made use of this last expedient himself whenever the others failed, but also strictly enjoined it to all his votaries and followers, promising to all those who should lose their lives in that service, a most special kind of beatitude in the other world, and such as could not but inspire their hearts with a more than ordinary zeal for the propagation of his doctrine.

THE magistrates of *Mecca* were, however, so surprized and alarmed at the more than ordinary success of this bold pretender, that they issued out an order for having him apprehended; but he having timely notice of it, fled to *Medina*, before it took effect, and there propagated his doctrine with such

such surprizing ease and celerity, that it soon spread itself on all sides. It happened about that time that the *Saracens*, who had served the Christian emperors in some of their wars against the *Persians*, and did not think themselves sufficiently rewarded, grew to such a height of discontent, that having surprized *Damascus*, they made it the seat of their government for several centuries. These afterwards readily fell in with *Mohammed's* doctrine, as most suitable to their licentious way of living, and made him emperor of *Arabia*.

MOHAMMED thus raised and supported, took upon him the title of cherif or caliph, which signifies both a prince and high-priest. Others say, this title was not assumed by him, but by his successor. Be that as it may, this new monarch began his reign in 622, and had not only strongly established his throne, but greatly enlarged his dominions before his death, which happened ten years after, in 632.

THE short reign of two years of his successor *Ubbazer*, *Mohammed's* successor, did not permit him to make any great conquests; but the next, called *Omair*, subdued *Persia*, *Egypt*, *Palæstine*, and part of *Syria* and *Mesopotamia*. *Omair* was succeeded by *Osman*, who added *Barbary* to his other dominions, and raised that empire to the greatest height it ever arrived to in that succession; for about this time they began to fall into parties and dissensions. *Hali*, *Mohammed's* kinsman, claimed the government, and after some hard struggles obtained it, but was shortly after murdered by *Osman*, who ascending the throne again, made some further additions to the old conquests, particularly *Asia Minor*, *Armenia*, and *Mesopotamia*, all which became subject to the *Mohammedan Saracens*, with the countries abovementioned within the space of 100 years. This was a swift and wonderful progress, but it was such as it pleased the divine providence to permit, as a just punishment for the sins and enormities that had long crept into the eastern empire. *Mohammed* the second of that name, and the twentieth caliph, removed about the year 700, the imperial seat to *Bagdad*, anciently *Babylon*. About 100 years after, *Egypt* revolted, and set up a caliph of its own, to whom the *Arabs* on that side submitted; but that race was, after a series of 300 years, quite routed by the *Turks*; and these again by the *Mameluks*, who held the government about 200 years, till at length, both *Egypt* and all the other dominions of that caliphate were subjected to the *Turkish* empire in 1517, by Sultan *Selim I.* Having thus far premised all that seemed necessary concerning *Arabia* in general, we shall now speak of it more distinctly in respect to its threefold division.

First description of Arabia.

ARABIA DESERTA, now called *Berrii Artistan*, and *Beriara*, is bounded according to modern geographers, on the east by *Diarbec* and the *Persian* territory of *Hierack*; on the west by *Palestine*, and *Arabia Petraea*; on the north by the river *Euphrates* and part of *Syria*; and on the south by *Arabia Felix*, from which it is divided by a long chain of mountains. This country was anciently the abode of the *Israelites*, after their passage of the *Red Sea* ~~about~~ years; and was properly enough called by *Moses*, the Wilderness or Desert; for such it is in reality for the greater part, being intersected almost every where by high barren mountains, and many of its plains being nothing but great sands and heaths, through which travellers must not only carry provisions, but steer by the stars and mariners compass. *Guiland Molpior*, who had gone through some of them, tells us, that there are neither trees, beasts, birds, or trees, nor of pasture to be seen, nor any thing but vast rolling sands and craggy mountains. The lands, however, that lie to the east, along the river *Euphrates*, afford both plants and food for the inhabitants of some cities and towns seated on that part; and there are some plains and vallies that feed great numbers of sheep, goats, and other small cattle, which love to brouze upon such dry lands; but large cattle, except camels, can find here no subsistence.

Manner of living of the Arabs of the Desert.

THE method of the inhabitants of the Desert, is to seek after fresh pastures near rivers, lakes, or other places where they can find water for themselves and cattle; and when they have cleared that ground to look out for another. They are often forced to shift their places sooner than they otherwise would, because their living upon plunder makes them afraid of being surpris'd in their abode, if they should tarry too long in it. They entertain so high an opinion of their descent, that they think it beneath them to follow any mechanic employment, or even to cultivate the land; so that their whole exercise is getting on horseback, and reeding of flocks. They acknowledge no other government than that of their own emirs or princes; and seldom, if ever, have any commerce, much less alliance, with the *Turks* and *Moors*, whom they look upon as baltards and the usurpers of their inheritance. Their emirs have each of them a certain number of cheikhs under them, according to the extent of their dominions. The word cheikh signifies an elder, and is equally applied to governors and men of learning: but the former are lords over a certain number of families, out of which they chuse the soldiery they retain, and send for their plundering expeditions and to guard their respective camps.

In

the Modern History.

In other cases they value themselves much for their fidelity and hospitality to strangers, and especially to those who put themselves under their protection.

THE *Arabs* in general use no other weapons but the spear. *Their arms.* sword, an iron club, and sometimes a hatchet. As for muskets, pistols, much less cannon, they never use them in their wars, or rather pilfering expeditions, except those on the frontiers of *Perzia*, who are sometimes supplied with small fire-arms to annoy the *Turks*. The *Turks* themselves never let them have any, it being death for any of the sultan's subjects to furnish them with any kind of arms or ammunition. The *Arabs* of the Desert are so little used to gunpowder, that the very noise and smoke of it throw them into a panic; but they are very expert marksmen with their darts and spear, and are generally well mounted, and their horses are very swift. They commonly with the best of these horses that their camps, tent the porte, which is all the tribute they pay for it.

SOME of these *Arabs*, by the name of *Bedouins*, have spread themselves as far as *Egypt*, rising from place to place with their wives, children, and cattle. The children go quite naked; the women wear only a blue kind of long shift, and the men a coarse linen jacket reaching down to their knees. They all profess the *Mahomedan* religion, but give themselves little trouble about the disputed meanings of the *Alcoran*. They keep the feasts and fasts of the *Turkish* law with great exactness, and use the same washings and hours of prayer. On the circumcision of a child, which is not performed till old enough to remember what is done to him, they make great rejoicings, and commonly sacrifice an ox or a few sheep, the flesh of which they distribute to the poorer sort. They are reported to be very civil and humane to Christians, whom they suffer to live amongst them with all freedom, inasmuch, that to see their hospitable manner of living in these communities, and to meet them on the high way, in their excursions, one would not believe them to be the same people.

THEY have neither laws, lawyers, nor judges amongst them; the cheikhs reconcile all their differences, and the emir is the only person to whom they appeal from their sentence. They affect an extraordinary gravity in their discourse and behaviour, and look upon the beard to be such a distinguishing gift of providence, that no greater punishment can be inflicted upon them than cutting it off. *Have no laws.* Wives have their respect to their husbands, children to their parents, and friends to each other, by often kissing their beards. *Respect for their beards.* They

Exact genealogy of their horses. They commonly are more careful for the genealogies of their horses than for their own, especially those of an extraordinary breed. The dropping of every colt, extraction, colour, marks, are all attested by a witness, and registered by a cheikh, or man of letters, of which a faithful copy is produced and authenticated when the creature comes to be sold. Some of them bear a price from 1000 to 2000 crowns.

Division of Arabia Deserta.

ARABIA DESERTA is divided into three principalities. 1. *ANNA*, whose chief cities are, *Anna*, on the *Euphrates*, the capital; *Mejheid-Ursin*, *Sumiscabac*, *Thema*, *Anna* on the *Bayan*, *Balsora*, and *Tangia*.

2. *ARGIA*, whose chief towns are, *Argia*, the capital; *Maiden*, *Thaalabab*, *Aladi*, *Dhath*, *Amth*.

3. *CHAVABEDA*, whose chief towns are, *Chavabeda*, *Tangia*, *Maiden*, *Megiarab*.—The principal cities of *Argia* and *Chavabeda* are in all respects unknown to the Arabs, except in the *Arabian tables*, and of the first principality, *Balsora* is of any note.

ANNA was formerly a famous mart town, but now not much frequented. It stands in latitude 33. 57. east longitude 42. 10. on the river *Euphrates*, in a fruitful and pleasant soil, and has but two streets, which are divided by the river. That on the *Mesopotamian* side is about six miles long, but thinly peopled, and by none but tradesmen; that on the opposite side is about six miles in length, and it is there that the principal inhabitants of the city dwell. Every house has some ground belonging to it, and these grounds are loaded with noble fruit-trees, as lemons, oranges, citrons, quinces, figs, dates, pomegranates, olives, all very large and in great plenty. Some of the flat grounds are sown with corn and other grain, which yield likewise a considerable crop. This city is the common rendezvous of all the robbers that infest the country, and from which they disperse themselves into all parts of the desert. Here they meet to consult; here they hold their grand council, and deliberate where to rob next with success. It is with great difficulty that the *Turks*, the *aga*, and the janissaries, who are kept here, can levy the tribute imposed by the *Turks* on all the commodities carried through the city, which is one of the great thorough-fares for the passing of the caravans (E) that go to and from

(E) Having often mentioned here before of these caravans, it will not be foreign to our purpose to say of what is intended by the word. A caravan signifies a company

Aleppo, Tripoli, Damascus, Bagdad, and some other parts of the Turkish empire.

BAL-

pany or assembly of travellers and pilgrims, and more particularly of merchants, who for their greater security, and in order to assist each other, travel together through the deserts, and other dangerous places, which are infested with *Arabs* or robbers. This is the true origin of these associations.

In order to form a caravan, it is necessary to have the permission in writing of the sovereign prince, approved as it were authentically at least by two *sever* of the neighbourhood. That permission must comprehend the number of men, carriages, and quantity of merchandize, of which the caravan is to be composed. These men, to whom the caravan belongs, appoint its officers, and regulate every thing relating to its police or government during the march.

There are commonly four principal officers, namely the caravanbachi, or head of the caravan, the captain of the march, the captain of stay or *and* the captain of the distribution. The first has the untroubled command and authority over all others, and gives them his orders; the second is absolute during the march; the third exerts his authority only when the caravan rests, and encamps in some place; the fourth orders the disposition of every part of the caravan, in case of attack or battle. This military officer has also during the march, the

inspection over the distribution of the provisions, which is conducted under his management, by several inferior officers, who are obliged to give security to the master of the caravan, each of them having the care of a certain number of men, elephants, dromedaries, camels, &c. which they undertake to conduct, and furnish with provisions at their own expense, according to the agreement stipulated.

A fifth officer of the caravan is the paymaster, or treasurer, who has under him a great many clerks and interpreters, appointed to keep accurate journals of whatever happens; and it is by those journals, signed by the superior officers, that the owners of the caravan judge whether they have been well or ill served, or conducted.

Another kind of officers are the *Arabian* mathematicians, without whom no caravan will presume to set out: there are commonly three of them in the large caravans. These officers perform the functions both of quarter-master and of aids de camp, leading the troops when the caravan is attacked, and assigning the quarters where the caravan is appointed to encamp.

Five sorts of caravans are generally distinguished; the heavy caravans, composed of elephants, dromedaries, camels and horses; the light caravans, which have but few elephants; the common caravans, where there are none of those animals; the

BALSORA, or *Bassora*, is situate in latitude 30. 17. east longitude 49. 10. on the confluence of the *Euphrates* and *Tigris*

The horse-; in which they use neither dromedaries nor camels; and, lastly, the sea-caravans, consisting of a number of merchant ships, under the convoy of some men of war: whence it may be observed, that the idea of a caravan is not so entirely restrained to the land, but that there may also be marine caravans.

The proportion observed in the heavy caravan is as follows: when there are 500 elephants, they add 1000 dromedaries and 2000 horses at least; and then the escort is composed of 4000 men on horseback. Two men are required for leading one elephant, five for three dromedaries, and seven for eleven camels. This multitude of servants, together with the officers, and the passengers, whose number is not fixed, serve to support the escort in case of a fight, and render the caravan more formidable, and consequently more secure. The passengers indeed are not, according to the laws and usage of this mercantile cavalcade, obliged to fight; but in case of refusing so to do, they are not intitled to any provisions whatever from the caravan, even though they should offer to pay an extra price for them.

The officers and servants are paid every *Monday*, unless it be a new or full moon, in which case the payment is put off till the next day: they begin with paying the meancst of the servants.

Ev elephant is mounted by w; it is a lad nine or ten years old, brought up to that exercise, who drives the elephant, and pricks it now and then, in order to fire it, in a fight. The same lad loads also the firearms of two soldiers, who mount the elephant with him. The day appointed for setting out, is never altered.

In order to be better able to bear the weight, the traders use drawers and stockings, made of a sort of cotton, extracted as some travellers tell us, from that kind of stone which the ancients called amianthus, which being duly beaten and pressed, is proper to be spun, and is said to be incombustible.

As most of the Arabian princes have no other means to subsist by but their robberies, they keep spies, who give them notice when the caravans set out, which they sometimes attack with superior force, assaulting chiefly the center, in order to separate the company, and carry off if possible, the vanguard, wherein they pretty often meet with good success. When they are repulsed, they generally come to some agreement, the conditions of which are pretty well performed, especially if the assailants prove to be natives of *Aravia*; but in case the caravan be beat, it is absolutely deprived of all its treasure, and the whole convoy made slaves; but they shew a little more mercy to the prisoners.

Tigris into the *Persian* gulph. It was once famed for a market-place, still standing, to which all the *Arabian* merchants

Sometimes the taking of one caravan only is enough to enrich those princes.

) As the plague rages very often in the East, they are obliged to use great precautions, to prevent the caravans from carrying that dreadful distemper into the places through which they pass, or from being themselves infected with it. When therefore they arrive near a town, the inhabitants and people of the caravan hold a solemn conference concerning the state of their health, and very sincerely communicate to each other the state of the case, if there be really any danger to fear on either side. When there is just reason to suspect any contagious distemper, they amicably agree that no communication whatever shall be suffered between them; and, if the caravan stands in need of provisions, they are conveyed to them with the utmost precaution over the walls of the town.

The profits made by the commerce of these caravans, whilst upon the march, are very extraordinary; and this is what engages a great number of persons to join with the caravans, and render the toil and inconveniencies of the journey less insupportable: and indeed those fatigues are not small. These travelling merchants must resolve to pass everywhere such provisions and other conveniencies as they find, and not permit delicacy

and ease to get the better of their desire of honest gain by such traffic. A trader must, like an heroic general, not mind the frightful confusion of languages and nations, the fatigues of long marches, and the exorbitant duties and imposts paid at certain places: neither must he regard the audacious robberies and subtle tricks, to which he cannot help being exposed among that multitude of vagabonds, who frequent the caravan; with no other view but to live at the expense of the weak and incautious. These last inconveniencies indeed may be prevented, at least with regard to the most precious merchandizes, by putting them into the strong and curious trunk of the caravan, which, like many in *Europe*, have variety of curious locks, that cannot be opened but by those who know the knack of them.

A great many caravans, some more, some less numerous, set out from *Erzerum*, the capital of that part of *America* which is under the dominion of the grand signior. Some of them consist of *Armenians* only, as those which carry silks to *Iocat*, and to *Constantinople*: they commonly set out in *September*.

The caravans of *Siberia*, at present, enter into the territories of *China*, by *Selinginskoy*, situated in the 52d degree of north latitude, on the eastern bank of the river *Selinga*, by virtue of a late treaty of commerce

chants for a good way about used to resort, as to an exchange, which made trade to flourish. The prince of Bal-

merce between *Russia* and the emperor of *China*; whereas formerly they used to pass through *Nerzinskoy* and *Argun*.

There are sea-caravans from *Constantinople* for *Alexandria*.

The caravan of *Nubia* goes twice a year into *Egypt*. It passes through *Gary*, a place on the left bank of the *Nile*, at a journey of three or four days on this side of *Dongola*. There the merchants of *Sannar*, the capital of *Fungit* those of *Gondar*, the capital of *Ethiopia*, and many others from divers parts of *Africa*, meet at a certain time, when they know the caravan is to arrive. Then, setting out from *Gary*, the caravan leaves the banks of the *Nile*, and crossing the deserts of *Lybia*, arrives, after a march of thirteen days, into a valley, which is thirty leagues long. This valley, which extends almost from north to south, is planted with palm-trees, and very well cultivated, because good water may be found by digging only one foot deep in the ground.

After some days rest in this agreeable place, the caravan marches a whole day between steep mountains, in an even but narrow road; after which it arrives in a narrow pass, through which it crosses that chain of mountains running along the *Nile* on the side of *Lybia*, and comes at last to *Manfelout*, a town in *Upper Egypt*, where the duties to the prince are paid in black slaves, and where the caravan meets the *Nile* again, for the first

time from its setting out from *Gary*.

The first danger in so difficult a march is, that the caravan being to cross immense plains of sand, where it is impossible to observe or discover the least track of a road, if the guides should happen to lose their way in those unknown countries, the provision of water necessary to conduct them directly to the place where they are to go, and more, must infallibly fail them by such a delay, which is frequently of several days journey. In such a case the mules and horses die with fatigue and thirst in those burning deserts; and even the camel, notwithstanding their extraordinary power to subsist without water, soon meet with the same fate; and the people of the caravan, wandering in those frightful deserts, generally perish also.

The danger is infinitely still greater, when a south wind happens to rise in those sandy places. The least damage it occasions is to dry up the leathern bags wherein is kept the provision of water for the journey. This wind, which the *Arabs* stile poisoned, often stifles in a moment those who have the misfortune to be then travelling: to prevent which they are obliged to throw themselves immediately on the ground, covering their faces close to the burning sand, which surrounds them on all sides, and covering their hands with some linen for that purpose, lest, by breathing, they

sera gives full liberty to all nations to come and trade to his capital, where they are so civilly used, and such good order kept,

they should swallow infallible death, which this wind disseminates every where within its power of circulation. Notwithstanding those dangers, trade, and the desire of gain, induce a multitude of people to run those hazards.

There arrives likewise at *Cairo*, every year, a numerous caravan from *Tripoli*, to which the merchants of *Algiers*, *Tunis*, and *Morocco* join themselves, as well as those who go in pilgrimage to *Mecca*, though devotion is not the only motive of their journey. This caravan is much less numerous on its return, because the greatest part of those merchants who went by land, with only money, and very fine merchandizes, having employed their effects at *Mecca* in buying Indian commodities, which are bulky, embark at *Alexandria*, and return by sea to *Algiers*.

Every year also several caravans come into *Egypt* from *Syria*, but the time of their arrival and setting out is not fixed. The journey of those caravans is not so difficult nor dangerous as of some others, because the deserts which separate the two countries, are crossed in three days, and there is no scarcity of water. They meet even on the road with several caravanferas, in which the travellers and their cattle are furnished gratis with necessaries; so that these caravans enjoy all possible conveniences, especially the rich people among them, who de-

vertheless, live very soberly during their journey.

The caravanferas just mentioned, are places appointed for receiving and loading the caravans. They are commonly large square buildings, in the middle of which there is a very spacious court. Under the arches or piazza's that surround them, there runs a bank or elevation, raised some feet above the ground, where the merchants, and those who travel with them in any capacity, take up their lodgings as well as they can, the beasts of burden being tied to the foot of the bank: over the gates that lead into the court, there are sometimes little rooms, which the caravanferaskeepers, or stewards or keepers of the caravanferas let out at a very high price, to such as have a mind to be private.

The caravanferas in the east are something in the nature of our capital inns in *Europe*, with this difference, however, that in the caravanferas little accommodations or provisions are met with either for man or beast, all persons being obliged to carry almost every thing with them.

Most of these buildings are owing to the charity of the *Mahometans*; and the greatest lords, either out of devotion or vanity, spend prodigious sums in founding them, especially if they happen to be in a dry, sandy, and desert place, whither the water is to be conveyed from a great distance, at a vast expence;

kept, that one may go safe through the streets at all hours of the night. He is tributary to the *Turk*, and has his chief revenue

expence; for there is never a caravanfera without a well or spring of water.

There are few large towns in the East, especially in the dominions of the grand signior, the king of *Persia*, and the grand mogul, but have some of those buildings. The caravanferas of *Constantinople*, *Ispahan*, and *Agra*, the capitals of the empires of *Turkey*, *Persia*, and *Mogul*, are the most famous, with regard both to their number and magnificence. In these the foreign merchants have most of their warehouses; for in these three cities there are several caravanferas, which, besides the common construction, have several safe and convenient apartments, both for the merchants and their merchandizes.

The emperor *Mahomet IV.* caused such caravanferas to be built at some distance from one another between *Constantinople* and *Damascus*, and appointed considerable revenues for their maintenance. There all travellers, whether Christians, *Jews*, or *Mahometans*, are equally well received.

There are also at *Cairo* in *Egypt* very fine caravanferas, which are always full of merchandizes and people; and, as they afford no inconsiderable revenue, this is a sufficient motive for the great lords of the country to build them. The *Nubians*, *Abyssinians*, and other nations of *Africa*, who resort to *Cairo*, have there each a particular caravanfera, where they always

lodge. The same must be observed of the merchants of *Aleppo*, *Damascus*, *Constantinople*, and other trading towns. These caravanferas are esteemed sacred dwellings, where it is not permitted to insult any person, or to pillage any of the effects which are deposited there. They even carry their precautions so far, as not to suffer any man who is not married to lodge there, because they are of opinion, that a man who has no wife is more dangerous than another. It is to the interest of the proprietors of this sort of caravanferas, that travellers are indebted for the good order and security they meet with.

The caravanferas of *Schiras* and *Caspas*, two considerable towns in *Persia*, have also a very great reputation, and are little inferior to those of the capital.

Besides the caravanferas, which in the East serve instead of great inns, and furnish accommodations for the merchants, there are some also at *Ispahan*, which may be stiled bazars, or arched halls, where there are shops and warehouses, wherein several sorts of merchandizes and delicate pieces of workmanship are exposed to sale in the day-time, and locked up at night; and for which the keeper of the caravanfera answers, in consideration of a certain fee or perquisite. He also keeps an account of all the merchandizes that are sold upon trust; for he is obliged to book them regularly in his register, with the names of the buyers.

revenue from the exchange of money, for the horses and camels sold there; but chiefly from his palm-trees, of which he has a plantation reaching almost ninety miles in length, and none dare touch a date till they have paid him a certain custom. The horses which are bred here are in great request, and sell at a vast price. The income of the prince from these articles of money, horses, camels, and dates, is so great, that he is able to lay up a very considerable sum every year, all the other charges of his tribute and government defrayed.

BALSORA has been under the *Turks* ever since the year 1668, and like all other cities tributary to that dominion, is governed by a *cadi*, appointed by the prince. Ships from all the maritime parts of *Asia* and *Europe* resort to it. The *English* and *Dutch* have their factories here, which are very considerable, and maintained by their *East-India* company to carry on their commerce with *China*, *Japan*, and other parts of *India*, and for dispatch of their letters from all parts into *England* and *Holland*, by way of *Damascus* and *Aleppo*, which are carried by *Arabs* hired for the purpose, who are very swift of foot. What still increases the opulence of *Balsora* is, that the *Persians* in their caravans or pilgrimages to *Mecca*, take this city in their way, and not only pay considerable duties to the government, but exchange many rich commodities. The baseness of the coin, having a greater alloy than that of other nations, and being exchanged by the merchants at a great disadvantage, is one great abuse here, which is yet winked at both by the porte and prince, because it brings in a considerable profit.

THIS city, though pretty large, has nothing extraordinary in its buildings, either public or private, being built after the *Turkish* manner. The whole country about it lies so low, that if it was not for a stout dyke or bank, which extends all along the coast, it would be in danger of being laid under water. This bank is between three and four miles long, and built of large square stones, so well cemented together, that the water cannot affect it, though the sea runs strong, it being the very end of the *Persic* gulph.

ARABIA PETRÆA is the most western of all the three *Second division of Arabias*, and is now called *Dag-lik Arabistan* by the *Turks*, *wisfan* of *Bad Basaab Arabistan* by the natives, and by others *Batha-Arabia*. *labul*, but most commonly the beglebergage of *Bosra* so

buyers and sellers. He also is what have been sold in the caravanfara, on the seller's paying to demand the payment of the sums due to the merchants, for two per cent.

named from that capital. It is bounded on the north by *Syria* and *Palestine*; on the east by *Arabia Deserta* and part of *Arabia Felix*, which likewise bounds it on the south; and on the west by the *Red Sea* and the isthmus of *Suez* or *Egypt*. Its extent from north to south is computed to be 180 miles, and from east to west 150. It includes part of ancient *La-mea* on the north, and some extend it a good way into the territory of *Mecca* on the south. The northern part, abounding with barren mountains, is thinly inhabited, and is under the *Turks* in the beglerbegate of *Cairo*; but the southern is both fertile and well peopled, and governed by its own princes, except some places along the coast. It was called *Petræa* or *Stony*, from its rocks, though some rather derive it from *Petra*, its ancient capital, now commonly supposed to be *Harach* or *Horac*, lying on the isthmus near the frontiers of *Egypt*. Though in most respects it much resembles *Arabia Deserta* for its stony, sandy, and barren grounds, yet it yields in some parts sufficient nourishment for cattle, whose milk and camels flesh is the chief food of its inhabitants. There are some other parts which are quite uninhabited and impassable.

Chief
places.

THE chief places of *Arabia Petræa* are *Bosra*, *Tabuc*, *Acra*, *Horac*, *Sur*, *Madian*, *Rephaim*, *Gadash Burneah*, the mountains *Horeb* and *Sinai*, the wildernesses of *Piba-biroth*, *Elim*, and some others mentioned in scripture.

“*BOSRA*, the capital, seated in the midland, on the back of *Palestine*, on the other side *Jordan*, and about 150 miles from the lake, or sea of *Galilee*, has neither buildings nor any thing worth mentioning in it. *Horac*, built near or upon the ruins of the ancient *Petra*, is now but a small place, but formerly was a very strong fortress, situate on a rock. It made a long and stout resistance against the *Romans*, and was for its impregnable strength, used by the foldans of *Egypt* for the repository of all their riches. All the other just mentioned places are of no consideration, except *Tor*, now called *El Torre* and *Tor*, which has a good harbour with some trade, and about 400 houses inhabited by some Christian merchants, *Jews*, and *Moors*. Goods are here unladen to be carried by land to *Suez*, on the isthmus, 120 miles north-west at the end of the west gulph, which is not navigable for large vessels any farther than this town, by reason of the rocks. Near *Tor* is the garden which *Moses* is said to call *Elim*. It is planted with palm-trees, and some *Greek* monks who have a monastery here, make some tolerable profit of the dates, which are the best in the country. Near the cattle of *Tor* the *Israelites* are generally supposed to have

have crossed the *Red Sea*. In the way from *Tor* to *Mount Sinai*, the vallies abound with cassia-trees, which produce the frankincense; and among other trees that grow on these mountains, there is a sort which bears a kind of wool like cotton, though neither so fine nor white.

THE Desert of *Sinai* exceeds all the rest of the country in height, and is encompassed with hills and high rocks for ten or twelve miles. However, the road or ascent to it is easy, having been cut into the solid rock, like stairs quite to the top, by order of the empress *Helena*; but most passengers chuse to go it on foot, being uneasy to the camels. It is called by the *Arabs* *Gibel israhel*, or *Moses's Mountain*; and at the foot of the ascent is a well built convent. The monks pretend to shew the very place where *Moses* fasted forty days, and received the two tables of stone. Towards the north side of the plain lie the mounts *Horeb* and *Sinai*; the latter is the higher, and is called *St. Catherine*. Both are very steep and high, but not proportionably broad, and though a road is all the way cut up to them, yet the ascent is very difficult.

At the foot of *Mount Horeb* is a *Greek* monastery, called *St. Saviour's*, where pilgrims lodge. It stands at the end of a large green plain, where it is said *Moses* kept *Jethro's* flocks, and saw the burning bush. The building is large but irregular, and consists of several courts; but the church is a noble edifice of fine workmanship both within and without. The pavement is of marble curiously laid in form of roses, and the ornaments, plate, altars, and other utensils are very rich and exquisitely fine. The monastery is well supplied with water from a spring that descends from *Mount Horeb*. On the top of the mountain, and all about, there is a considerable number of cells and chapels, the former abode of many monks and hermits; but they are now mostly empty, the religious people having been driven away by the *Arabs*; and the steps, of which there were 14,000, that now lead to the mount, are in many places broken and shattered, though in others still very good and easy of ascent. On *Mount Horeb* is likewise shewn the place where the *Israelites* worshipped the golden calf.

At a considerable distance on the same plain, and near another monastery, called the convent of the forty martyrs, stands the rock which *Moses* smote with his rod, and brought forth from it a maraculous supply of water. It has a great many holes at which the water flowed out on both sides. There are no other rocks nor stones near it. The tops of those mountains command a noble prospect to the *Red Sea*.

and all the adjacent country. Several other places are here shewn, which are not so easily credited by those who are acquainted with the scriptures; as the place where *Corah*, *Dathan*, &c. were swallowed up; the stone on which the brazen serpent was erected; the hillocks where the idolaters were buried by *Moses's* order; the two hollow stones ¹ which *Aaron* cast the golden calf, &c. for *Corah* and his rebellious crew perished near *Mount Harmah*, and not in *Horeb*; the brazen serpent was set up at *Mount Hor*, ¹ and the rock out of which *Moses* fetched the water, ^k is said to have been in the wilderness of *Zin*, all of them far enough from *Sinai* and *Horeb*. To these might be added the city of *Midian* or *Madian*, where *Jethro* ¹ *Moses's* father-in-law, dwelt, and where he staid with him forty years; *Rephidim*, the place where the *Amalekites* fell foul upon the rear of *Israel* at their first coming out of *Egypt*; *Kadesh Barneah*, the station of the *Israelites*, whence *Moses* sent the spies to examine the promised land, and several others, all in this province; but whose true situation it is impossible to know with any tolerable certainty. As for the mountains of *Sinai* and *Horeb*, they stand in latitude 28. and 29. and east longitude 34. on the southern verge of this province, near the northern coasts of the *Red Sea*.

Third division of Arabia.

ARABIA FELIX, by far the largest and most considerable of the three *Arabias*, is called by the inhabitants *Yeman*, *Yaman*, and *Hyaman*, from one of the largest districts in it, which has given name to all the rest. It has had the title of *Felix*, or *Happy*, from its extraordinary fertility, and constant verdure, but was anciently called *Saba*, *Sabea*, and *Seba*, by the sacred writers, by *Josephus*, and *St. Jerom*, from *Seba*, the son of *Cush*, the grandson of *Ham*, who was properly the founder of a city of the same name, anciently celebrated for its opulence, and more particularly its plenty of gold and silver. This *Arabia* is situate on the south of *Petra* and *Deserta*, and surrounded on all the other three sides, by the sea, as by the *Red Sea* on the west, the gulph of *Persia* and *Ormuz* on the east, and the ocean or *Arabian sea* on the south. The ancients were not content to give it the title of *Happy*, but added that of *Sacred* to it, on account of its fine aromatic gums and fragrant woods, which were used in sacrifices, such as frankincense, myrrh, aloes, nard, cinnamon, cassia, cedar, and other odoriferous woods, which are in such plenty that the natives use them for common fuel. And, indeed, if we were to judge of this *Arabia* by what the

¹ NUMB. xxix 3. & seq.

^k Ib. xx.

ancients have launched out in its praise, we should imagine it the richest and most delightful land in the whole world. It was reckoned the most populous province in all *Asia*, and was in such esteem among the *Romans*, even so late as *Ammianus Marcellinus*'s time, that he gives us this delicious character of, or rather panegyric upon, it. "The *Happy Arabians* are so called, because abounding in corn, cattle, vines, and odoriferous spices of all kinds. They are well furnished with roads and quiet harbours for fishing, with trading towns standing very thick. Besides most wholesome springs of medicinal waters, they enjoy the benefit of many brooks and rivers very pure and clear, and a temperature of air exceeding healthful." If we were to judge of this character by the last part of it, what this author says must go for nothing; for the air and climate cannot be different from what they were in his time; and how he can extol the temperature of a country which lies two parts in three within the tropics, cannot be well conceived. What he says of trading towns and commodious havens might indeed be true then, but is since quite altered. The *Red Sea* was very much frequented by merchant-ships, before the *Cape of Good Hope*, and the passage by it to the *Indies*, was found out; and *Arabia* was the market where all the commodities brought from *India*, *China*, and all the eastern islands, were sold to the merchants of *Egypt* and *Barbary*, and brought by them over land to *Cairo* and other ports in the *Mediterranean*, whither the *English*, *Italians*, and other *European* nations, came to take them off their hands: but now the goods from *India* and *Persia* are brought to us directly by sea, the commodities of *Arabia* are become less useful, and our commerce with it consequently is considerably decreased. However, if the accounts of the ancients concerning this *Arabia*, were really true, and not taken upon trust, they sufficiently shew how surprizingly it must have been altered since they wrote; for at this time nothing like that so much exaggerated fecundity, much less that great number of cities and inhabitants appears, except in some few spots here and there, which bear but a very small proportion with the rest; the midland being either sandy or mountainous, and consequently all dry and barren: so that the sea-coasts and the lands along the banks of rivers, are the only places that deserve the name of fertile or happy. But it may well enough deserve those titles by its fine spices and odoriferous plants, more especially for its frankincense, which is peculiar to it. To this we may add the coffee-trees, but which are found only in three or four districts of the province of *Yemen*, properly so called, and

*Present
state and
products.*

grow in the mountainous parts of it. It likewise produces abundance of other exquisite fruits, is watered with fine springs, refreshed with agreeable breezes, and enjoys a constant verdure all the year round; but even in this noble province some parts of it are almost as bare, as the *Patrea* or *Deserta*, and produce nothing for thirty or forty miles together, especially where it runs contiguous to the *Red Sea*.

ARABIA FELIX, is commodiously divided into the following maritime and inland districts.

Muritime districts.

ON the sea coasts are 1. The kingdom or principality of *Mecca*, whose chief towns are *Mecca*, *Medina*, *Egra* or *Haggiar*, *Giedda*, *Yambo*, and *Zebith*. 2. The maritime *Tebamah al Dhufar*, in which are the cities *Dhufar*, *Tazu*, *Adind*, and *Traza*. 3. The principality of *Zebith*, *Zebeth*, *Zaba* or *Saba*, with the towns of *Ziveth*, *Gilan*, and *Chalafsea*. 4. The kingdom of *Mocha*, or *Aden*, with the towns of *Mocha*, *Aden*, and *Laghi*. 5. The Kingdom of *Xael*, or *Hadramat*, in which are the towns of *Xael* and *Dofar*. 6. The kingdom of *Seger* or *Aliibanli*, with the cities of *Aliibanli* and *Guebelhamen*. 7. The principality of *Yemen*, with the towns of *Calbat al Quelbat*, and *Mufcate*. 8. *Vodune*, with the towns of *Sohar* and *Borfean*. 9. *Mofcalat*, with the city of its name, *Nuban*, and *Suckula*. 10. *Barbaim*, with the towns of *Ekatif*, *Lafab* or *Laffach*, *Abfu*, and *Bisca*.

Inland districts.

IN the inland are the principalities or kingdoms of 1. *Fe-maman*, with the capital of its name, *Chadoia*, and *Tima*. 2. *Higiaz*, *Hagiaz*, *Haggiaz*, with the towns of *Casailo*, *Bain*, *Nabel*, *Garn*, and *Almanfel*. 3. *Thebama*, with the towns of *Zamza* and *Saada*. 4. *Furtach*, with the capital of its name, *Marhi*, and *Negram*. 5. *Oman*, with the towns of *Ziriffdui*, and *Marair*. To these we may add *Ormus*, formerly a considerable *Arabian* kingdom, which though denominated so only from a small rocky island of a few miles extent, yet had some large territories on the terra firma; but the *Persians* having conquered them in 1622, the kingdom was wholly destroyed, and the island is now become quite inconsiderable. The *English* assisted the *Persians* in the reduction of *Ormus*, and dispossessing the *Portuguese*, who held it for near one hundred years, and grew so wealthy in it, that they had built them most magnificent houses, insomuch that the city of *Ormus* was esteemed in their time one of the finest in *Asia*.

Pilgrimages to Mecca and Medina.

THE most celebrated places of *Arabia Felix*, are *Mecca* and *Medina*, and particularly on account of the *Pilgrimages* of the *Mohammedans* to them. A caravan goes every year from *Damascus*, or *Aleppo*, to the tomb of *Mohammed*, and

generally sets forward in *July*, about which time shoals of pilgrims arrive from *Persia*, the *Moguls* territories, *Tartary*, and from all other countries where *Mohammedanism* is professed.

SOME days before the caravan sets out, the pilgrims make a general procession, called the procession of *Mohammed*; in order, as they say, to obtain a happy journey, through the prophet's intercession. Those most distinguished by birth or riches appear in the finest habits, mounted on horses sumptuously caparisoned, and followed by slaves, with led hories, and camels covered with costly ornaments. The pilgrims, called the issue of the race of *Mohammed*, begin the march cloathed in long robes, with green ~~bonnets~~ ^{hennins} on their heads: they walk four in a rank, and are followed by several musicians, after whom come the camels, with two kettle drums in their front, and many trumpets, the noise of which inspire these creatures with a kind of fierce air. Next to these come on horseback, the other pilgrims, six in rank, followed by carriages full of children, whom their parents intend to present to the prophet. These are surrounded with crouds of singers, who at the same time use a thousand extravagant geitures. Then succeed 200 cavaliers cloathed in bears skins. They have the management of small pieces of cannon mounted on their carriages, which they discharge every hour. These cannon are escorted by another company who wear tygers skins, in the form of cuirasses. Their long moustaches, *Tartar* bonnets, and huge scymitars give them a very warlike appearance. Before the musti walk 400 men cloathed in green, with yellow mitres on their heads. He himself is accompanied by the doctors of the law, and a number of singers. *Mohammed's* standard is carried immediately behind him, made of green satin embroidered with gold. It is guarded by twelve horsemen in coats of mail, with silver maces ~~in~~ ⁱⁿ their hands, accompanied with trumpets, and men who strike continually in concert on plates of silver. Next follows the pavillion to be presented before the tomb of *Mohammed*, borne by three camels adorned with green feathers and plates of silver. It is of crimson velvet embroidered with gold, and set with jewels of all colours. Lastly, the *basna* of *Jerusalem* preceded by drums, trumpets, and other instruments, brings up the rear.

THE procession being ended, every pilgrim thinks of nothing but his departure for *Mecca*, to which indeed all *Mohammedans* are under a strict obligation to make a pilgrimage, either in person or by proxy, once at least in their life. In their progress they pray frequently every day, always with their

their face turned to that city, on which they bestow the epithets of magnificent, the mother of cities, and the house of God.

*Mosque,
Sec. of
Mecca
described.*

MECCA is situate in latitude 21. 58. ^{east} longitude 40. 30. about forty-two miles east from the *Red Sea*, on the river *Eda*, but in such a barren territory, that it affords no kind of sustenance, either to man or beast. The greatest supply the inhabitants have of necessities, is from the pilgrims and caravans they come with. No Christian is allowed to come nearer it than five miles, and the punishment for so doing is to be burnt alive. They are also extremely careful concerning those they let into it, for fear of having the place surprized or plundered, or the treasure rifled, which is said to amount to an immense value. The grand mosque is in the middle of the city, and is the largest, finest built, and best frequented of any in the world. Its roof, high and bold, rises in a stately cupola, with two lofty towers at the end, all which are seen a great way off, and yield a noble prospect, being also finely carved and the cupola covered with gold. It is said to have 100 gates, with as many windows, one over each gate; but the ground of the building being low, there is a descent to it by 10 or 12 steps. They pretend it is situated on the very spot on which *Abraham* built his first dwelling-house, and where *Mohammed* was born. This house of *Abraham*, which they call *Kiaba*, or small square house, is fifteen feet long, twelve broad, and about thirty high. It is girt round with two belts of gold, one near the bottom and the other near the top; the door is of silver, and a golden spout carries off the water which lies on the roof; and the walls are constantly covered with hangings of fine silk and rich workmanship, and the court that incloses it, is surrounded with stately walls, beautified with columns and arches. The house itself is reckoned a place of the greatest devotion, and is never opened but on their feast called *Ramadan*, and some other solemn festivals. Near the door is a black stone of the bigness of a man's head, which is pretended to have been brought from heaven by an angel to *Abraham*, and to have turned black for the sins of mankind: The first man that can kiss it on a certain day is esteemed a saint, but commonly pays dear for his saintship, the people crowding so fast about him to kiss his feet, that he is often stifled by the throng. In the same inclosure is a kind of chapel, built about a well much celebrated throughout the East. They say that the water of that well flows from a spring which God discovered to *Agar* and *Ismael*, when being expelled by *Abraham* his house, they were forced to

to retire into *Arabia*. *Mohammed* availed himself of this well to render the city of his nativity respected by all his followers. He declared, that the water had the virtue, not only of curing all bodily diseases, but also of purifying souls stained with the blackest crimes.

THE pilgrims that come hither are obliged to perform many ridiculous ceremonies; the chief of which are, to strip themselves naked at a place called *Rabbak*, two days before they enter the city, having only a napkin tied about their necks, and another about their middle: in this state of nudity they continue eight days, during which, they neither shave, buy, sell, or kill any thing, nor are allowed to speak harshly to their servants or slaves, on pain of giving some money to the poor, or sheep for sacrifice. When they are admitted into the city, they go seven times round the temple; the three first times with a very quick pace, to shew their readiness to fight for the true worship, as they fancy, of God. They accompany their prayers with antic postures, in imitation of a priest that goes before them, and is their chief posture-master. They next sacrifice some sheep, the greatest part of whose flesh is given to the poor, and then go to the valley of *Mina*, where they shave and pare their nails. From thence they go to mount *Arafat*, a short day's journey from *Mina*, every man carrying forty-two stones to throw at the Devil's head, who, they say, tempted *Abraham* there, when he was going to sacrifice his son, not *Isaac*, but *Ishmael*. On the 10th day, the most solemn of all, the priests preach to them from this mount, after which they go down into the valley, where they sacrifice a prodigious number of sheep, mostly given to the poor. On the 12th day, the sheriff having sent them his blessing, they are at liberty to depart.

THE concourse of pilgrims on these festivals to this city is such, some making their number amount commonly to 200,000; that the weakness it encreases daily. The temple being entered only four times a year, the people from all parts have sufficient notice of it, and time to join the caravans. They commonly offer some considerable presents, and buy up some of the reliques of the place at a dear rate. Those reliques are for the most part the old coverings of the *Kiaba*, which are yearly presented to it by the grand signior on the feast of *Beyram*, or *Turkish Easter*; at which time the old ones are taken off, and being cut into small pieces, are either made presents of, or sold to the pilgrims. People of quality, may, for the sum of an hundred shequins, have the doors of the holy place opened to them at any time, which they chuse to do, to avoid the vast crouds that flock thither

on

The Conclusion of

on the four seasons. Besides this religious traffic, a great fair is kept during the solemnity, in which the richest merchandizes are exposed to sale. The vaults of the mosques, and the shops round them, are filled with prodigious quantities of most sorts of commodities, particularly with precious stones, and scented and other aromatic powders; even the caves in the adjacent mountains are turned into shops.

THIS is but a sketch of the transactions of this superstitious pilgrimage, in which *Thevenot* assures us, upwards of 6000 of one single caravan have died by hot winds, and other difficulties, between *Cairo* and *Mecca*, when he was there. He adds, that the effects of all that die fall to the *hamirag*, who is the person they chuse for their leader; so that these poor people are cheated out of their lives and substance to enrich the priests and officers who conduct them.

It is a vulgar error, that *Mohammed* was the original author of those pilgrimages to this city. The *Arabs*, from time immemorial, used to frequent it in the same manner; and, out of veneration for this place, which they held to have been the house of their progenitor, made it the center of their religion. According to the doctrine of the *Mohammedans*, *Adam* being yet in *Paradise*, which they place in one of the heavens above us, worshipped God in a temple raised by the angels; but, upon his expulsion, having prayed to God to grant him such another upon earth, he obtained a model of it, drawn upon some curtains of light, and the building was placed just where the *kiaba*, or holy house, now stands, that is, perpendicularly under that which the angels resort to in heaven. Here the faithful paid their worship till the flood; but it being then destroyed by the waters, *Abraham* was at length directed by God to build another, which became the place of worship for *Ismael* and his descendants, till having quite polluted it by their idolatry, *Mohammed* was ordered to purify it by consecrating it anew to the worship of the true God. All which fables, together with its being given out to be the very house in which himself was born, being once swallowed down by the *Mussulmen*, that impostor concluded rightly, it would not fail of bringing as great, if not a greater concourse of devotees to *Mecca*, than it had lost by the abolition of its idols.

BETWEEN the cities of *Mecca* and *Medina*, there is an extensive sandy desert, where the dry sands blown up and down by the winds, often overwhelm whole caravans. To prevent this as much as possible, they are not only obliged to observe how the wind blows, to encamp on the opposite side, but likewise to steer by the mariner's compass, as

at sea. The length of the caravan's journey from *Mecca* to *Medina* is about 224 miles, which are performed in about forty days.

MEDINA is situate in latitude 25. 0. east, longitude 39. 12. seven-^{ty}-six miles from the *Red-Sea*, is a plain, watered with the river *Larick*, and covered with stately palm-trees. *Mohammed's* resentment against his fellow-citizens of *Mecca*, who were for banishing him from the place of his nativity, inspired him with a resolution of being revenged upon them. He declared, that *Medina* should be his city, and the seat of empire for him and his successors; whence, by way of excellency, it is so called by the *Arabs*, *Medina* signifying a city in general; and it is sometimes styled *Medina al Nabi*, or, the City of the Prophet. *Mohammed* also ordered, that his sepulchre should be built here; and accordingly, his coffin rests in the great mosque, a structure of vast magnificence, supported by 400 stately columns, and illuminated by 300 fine lamps which hang on them, and are kept continually burning. It has a small cupola covered with plates of silver, and the floor is covered with cloth of gold. It stands almost in the center of the city, and is the most resorted to in the whole world except that of *Mecca*. *Mohammed's* coffin lies under the cupola, and the tomb is exposed to view from the middle to the top of the dome, round about which is a little wall pierced with windows, which are fenced with silver grates. The inside is enriched with stones of immense value, of great size and beauty, especially on that part of the cupola which is over the head of the prophet, and where there is a diamond, one inch thick and two long, presented by sultan *Osman*, the son of *Achmet*. At the feet of the coffin is a rich golden crescent, so curiously wrought, and adorned with such precious stones, that it is esteemed a masterpiece, and of very great value. The coffin is kept covered under a rich pall of gold and silver tissue, and under a canopy of the same precious cloth, both which are annually sent hither by the bashaw of *Egypt*, by order of the grand signior, and with the greatest magnificence. It is commonly carried upon a bed displayed over the back of some stately camel, in company with the rest of the caravan; and when the precious gift is taken off, the beast is no longer to be used in servile drudgery. When laid upon the coffin, the old one is cut into innumerable shreds, and either sold or given away as one of the most valuable presents. The place where the coffin lies, is supported by black marble pillars, and encompassed with a balustrade of silver, hung with such a number of burning lamps, that the smoke darkens the place.

The

The cupola, which is hung with red and white damask, has the epitome of the *Mussulman* faith, embroidered on it in golden *Arabic* characters, GOD IS GOD, AND MOHAMMED IS HIS PROPHET. The croud of pilgrims is so great at the time of their resorting to this mosque, that they can only see the outside of the dome, and some of the treasures that glitter within through the silver grates, as the large diamond and crescent, which are indeed the most valuable curiosities of all; but those who make any long abode in the city, may take a convenient time when there is no croud, and for a certain sum see every particular of the inside at leisure. All true *Mussulmen* are bound by their religion to visit this tomb at least once in their life, and after performing that ceremony, they are looked upon as saints ever after. The rich and great, whose ambition lies another way, are dispensed with for a considerable sum, and by sending some other person in their stead. Christians, of all denominations, are forbid to come within fifteen miles of this city, under pain of being burnt alive as at *Mecca*.

As soon as the caravan, which brings the presents from the grand signor, arrives, the dervises, who have the care of the mosque, appear to receive it. Then the pilgrims, in conjunction with those that came in other caravans, make the whole edifice resound with their shouts of joy, and songs in honour of their prophet. After which, there is nothing but feasting and open rejoicing, till the departure of the caravan.

THE day of departing the pilgrims assemble again, and set out singing some verses of the *Alcoran* with a loud voice. Every one thinks it an honour to supply them with provisions for the whole journey, and they are sure upon their return to meet the congratulations of all the towns from whence they set out. They are honoured every where, and from that time they begin to enter into the possession of all the privileges which their religion grants to those who go to visit the Prophet's tomb. Their pilgrimage screens them from all pursuits on former delinquencies, and, if criminals, renders them perfectly guiltless. The camels also, as above hinted, which have had the honour to bear presents to *Mecca* and *Medina*, are not to be treated afterwards like common animals; they are considered as consecrated to *Mohammed*, which exempts them from all labour and service. They have cottages built for their abodes, where they live at ease, and are well fed and taken care of.

The most powerful *Mohammedan* princes pay the deepest veneration to the sherifs of *Mecca* and *Medina*, considering them

them as of the race and successors of *Mohammed*: they also frequently send them offerings and valuable presents; and, among his other pompous titles, the grand signior in particular styles himself the servant of the two sacred towns of *Mecca* and *Medina*.

C H A P. V.

Of the Eastern Asiatic Turkey, containing the Provinces of Diarbekr, Turcomania, and Georgia.

WE are now come to the eastern division of *Asiatic Turkey*, which comprehends the provinces of *Diarbekr*, *Turcomania*, and *Georgia*, of all which we shall treat in this chapter.

DIARBECKR in its largest extent comprehends the provinces of *Diarbekr*, properly so called, *Yerack*, and *Curdistan*, in general, which were the ancient countries of *Mesopotamia*, *Chaldea*, and *Affyria*, with *Babylon*. It is called *Diarbekr* *Diarbeker*, or *Diarbekr*, as signifying the duke's country, from the word *Dhyar* a duke, and *Bekr*, country. It extends along the banks of the *Tigris* and *Euphrates* from north north-west to south-east; that is, from *Mount Taurus*, which divides it from *Turcomania* on the north, to the inmost recess of the *Persian* gulph on the south, about six hundred miles. And from east to west, that is from *Persia* on the east, to *Syria* and *Arabia Deserta* on the west, in some places two hundred, and in others about three hundred miles; but in the southern or lower parts, not above one hundred and fifty. As extending also from the thirtieth to the thirty-eighth degree of latitude, it lies under part of the fifth and sixth climates, whose longest day is about fourteen hours and a half, and so in proportion, and consequently enjoys a good temperature of air as well as in the greater part of it, a very rich and fertile soil. There are indeed, as in all hot countries, some large deserts in it, which neither bear any sustenance for men or cattle, nor have any inhabitants. Being a considerable frontier towards the kingdom of *Persia*, it is very well guarded and fortified; but as for those many cities, once so renowned for their greatness and opulence, they are at present almost dwindled into heaps of ruins. *Bagdad*, *Mossul*, *Carahmed*, and a few more do indeed continue to be populous and wealthy, but the rest can scarce be called by any other name than that of sorry places.

The Conclusion of

THE river *Euphrates* and *Tigris* having almost their whole course through this country, it will not be improper to give here a short description of them.

Euphrates described. THE *Euphrates* is called by the ancient *Hebrews* *Pharar*, and by the *Arabs* *El Farat*, or *El Frat*, and by the *Turks* *Mourat*. Both *Hebrews* and *Arabs* often stile it by *wah*, of excellency *Nabar* and *Nehir*, the river. It is justly esteemed one of the most considerable rivers in all *Asia*, if not of the whole globe. Its source is in the mountains of the north-east corner of *Turconania*, or in those of *Ararat*, and its course across that province is almost directly west, from which it afterwards bends down southward at the foot of *Mount Taurus*, and making the west boundary, passes between *Syria* and *Diarbeck*; then running along the eastern limits of *Arabia Deserta*, it goes through the provinces of *Yerack* or *Chaldea*, and *Auxa*, where it waters a great number of towns, in particular that of *Hella*, which is above a day's journey from *Babylon*: from thence it begins to flow with a gentle course towards the city of *Aria*, where its waters are not only obstructed but troubled by the violent reflux of the *Persic* gulph, though above thirty leagues from it. At last it joins the *Tigris* near the town of *Carnab*, at the distance of about twenty leagues from the gulph. Its course is for the most part very pleasant, and through many fertile and delightful plains, and its banks are adorned with a constant verdure, from a great number of palm or other trees that grow upon, and the noble pasture grounds on each side of them. Its waters are esteemed very wholesome, and the *Arabs* have so high an opinion of them, that they repute them efficacious for curing all manner of diseases. They are, however, found very thick in some of the deserts, where mixing with a kind of muddy sand, they contract a yellowish hue and disagreeable taste; and this hue they retain in their fall into the *Persic* gulph, where they may be plainly traced for several miles together. As to the river itself, it is neither very deep nor wide, compared with some others in different parts of the world, except when swelled by the melting of the snows on the mountains of *Armenia*.

How divided. THE *Arabs* divide this river into the greater and lesser *Euphrates*. The first has its spring-head among the *Gordian* mountains, and falls into the *Tigris* near the cities of *Ambar* and *Felaugieh*. The lesser, though its stream is often the bigger of the two, takes its course towards *Yerack* or *Chaldea*, and after forming the eastern grounds of the *Nababerg*, discharges itself into the same *Tigris* at a place called *Carnab* or *Horn*, being the horn or nook between the two
con-

confluents. From the lesser there is a passage to the greater by a canal formerly made by the emperor *Trajan*, called *Fofsa Regia*, and by the *Syrians Nahar Malcha*, or the *Royal River*. The *Persians* pretend, that one of the kings of their first dynasty began to divide those two great rivers of *Tigris* and *Euphrates*, into several branches, to prevent the inundations they frequently caused: this work was afterwards carried on by some of their caliphs, though they have not been able to keep several territories from being yearly overflowed by them, as *Egypt* is by the *Nile*.

THE *Tigris* is no less a considerable river in *Asia*. Its source is in a plain of *Turcomania*, according to *Cluverius* in the *Gordian* mountains, according to *Boudrand* in *Armenia*. *Moses* calls it *Hiddekel*, the *Arabs* and *Persians* *Diglat*, the *Turks* *Tegil*. *Pliny* says, that from its spring-head, down a good way where its course is smooth, it was called *Diglito*, but from thence, where it began to be more rapid, *Tigris*, which in the *Median* tongue signifies an arrow or dart. He adds, that its source is in the middle of a plain called *Elegosina* in *Greater Armenia*. It runs through the lake *Arethusa*, without mixing its waters with it, then along part of the ridge called *Mount Taurus*, whence, sinking into the earth, it runs under the mountain, and rises again on the other side. An evident proof of its being the same river is, that whatever is thrown into it on one side, is brought up again on the other. From thence the *Tigris* runs through another lake called *Thepsites*, and often sinks again under ground; and in one place having passed the extent of twenty-five miles of ground unseen, it rises up and continues its course with a very rapid stream, where it begins to be styled the *Tigris* or *Dart*. Its waters are increased by several rivers it swallows up in its course as it runs between *Affyria* and *Mesopotamia*, and a few leagues below *Bagdad*, it begins to branch out into two channels, one of which running across, falls into the *Euphrates* and forms an island, whilst the other continuing its course southwards, falls into the same river a good way below it. These two rivers, before their meeting in this last place of conflux, formerly called *Pasitigris*, confine the country of *Diarbeck Proper*, the one on the east, the other on the west, and after running a long winding course mostly from north to south, both fall into the *Persic* gulph by one common mouth or channel. *Pliny* informs us, that formerly they had each a separate one, and that in his time there were still to be seen the vestiges of the old one. The *Tigris* commonly overflows about the spring-time, when the snows of the *Asmenian* mountains begin to melt; and by it,

together with the *Euphrates*, and some other rivers of less note, the greatest part of this province is so effectively watered, and rendered so very fertile and delightful, that among the various opinions and controversies about the situation of the garden of *Eden*, the most judicious and learned writers are agreed, that this once happy spot was situate in the south part of this province.

First division of Diarbeckr.

DIARBÉCK Proper is bounded on the north by *Turcomania*, on the west by *Syria*, on the south by part of *Arabia Deserta* and *Yrack Proper*, and on the east by *Curdistan*. It was named by *Moses Padam Aram*, the latter being the general name of *Syria*, and the former signifying fruitful, a proper epithet for this country, which is really so to a very high degree, especially on the northern side, where it yields corn, wine, oil, fruits, and all necessaries of life in great abundance. Formerly it was the residence of many famed patriarchs, yet was over-run with the grossest idolatry, not only in the times of *Abraham's* coming out of it, and *Jacob's* sojourning in it, but likewise during the time it continued under the dominion of the *Assyrians*, *Babylonians*, *Medes*, *Persians*, and *Romans*. It received indeed the light of the gospel soon after our Saviour's ascension from *St. Thaddæus*, who is said to have been sent thither by *Sr. Thomas*, at the request of *Agbarus*, king of *Edessa*. This account, together with that monarch's letter to *Jesu. Christ*, we have from *Eusebius*, who took it from the archives of that city; and the whole had passed current and uncontradicted for many ages, till our more enlightened moderns found reasons to condemn it; but whether right or wrong, it plainly appears, that Christianity flourished here in a most eminent manner, till its purity was sullied about the beginning of the sixth century by the heresy of the *Jacobites*, whose patriarch still resides here with a jurisdiction over all that sect in the *Turkish* dominions.

Cities of Diarbeck Proper.

DIARBÉCK Proper, is a beglerbegate, under which are reckoned twelve sangiacks; and the principal towns in it are, *Diarbekir* or *Caramed*, *Rika*, *Moussul*, *Orsa* or *Edessa*, *El bir*, *Nisibis*, *Gezir Merdin*, *Zibin*, *Ur of the Chaldees*, *Amad*, and *Carafara*. We shall only give some account of *Diarbekir* and *Moussul*, the rest being of little note.

Diarbekir described.

DIARBÉKIR, *Amad*, or *Carahmed*, now the capital of this district, is situate in a delightful plain, on the banks and near the head of the *Tigris*; it is one hundred and fifteen miles, or fifteen caravan days journey, north-east from *Aleppo*, in latitude 37. 35, east longitude 40. 50. It is one of the richest and most mercantile cities in all *Asiatic Turkey*, and

and is well fortified, being encompassed with a double wall, the outermost of which is flanked with seventy-two towers, said to have been raised in memory of our Saviour's seventy-two disciples. It has two or three stately piazzas or market-places, well stored with all kinds of rich merchandize, and a large magnificent mosque, formerly a Christian church. Its chief manufacture is the dressing, tanning, and dying of goat-skins, commonly called *Turkey leather*, of which the vent is almost incredible in many parts of *Europe* and *Asia*: besides this, there is another of dyed fine linen and cotton cloths, which are nearly in the same request. The waters of the *Tigris* are reckoned extraordinary for those two branches of trade, and give red leather a finer grain and colour than any other. The town is so populous, that there are said to be in it no less than 20,000 Christians, two-thirds of whom are *Armenians*, and the rest *Nestorians* or *Jacobites*, with some few of the church of *Rome*. There is a good number of large and convenient inns on both sides of the river, for the caravans that go to and from *Persia*; and on the road near the town is a chapel with a cupola, where holy *Job* is said to lie buried. This place is much frequented by pilgrims of all nations and religions, and a *Turkish* hermit has a cell close to it. The fair sex, who, in most other parts of the *Turkish* empire, are kept quite immured, and considered as mere slaves, enjoy here an extraordinary liberty, and are commonly seen on the public walks of the city, in company with the Christian women, and live in great friendship and familiarity with them. The same is said of the men, who are polite, affable, and courteous, and very different from what they affect to be, especially the *Turks*, in other cities of this empire. The city is under the government of a *basha*, who has great power and very large dominions. He has commonly a body of 20,000 horse under him, for repelling the frequent incursions of the *Gurdes* and *Tartars*; who always go on horseback to rob the caravans. The adjacent territory is very rich and beautiful; the bread, wine, and flesh excellent; the fruits exquisite, and the pigeons better and larger than any in *Europe*.

MOUSSUL, the capital of another beglerbegate in this province, is seated in latitude 36. 59. east longitude 43. 00. on the west bank of the *Tigris*, near the ruins of the ancient *Nineveh*, for which it has been mistaken by some authors. It is a spacious city, about a league in compass, surrounded with stately stone walls, and sharp-pointed turrets, which make a considerable shew at a distance, but whose inside is far from being answerable to its external appearance, though

Moussul described.

*Excessive
heat and
deadly
wind.*

it has many fair and large streets, with houses well built, but a great part of them lie waste and uninhabited. It is a great thoroughfare for the caravans from *Syria* to *Persia*, and carries on itself a considerable traffic with *Bagdad*. The territory on the other side of the river is exceeding fruitful, but the ground on the city side is mostly dry, sandy, and barren. The heat in *Moussul* is so excessive in summer, that from two hours after sun-rise, till about an hour after its setting, there is no going out of doors; and even then the walls of the houses feel as hot iron at half a foot distance. There is besides a dangerous wind, called by the natives *Samiel*, which reigns by land from this place to *Surat*, and is supposed to be the east wind mentioned by *Job*. It is mingled with streaks of fire as small as hairs, and kills those that breathe it, who soon appear as black as a coal, and their flesh comes off from the bones. Some who perceive it coming, frequently escape by falling flat with their faces to the ground. It is thought to proceed from sulphureous exhalations, that kindle in being agitated by the wind; for it is chiefly felt on the banks of the river, and not on the water, where these vapours are dissipated by the breezes, or moist air arising from the river. But it is not this sort of wind alone, though indeed the most dangerous of all, that infests the inhabitants of this city and climate; the hot air is dangerous not only to the lungs and blood, but to the very skin, which it raises in blisters and makes to peel off; and the eyes are so affected by it, that travellers are obliged to wear a kind of soft black crape over them to keep the heat off; but as this is not always a sufficient preservative, they anoint them when they begin to be inflamed, with a mixture of sugar and long pepper, fixed very fine.

*Second division of
Diar-
beckr.*

YERACK, or *Chaldea*, the second division of *Diarbeckr* is situate on the south of *Diarbeck Proper*, between, and on both sides the two great rivers *Euphrates* and *Tigris*. We are told by *St. Jerom*, that the *Chaldees* derived their name from *Chefed*, the fourth son of *Nachor*, the brother of *Abraham*; but it seems from the tenor of the scripture to have been of older date. Authors differ in opinion concerning the etymon of *Yerack*; but the name of *Yerac-Arabi* is also given to it, because it reaches quite to *Arabia Deserta*.

THE soil of *Chaldea* was anciently so fertile that it produced two or three hundred fold, and might still do the same if rightly cultivated. The pasture grounds are very rich, and breed vast numbers of cattle, which furnish the country with plenty of milk and butter. The *Chaldees* were observed to have been very early proficient in astronomy and astro-

logy, as well as in the art of soothsaying, divination, and other superstitious practices, for which they were famed above all other nations. They are likewise supposed by some to have been the first idolaters in the world, though others, with more probability, ascribe this to the *Egyptians*. The scripture brands them for their unparalleled ambition in striving to vie with the power of heaven, and supporting themselves against it, by that bold structure they attempted to raise, called the tower of *Babel*. They received Christianity in the time of the Apostles, but from which of them is uncertain. So early as the *Nicene* council, we find the bishop of *Seleucia* in great esteem, and in all assemblies after he was in rank next to the patriarch of *Jerusalem*. The Christians are here still very numerous, though few orthodox, the two heresies of the *Jacobites* and *Nestorians*, besides several other erroneous opinions and customs, prevailing amongst them. Their language was originally different from the *Hebrew*, which was spoken in *Mesopotamia*; but by the long continuance of the Jews amongst them, the purity of both tongues were corrupted and intermingled, and from this mixture arose that which is now called the *Syriack*, which to this day is still used in those provinces.

THE most considerable and best known towns and cities of this division are *Bagdad*, *Babylon*, *Traxt*, *Balsora*, *Kufa*, *Ourta*, *Gorna*, *Seleucia*, and *Ctesiphon*.

BAGDAD, the famed capital of this province, is situated on the eastern banks of the river *Tigris*, towards *Persia*, in latitude 33. 15. east longitude 45. 40. It has been mistaken by several geographers for the old *Babylon*, though at a great distance from the ruins of that ancient metropolis. It is computed to be about one thousand five hundred paces in length, seven or eight hundred in breadth, and three thousand in circumference. Its walls are all of brick, with terraces and large towers at proper distances, in form of bastions, and defended by about sixty pieces of cannon. The castle is large, and flanked by some small towers with cannon; and the garrison usually consists of nine hundred foot, four thousand horse, and sixty gunners. The inhabitants are thought to be about fifteen thousand, including those who live in a suburb on the other side of the *Tigris*, at the end of the bridge of boats, which is undone every night to prevent a surprise. But notwithstanding this number of inhabitants, and largeness of the garrison, the town has still many empty spaces within its walls, and for the most part is but indifferently built; so that the only edifices worth notice are the bazars, some caravans, and the mosques. The two

former are all arched, without which there would be no bearing the excessive heat of the day; and even if they are obliged to water them three or four times a day, to keep them moderately cool, and free from dust.

*When built
and its
various
fates.*

BAGDAD was built out of the ruins of the old *Sclucia*, by *Mohammed II.* caliph of the *Saracens*, who in 762, made it the capital of his kingdom. Its name is derived from the garden of a venerable hermit, who had his abode there, *Bagdad* signifying a garden given, or the garden of the wealthy. It soon became a wealthy and populous town, and continued so till the middle of the thirteenth century, when the famed *Habon* the *Tartar* put an end to it by the death of the caliph and his whole family, and by taking and destroying this metropolis. It soon, however, recovered itself; but has since so often passed from the *Persians* to the *Turks*, that it now retains very little of its ancient splendor. In 1638, when *Amurath IV.* laid siege to it, a memorable accident happened, which facilitated his making himself master of it: it was then bravely defended by the noble commander *Sophy Kouli Kan*, who had already repulsed the *Turkish* forces in two different attempts, and was likely to have done the same at this time, had not the *Persian* monarch sent his favourite to command in his room. *Sophy Kouli* seeing himself deposed, and resolving to die rather than submit to the disgrace, sent for his wife and son, and shewing each of them a bowl, and a third which he had prepared for himself, exhorted them to follow his example; and having drank off his dose, had the pleasure to see them both do the same, so that they all expired in a very little time. The consequence of this bold action was, that the garrison, who greatly admired their old commander, mutinied, and refusing to obey the new, agreed to surrender the place on condition of marching out with bag and baggage, which was indeed promised them; but the treacherous *Amurath* having perjured it, caused them all to be put to the sword, to the number of twenty-two thousand; since which time the *Turks* have continued in possession of it. From that fatal period the trade of the place has decayed very considerably, the sultan having at the same time rifled all the rich merchants. It still, notwithstanding, continues to be a place of pretty good resort for all the commodities of *Anatolia*, *Syria*, *Damascus*, *Constantinople*, *Arabia*, *Persia*, and *India*; but is nothing so populous and opulent as when the *Persians* held it.

THE air of *Bagdad* and its environs is so hot, that the inhabitants are forced to keep their markets in the night during the summer, and to lie at night on their terraces. The

military

military government is commonly under a basha, but the civil is intirely in the hands of a cadi, who acts as judge, president, and musti, with a testerdar or treasurer under him, who collects the grand signior's revenue.

THE third and last part of the Turkish province of *Diar-Tbird di-beckr*, is now called *Curdistan*, but was anciently more known by the name of *Affyria*, so called from *Affur* or *Asbur*, the Di-^{vision of} son of *Shem* and grandson of *Noah*, who first planted this becker ^{des-}crib-^{ed.} country. It lies on the east side of the river *Tigris*, towards *Persia*, being bounded by that kingdom on the east, and the *Tigris* on the west; by *Yerack* or the country of *Bagdad* on the South, and *Turcomania* on the north. It is very narrow towards the south, where it scarce extends ninety miles in breadth; but towards the north it stretches near two hundred miles from east to west, that is, from the forty-first to the forty-seventh degree of east longitude; as for its length from north to south, it reaches from thirty-five degrees thirty minutes, to thirty-seven degrees twenty minutes of latitude. The mountain of *Coatras* divides it from *Persia* on the east, and the *Tigris* on the west from *Mesopotamia* and *Chaldea*.

ACCORDING to the ancient accounts we have of this country, it was rich and fertile; but at present it is found quite the reverse, being indeed very desolate, with vast barren plains and dreadful deserts, except a few parts near some towns, where the territory is a little better cultivated. It must, however, be remembered, that it was formerly a constant field of battle between the *Parthians* and *Romans*, and since between the *Turks* and *Persians*, which must insensibly have quite depopulated it; and where hands and industry are wanting, there the best soil will grow barren, which is now the case of this once celebrated and fertile empire.

THE *Curds*, or *Qurdes*, that inhabit it and some parts of *Persia*, are supposed to be the descendants of the ancient *Chaldeans*, and live intirely upon plunder. They dwell in tents on the plains, till the snows oblige them to retire into their villages; and are ever upon the watch after the caravans and other travellers, whom they plunder, strip, and even murder without mercy. They are without religion, laws, government, or settled habitation, and are called *Jesides*, as having still a kind of tradition, by which they believe in *Jesid*; so they call our *Jesus*, to whom they pay a kind of veneration, though without acknowledging, or perhaps knowing him in any case as the Saviour of mankind. But they stand in great fear of the devil, who, they believe,

is able to do them much hurt, to whom for that reason they pay greater regard. They spread themselves from *Moussul* quite to the *Euphrates*, and acknowledge no subjection to either *Turks* or *Persians*, who never trouble themselves about them, except when they commit murder or robbery, and even then content themselves with a pecuniary punishment. They are often shifting in search of pasture for their numerous herds and flocks of cattle; and whilst the men roam in quest of plunder, the women are occupied in making butter and cheese, and training up the children to the fathers trade. Their tents are large and of a sort of coarse brown cloth, which serves as a covering to their portative houses, made of cane hurdles disposed in a square form, and the floor matted to answer the purposes of both bed and board. When they think fit to dislodge, they take their huts to pieces, and load their oxen and cows with them, and with their children and other household utensils. These children are used to go almost naked in the coldest weather. The men are generally well mounted, and take great care of their horses, which are commonly very fleet: the lance is their chief weapon. The women ride indifferently on horses or oxen. Both are naturally stout and nimble, but not in the least agreeable, having very small eyes, wide mouths, bad complexions, very black hair, and something very fierce and forbidding in their looks.

THE *Curdes* were known to the ancients by the name of *Curduchi*, or *Curdueni*, and were so called from the famed ridge of mountains called *Curdo*, but more anciently *Niphatian* hills, which are a part of those known by the name of *Mount Taurus*.

THE chief towns and hamlets in *Curdistán* are *Betilis*, *Schereful*, *Arbela*, *Harpel*, *Nineveh*, *Rebobo*, *Rhesen*, *Van*, and *Holwan*.

Armenia, the second province of the eastern *Asiatic Turkey*, is bounded on the south by *Mesopotamia*, on the north by *Georgia*, on the east by *Persia*, and on the west by *Cappadocia* and the *Lesser Armenia*, an *Asiatic* from which it is parted by the river *Euphrates*. Its extent Turkey, is somewhat above two hundred miles, or from about 38. 20. to almost 42 degrees of latitude; and from 39. to almost 42. of east longitude, or about three hundred miles from east to west. The country is very healthy, the climate temperate, and the soil rich and fertile, especially in the meadows and valleys, but is much taken up with mountains, especially about the frontiers; yet these produce very good pasture, and the rest plenty of corn, wine, and fruits of all sorts.

Armenia,
the second
province
of the east-
Asia,
and Asiatic
Turkey,
described.

The people are well as well as robust, stout, industrious and several mechanic arts : manufacture them to good advantage. The only misfortune is, they lie too much out of the way of trade, to reap all the benefit they otherwise would do, if more commodiously situated for it. However, they employ themselves in weaving of tapestry, and several sorts of stuffs, which they vend abroad : the rest follow agriculture ; and one may see with pleasure a great difference between this *Turkish* province, and some of those poor, barren, uncultivated, and desolate ones we have already passed in review.

THE inhabitants, though under a *Turkish* government, are at present mostly Christians, but accused of *Eutychianism*, that is, of acknowledging but one nature in Christ ; for which they have been condemned and excommunicated both by the *Greeks* and *Latins* : yet they pretend to wipe off the imputation by owning his divine nature, but that it is so closely and hypostatically united to the human, as to admit of no further distinction. Some of their learned bishops go even so far as to pretend, that all the difference between them and the orthodox, proceeds from that poverty of their language, which does not sufficiently distinguish between person and nature ; for they acknowledge the distinct properties of each nature in Christ, though from thence they cannot give into the belief of two natures, but only of one single and individual, in which the attributes of those two perfectly coalesce and are united. The truth is, the fault is not so much owing to the barrenness of their language, as to their great veneration for the writings of *Dioscorus* and *Barsuma*, two famed *Eutychians*, and those of their patriarch *Ozvielzi*, and their doctor *Altenasi*, great favourers of the same heresy, whom they implicitly follow, as pillars of their faith, without giving themselves much pains to examine into the merits of the controversy.

ARMENIA was anciently inhabited by the descendants *Etymon* of *Hul*, or *Chul*, the son of *Aram*, who, it is supposed, called the name it by the name of their progenitor ; whence came the name of *Armenia* or *Arminia*. Others think it is so called from *Armenia*, a Hebrew word signifying *high*, because this country lies high, and its mountains are the highest of all this eastern tract. A third etymon is from the Hebrew *Har-Minni*, or the mountain of *Minni*, which last was a kingdom mentioned by *Jerusalem*, with those of *Ararat* and *Aschanaz*. *Ararat* is thought to be likewise the Hebrew name of *Armenia*, by

most of the ancient interpreters: so that when
 "that the ark¹ rested on the mountains of *Ararat*,
 where the two sons of *Sennacherib* are said to be
 the land of *Ararat*, after the^m murder of their father; they
 understand it of the land and mountains of *Armenia*. As to
 those who fancy it was so called from *Armenus*, the *Rhodian*
 or *Thessalian*, they are still more out of their notions. But
 waving all these uncertain etymons, there is no doubt but
 this country became a considerable kingdom very early, and
 continued so for several ages. Its present name of *Turco-*
mania is from the *Turks*, or *Turcomans*.

TIGRANES, one of the kings of *Armenia*, greatly ex-
 tended his dominions on every side, and added to them the
 provinces of *Syria*, *Phœnice*, and *Media*; but upon being de-
 feated by *Lucullus* in the *Mithridatic* war, the *Armenians*
 were again driven homeward, and their kingdom restrained
 to *Armenia Major*. *Mark Anthony* afterwards took their king
Artavasdes prisoner, and sent him to *Rome* in golden fetters.
 and *Trajan* reduced the whole country into a *Roman* pro-
 vince. But it since recovered its liberty, and we find it
 governed by its own kings in the reign of *Constantine the*
Great, and some time after, though they were then feuda-
 tories to the emperors till 687, when they were subdued by
 the *Saracens*. These held it till the irruption of the *Turks*,
 or *Turcomans*, out of *Scythia*, who made themselves masters
 of this province, and gave it the name of *Turcomania*. This
 happened, according to some, in the year 755; but, ac-
 cording to others, not till 844. But whilst the *Turks* were
 employed in other conquests, the *Armenians* took the oppor-
 tunity of recovering their liberty, and set up some new kings
 of their own. These were again subdued by the *Tartars*,
 but not so extirpated but that there still remained some of
 them, one of whom succeeding to the throne of *Persia*, made
Armenia a province of that kingdom in 1472. But it was
 again partly reconquered by the *Turks* under sultan *Selim I.*
 in 1515; so that ever since, the western part has continued
 subject to the *Turks*, and the eastern to the *Persians*.

Turkish
 inhabi-
 tants of
 Armenia.

THE *Turkish* inhabitants of this country, though inferior
 in number to the *Christians*, are possessed of some of the
 richest and fairest territories on each side of the *Euphrates*;
 but with this difference, that instead of being absolute ma-
 sters, as they formerly were, they are now tributary to the
Ottoman Porte, or rather enjoy a shadow of liberty under it;
 and hence proceeds their innate hatred against it; for they

still adhere to their ancient tents, and shifting their habitations. of a swarthy complexion, flat noses, square faces; but their women are generally very handsome, and well shaped. They are governed by their own chiefs and laws, and profess the *Mohammedan* religion, but do not trouble themselves much about the observance of it. Being naturally addicted to plunder, they would do a deal of mischief to commerce, were it not for the care of the *Turkish* bashas to keep them in order: for as the tribute paid by the caravans, and the number of passengers, make the most considerable branch of their income, it is their interest to preserve the roads as free and safe as they can. In other respects they wink at many irregularities in their way of life, as their frequent inroads upon the *Curdes*, the *Arabs*, and other neighbouring nations that own no subjection to the *Porte*. These *Turks*, a hardy race, excellent horsemen, courageous and enterprising, head themselves likewise towards the east, even into *Persia*. They are computed altogether to amount to about one hundred thousand families.

THE name of *Armenians* is also given to those who were transported into several parts of *Persia* by shah *Abas*; and more particularly to that celebrated colony of *Armenians* who dwell at *Zulfa*, one of the suburbs of *Ispahan*. These *Armenians*, and in general all those of the same denomination, apply themselves to trade, which they make their chief business, are civil and polite, and have a great deal of good sense and honesty. They are not only, in a great measure, masters of the whole trade of the *Levant*, but have also a great share in that of the most considerable towns in *Europe*; for it is very common to meet with some *Armenians* at *Leghorn* and *Venice*, in *England* and in *Holland*; whilst on the other side they travel into the dominions of the grand mogul, *Siam*, *Java*, the *Philippine Islands*, and over all the East, except *China*. It is not agreed among the learned, under what abbas, king of *Persia*, the colony of *Zulfa* was transported to *Ispahan*, and settled where it now is. But it is very certain that shah *Abas*, the Great, in order to secure the conquest of *Armenia*, which he had taken from the *Turks*, removed into *Persia* the first *Armenians* who ever settled there; and about thirty thousand families of them were transported into the province of *Ghilan* only, from whence the finest *Persian* silks come. He also caused all the inhabitants of *Zulfa*, a large city of *Armenia*, to be removed to *Ispahan*, whence the new *Zulfa* of *Persia* took its name. This *Zulfa* is now the center of all the commerce of the *Armenians*; and it is to the same

Armenian
traders
and mer-
chants.

same Shah *Abas* these people owe their genius and capacity for trade, which did but very little appear till their transmigration into *Persia*. And as *Abas the Great* had no other view but to enrich his country, and was sensible he could not compass that design but by the means of trade, he cast his eyes upon silks, as the most precious commodity, and upon the *Armenians*, as the most proper people to dispose of it. In short, the *Armenians*, who were but husbandmen, were by him turned into merchants, and these merchants are become some of the most able and most celebrated traders in the world. When thus the trade of the *Armenians* was sufficiently established, the kings of *Persia* no longer meddled with it; the citizens of *Zulfa* alone continued to support it, and by the assistance of their brokers or agents, who are of the same nation with themselves, they distribute through the whole world the finest and richest commodities of *Asia*. These agents undertake for a very moderate profit, to conduct the merchandizes to the very places they are designed for, to take care of them during the march of the caravans, to dispose of them to the best advantage they can, and to give afterwards a faithful account to those by whom they are intrusted. It cannot be sufficiently expressed how faithful those agents are, what care they take to preserve the merchandizes they conduct, not fearing even to run the danger of perishing themselves, in order to succour the camels, and other beasts of burden that carry them, at the crossing of rivers, or at the difficult passes of mountains. Their charity for each other is unspeakable; and, when those who are settled in some town are acquainted with the coming of a caravan, they do not scruple to undertake a journey of a day or two, in order to go and meet them, and carry refreshments to their brethren. When the caravans make any stay in towns, the *Armenians*, to live cheaper, join several together. In *Asia*, they sell upon the road hardwares of *Venice*, *France*, *Germany*, and *England*, in order to get provisions. In *Europe* they obtain them for musk and some spice. In a word, there is no nation comparable to them for sobriety, good husbandry, and honesty. It is true, indeed, that when their affairs prove unprosperous in those foreign countries where they trade, they seldom return home, not daring, they say, to appear before their creditors, whose confidence they have abused. But it must be owned that this happens very seldom; it being extremely uncommon to see an *Armenian* become a bankrupt. There is nothing more extraordinary; and at the same time more pleasant, than the manner of striking bargains among the *Arme-*

Armenians. They begin with putting money upon the table; after which, they cavil or dispute as much as they can about the price, the buyer and the seller presenting and repulsing alternately the pieces of money which they add to the price offered, or which they abate from the price demanded: this is always done with so much noise and ill humour, that one would think they are going to devour each other. All this, however, is nothing but grimace and affectation; and when the broker, who is always present at this comedy, judges that things are pretty near their value, he squeezes the seller's hand with so much violence that he makes him cry out, but does not leave him till he accepts the buyer's offer. The farce ends with reciprocal jokes, each laughing on his side, thinking that he has the best of the bargain.

THE principal towns in *Armenia*, which are populous and *Principal* wealthy, are *Erzerum*, the capital, and *Tocat*. Both carry on *towns.* considerable trade in brass and copper ware, furr, gall-nuts, caviar, madder, silk, yellow and red leather, and printed calicoes. The *English* keep a consul at *Erzerum*, who is generally in great credit and esteem. Other places of some note are *Van*, *Kars*, *Irvan*, *Zulfa*, and *Mackisvan*.

ARARAT, a celebrated mountain in this country, not *Mount* like *Taurus*, *Caucasus*, and a great many others, which ought *Ararat* rather to be called vast chains of mountains of extraordinary *described.* length, rises with two summits, one larger and somewhat higher than the other, but both of so prodigious a height, as to be seen at the distance of five days journey. The *Armenians* pay a great veneration to it, from a belief that it was the place on which the ark rested, and pretend to shew some fragments of it, which they say have been preserved from corruption, not so much by a miracle, as from the serenity of the climate at that vast height, which is so much above the clouds, that there is neither rain, snow, dew, nor any thing but continual sunshine. The ascent is not only very difficult and fatiguing, but also dangerous, through the ruggedness of some parts, the deep sands of others, the horrid precipices one is obliged to behold in the way, not without horror, and the dreadful giddiness which seizes the stoutest. There are two monasteries at the bottom of the mountain, and higher up a few shepherd's huts. Ascending from thence, some partridges are seen flying about; but proceeding to the second region, nothing but tygers are met with, which commonly keep at a due distance, and here and there a flight of crows. All the remaining part of the mountain is covered with snow, which in all probability has been there ever since the

Georgia
the third
province
of the
eastern
Asiatic
Turkey,
described.

the flood; and thick clouds overspread it for one half, at least, of the year, and keep it quite from sight.

GEORGIA, the third province or division of the eastern Asiatic Turkey, is the country which lies between the Euxine and the Caspian sea, and is so called, according to some, from St. George the Martyr, who is the patron of all the Christians of the Greek church; but with more probability, according to others, from Kurgia, a name derived from its river Kur. The inhabitants are indifferently called Georgi, Gurgi, and Kurgi, and the country Gurgistan, and Kurgistan, by the Persians.

GEORGIA is bounded on the north by Circassia, on the east by Daghestan and Shirvan, on the south by Armenia, and on the west by the Euxine, or Black Sea. It comprehends in its largest extent the Colchis and Iberia of the ancients. As the Daghestan and Shirvan comprehend the ancient Albania. It is divided by a ridge of mountains into eastern and western; in the first of which are the kingdoms of Caket on the north, and Carthuel on the south. The western contains Abcassia on the north, then Mingrelia, Mireta, and Gurzel, Georgia is again divided into Georgia in general, thus including in its largest sense, the limits of the above kingdoms; and Georgia Proper, in which sense the provinces of Abcassia and Mingrelia are distinct from it; so that it contains only those of Caket and Carthuel. This distinction is necessary to be remembered by those who study history, because there was a time when the whole country of Georgia was governed by kings of its own. As for Georgia Proper, it was conquered by the Persian king, who keeps a viceroy in it, and obliges him to make public profession of Mohammedanism, without which none can be admitted to that dignity.

THIS country is naturally rich and fertile, but is far from being rightly cultivated; and though the natives profess Christianity, they are of so rude and vicious a nature, that they neither encourage ingenuity or labour, nor apply themselves to agriculture, manufactures, or other laudable occupations.

GEORGIA abounds with woods and mountains, but has likewise a great number of beautiful plains, though not wide in proportion to their length. The heart of it, more smooth and even, is watered by the river Kur, called by the generality of geographers Cyrus or Corus; it comes from Mount Caucasus, and running through the middle of it, empties itself into the Caspian Sea. This river has an advantage above all the other great ones of Persia, that it is navigable through a great part of this empire.

THE whole country of *Georgia* thinly inhabited, and has but very few cities in proportion to its extent and fertility. This must be ascribed to their trading chiefly in boys and girls, a barbarous and unnatural traffick, which is here carried on to a most shameful height, parents selling their children, masters their servants, lords their vassals and tenants, and in short, every man selling what males and females he can get power over, all which are disposed of to the *Turks*, *Persians*, and others, who make use of them in their armies and seraglios, as slaves, mutes, eunuchs, soldiers, statesmen, and concubines, according as their capacities, or the favour they find with their masters, can recommend them. Hence then may be said to proceed its scarcity of inhabitants and great cities, though formerly it abounded with both to a great degree, as may appear, not only from its history, but from the vast number of ancient cities now lying in ruins, which by their remains seem to have been very large, opulent, and sumptuously built; but were all destroyed by the inundation of northern barbarians from *Mount Caucasus*, as the *Alans*, *Huns*, *Suevi*, and some others, so much noted in ancient history for their strength, courage, and conquests. To these also may be added the once famed *Amazons*, who dwelt in the neighbourhood of this country towards the north, and who invaded and destroyed the kingdom of *Caket* or *Caguetia*.

THE air of *Georgia* is serene, dry, and healthful, but very cold in winter and hot in summer. The fine weather commonly begins about *May*, and lasts till *November*, but the lands want a good deal of watering to make them produce a full crop; in which case they yield plenty of all sorts of grain, pulse, and fruits, which sell at a cheap rate, so that the people live here in ease and plenty. The fruits in particular are so exquisite, that no country in *Europe* produces better pears and apples, nor any in *Asia* more delicious pomegranates. The bread is as good as any in the world. The cattle both large and small are fat and good, and in great numbers; and the same may be said of the game. But the common people live mostly, if not altogether upon swine's flesh, which is every where excellent, and by their own account very wholesome and easy of digestion. The river *Kur*, as well as the *Caspian Sea*, which lies east of *Georgia*, supplies it with plenty and variety of fish, so that each season of the year is abundantly furnished with every necessary peculiar to it. But the most noble product of *Georgia* is its excellent wine, of which great quantities at a moderate price are sent into the neighbouring countries, and particularly into *Persia* for the king's

king's own table. It likewise produces a good deal of silk, but as the *Georgians* hardly know how to manufacture it, it is chiefly sent to *Erzerum* in *Armenia* for that purpose.

*Georgian
women.*

THERE is hardly any nation under the sun that can boast of such fine women. Nature seems to have heaped such graces upon them as are no where to be seen, whether we consider them with respect to their fair complexion, beautiful faces, handsome stature, slender waist, or clean limbs. This is the reason they are in such request in the courts of *Persia* and *Turkey*; but for the better part they are as vicious as handsome, contributing by their lewdness, to which they are extremely addicted, to that inundation of sensuality by which the country is over-run.

*Character
of the men.*

THE men are also very comely, tall, and well shaped, and have good natural parts, which might be greatly improved by the help of a good education; but they are commonly brought up in such a manner, as rather tends to keep them ignorant, vicious, and untractable; so that they are generally knavish, deceitful, perfidious, treacherous, ungrateful, proud, impudent, and commonly behave with the most surprising insolence, and where once offended, retain an irreconcilable hatred to the end of their lives. These are not their only vices, being also shamefully given to drunkenness, debauchery, lewdness of the worst kind, which is looked upon rather as gallantry than a disgrace. The very clergy make no scruple to be seen bestially drunk, especially on holidays, or publicly keeping concubines for their own use. They are likewise great usurers, seldom lending without a valuable pledge, and at the rate of two or three *per cent.* per month, as our common pawn-brokers. In other respects they appear affable, courteous, and grave, and give all kind of liberty to strangers to live, trade, and converse among them in what way, and to profess what religion they please: so that people are seen here of several nations, as *Turks*, *Armenians*, *Persians*, *Jews*, *Greeks*, *Indians*, *Tartars*, *Russians*, and *Europeans*; but the *Armenians* are the most numerous, and by carrying on the greatest part of the trade, are also the richest, for which reason the haughty *Georgians* hate and despise them, and consider them in the same light as *Europeans* do the *Jews*. The *Georgians* wear fur caps on their heads, and a kind of long loose vest, opened before, by which may be buttoned at pleasure; their breeches and under-garments are like those of the *Persians*; and so is the entire dress of their women.

Buildings.

THEIR houses, especially those of the better sort, are also after the model of those of *Persia*, as well as all their public buildings;

buildings; and they may afford to have them built after the best manner, having not only stone, wood, plaister, lime, and all other materials in the greatest plenty and cheapness; but also can have the most laborious work done for little or nothing by their own vassals, over whom they have such an absolute power, that they can keep them employed whole months together, without allowing them either wages or food. The churches in the cities are neat, well built, and kept clean, and some of them even grand and stately: but in the country, they are mean, without, dirty within, and for the most part neglected and decaying. The *Georgians*, as well as the other Christians on the west and north, have a very strange custom of building most of their churches on the tops of high and almost inaccessible mountains, and at a distance from their towns, to which they seldom or ever repair, insomuch that some of them are not opened once in ten years; and they have a prevailing notion among them, that if they do but build a church in this manner, all their sins of whatever kind shall be forgiven to them.

THE tenets of the *Georgians* are much the same with *Tenets*, those of the *Greek* church. They are said to have received *prelates*, the Christian faith about the middle of the fourth century, &c. by means of a woman-slave. But if we except the *Mingrelians*, who are rather the worst of the two, they seem to have really lost both the spirit and notion of Christianity, and to have retained only the name. They neither seem to know, or at least to observe any precept of the gospel, only the *Georgians* keep up their fasts and festivals a little more strictly, and make use of longer prayers than the *Mingrelians*. They are under a patriarch, styled *Catholicos*, with an archbishop, and several bishops always chosen by the *Persian* viceroy, who, though a *Mohammedan*, at least in outward profession, commonly fills these dignities with his own relations. The nobles and gentry in the country assume the same privilege in their own territories, and not only bestow those benefices on whom they please, but even go so far as to depose, imprison, and punish those ecclesiastics under them, as they do their common vassals among the laity.

IN the province, or ancient kingdom of *Mingrelia*, are contained those of *Imeretia*, *Gauria*, and *Samssea*, as having been all formerly under one monarch; and though they form a larger country than that of *Georgia*, properly so called, yet they are reckoned, by geographers as part of that country, and are comprehended under that general name. The inhabitants which lie nearest *Mingrelia*, are the *Suani*, *Alani*,
 MOD. HIST. VOL. XLIII. Ab-

Abcasses, Circassians, Zicqui, and Caraboli, all which pretend to be Christians, though neither faith nor devotion are found among them.

Mount
Caucasus
described.

THE famed *Mount Caucasus*, a great curiosity in this country, lies between the *Caspian* and *Euxine* Seas, and has *Russian Tartary* on the north, and *Turkey* and *Georgia* on the south. It is higher and larger than the mountains *Imaus* and *Taurus*, both in respect to its various summits, which are always covered with snow, and in respect to its extent from east to west, and from north to south. It is full of rocks and frightful precipices, where, with great labour, paths are cut out of the rock, for the convenience of passage, which is, notwithstanding, very difficult by reason of the steep declivity. In winter the snow lies long, and adds much to the difficulty and danger of the passage; which the better to provide against, the guides wear a sort of shoes, with soles as broad as a racket, and much in that form: these shoes preserve them from sinking into the snow, and by them they skim along the surface with surprising agility, at the same time turning aside the snow, and making a path for the passengers, with a kind of shovel which they carry in their hands. A high wind is then very dangerous, as the drifts of snow caused by it will overwhelm both man and horse. The passage over is computed to be about one hundred and twenty miles; but in the way are several villages, where travellers find plenty of provisions; for the soil in general is very prolific, even to the top, yielding corn, wine, fruits, honey, and cattle, in abundance, and all very good in their kind. The eastern parts of *Caucasus* terminate in two *portæ*, gates or passes, which served as a passage to the *Huns* to enter into the territories of the *Ferrians* and *Romans*. One of them was anciently called *Caucasian*, and the other *Caspian*: the first has since changed its name for that of *Tzur*.

THE river *Phasis*, of great note also among the ancients, bends its course through part of this country. Its fountain-head is among the ridges of *Mount Caucasus*, and thence traversing the province of *Mingrelia*, continues winding westward, and empties itself into the *Euxine* Sea, by two mouths forming a multitude of pleasant isles. Its waters retain their sweetness for a considerable way in the sea, which may be attributed to their lightness, as swimming for some time on the surface of the salt. It is reckoned one of the largest rivers in all *Asia*, and towards its mouth is a mile and a half in breadth, and its bed upwards of sixty fathom deep. Some think it, from its name of *Phasis*, to be the ancient *Pison*, mentioned by *Moses* as one of the rivers of *Paradise*.

THE

THE principal cities and towns of Georgia are *Thefflis*, the capital, *Gori*, *Aly*, *Suram*, *Zagan*, *Cotatis*, *Akalzike*, and *Terchi*.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Origin, Conquests, Government, Religion, Customs, Manners, Policy, &c. of the Turks.

HAVING described every thing that is material relating to the provinces of the *Turkish Asiatic* empire, it seemed necessary to subjoin here a general idea of the people, who, by an almost insensible increase, have at length formed one of the greatest and most potent dominions at present subsisting in the world.

IF we should endeavour to trace their origin back to its source, we might find that it reaches almost as high as the general dispersion of nations. The *Huns*, known for several centuries past by the name of *Turks*, at first occupied the country north of *China*, between the rivers *Irtisch* and *Amour*; by degrees they became masters of all *Great Tartary*, and established a dominion in those vast countries, which maintained its grandeur above 2000 years: the remaining monuments point out illustrious emperors, sage legislators, and renowned conquerors. What particularly renders the history of this people an interesting matter, is its connexion with the histories of almost all the other people of *Europe* and *Asia*. It is blended with that of the *Chinese* and eastern *Tartars*, who were contiguous to the *Huns*, and with whom they had continual wars. In the reign of the emperor *Valens*, these *Huns*, under the conduct of *Attila*, abandoned the frontiers of *China*, traversed immense countries, and brought ravage and desolation with them into *Europe*. It cannot be questioned but that the particulars of this irruption, and an inquiry into the causes that produced it, must throw great light upon the history of the lower empire.

AFTER these *Huns* came others from the side of *Persia*, who settled in *Iconium*. To them succeeded the *Ottoman Turks*. There is no deducing the origin of any of these, but by clearing up many difficulties which occur in the *Greek* writers, and pointing out the errors which abound in *Chalcondylus*, the *Turkish* historians, and prince *Cantemir*, who has followed them too scrupulously. To come at a knowledge of the *Turks* who extinguished the power of the caliphs, and reduced them to mere chiefs of a religion, the history of the

Mussulman emperors must be reviewed. The *Russians*, *Poles*, and *Hungarians*, must meet with part of their own affairs in the details which concern the expedition of the *Tartars* as far as the *Baltic Sea*. In a word, these barbarians have made incursions into *Italy*, *Germany*, and *France*, so that their history has a connection with that of all those states. In the wars occasioned by the crusades, the *French* were always fighting against the *Turks*: an inquiry into this people cannot therefore but rectify, in that respect, the ancient *French* historians, and teach us how to distinguish what is true in them from circumstances which an extravagant credulity has prevailed upon them to admit.

BUT as it is not our business to point out the objects to which a general history of the *Huns* should extend, it will be sufficient to observe in regard to the *Turks* their descendants, that though we are not informed of the occasion of their change of habitation, it may notwithstanding be easily guessed at. Being a very stout and hardy people, they propagated so fast, that they were obliged not only to enlarge their borders, and spread themselves where they most conveniently could, but likewise to send out large colonies into other lands.

First incursion of the *Turks*.

THE first attempt they made, was upon *Georgia*, about the middle of the eighth century, where, having only ravaged and plundered the country, they retired, or perhaps were forced so to do, by the repulse they met with. But when they had once found the sweets of this first expedition, it is not to be doubted but that they conceived eager desires after a second; and that it would not be long before they came with a greater force, and with sufficient resolution to settle themselves, if possible, in a country so far superior in every respect to their own. Accordingly in 844, rushing on like an impetuous torrent, they penetrated as far as *Armenia Major*, where they fixed themselves. They did not, however, alter their old way of living, but contented themselves with their usual custom of dwelling in tents, and shifting their habitations as occasion required, till about the year 1000, when they were invited by the king of *Persia* into his service, who, at that time, was strongly beset by the caliph of *Babylon* on one side, and the *Indians* on the other. Their brave general *Tangrolipix* having marched at the head of three thousand of them to his assistance, soon after totally defeated his enemy; but that ungrateful monarch, instead of rewarding their valour, refused to pay or dismiss them, and even caused their passage homewards to be stopped. The *Turks*, extremely disgusted at this treatment, retired into a wil-

wilderness, whence making frequent excursions, they plundered and ravaged all the adjacent countries; and having surprized and intirely routed twenty thousand *Persians* sent against them, they began to grow very numerous and powerful. The *Persian* king marched next against them at the head of a numerous army, but they encountered him also near *Ispahan*; and after a long and fierce conflict, in which that monarch was killed, they gained a compleat victory, and *Tangrolipix* entering that capital at the head of his victorious *Turks*, seized on the *Persian* throne, and having embraced *Mohammedanism*, was unanimously acknowledged by all the *Persians* in 1030.

THIS was already a great step towards the rise of the *Turkish* Rise of power in this country; but *Tangrolipix* not stopping here, ^{their} soon after fell upon the caliph of *Babylon*, defeated and killed ^{power.} him, and seized also on that kingdom. His next attempt was on *Arabia* on one side, and *Media* on the other; but these proving unsuccessful, he turned his arms against *Asia Minor*, which was then in a manner neglected and defenceless, on account of the dissensions then raging at *Constantinople*. His son *Axan*, and nephew *Cutlumoses*, who were at the head of this expedition, made a very quick progress there in a little time. *Tangrolipix* and his successors possessed the *Persian* throne till about the year 1260, when the *Tartars*, under their prince *Haalm*, invaded it, and with as great rapidity of success as the *Turks* had over-run *Persia*, *Assyria*, and *Asia Minor*, made themselves masters of all the *Persian* dominions, and for that time brought down the *Turkish* grandeur greatly below their own.

AT the same time that *Tangrolipix*'s posterity reigned in *Persia*, there was formed another small kingdom of the *Turks*, ^{Two principal families of the} in the east of *Persia*, under a prince of another family. There were then, it seems, two eminent *Turkish* families, the *Selzuccian*, from which *Tangrolipix* was descended; and the *Oyyzian*, from which *Ottoman* afterwards sprung. *Solyman*, the grandfather of *Ottoman*, and sultan of *Machan*, (for that was his title) seeing *Cursumes*, the last of the *Selzuccian* family become the victim of the *Tartars*, had little hopes himself to escape their fury by any other means than flight. Accordingly, taking with him all his family, and as many of his friends as were willing to accompany him, he retired first into *Armenia*, thence into *Cappadocia* and *Syria*; and afterwards, endeavouring to return to his ancient territories, was unfortunately drowned in crossing the *Euphrates*. His son *Ertogrul*, and father of *Ottoman*, with his travelling wag-gons and sorry equipage, begged of his countryman the sul-
tan

tan of *Iconium*, a small tract of land to reside in, and at the same time gave him such seasonable assistance with his little army against the *Tartars*, then at war with him; that an intricate victory was gained over them. This so ingratiated him to the sultan, that he granted him a parcel of land, where he led a quiet pastoral life, after the primitive *Turkish* manner, and lived to a good old age.

Otto. His son *Ottoman*, who was too brave and enterprising a man's rise prince to follow his father's example, soon found means to and con- raise himself to a greater degree of power and glory. He began with attacking his neighbours, and carrying off numerous herds of cattle from them; next he seized on their castles, which being of little or no strength, he easily made himself master of. His success so increased with his force, that at length he began to attack large cities, and in a little time subdued those of *Prusa*, *Nice*, and many others; inso-

much that the greater part of *Asia-Minor* was forced to submit to his superior arms and fortune. Hereupon, he founded a new kingdom of the *Turks* in *Asia-Minor*, which continued to increase and swallow up all the inferior ones. It is from him that the *Turkish* empire obtained the name of *Ottoman*, and the present grand signior deduces his pedigree from him.

Conquests of Otto- man's posterity. *OTTOMAN*'s son, *Orchanes*, first passed the *Hellepont*, and reduced *Gallipoli* and other places in *Europe*. *Amurath*, his successor, reduced *Adrianople*, *Servia*, and *Bulgaria*. After him, *Bajazet* conquered *Thrace*, *Macedon*, and *Achaia*; but being taken prisoner by *Tamerlane*, beat out his brains against the iron cage he was kept in. *Solyman*, eldest son of *Bajazet*, succeeded to the *European* provinces. *Mahomet*, the youngest son of *Bajazet*, possessed the *Asiatic* provinces in 1450; and having subdued *Solyman*, succeeded to the whole. He also conquered *Dacia* and part of *Sclavonia*. *Amurath II.* in 1547, subdued the rest of *Achaia*, *Thessaly*, and *Epirus*, and invaded *Hungary*. *Mahomet II.* surnamed the Great, conquered the two empires of *Constantinople* and *Trapezond*, with two hundred cities more, and was first styled emperor of the *Turks*. *Constantinople* was taken in 1453, and *Trapezond* in 1460. *Bajazet II.* in 1481, subdued *Caramania*, reduced the *Morea* and *Dalmatia*, then possessed by the *Venetians*, and part of *Armenia*. *Selimus II.* in 1512, subdued the *Mamaluks* kingdom in *Egypt*, *Palestine*, *Syria*, and *Arabia Petrea*. *Solyman the Magnificent*, in 1520, reduced *Rhodes*, *Belgrade*, *Buda*, and great part of *Hungary* in *Europe*; and *Babylon*, *Assyria*, and *Mesopotamia* in *Asia*. *Selimus III.* in 1566, took *Cyprus* from the *Venetians*; and *Tunis* in *Africa* from the *Moors*.
Amy-

Amurath III. enlarged his conquests on the side of *Persia*. *Mahomet IV.* in 1648, took *Candia* from the *Venetians*, after a siege of thirty years, having lost before it 180,000 men: the Christians lost 80,000 men in the defence of it. Volunteers from every Christian nation assisted the *Venetians* in this war. *Solyman III.* in 1687, besieged *Vienna*, but met with a total defeat there by *John Sobieski*, king of *Poland*, and lost great part of *Hungary*; the *Venetians* also recovered the *Morea* from him. In the reign of *Achmet II.* 1691, the Turks were intirely driven out of *Hungary* and *Transylvania*. *Achmet* recovered the *Morea* back again from the *Venetians* in 1715. *Mahomet V.* deposed his uncle sultan *Achmet* in 1730, and was succeeded by sultan *Osman III.* who dying on the 29th of *October*, 1755, his nephew, the present emperor, *Mustapha III.* who was born in 1716, ascended the throne.

THE *Turks* had the original of their civil government Govern-
founded in time of war; for when they first came out of ment of the
Scythia or *Tartary*, and took up arms, and submitted to one Turks.
general, it may be supposed that they had no laws but what
were arbitrary and martial, and most agreeable to their in-
tended enterprize. The first sultans, owing their promotion
purely to their own valour, and elate with ideas of maxims
of war, would have a blind obedience paid to them; they
punished with severity, and endeavoured to keep their sub-
jects under an inability to revolt; and they would be served
only by persons who stood indebted to them for their for-
tune, and whom they could advance without jealousy, and
crush without injustice. These maxims, which have con-
tinued amongst them for upwards of four centuries, render
the sultan absolute master of his empire. In possessing the
intire revenue of it himself, he does but enjoy the inheritance
of his ancestors; and if he has an absolute power of life and
death over his people, he regards them only as the issue of
his forefathers slaves. His subjects also are so intirely per-
suaded of the same opinion, that they make no resistance, but
submit to the first order for taking away their life or goods.
This excess of obedience, infused into them from their very
cradle by a refined piece of policy, is rather a duty of religion
than maxim of state; and, under the force of this prejudice,
even the chief officers of the empire conclude it to be the
highest good fortune and glory to end their days by the hands
or order of their lord. The whole extent of the *Turkish*
empire, lands and houses, castles and arms, (except lands
dedicated to religious uses) are therefore the proper goods of
the grand signior; and being his possession and right, remain
in his sole gift and disposal. The lands being thus origi-
nally

The Conclusion of

nally in the prince, divisions, after conquests, were made of the houses, manors, and farms, among the soldiery, and called timars, as rewards for their valour and labour; in consideration of which every one, proportionably to his revenue and possession, is obliged to maintain horse and men, to be always ready when the grand signior shall call him forth to serve in the wars. This is not unlike the tenure of knight-service in *England*, or lands held of the crown; but with this difference, that here they are enjoyed by the title of a fixed and settled law, never to be forfeited but upon treason and rebellion; whereas, though the *Turks* enjoy them also by inheritance from father to son, yet they are only as usufructory during the pleasure of the sultan, to whom the property is always reserved, and who often, as his humour and fancy lead him, to please and gratify a stranger, ejects an ancient possessor, whose family has for many generations enjoyed that inheritance.

THE absolute and unlimited power of the sultan is still more evident from the titles they give him, as "God on earth, the shadow of God, brother to the sun and moon, the giver of all earthly crowns, &c." And though they do not erect altars to him, as was done to the *Roman* emperors, yet the exalted notions they entertain of his power, the ray of divine illumination they conceive to be in him, are a kind of imagery and idolatrous fancy they frame of his divinity.

Inauguration of the sultan. WHEN there is a new emperor or sultan, it is customary to conduct him with great pomp to a place in the suburbs of *Constantinople*, called *Job*, where solemn prayers are made, that God would prosper, and infuse wisdom into him, who is to manage so great a charge. Then the multi embracing him, bestows his blessing, and the sultan swears and promises solemnly to maintain the musliman faith and the laws of the prophet *Mohammed*. Afterwards the viziers of the bench and other bashas, with profound reverence kissing the ground first, and then the hem of his vest, acknowledge him to be their lawful and undoubted sovereign. This term of inauguration over, he returns with the like solemnity to the seraglio. The sultan in this manner obliges himself to govern within the compass of the law; but he is given so large a latitude, that he cannot be said to be under any restriction; for though bound to the execution of the *Mohammedan* law, yet that law calls him the mouth and interpreter of it, and endows him with a power to alter and annul the most settled and fixed rules, or at least to dispense with them, when an obstacle to his government.

THE

THE great officers of state in *Turkey* are the grand vizier, Turkish or prime minister; the musti, or high priest; the viziers ^{officers of} of the bench, who sit in the divan, or courts of justice with ^{state} him; the cadalisquiers, or chief justices of provinces; the beglerbegs, or viceroys; the bashas, or governors of towns and districts under the beglerbegs; the kiamacan, or governor of *Constantinople*, who is the grand vizier's lieutenant in his absence; the reis-effendi, or lord chancellor and secretary of state; the testerdar, or lord treasurer; the kissar aga, or black eunuch, superintendant to the women; the capi agasi, or white eunuch, who has the command of all the pages and white eunuchs; the chamberlain, and other officers of the household; the aga, or general of the janizaries; and the captain-basha, or admiral. There are no nobility or hereditary governments in *Turkey*; the bashas and great officers of state are all educated in the seraglio, being the children of Christian parents, taken by the *Tartars* in their excursions, or purchased by the merchants, many of whom deal only in this kind of traffic. Sometimes, indeed, the renegade Christians arrive at the highest employments in their fleets and armies, and are observed to have done more mischief to Christendom, than those educated *Mohammedans*, being better skilled in the arts of war and navigation than the *Turks* usually are. And indeed, but few of the native *Turks* are found in any great posts, their officers, both civil and military, with the best part of their forces, being composed chiefly of the children of Christians or renegadoes.

THE most beautiful, well made, and sprightly of the youth, ^{educated} who are designed for employments in the government or in the ^{in the se-} army, are always reviewed and approved of by the grand signior, before they are admitted into the seraglios of *Pera*, *Constantinople*, or *Adrianople*, which are the three colleges or seminaries, where they are educated or fitted for employments, according to the opinion the court entertains of them. They are first taught silence, and an humble modest behaviour; then instructed in the *Mohammedan* religion, and to speak and write the *Turkish* language, and afterwards the *Persian* and *Arabic*. When fit for manly exercises, they are taught the use of arms, and such other arts and sciences as may render them serviceable to the state, and are advanced, and their salaries augmented, according to their proficiency; and, as places and governments fall, are preferred to them; but they are seldom preferred out of the seraglio till the age of forty, before which they are thought not sufficiently qualified for governors. The janizaries, or grand signior's guards, are all educated in the seraglio, and their aga or commander

is the most considerable military officer. Part of the court is composed of mutes and dwarfs; the mutes, who are born deaf and consequently dumb, are about forty in number, and are taught to discourse by signs. With these and the dwarfs the sultan frequently diverts himself; and if a dwarf happens to be a eunuch and a mute, too great a valde cannot be set upon him.

*Women of
the seraglio.*

THE ladies of the haram are a collection of young beautiful virgins, either the presents of governors, or purchased, or taken in war, most of them the children of Christian parents. On their admission, they are committed to the charge of some ancient lady, and taught music, dancing, and other accomplishments, and furnished with the richest cloaths and ornaments: these frequently play and dance before the grand signior, while others entertain him with their conversation. They are scarce ever suffered to go abroad, except when the grand signior removes; if by water, a troop of black eunuchs convey them to the boats, inclosed with lattices; and when by land, they are put into close chariots, and signals made at certain distances, to give notice that none approach the road through which they march. Besides these ladies, there are a great many female slaves in the seraglio, whose business it is to wait on them.

Forces.

THE *Turks* have always very numerous armies on foot, and the greatest part of them consist of a kind of militia; every one who holds his lands by military tenures, as before mentioned, being obliged to bring a certain number of soldiers into the field: these may amount to several hundred thousand, and are called out to action whenever the government requires their service. But their chief dependence is on their janizaries, who have been bred in the seraglio, and exercised in military discipline from their infancy, and of whom there are 25,000 in actual pay. There may be in the empire 100,000 that bear the name of janizaries, but these are not enrolled with the others: the serdar in every province, who has the command of the janizaries in it, frequently abuses his office, and will take any man into that body, who desires to purchase the privilege of committing outrages with impunity, and of screening himself from justice; for a janizary is accountable to none but his own officers, whatever violence he commits; and this, in some measure, may be a reason why the janizaries, who compose the grand signior's guards, frequently depose him when he happens to be unsuccessful, or his administration does not please them, though they usually advance his nearest relation to the throne. The *spahis*, or best *Turkish* horsemen, bred up

up in martial exercises, as the janizaries, are also a very formidable body, and may amount for the grand signior's horseguards, to about 12 or 15,000. There are considerable bodies of others under the same denomination in every province. But their numerous armies frequently occasion their defeat, by charging in too much confusion; though *basha Bonneval* had prevailed on some of their troops to submit to French discipline, of which they made great advantage in their last German war, recovering a great extent of country they had lost south of the *Danube*. Their naval forces are not so considerable as might be expected in such extensive dominions, situate on several seas, and abounding in commodious harbours: but their neglecting navigation and foreign commerce, is the true reason they can never find sailors to man a great fleet, if they should build one.

THE revenues of the grand signior arise by the customs, the produce of the demesne lands, and a kind of capitation tax, imposed on every subject of the empire who is not of the *Mohammedan* religion. Another branch of these revenues arises from the annual tributes paid by the *Crim Tartar*, the princes of *Moldavia*, *Wallachia*, the little republic of *Ragusa*, and part of *Mingrelia*; and half a million of money, out of a million and a half, levied annually in the kingdom of *Egypt*, comes into the royal treasury, the rest being laid out in paying the officers and forces of that province. But all these are a trifle in comparison to the vast sums the sultan continually extorts from his viceroys and great officers of state, under the name of presents. He is heir to all his officers and ministers; and when they have plundered whole provinces and kingdoms, they are forced to leave all to be disposed of by him when they die; and he gives but a very small portion to the relations of the deceased, though their ancestor has behaved never so well. Sometimes, under pretence of misconduct, he cuts them off in the prime of life, especially if they happen to be immoderately rich. *Revenues.*

THE current coin of *Turkey* consists of gold and silver, but there is no copper or brass money. The gold coin is of two sorts, the one of their own country, the other of foreign money. The first is called a *scheriff*, a *sultanine*, or *sequin*, and is worth about 10 s. sterling, though formerly it passed only for 8 s. 6 d. or even for 6 s. 6 d. These gold pieces come from *Grand Cairo*, the only city in the whole empire where gold is coined. The foreign gold are the ducats of *Germany*, *Holland*, *Hungary*, and *Venice*. The silver coins are the *asper* and *parisi*. An *English crown* is worth 120 *aspers*. *Coins.*

aspers, and a parisi is worth four aspers: both are struck at Grand Cairo.

Purses. A PURSE is worth 500 crowns; and of these the grand signior makes his usual presents. But a golden purse, which he bestows on his sultanas and favourites, is worth 15,000 sequins, or 30,000 crowns. A kize is a bag of 15,000 ducats.

Religio. OF all false religions, the *Mohammedan* is the most dangerous, as it not only flatters the senses, but in many points agrees with Christianity. It is called *Islam*, and is divided into two distinct parts; *Iman*, signifying faith or theory, and *Din*, religion or practice. The first is that general confession of faith, that "there is no God but the true God, and that *Mohammed* is his apostle," under which are comprehended six branches, 1. Belief in God. 2. In his angels. 3. In his scripture. 4. In his prophets. 5. In the resurrection and day of judgment. 6. In God's absolute decree of predestination both of good and evil. The points relating to practice, are, 1. Prayer, under which are comprehended those washings or purifications which are required as necessary preparations before prayer. 2. Alms. 3. Fasting. And, 4. The pilgrimage to *Mecca* and *Medina*.

THE Devil, whom *Mohammed* calls *Eblis*, from his despair, was once one of those angels nearest to God's presence, and fell, according to the doctrine of the alcoran, for refusing to pay homage to *Adam* at God's command. Besides angels and devils, the *Mohammedans* are taught by the alcoran to believe an intermediate order of beings, whom they call *Sin* or *Genii*, created of fire, as they fancy the angels to be; but of a grosser fabric than angels, because they eat and drink, propagate their species, and are subject to death. Some of them are supposed to be good, and others bad, and capable, like men, of future salvation or damnation. As to the scriptures, the *Mohammedans* are acquainted by the alcoran, that God in divers ages of the world, gave revelations of his will in writing to several prophets, the whole, and every word of which it is absolutely necessary for a Moslem or Mussulman to believe. The number of these sacred books amounts, according to them, to 104; ten of which were given to *Adam*; fifty to *Seth*; thirty to *Edris* or *Enoch*; ten to *Abraham*; and the other four, being the pentateuch, the psalms, the gospel, and the alcoran, were successively delivered to *Moses*, *David*, *Jesus*, and *Mohammed*; which last being the seal of the prophets, all revelations are now closed, and no more are to be expected. All these divine books, except the

the four last, they say, are now intirely lost, and their contents unknown; and of those four, the pentateuch, psalms, and gospel, have undergone so many alterations and corruptions, that though there may possibly be some part of the true word of God in them, yet no credit is to be given to the present copies in the hands of the *Jews* and *Christians*. The *Mohammedans* have a gospel in *Arabic*, attributed to St. *Barnabas*, wherein the history of *Jesus Christ* is related in a very different manner from what we find in the true gospels, and correspondent to the traditions *Mohammed* has followed in his alcoran. This book does not appear to be an original forgery of the *Mohammedans*, though undoubtedly for serving their purpose they have since interpolated it. Instead of the Paraclete or Comforter, they have inserted the word *Periclyte*, that is, "famous or illustrious;" by which they pretend their prophet was foretold, that being the signification of *Mohammed* in *Arabic*; and further, to justify the passage in the alcoran, where *Jesus* is formally asserted to have foretold his coming, they derive his other name *Ahmed* from the same root as *Mohammed*, or *Mahomet*, to import the same. In consequence of these and some other like forgeries, the *Mohammedans* cite several passages, of which there is not the least vestige or analogy in the New Testament. They also take notice of the writings of *Daniel* and several other prophets, sometimes making quotations from them; but they do not believe them to be divine scripture, or of any authority in matters of religion.

THE paradise of the *Mohammedans* is said by them to be situated above the seven heavens, or in the seventh, and next under the throne of God; and to express the amenity of the place, they tell us that the earth of it is of the finest wheat-flour, or of the purest musk, or of saffron; and that its stones are pearls and jacinths, the walls of its buildings enriched with gold and silver, and the trunks of all its trees of gold, amongst which the most remarkable is the tree *Tuba*, or tree of happiness. They pretend that this tree stands in the palace of *Mohammed*, though a branch of it will reach to the house of every true believer, loaded with pomegranates, dates, grapes, and other fruits of surprising bigness, and delicious tastes unknown to mortals. If a man desires to eat of any particular kind of fruit, it will immediately be presented to him; or if he chooses flesh, birds ready dressed will be set before him, and such as he may wish for. They add, that this tree will supply the blessed, not only with

Paradise
of the Mo-
hamme-
dians.

fruit, but with silk garments also, and beasts to ride on, adorned with rich trappings, all which will burst forth from the fruit; and that the tree is so large, that a person mounted on the fleetest horse, would not be able to gallop from one end of its shade to the other in a hundred years. Plenty of water being one of the greatest additions to the pleasantness of any place, the alcoran often speaks of the rivers of paradise, as the principal ornament. Some of these rivers are said to flow with water, some with milk, some with wine, and others with honey: all of them have their sources in the root of this tree of happiness; and as if these rivers were not sufficient, we are told that the garden of this paradise is also watered by a great number of lesser springs and fountains, whose pebbles are rubies and emeralds, their earth of camphire, their beds of musk, and their sides of saffron. But all those glories will be eclipsed by the resplendent and exquisite beauty of the girls of paradise, the enjoyment of whose company will constitute the principal felicity of the faithful. These, they say, are not formed of clay, as mortal women, but of pure musk, and are as their prophet often affirms in his alcoran, free from all the natural defects and inconveniencies incident to the sex. Being also of the strictest modesty, they keep themselves secluded from public view in pavilions of hollow pearls, so large, that, as some traditions have it, one of them will be no less than sixteen, or, as others say, sixty miles long, and as many broad. With these the inhabitants of paradise may taste pleasures in their height, and for this purpose will be endowed with extraordinary abilities, and enjoy æperpetual youth.

Women rewarded or punished in the next life. It is said to be a general notion among the *Mohammedans*; that women have no souls, or that they will not be rewarded in the next life, or at least will not be admitted into the same abode with men, because their places will be supplied by the paradisaical females. But whatever may be the opinion of some ignorant people amongst them, it is certain that *Mohammed* had too great a respect for the fair sex to teach such a doctrine; and there are several passages in the alcoran which affirm, that women in the next life will not only be punished for their evil actions, but will also receive the reward of their good, as well as man; and that God in this case will make no distinction of sexes: but whether the delights good women are to enjoy in a state of future bliss, will be in the company of agreeable partners, created for them to compleat the œconomy of the *Mohammedan* system, does not appear to be any where decided.

THE Mussulmen are so fond of purifications, that they spend a great part of their life in washing. There is not a village among them which has not a public bath. Those in the towns are the chief ornaments of the place. The men never bathe with the women, and great decorum and modesty are observed in this particular. Women are very happy when they are permitted to go to the public baths; but most of them, especially such whose husbands are rich enough to build them baths at home, have not this liberty. In the public baths they entertain one another without any constraint, and pass the time more agreeably than in their own apartments. The men who have any complaisance for their wives, do not refuse them those innocent diversions; for too much confinement makes them sometimes seek reasons for a divorce.

Purification of the Mohammedans.

THE Mohammedans, not content with bare ablutions, think themselves obliged to several other points of cleanliness, the chief of which is circumcision. It is held to be an ancient divine institution, though not so much as once mentioned in the alcoran; and also highly proper and expedient, though not so absolutely necessary, but that it may be dispensed with in some cases. The Arabs used this rite for many ages before Mohammed, having probably learned it from Ishmael, though the same was practised by several other tribes besides his descendants. Josephus tells us, the Ishmaelites used to circumcise their children, not on the eighth day, as was customary with the Jews, but when they were twelve or thirteen years old, at which age their father Ishmael underwent the operation. The Mohammedans so far imitate them, that they do not circumcise their children till they are able to pronounce the profession of their faith, "That there is no God but God, and Mohammed is the apostle of God." However, they make choice of what age they please for that purpose, which is generally between six and sixteen. Upon the day of circumcision, a feast is made for the relations of the child that is to be circumcised; and when the operation is over by the surgeon's shewing the prepuce to the assistants, and crying with a loud voice "God is great," they all croud about to felicitate him upon his being admitted into the rank of a Mussulman or Believer.

Circumcision.

BESIDES the ceremonial of circumcision, they have two principal annual feasts, called Bairams. The first is called the feast of breaking the fast, as beginning immediately after the great fast of Ramazan. The Mohammedans are obliged by express command of the alcoran, to fast the whole month of Ramazan, from the time the new moon first appears, till

The two Bairams.

the

the appearance of the next new moon. During this time they must abstain from eating, drinking, and women, from day-break till night, or sun-set. This fast is extremely rigorous and mortifying to the *Turks*, who impatiently wait for the next new moon, and the moment it appears, they publish their Bairam or *Easter*, by the firing of several guns, and public bonfires and rejoicings. This feast continues three days, during which they indulge themselves in several sorts of pastimes. One thing, however, is very commendable in them at this time, and this is their pardoning and being reconciled to all their enemies; for they think they have made a bad Bairam, if they keep malice in their heart. They also wish one another a thousand prosperities, and send presents, as is customary in some countries in *Europe*, at the beginning of the year. The other Bairam, called the greater, or The feast of the sacrifice, begins the *fourth* day of the moon *Dhu'l-hajja*; but though reckoned the principal act of devotion among the *Mohammedans*, it is taken much less notice of by the generality of the people, because the ceremonies whereby it is observed are performed at *Mecca*, the only scene of that solemnity.

*Things
prohi-
bited.*

NEXT to these commandments, there are some things which are prohibited to the *Turks*, and which they cannot make use of without sin. These are, all figures and representations of men, women, or beasts; the drinking of wine, under which name are comprehended all sorts of strong and thebrating liquors; all games of chance; lending money upon usury; and the eating of blood, swine's flesh, and whatever dies of itself, and is slain in the name, or in honour of any idol; or is strangled, or killed by a blow, or fall, or by any other beast.

*The musli
and Turk-
ish priests,
&c.*

THE musli, who is at the head of the lawyers, is the chief of their religion, and the interpreter of the alcoran. He is appointed by the sultan, who generally chuses a man of probity, learned in the knowledge of the law, and of established reputation. By this choice he becomes the most respectable officer in the empire, and all his decisions, made only by Yes or No, which he writes under any proposed question, are held as sacred. It is, however, his interest to behave with great circumspection; for being often consulted only out of formality, he runs great risque of being deposed if he does not answer according to the prince's pleasure. By the law, a musli is not to be put to death; but if guilty of high treason, or any enormous crime, it would be in vain for him to plead the privilege of the law; and he could not escape being degraded, imprisoned, strangled, or pounded alive.

alive in a *mosque*. There is only one *musti*, and his ordinary residence is at *Constantinople*; and as he cannot dispatch all affairs of conscience in that vast empire, the *cadilesquers* perform the office of *musti* out of *Constantinople*, in consequence of their skill in the canon as well as civil law. For want of *cadilesquers* they have recourse to the *moullas*, the chief of the *cadi's*; and as there are several places where there is neither a *cadilesquier* nor *moulla*, but only a *cadi*, this *cadi* discharges the office of all, and is judge in all matters. The chief amongst the priests are styled *imans*, and their employment is to say prayers, to read in the *mosques*, to bless marriages, to assist the dying, and accompany the dead. Upon the vacancy of a *curé*, they are recommended to the grand vizier by the people of the parish, or in the provinces, to the principal governing officer, who dispatches their preferment, making them read some passages of the *alcoran*, or laying that book upon their head. The *hodgia's* are the counsellors and doctors of the law, and sometimes perform the office of *imans*, and even preach on certain festivals. They are often consulted about affairs of importance, and are in great reputation among the people. The *der-vises* are in the nature of monks, making vows of poverty, chastity, and obedience; though they do not observe them, as they easily give themselves a dispensation from the two first, and marry, by quitting their order, when the humour takes them. Every *Tuesday* and *Friday* they make a dance, which is very pleasant to see. Passing before their superior, they salute him very humbly, and then making a leap, they begin to turn round with their naked feet, the left serving for a pivot to turn upon; and this they perform so fast, and with so much agility, that one is sooner weary of looking on than they of turning. These gyrations are performed to the sounds of drums and flutes. Formerly, they were such frantic enthusiasts as to cut and slash their bodies; but now they scarce raze the skin, though they still sometimes burn themselves on the side of their heart, with small wax candles, as a mark of their tenderness to the objects of their love and devotion. They attract the admiration of the people by handling fire unhurt, and they will also hold it in their mouth a good while, like our mountebanks. They besides perform a thousand feats of activity, and play surprisingly with the juggler's box. They are the only *Turks* who travel into the eastern countries, and chiefly for the sake of alms, which they collect in abundance. Music is one part of their study, and though it is forbidden by the

alcoran to praise God with instruments, they have set it on foot in spite of the edicts of the sultan, and the persecution of bigots. It is observed by the more intelligent and better meaning sort of *Turks*, that the dervises are great hypocrites, who would pass for men wholly given up to the contemplation of God, whilst they are consummate in all sorts of vice.

Persons, It is observed that the *Turks* are generally personable
dress, tem- men, which may proceed from the choice they make of
per, &c. of their women; they collect the greatest beauties that can be
the Turks. met with in the neighbouring countries to breed by, and

every man is allowed by the alcoran four women for wives or concubines. The men wear their beards long, but shave their heads, which they cover with a turban of enormous size, and never put it off but when they sleep. They suffer no Christians or other people to wear white turbans but themselves. Their breeches or drawers are of a piece with their stockings, and they wear slippers instead of shoes, which they put off when they enter a temple or house. They wear shirts with wide sleeves, not gathered at the wrists or neck, and over them a vest tied with a sash, their upper garment being a loose gown somewhat shorter than the vest. The women's dress pretty much resembles that of the men, only they have a stiffened bonnet of pasteboard, something like a mitre, and covered with cloth of gold, or some handsome stuff, on their heads, instead of a turban; and they wear their hair down, which hangs in tresses upon their back, and is a wonderful grace to them. When they go abroad they are so wrapped up, that their faces cannot be seen.

AN uniformity runs through all the actions of the *Turks*, and they never change their manner of living. There is no need of much wit to behave well amongst them; for a good mien and gravity are instead of merit in the East, and much gaiety would spoil all. They are proud, and value themselves above all other nations, thinking themselves the most valiant men upon earth, and that the world was made for them alone: and indeed, they despise all other nations in general, especially those who are not of their religion. There is no such thing as making great feasts with them: they are satisfied with a little. Rice is the standing dish in their kitchens, with or without flesh-meat, and they dress it various ways. They seem to have no manner of genius or inclination for the improvement of arts and sciences. A slothful indolent way of life is preferred to every thing: they saunter away their time, either among their women, or the

the harâm, or in smoking tobacco, drinking coffee, and taking opium. They seldom travel, or use any exercise or rural sports; and have no curiosity to be informed of the state of their own or any other country. They are very amorous, and frequently in an unnatural way; which they care so little to conceal, that these songs are upon no other subject than that infamous passion and wine. Being also exceedingly covetous, their friendship is easily acquired by money and presents: money effects every thing at the grand signior's court; money makes heads fly off; in fine, money is the powerful attractive charm, the great talisman there, as well as elsewhere.

THE indifference of the *Asiatic* nations under the *Turkish* empire, with respect to virtue, their ignorance and abject state of mind, are the necessary consequences of their form of government, and must some time or other bring on its destruction. How can slaves, educated under the menacing brow of a master, stifle, at the approach of a hardy enemy, the habitual sensations of fear they have contracted from arbitrary power? how can men so debased, without elevation of mind, accustomed to trample on the weak, and to cringe before the powerful, avoid yielding to the magnanimity, the policy, the valour of a bold enterprising people? how can dastardly slaves resist a free and powerful nation? The tyrant, to make use of arbitrary power with impunity, is forced to enervate the minds and the courage of his subjects. What renders him formidable at home, renders him weak abroad: with liberty, he banishes from his empire the splendor of all virtues; for virtue cannot dwell in base and servile minds.

THE lustre thrown upon such nations as the *Turks*, is always of short duration. If sometimes they attain to the highest pitch of power and glory, and become illustrious by success of all kinds, this success is more owing to the prowess of the governing chiefs, than to the form of government. It has always been as fleeting as brilliant: The strength of such states, however it may impose upon us, is but an illusion: it is the colossus of *Nebuchadnezzar*, of which the feet were of potter's clay. These empires resemble the lofty pine, whose top reaches to the heavens, the beasts of the field, and the birds of the air seeking for shelter under its branches; but being fixed in the ground by too weak a root; is overthrown by the first storm. Such states have but a momentary existence, if they are not surrounded by nations who are but little disposed to great enterprizes, and

are likewise subject to arbitrary power. The respective strength of such nations consists, therefore, in an equilibrium of weakness. If a despotic empire has received a shock, and the throne cannot be secured without a manly and courageous resolution, that empire is destroyed.

THE people who groan under the yoke of arbitrary power, have therefore only a momentary success, a mere flash of glory; and must, sooner or later, submit to a free and enterprising nation. But supposing that particular circumstances and situations save them from this danger, the bad administration of these kingdoms is sufficient to destroy, depopulate, and convert them into deserts; the lethargic languor that successively seizes all the members, produces this effect. The property of despotic power is to silence the passions; and when minds have, by being divested of passions, or through the want of them, lost their activity; when they are emasculated by luxury, indolence, and softness, the state then droops into a consumption. The apparent calm it enjoys, is, in the eyes of the intelligent, a languid state, which is the forerunner of its dissolution. Passions are necessary in a nation, and are its life and soul: the people who have the strongest, are in the end triumphant. "O happy times (cries *Tacitus*, under the reign of *Trajan*) when people obey only the laws, when every one may think freely, and freely tell his thoughts; when every heart flies to the prince, and the sight of him is a benefit!"

C H A P. VII.

Of Persia.

THE ancient *Persian* monarchy reached from the mouth of the river *Indus* in the south-east, to the *Hellepont* in the south-west, which was 2800 *English* miles in length; and from the *Black-Sea* to the mouth of the *Arabian-Gulph*, or *Red Sea*, which was 2000 miles in breadth. It also comprehended *Egypt*, part of *Ethiopia*, and *Lybia* in *Africa*, the islands in the *Ægean Sea*, with *Thracia* and *Macedonia* in *Europe*. But it must be observed, that *Egypt* was then reckoned part of *Asia*, and that what the *Persians* had in *Europe* could not be properly called their possession, having enjoyed it only during the time of invasions, while they made war against the *Greeks*. The *Parthians*, long after them, established a new empire, which reached sometimes from the river *Indus* to the *Euphrates*, and sometimes as far as the *Hellepont*, or the streight of the *Dardanelles*; the island of *Taprobana*, now *Ceylon*, on the coast of the *Mogul* empire, was also tributary to them, and they possessed in *Africa*, *Egypt*, *Lybia*, and as far as the frontiers of *Ethiopia*.

SOME derive the name of this country from *Perfis*, one of its chief provinces, so called from *Perseus*, a *Greek*, who subdued the country, and gave it his own name. The poets make him the son of *Jupiter* and *Danæ*, and conqueror of all the East. Others derive its name from *Paras*, or *Pbaras*, which signifies a horseman, because *Cyrus* taught the *Persians* the use of horsemanship, and published an edict, ordering all men to travel on horseback, though their journies were ever so short. This country is called *Elam* in the Old Testament; and the inhabitants *Elamites*, from *Elam* the son of *Shem*, who is said to have first planted it after the flood. The *Greeks* and *Romans* used the modern name of *Persia*, and all *European* nations do the same, with some variation in the termination; but the *Turks* and *Persians* call this country *Agem*.

PERSIA, at present, is bounded on the north by part of *Russia*, the *Caspian-Sea*, and the country of the *Uzbek* and independent *Tartars*; on the east by the *Mogul* empire, from which a ridge of mountains and the river *Indus* divide it; on the south it has the *Arabian-Sea*, which is part of the ocean, and the *Persian gulph*; and on the west it has *Georgia* and *Aran*, or ancient *Armenia*, from which the rivers *Kar* and *Aros* pass it; also, the rivers *Tigris* and *Euphrates*,

which separate it from the *Turkish* empire in *Asid*. Its greatest extent from south to north is about 19 deg. from 25. 40. to 44. 40. that is, 1140 *English* miles ; and its greatest extent from east to west is about 1280 miles, though in many parts it is much narrower, especially towards the north, where on the west it contains but a narrow tract of land between *Turkey* and the *Caspian-Sea* ; and on the east it is also pent up between the same sea and the country of the *Tartars*. It is situated under the fourth, fifth, and sixth climates ; whence the longest day in the north is fifteen hours and some minutes, and in the south thirteen hours and forty-five minutes ; and the temperature of the air is therefore various, according to the different provinces. In the province of *Edzerbajstan*, or *Aiderbeitsan*, the capital of which is *Takris*, to the south of *Armenia* or *Aran*, the air is very cold, and yet very healthy ; but in *Tabristan*, or *Masanderan*, to the south of the *Caspian Sea*, is very unwholesome. The country here is marshy, and abounds with an infinite number of insects, which dying when the marshes are dried up in summer, infect the air with poisonous exhalations ; there are besides so many fetid waters in this province, that, by often overflowing part of the country, they occasion the inhabitants to have an earthy complexion. Shah *Abas* transported 20,000 *Armenian* families into *Tabristan*, in order to people and cultivate it ; but few of them withstood the insalubrity of the country, which is notwithstanding very fruitful. The air is not better in the province of *Ghilaz*, which lies to the north-west of *Tabristan* ; and, indeed, is so bad in both, that it is customary to ask, when any person is appointed governor of either, whether he is guilty of robbery or murder, that he should be sent thither ? The province of *Persian Irac*, of which *Ispahan* is the capital, and which lies about the middle of the kingdom, enjoys six months hot, and six months cold weather, though lying between the 31st and 36th deg. of north lat. It snows there four or five times in the season, and sometimes in such quantities that it is impossible to find the roads. At about a league's distance from *Ispahan*, there is a stone three or four feet high ; and when the snow happens to cover the ground to that height, it is a sign of a plentiful year. The first peasant that carries the news of it to court, receives a reward of an hundred tomans, about 230 l. sterling. It rains here very seldom, except in *April*, when the showers are sometimes pretty heavy. In the southern provinces, especially along the sea-coast, the air is so excessive hot and sultry, that it is very dangerous, and even mortal to *Europeans*, particularly to such as are not temperate in eating and drinking.

GENERALLY speaking, the soil in *Persia* cannot be much Soil, *pro-*
 commended; for though some parts are fruitful, others are *duce*, &c.
 perfectly barren, being mountainous and sandy. By reason
 of the scarcity of rivers, there is only rain and dissolved
 snow for watering the land; and these falling from the
 mountains in small brooks and rivulets, render the vallies
 fertile. Here their corn ripens exceedingly, and in some
 parts they have a three-fold crop in a year. At *Ispahan* they
 have almost all kinds of the choicest *European* fruits, but
 fairer and better; and by the dryness of the air, they keep a
 whole year. The melons are excellent, and not dangerous
 as in *Europe*; their apricots delicious, and their peaches
 large and good. They have nine or ten sorts of very good
 grapes, which yield good wine, chiefly white; for the red
 wines do not keep so well, except that of *Shiraz*, which is
 excellent in its kind, and stomachical. They have few trees
 but what grow in their gardens, and of these the palm tree
 is the most carefully cultivated. When young, and before
 it bears fruit, they dig on one side of it eight or ten fathom
 deep in the earth, till they find water; then the hole is filled
 up with pigeons dung, of which they have always great
 provisions from the vast number of tame pigeons, kept
 chiefly for the sake of their dung, which serves both to ma-
 nure the ground, and make hot beds for raising melons.

It is said, that if they did not take that course with the *Culture of*
 palm-trees, they would not bear good fruit. But there is *the palm-*
 besides something very curious to be observed in the culti- *tree.*
 vating of this tree, which is, their taking every year, when
 the palm-trees are in blossom, the blossoms of the male
 palm-tree, and putting two or three bunches of them into
 the matrix of each female, when they begin to blow. If
 this was not done, they would produce dates with only skin
 and stone without any pulp. The matrix is that bud which
 contains the flowers, from which, in process of time, the
 dates are formed. The time of making this impregnation
 is about the end of *November*; not but that the male palm-
 trees also bear fruit, but being good for nothing, they there-
 fore take all their blossoms for impregnating the female. As
 to the dates, it will not be improper to observe, that the use
 of them is very dangerous during the heats of summer, be-
 cause they make the whole body break out in blotches and
 boils, and spoil the sight. *Persia* also produces all sorts of
 our culinary herbs, plants, roots, and pulse; it has good
 store of cattle, especially oxen, and abounds particularly
 with poultry and game. The *Persian* bread is generally
 very thin, white, and good, and commonly cheap enough.

Persian
horses,
mules, as-
ses, camels.

Their horses are the finest in all the East; they are higher than the *English* saddle-horses, straight before, a small head, legs wonderfully slender and finely proportioned, mighty gentle, good travellers, very light and sprightly, and doing good service till they are eighteen or twenty years old. The fine horses are valued from 90 to 450 l. sterling; but the great numbers of them sold into *Turkey* and the *Indies*, tho' none can be carried out of the kingdom without a special licence from the king, is what makes them so dear. Their mules are next in request; they pace well, never fall, and are seldom tired: the highest price of a mule is about forty-five pounds. Their *Arabian* breed of asses are the best in the world; they have smooth shining hair; they carry their heads lofty; their feet are light, and they move them gracefully. Some of them are valued at twenty pounds, being kept for riding, and their masters love them for their lightness and easy going. Their beasts of burden are, the common ass, like ours, slow and heavy; and camels, of which there are two sorts, northern and southern. The latter, much the smaller, carry but 700 weight; the other can carry 1300. Both are profitable to their masters, as costing little or nothing to keep. They travel without halter or reins, grazing on the road from time to time, notwithstanding their load. They shed their hair so clean in the spring, that they look like scalded swine, but then they are pitched over to keep the flies from stinging them. The camels hair is the most profitable fleece of all the tame beasts; fine stuffs are made of it, and in *Europe* hats with a mixture of a little beaver. The *Persians* take notice when the camel is in love to increase his load, otherwise he would be ungovernable.

Metals
and mine-
rals.

As *Persia* is very mountainous, it is full of metals and minerals, which they began to work upon in the last century much more than in preceding times. Their diligence in this respect was owing to the great *Shah Abbas*. The metals usually to be met with, are iron, steel, brass, and lead. No gold or silver have yet been found, though it should seem impossible that so many mountains, which produce most sorts of metals, with sulphur and saltpetre, should not likewise produce the more precious metals; but the *Persians* are too slothful to make any discoveries. Minerals and mineral waters abound throughout *Persia*; sulphur and saltpetre are extracted out of the mountain of *Damavend*, which separates *Tabris* from *Iraq*.

Wild beasts,
and in-
sects.

WILD beasts are not very common in *Persia*, because there are few forests; but in all woody countries, as in *Hircania*,

cania, now called *Tabristan*, there are abundance of lions, bears, tigers, leopards, porcupines, wild boars, and wolves; but the last not so numerous as any of the other species. There is a beast, called *chacal*, seen almost every where; it roars hideously, and is very greedy after dead bodies, which it digs up, unless some person is set to watch the graves. There are but few insects in this country, which may be ascribed to the drought of the climate. In some provinces, however, there is an infinite number of grasshoppers, which are seen flying along like clouds, and so thick, that the air is darkened by them: and in some parts there are large black scorpions, which are so venomous, that those who are stung by them die in five hours. In some parts also, birds of a prodigious length are met with, being an ell long, and in shape resembling a toad, with a rough skin and hard as that of a sea-dog. It is reported, that they sometimes fall on men and kill them. The southern provinces are infested by gnats, some with long legs, like those we call midges; and some white, and as small as fleas, which make no buzzing, but sting suddenly, and so smartly, that the sting is like the prick of a needle. Among the creeping insects, there is a long square worm, which they call *hazarpag*, or a thousand feet, because its whole body is covered with feet; it crawls very fast, and its bite is dangerous, and even mortal, when it gets into one's ears.

PERSIA is divided into the following provinces.

1. *SCHIRWAN*, which is the most northern province of *Persia*, and lies along the western coast of the *Caspian-Sea*. It has part of *Muscovy* or *Georgia* on the north; the river *Kur* (the *Cyrus* of the Antients) parts it from the province of *Eriwan*; and the *Kur* and *Aras* (the *Araxes* of the Antients) separate it from *Aiderbeitzan*. It is a cold but healthy country, the soil, however, is observed to be extraordinary fruitful, yielding rice, wheat, barley, hay, and even great store of vines. The chief cities in this province, are

*Division
of Persia:*

1. *DERBENT*, the *Caspia Claustra* of the Antients, and still the gate from *Persia* into *Muscovy*. It stands on the western shore of the *Caspian-Sea*, about 157 miles from *Teflis* in *Georgia*, towards the south-east, and fills up the whole defile between the *Caspian-Sea* and the craggy mountains on the frontiers of *Georgia*. The coast is all a rock, which renders it dangerous for shipping. Upon the whole, this city, which is reckoned to be a league and a half in circumference, is considerable only on account of its strength, being the passage from *Russia* and *Tartary* into *Persia*. The

Rus-

Russians took it in 1723, and by a treaty of peace concluded in 1735, it was ceded to them by the Shah *Nadir Thamas Kouli-Khan*. 2. *Gangea*, situated in a pleasant plain of about thirty leagues extent, and an hundred and eighteen miles distant from *Derbent* towards the south-west. It belongs properly to *Georgia*, as standing on the other side of the river *Kur*. The *Persians* call this place the garden of the empire, by reason of its being exceedingly well watered, and pleasantly surrounded with groves of trees. It carries on a good trade, and on that account is much resorted to by strangers. Its bazars and market-places are very noble and magnificent. 3. *Shamaki*, reckoned the capital of this province, stands on a river which falls into the *Caspian-Sea*, and is about sixty-six miles from *Derbent* towards the south, and ninety-two from *Gangea* to the south-east. This city was one of the best and most populous of *Persia*, before it was destroyed by an earthquake. It is, however, supposed to contain near 60,000 inhabitants, chiefly *Armenians* and strangers, whom the pleasantness of the country and traffic have invited thither. The khan, or governor of *Schirwan* resides in it, and he is reputed one of the most considerable in all *Persia*, by reason of the great subsidies he generally levies upon the countries round about. 4. *Baku* stands on the western part of *Schirwan*, upon the *Caspian-Sea*, eighty-two miles from *Shamaki* towards the south-east. It is fortified, and has a very fine harbour. The *Russians* having taken it during the troubles of *Persia*, it was yielded to them by the late Shah *Nadir*.

II. *AIDERBEITZAN*, or, as the *Persians* call it, *Azerbeyan*, borders to the east on the province of *Gbilan* and *Tabristan*; to the south on *Persian-Iraq*; to the west and north-west upon *Upper-Armenia*, and the river *Aras*; and to the north on *Schirwan*. The etymology of the name of this province imports a country of fire, so called by the *Persians* on account of the temple erected in it for keeping their sacred fire. The soil is fruitful, and the climate healthy, though cold. The most considerable cities are,

1. *TAURIS*, a large and potent place, and the second in *Persia* for dignity, grandeur, riches, trade, and number of inhabitants. It is situate in a fine plain near a mountain, 192 miles from *Shamaki*, towards the south-west. Being near the frontiers of *Turkey*, it has been often taken and retaken. The *Turks* surprized it during the late civil wars in *Persia*, and exercised their usual barbaries on the inhabitants, killing an incredible number of them; but *Kouli Khan* reduced it under the obedience of the *Persians* again, and pursued

sued the *Turks* into their own territories. At the end of this city, to the west, upon a little mountain, stands an hermitage, a very neat piece of workmanship: they call it *Ayn-Haly*, or the house of *Ali*. This caliph, whom *Mohammed* made his son-in-law, was, as the *Persians* report, the most lovely man that ever was seen; so that when they would signify any thing extremely handsome, they say, it is *Ali's* eyes. The hermitage serves the inhabitants of *Tauris* for a place of devotion, and the way to it for a walk of pleasure. Most modern geographers take *Tauris* to be the antient and celebrated *Ecbatana*, so frequently mentioned in Scripture, and in the antient histories of *Asia*. But there are no remains to be seen at *Tauris*, either of the magnificent palace of *Ecbatana*, where the monarchs of *Asia* kept their court in summer, nor of that of *Daniel*, which was afterwards the mausoleum for the kings of *Media*, of which *Josephus* speaks in his tenth book, and which he assures us was intire in his time. If then these stately and magnificent palaces were standing sixteen centuries ago, in the place where *Tauris* now stands, the very ruins themselves are not now to be found; for amongst all those within the circuit of the city, none are seen but what are of earth, brick, or flint, which were not materials antiently made use of in *Media* for the building of sumptuous palaces. The government of the province of *Tauris* is the chief in the *Persian* empire, and it is usually annexed to the dignity of the captain-generalship. There is scarce a place of greater resort in *Asia*; and there is, perhaps, no sort of merchandize but may be found in the magazines at *Tauris*. 2. *Ardevil*, about twenty-eight miles distant from *Tauris* to the east, in a fair and spacious plain, surrounded with mountains, which occasion continual changes of weather, in extremities of heat and cold, and subject the city to epidemical diseases. It claims dignity among the best cities in *Persia*, because it was honoured with the residence of several of their kings, and is also the place of their burial. *Shah Eidar*, author of the *Shah* sect, to whom the *Sophian* family owed their origin, lived and died here. His sepulchre, which is no small ornament to the city, is visited with great devotion by pilgrims. *Sopbi Ismael*, the first king of that race, is likewise buried here. 3. *Sultania*, about 135 miles from *Tauris*, to the south-east. It was once the metropolis and largest city of *Persia*, as may appear from its vast ruins; but is now inconsiderable, though there are some public buildings in it very remarkable as well for their structure as architecture. There

There are several other cities, and a great number of good villages in this province, but none equal to those mentioned.

III. *GHILAN* lies to the south-west of the *Caspian-Sea*, which, with the province of *Tabristan*, bounds it on the east, *Persian-Irak* on the south, *Aiderbeitzan* on the west, and the heath of *Mockan* on the north. This province is exceedingly well situated, having on one side the sea, along which it lies in form of a crescent, and on the other high mountains, by which it is so well separated from all the rest of *Persia*, that there is no entrance to it on the land side but by very narrow passes, which can be very easily defended. These mountains towards *Persia* are nothing but frightful ruins and precipices; but towards the province of *Ghilan* they have a most delightful descent, being covered with all sorts of fruit-trees. The country of *Ghilan* is the finest and most fruitful of all *Persia*. It is watered by several fine rivers, which spring on all sides from the mountains. The sea on the coast abounds with fish, as do also the rivers that fall into it; and to such a degree, that the farming out the privilege of fishing there, brings in a very considerable revenue to the king. The cities in *Ghilan* are *Resht*, or *Rasht*, *Kesker*, and *Astara*. The first wants nothing that can render a city agreeable, rich, and beautiful.

IV. *TABRISTAN* has the *Caspian-Sea* on the north, *Ghilan* on the west, *Persian-Irak* on the south, and *Corasan* on the east. It abounds with plants, fruit, and wood; and is watered with many springs and rivers, but yet is not without its inconveniencies; for in winter it is very cold, and the roads are exceeding bad; and in summer the air is so malignant, that most of the inhabitants are obliged to remove to other places. The malignancy of the air is attributed to the vast number of serpents and other insects, which dying in summer for want of water, most springs in that season being dried up, cause a corruption and infection, which fill the air with contagious vapours. All the people of this country look yellowish and tawny. The places of note in *Tabristan* are, *Terabath*, *Alaxanderan*, *Escriff*, *Chocoporo*, and *Amoul*. The first is remarkable for a palace of *Abas the Great*, which was adorned with noble furniture and paintings, and had in its precinct delightful gardens; the last is a place of some strength, having a strong fair castle, moated round, and some celebrated mosques, which are held in great veneration by the people upon account of 444 princes and prophets who are said to have been buried in them. The ridge of mountains which lie on the south

south of these two provinces, and divide them from *Persian-Irak*, is a branch of mount *Taurus*, which runs east and north to *Tartary*. The passage through it, in the road from *Ispahan*, is so narrow, that a robber, in king *Abas*'s time, kept possession of it with his troop a long time, in spite of the forces the king sent against him.

V. *PERSIAN-IRAK*, or ancient *Parthia*, so long the seat of empire in *Asia*, is the largest and principal province of the *Persian* monarchy. It is entirely the proper demesne of the king, and has no governor, as most of the other provinces. It is bounded on the east by *Corasán* and *Segestan*, on the south by *Farsistan*, on the south-west by *Chusistan*, on the west by *Curdistan*, on the north-west by *Aderbeitzan*, and on the north by *Ghilan* and *Tabristan*; and its extent is about 200 leagues in length, and 150 in breadth. The air is very dry, and in several respects, the most healthy of any in the world. The face of the country is more mountainous than level; the mountains are very bare, and scarce produce any thing but thistles and briars; but the plains are very fertile and pleasant where there is any water. There are upwards of forty cities in this large province, which may be thought a great number, when we consider that *Persia* is not an empire peopled proportionably to its extent. The principal cities and towns here are, 1. *Abber*, enjoying a very delightful situation, with fine gardens and some elegant public structures. It is about twenty-six miles distant from *Sudania* to the south-east. 2. *Casbin*, a large city, six miles in circumference, and containing 12,000 houses, and 100,000 inhabitants. It is seated in a very pleasant plain, twenty-eight miles from *Abber*; one of the fairest places to be seen in it is, the Hippodrome, or Royal Piazza, 700 paces in length, and 250 in breadth. *Abas the Great* removed his court from this city to *Ispahan*, but the royal palace and gardens are still kept in good order; and the *Persian* grandees, from father to son, still also keep possession of their numerous palaces, by reason of the long residence from time to time of the court at this place. Most of our *European* geographers assert, that *Casbin* is the antient *Asfacia*; but the *Persian* historians will not allow it to be so antient. 3. *Sawá*, or *Sava*, a great city, but thinly inhabited, seated in a sandy and barren plain, about eighty-eight miles from *Casbin*. There is nothing remarkable in it nor its environs, except the mausoleum or monument of the prophet *Samuel*, in the middle of a magnificent mosque, which stands four leagues to the east of *Sawá*. The *Persians* believe he was there interred, and have therefore made it

it one of their most famous places of pilgrimage and devotion. Opposite this mosque, or nine miles west of the city, are seen the vestiges of the famous city of *Rey*, the largest in all *Asia*. The wonders related of it are incredible. The *Persian* histories assert, that in the ninth century of Christianity, the city of *Rey* was divided into ninety-six quarters, each of which contained forty-six streets, and every street 4000 houses and ten mosques, besides 6400 colleges, 16,600 baths, 15,000 towers of mosques, 12,000 mills, 1700 canals, and 13,000 inns. In the wars between the two sects of *Mohamedans*, one of which called on the *Tartars*, this city was destroyed, towards the end of the sixth age of the *Hegira*. 4. *Komm*, a large city, and pretty populous, containing about 15,000 houses, among which are some fine bazars and caravan-seras, though the trade of the place is inconsiderable. It is situate in a plain, by the side of a river, about thirty-seven miles south-east of *Sawa*. The chief thing it is remarkable for is the mosque, in which the princess *Fatima*, *Mohammed's* daughter, and two kings, *Abas I.* and *Sepi I.* lie interred. Nothing can be imagined richer, neater, and more magnificent than this mosque; the *Persians* call it *Mossma*, or pure, and hold it in great veneration. 5. *Hamadan*, one of the largest and most considerable cities in *Persia*, having a good trade, and being a stage of caravans going to *Mecca*. It lies on the road to *Bagdat*, about ninety-five miles north-west of *Komm*. The Jews flock here in pilgrimage to visit the tombs of *Esther* and *Merdecas*, which they assert to be still in this place. 6. *Casban*, a populous and wealthy city, by its manufactures of all sorts of silks, stuffs, and tissues of gold and silver. It stands about ninety-eight miles north of *Ispahan*, in a large plain near a high mountain, which being opposed to the south, the reverberation of the rays of the sun so furiously beat upon it in the summer, that the heat is intolerable. The bazars and baths of this place are elegant structures, and the Royal Inn, founded by *Abas the Great*, in the suburbs, is the fairest in all *Persia*. Adjoining to it stands the royal palace, and opposite to it another designed for lodging ambassadors. 7. *Ispahan*, the capital of *Persian-Irak*, and now the metropolis of the whole *Persian* empire. It is situate on the banks of the river *Zenderoud*, in latitude 32. 26. east longitude 52. 55. The walls of the town are about 20,000 paces in compass, built with mud, and kept very indifferently, though they are so hid by the adjacent houses and gardens, that one can hardly find them out. Here are also a castle and ditch. The beauty of this city consists

consists chiefly in a vast number of sumptuous palaces, handsome and airy houses, spacious caravanseras, very beautiful bazars, many canals and streets planted on both sides with lofty plane-trees; though, generally speaking, the other streets are narrow, crooked, and not paved: but the air being very dry here, and every housekeeper causing the street to be watered before his door twice a day, there is neither so much dirt nor dust, as in many great cities in *Europe*. The Meidan-Shah, or Royal-Square, is one of the finest in the world. It is 440 paces long, and 160 broad, and is surrounded by a canal built with bricks, cemented with a black mortar, which in time becomes harder than freestone. The royal mosque is at the south end of this square, and its portico is wonderfully adorned with a thousand figures, and an inconceivable profusion of gold and azure, the whole being also inlaid with enamelled squares, and a frieze round it of the same materials. Few structures can equal the magnificence of this, many of its pieces and decorations being wrought in a manner unknown to our *European* architects. The same may be said of the royal palace, and the haram, or women's apartment. The palace is certainly one of the most spacious in the world, being near a league and half in compass. Its great portico stands in the Royal Square, and is all built of porphyry, and very high. The *Persians* revere it as sacred. The suburbs of *Ispahan* are very large, and are chiefly inhabited by *Armenians*, of whom an account was given under that article. There are besides 1460 villages round about *Ispahan*, and the inhabitants live chiefly upon the manufacturing of silk and wool. 8. *Yezd*, a large city, 175 miles from *Ispahan* to the east. It has some trade and manufactures of silks and stuffs, mixed with gold and silver, and sometimes with cotton. The women of *Yezd* are reckoned the handsomest in all *Persia*.

VI. *CHUSISTAN* is a pretty large province, bounded on the north by *Persian-Irak*; on the west by *Irak-Arabi*, or *Yerak*; on the south-west by the *Tigris* and *Euphrates*, a little before and after their junction; on the south by the *Persian gulph*; and on the east by *Farsistan*. This is the same country with *Cush* in *Assyria*, having preserved its ancient name with only a *Persian* termination. Its chief cities are, 1. *Suster*, the antient *Jusa*, and the winter-seat of the *Persian* monarchs, as *Ecbatana* was their summer-seat. It is a fair and large city. 2. *Abwās*. 3. *Laurestan*; but both inconsiderable.

VII. *FARSISTAN*, sometimes called *Fars*, the ancient *Persia*, has *Persian-Irak* on the south; *Chusshan*, with part of the *Persian gulph*, on the west; the remainder of the same gulph on the south; and *Keresan*, with part of *Segestan*, on the east. *Laurestan* is included within this province, as well as the Isle of *Ormuz*, which are reckoned to belong to *Farsistan*, since they were conquered by the *Persians*. The most remarkable places in this province, are,

1. *SCHIRAS*, the capital, and reputed the next in rank after *Ispahan*. It is seated 175 miles from that city, in a plain surrounded with craggy mountains, which are nothing but dry rocks, and neither bear tree nor weeds. The soil about the city is very good and fruitful, and produces the excellent wine of *Schiras*, so famous all over *Persia*. There is nothing very beautiful in the city itself, being now almost half ruined. 2. The ruins of the ancient *Persepolis*, thirty-five miles north-east of *Schiras*. This city, in ancient times, was esteemed the chief of the East, and excelled all others in glory and worldly felicity. The wealth of it is evident by the great plunder *Alexander's* soldiers made, and by the treasure he himself seized, which amounted to 120,000 talents in silver and gold. The citadel, which was the king's palace, was a structure of such surprising magnificence and beauty, that perhaps no building ever exceeded it. The king's throne was of pure gold, adorned with pearls and precious stones, and the furniture of the chambers so excessively rich, that nothing could exceed it, the bedsteads being of solid gold, beset with gems, and every thing else proportionate. But its glory did but procure its destruction; for, at a great feast *Alexander* held in it, *Thais*, the *Athenian* courtesan, proposed to the king, then heated with wine, as a noble exploit, to burn that fine palace, which he readily agreed to, and led the way himself with a firebrand. Thus fell *Persepolis*, which for several ages had been the seat of the *Persian* monarchs, giving law to many nations, and being a long time the terror of *Greece*. The lofty columns still standing declare the height of the fallen roofs, and the stairs, the steps of which are thirty feet long, shew the apartments they led to were vastly greater than any thing we now see. A large town, now built on the place where the old city stood, is called *Mirkas-Chan*. 3. *Karscem*, about sixty-five miles from *Schiras*, a town of many houses, but all miserable. 4. *Bender-Rit*, *Bender-Rakel*, *Bender-Delem*, and *Boucher*, all maritime towns on the *Persian gulph*, but of little trade either by sea or land. The inhabitants are chiefly *Arabs*. The islands of *Carac* lie

lies about west-north-west, twelve leagues from *Bouchier*. One of them has no inhabitants but deer and antelopes. The southernmost has between 2 and 300 poor fishermen on it, who serve shipping with pilots for *Bassora*. The anchoring-place is at the north end of the inhabited island, in twelve fathom water. 5. *Churchair*, a town on the sea-coast, twenty-one miles south of *Bouchier*, noted for the ruins of a large castle and pier, built by the *Portuguese*, who kept a garrison there, and had gallies continually cruising in the bottom of the gulph, to compel all ships to pay ten per cent. toll to them. 6. *Cingon*, a town of pretty good trade, for most of the pearl fished for at *Babara*, on the *Arabian* side, is brought here to market, and many fine horses are sent from hence into the *Indies*, where they generally sell very well. It stands on the south-side of a large river, about ninety-five miles south east from *Bender-Rick*. 7. *Lar*, the capital of a province, thence called *Larestan*, forty-eight miles distant from the coast of the *Persian* gulph to the south. This country was for some time a kingdom in the possession of the *Gaures*. The city is built on a rock, and has nothing worth notice in it but the Khan's house, the market-place, the bazars, and the castle. In the suburbs are several houses pretty well built, amongst which is the *Dutch East-India-house*. The town contains about 4000 houses. The Jews, who are pretty numerous in it, exercise a silk-manufacture, and the other inhabitants make the best musket-barrels. 8. *Congo*, or *Bender-Congo*, a little sea-port town, forty-five miles distant from *Lar* to the south. It once made a good figure in trade when the *Portuguese* were settled here, but now it seems is chiefly confined to some small commerce with the *Banians* and *Moors* from *India*. The territory of the town is of small extent, but produces excellent fruits of several sorts. 9. *Gomrom*, or *Bender-Abassi*, which signifies the port of *Abas*, being so called from *Shah Abas the Great*, who first brought it into vogue. It lies about seventy-two miles to the south-east of *Lar*, on the coast of *Farsistan*, just opposite the island of *Ormuz*, in a very narrow streight formed by that island, and in a very convenient haven. From a small village, as it was before the reduction of *Ormuz*, it is grown so considerable, that it may be ranked with the best towns in *Persia*; for, though still but a small place, yet its convenient situation for trade brings a great resort of ships and caravans to it. The *English* and *Dutch* factories support its commerce to a great degree, and the *Persian* governor who resides here, lives in great splendor.

Perſian
iſlands.
Ormus.

THE iſland of *Ormus* is two leagues diſtant from the main land to the ſouthward, almoſt at the mouth of the *Perſian* gulph, which reaches from thence to *Baſſora*, which is the bottom of it. An account has been already given of *Ormus*, under the article of *Arabia Felix*.

Bahara.

THE iſland of *Bahara*, or *Baharen*, lies near the north-eaſt coaſt of *Arabia-Felix*, in the midway between *Baſſora* and *Ormus*. The largeſt, brighteſt, roundeſt, and trueſt Oriental pearls are fiſhed for here. This fiſhery begins in *June*, and ends with *Auguſt*. The profit of it is computed at 110,000 crowns *per annum*.

Queſmo.

QUESMO is a pretty large, fruitful, and well inhabited iſland. The weſt end of it is not above a league and a-half from *Congo*, and the eaſt end about a league from *Comrom*. It furniſhes *Ormus* with wheat, barley, and ſome other proviſions, where the people could not live without them.

Perſian
gulph.

BEFORE we proceed, it will not be improper to add a word or two concerning the *Perſian* gulph, or ſea of *Ebla-tiſ*, as ſometimes called. It is a large bed of water lying between the coaſts of *Perſia* and *Arabia Felix*, about 170 miles wide in the middle, but contracted to near a quarter of that breadth at the two extremities. It commences in the weſt, in the 49th degree of longitude eaſt of *London*, at the gulph of *Baſſora*, which is made by the mouth of the two great rivers *Euphrates* and *Tigris* united, and extends eaſtward almoſt to the 57th degree of longitude, where cape *Muca*, a promontory of the province of *Vadanbr*, in *Arabia Felix*, by ſtretching forward to lat. 26. deg. 15 min. ſhuts it up into a mouth, not above thirty-fix miles over, where the iſland of *Ormus* is ſeated, which, together with the other two iſlands abovementioned, intirely command the paſſage.

VIII. KERESTAN, or *Kerman*, is the ancient *Caramania*, and is bounded on the weſt by *Farſiſtan*, on the ſouth by the *Perſian* or *Arabian-Sea*, on the eaſt by *Mecran*, and on the north by *Segeſtan*. The country is mountainous, and the upper-grounds barren; but the vallies are reaſonably fruitful, and yield variety of odoriferous flowers, eſpecially roſes, the diſtilled waters of which are ſold to advantage by the inhabitants at *Iſſahan*. The ſheep of this province bear the fineſt wool in the world, which they ſhed after eating new graſs. This wool is chiefly manufactured in the town of *Kerman*, the only place of any note in this country, where alſo the beſt ſcimitars are made, and a kind of porcelain, little inferior to the *Chineſe*. The *Gaures*, or ancient *Pe-ſians*, inhabit this province.

IX. MACEERAN, or *Mecran*, is a small province, situated towards the mountains, which divide *Persia* from *India* on the east, and surrounded with deserts and sandy plains. It is inhabited by the *Balluches*, a fierce and warlike nation.

X. SEGESTAN has *Corasan* on the north, part of *Candahar*, with *Sablestan* on the east, *Mecran* on the south, and *Farsistan* on the west. The face of the country is for the most part flat, and bears a vast number of palm-trees; but it is withal very sandy, and so much exposed to winds, that the sand often overwhelms the houses, and even whole villages. The road by land, from *Persia* to *India*, lies through this country; but it is so barren and sandy, that few care to venture through, but chuse rather to go by sea.

XI. SABLESTAN has *Candahar* on the north, *Segestan* on the west, *Mecran* on the south, and on the east the high mountains which separate *Persia* from *India*. This country is watered by several rivers, springs, and lakes, and is full of mountains known to the antients by the name of *Paropamis montes*. They are a branch of mount *Taurus*, and are all covered with forests. The inhabitants are rude and clownish.

XII. CANDAHAR has *Sablestan* on the south, the *Mogul* empire on the east, the country of *Balk* on the north; of which an *Ushec Tartar* is prince; on the south also part of the *Mogul* empire with *Segestan*; and on the west, part of *Corasan*. This province is very mountainous, yet produces abundantly all sorts of provisions that are necessary for the subsistence of its inhabitants, except towards *Persia*, where it is very barren. The chief city, which bears the same name with the province, lies about 670 miles from *Isfahan* to the east. It had princes of its own for a time, who subsisted on the mutual jealousy of the two powers between which it was situated; but at last, *Shah Abbas the Great*, who made as many conquests by his policy as arms, found a fair opportunity to engage the prince, who was master of it in his time, to put himself under his protection, which he did accordingly, on condition that a prince of his race should always command in *Candahar*, as vassal and tributary to the king of *Persia*. *Shah-Abas*, who, according to the maxim of all true politicians, was a punctual observer of his word, not only secured the possession of *Candahar* to the prince who submitted, but also continued the government of it to his son *Alimerdan-Khan*, after the death of his father. *Shah-Sepbi*, grandson of *Shah-Abas*, succeeding him, the court of *Persia* changed their maxims. As *Alimerdan-Khan* was possessed of great wealth, which he

The Conclusion of

had for most part by inheritance from his ancestors, and as he made the figure of a potent sovereign in his government, always eating out of gold vessels, and keeping a house almost as magnificent as the *Persian* kings, the ministers, who governed during *Shah Sephi's* minority, and who, by inspiring him with violent suspicions against several of the greatest noblemen, had persuaded him to put some of the most considerable of them to death, did not fail to raise the same jealousy in his breast against the prince of *Candahar*, whose wealth, of which they hoped to be sharers, tempted them more than the possessions of the others whom they had caused to be cut off. The difficulty was to get him to court; for the misfortune of those, who, after being drawn thither in that manner, left their heads there, made him very loth to go; and he saw that, without regard to his remonstrances, couriers were dispatched to him one upon another, with pressing orders to repair to *Ispahan*. At that time, he had two children at the court of *Persia*, and he would not, perhaps, be so much pressed as he was to come to *Ispahan*, had it not been presumed, that his regard for his children, who remained as hostages at court, would hinder him from carrying matters to extremities. But having before his eyes the example of another governor more powerful than himself, who was invited to court with his children, only to suffer death, he imagined, that instead of saving the lives of his two sons, he should only hasten their death with his own; and therefore chose to take refuge with the Great Mogul, by delivering up *Candahar* to him. His children would undoubtedly have been cut off with him, if he had gone to *Ispahan*; but the fear of exasperating the inhabitants of the province of *Candahar*, and of rendering them irreconcilable by putting to death the two young lords, obliged the court of *Persia*, which hoped one day or other to recover *Candahar*, not only to keep fair with them, but also to treat them with more distinction than ever. This policy of *Shah Sephi* had its effect under his son, and successor *Abas II.* for when that prince laid siege to *Candahar*, in the beginning of his reign, the *Persians*, who composed the greater part of the army sent by the Mogul to its relief, remembering the kind treatment of *Alimardan-Khan's* children at the court of *Persia*, did not exert themselves, as they might have done to hinder *Abas II.* from making himself master of it, which he did in 1650; since which time, that city has always remained in the hands of the *Persians*, notwithstanding all the attempts afterwards made by the Mogul to recover it. The place is of the more importance

ance to *Persia*, because it covers the frontiers towards the *Indies*, and is the strongest in the whole kingdom, having been fortified by *European* engineers, employed there by the *Mogul*, while master of it. Its opulence is owing to its being the thoroughfare of the caravans between *Persia* and the *Indies*; and a judgment of its wealth may be formed by the tribute paid to the king, which was twelve pound weight of gold for every day in the year, exclusive of many other duties, fines, and forfeitures.

XIII. CORASAN, including the province or kingdom of *Balk*, is *Persian-Irak* with *Astrabad* on the west, from which it is parted by a large desert; *Faristan*, with *Segestan*, and another large desert, that parts it from *Kerestan* and *Candabar* on the south; the *Mogul's* dominions on the east and north-east, and *Uzbek-Tartary* on the north. Hence it appears, that it is a very large province. It is very populous and fruitful, and produces the best manna in the world. It has a rock of turquoise-stone, so excellent, that the king allows none to be sold but to himself. The *Persian* geographers reckon thirty-two considerable towns in this country, four of which are royal cities, where the kings of *Persia* have sometimes resided; these are *Balk*, *Merou*, *Nischabour*, and *Herat*. The last is a strong place, fortified by *Tamerlane*, and said to be thirteen miles in circumference. *Mached*, another city in this province, is very famous for a pilgrimage instituted here in honour of the iman *Reza*, by *Shah Abas the Great*. This he did with a political view, to divert the resort of his subjects to *Mecca* and *Medina*, whereby a great deal of gold was carried out of the kingdom; and, as he knew the devotion of the people is easily led away by external decoration, he spared no expence in this respect, even so far as to cover with plates of gold the mosque of this iman, who was always held in great veneration by the *Persians*. This city is surrounded with a noble wall, whereon stand 300 towers.

XIV. ASTRABAD with *Khoemus*, are seated in the north-west part of *Persia*, having *Corasan* on the east, part of *Tartary* on the north, the *Caspian-Sea* on the west, and also a little on the north; *Tabristan* on the west, and a branch of mount *Taurus*, with the desert of *Segestan* on the south. It is a mountainous country, and except near the banks of the two rivers *Margab* and *Arias*, which run through it, the soil is sandy and barren; but in that part it is plain champaign land, pleasant and fruitful, and produces grapes of a wonderful bignesse. The inhabitants are a mixture of *Persians* and *Tartars*.

The Cas-
pian-Sea
described.

As a good part of *Perſia* lies upon the *Caspian-Sea*, it will not be improper to give here a description of it. This sea is so called from the *Casspi*, a nation dwelling near its banks; or otherwise the *Hyrcañian-Sea*, thus denominated from the province of *Hyrcañia*, now *Tabristan*, of *Makanderan*, whose shore it washes. It is a very large bed of water, quite surrounded with land, and being destitute of any known efflux, is therefore by some writers stiled a lake. It approaches in form to that of an oblong square, the longest side of which, from north to south, is about 640 *English* miles. Its greatest breadth, from east to west, is about 310 miles, but in many places it is much narrower. On the west it is bounded by the kingdom of *Astracan*, and by the provinces of *Georgia* and *Shirwan*; on the north by *Russian-Tartary*; on the east by *Ussac Tartary*, and part of *Asirabad*, which last bounds it on the south-east, and partly on the south, where it also washes *Tabristan* and *Ghilan*, which likewise surround the south-west part of it. The *Persians* call this sea *Kulsum*, or otherwise, the sea of *Baku*. It receives the great river *Volga*, which itself is like a sea for largeness, and near a hundred other rivers, and yet is never increased or diminished; nor ever observed to ebb and flow. This constant appearance has given rise to many speculations, and some think, that it must have a subterraneous communication with the *Black-Sea*, or *Persian gulph*, though the former is 120, and the latter near 200 leagues distant from it. In favour of this opinion, *F. Avril*, a modern traveller, says, that near the coast of *Ghilan*, there is a mighty whirlpool in the *Caspian-Sea*; which, by absorbing every thing that comes near it, there must be consequently a cavity in the earth there; and that in the *Persian gulph* a great quantity of willow-tree leaves are found floating, though no willow-trees grow any where near that gulph; whereas, great plenty of them are seen on the coast of the *Caspian-Sea*, whence they must be carried by subterraneous passages from that sea to the gulph. Perhaps, the quantity of vapours drawn by the sun in this hot climate, may be equal to the quantity of water this sea receives from rivers; and thus we may account for its equal fulness. It was formerly very little navigated, except by *Cossack*rovers, who used to plunder all they met; but the *Russians*, being now masters of a part of the coast, are continually sailing from one post or other of it, and carry on a profitable commerce with most of the adjacent countries. The water of this sea is as salt as any other sea-water; and breeds a variety of good fish.

WHEN

When the kingdoms of *Media* and *Persia* were united under *Cyrus the Great*, in the year of the world 3419, that prince having conquered *Babylonia*, erected the second, or *Persian* monarchy, upon the total ruin of the *Assyrian* empire, and thereby extended the *Persian* dominions through *Assyria*, *Armenia*, and all *Asia-Minor*, to the very borders of *Europe*: but this monarchy continued no longer than 206 years, in a succession of twelve kings; the third of whom, *Darius Hystaspes*, invaded *Greece* with an army of 100,000 foot, and 10,000 horse, a force sufficient for over-running all that country, if the virtue and bravery of the *Greeks* had not exceeded what could possibly have been expected from men. The *Greeks* could not get together an army of above 10,000 men, and yet this handful of people ventured, under the conduct of *Miltiades*, to give the *Persians* battle in the plains of *Marathon*, near *Athens*; and with the loss of 192 men only, according to *Herodotus*, intirely defeated that immense army. *Xerxes*, the son and successor of *Darius*, renewed the attempt against *Greece*, and after ten years preparation, invaded it with so large an army, that the whole land was in a manner covered, and intire rivers drank dry by them; but this expedition did not prove more successful; for, after the battle by land at the streights of *Thermopylae*; and the sea-engagement at *Salamis*, *Xerxes* was glad to retire, and leave his general *Mardonius* with 300,000 men, to finish the war; which was, indeed, soon after put an end to, by the intire rout of the *Persian* army, at the famous battle of *Platæa*. About 150 years after, *Alexander*, king of *Macedon*, invaded *Asia*, fought the numerous *Persian* armies, first, at the river *Granicus*, in *Phrygia*; secondly, at *Issus*, in *Cilicia*; and thirdly, at *Arbela*, in *Assyria*; in all which battles he won intire victories, and finally entered *Babylon* in triumph. Here began the third, or *Grecian* monarchy, which lasted, properly speaking, only during the king's life.

At the grand partition of *Alexander's* dominions among his captains, *Persia* was made part of the *Syrian* kingdom of *Seleucus Nicator*; but did not continue long so; for in the reign of *Antiochus Theos*, the grandson of *Seleucus*, the *Parthians* revolted under the conduct of *Arsaces*, a nobleman of that country, who persuaded the neighbouring nations to join with him, and assumed the title of king. He was succeeded by a race of princes, who were potent monarchs, and opposed the *Romans* with greater vigour than any other nation. This kingdom remained thus under the *Parthian* government, from the year of the world 3718, to the year of

Christ 228, when *Artabanus*, a noble *Persian*, having slain *Artabanus III.* and repelled the *Romans*, ascended the throne. This king is reckoned to have restored the antient *Persian* race, and from him began a new dynasty, or race of kings, who, in twenty-eight generations, governed this country 406 years.

IN the year 634, the *Saracens*, under *Omar*, the successor of *Mohammed*, defeated *Hormisdas II.* This put an end to that kingdom; so that *Persia* became a part of the *Saracen* empire, and was governed by certain deputies, with the title of sultans; under the grand caliph. In process of time, the sultans of *Persia*, *Babylon*, &c. quarrelling among themselves, occasioned several revolutions and fluctuations of power, which, in the end, brought in the *Turks*. *Tangrolis* overcame the sultan, or king of *Persia*, in the year 1030, and assumed the government of that country. He was succeeded by a race of *Turkish* princes for about 200 years, and then a new dynasty of *Tartarian* princes gained the government. *Haalan*, the first of these, became king of *Persia* in the year 1260, and was succeeded by eight of his posterity till the year 1337; when, upon the death of *Abusaid*, the last of that house, the kingdom became divided amongst several *Tartar* princes, till about the year 1400, when *Tamerlane* reduced the whole to his obedience, and left it to his son *Mirza Chareck*: but that family did not hold it long; for after continual feuds among themselves, in a succession of six generations, the last of them was defeated and slain in 1472, by *Usum-Cassan*, an *Armenian* prince, who was, at that time, governor of *Turcomania*, and founded a new dynasty called the *Armenian*. There were five other princes of this line, the last of whom was at first successful in war against the *Sophian* family, who then began to make a great figure in *Persia*; but he was at last defeated by *Ismael Sophi*, the founder of the dynasty of the *Sophian* race, who governed *Persia* till within these few years.

THE kings of *Persia* of this family pretended to be derived from *Ali*, who was a cousin-german to *Mohammed*; and his son-in-law, by marrying *Fatima* his daughter. *Ali*, succeeding *Mohammed*, made a very great alteration in his law; he added some things, left out others, put new glosses, and made such a reform in it, that it might pass for a new law. All these alterations occasioned a division in *Mohammedanism*. The greater number adhered to the law as delivered by *Mohammed*, and preserved by *Omar*, one of his chief disciples; and the rest declared for it, as it had been corrected by *Ali*. *Sophi*, said to be descended from *Ali*, flour-

flourished towards the end of the fourteenth century, and was the first that rescued *Ali's* laws from the obscurity in which they had been buried for many ages. His grandson, *Scich-Eidar*, preached up the same doctrine, but with a great many alterations, pretending to a revelation, that no Mussulmen should be saved but those who followed the doctrine of *Ali*, such as he explained it. His reputation was so great for sanctity and integrity of life, that *Usum-Cassan*, who was made king of *Persia*, as above observed, gave him his daughter *Martha* in marriage. *Usum-Cassan*, dying in 1478, was succeeded by his son *Jacup*, and after him by two other kings, who had reigned till the year 1490. *Ruslan*, a young nobleman, ascended the throne, and reigned seven years. Conscious to himself of *Scich-Eidar's* better right to the crown, and alarmed at the concourse of people from all parts, to embrace his religion and adhere to his person at *Ardevil*, the place of his birth and residence, he procured him to be assassinated there; and persecuted to such a degree the new sect he was establishing, that several who had embraced it, abandoned it again. This *Ruslan* was killed by *Achmat*, who, in his turn, after a reign of six months only, was put to death with torture by one of *Ruslan's* principal officers. Hereupon, *Alvanti*, a nobleman, the nearest akin to *Usum Cassan*, was elected to fill the throne.

SCICH-EIDAR, whom *Ruslan* caused to be murdered at *Ardevil*, left three sons, who would have met with the same fate as their father, if they had fallen into that prince's hands. The two eldest, who were of age to see their danger, fled, one into *Asia-Minor*, the other to *Aleppo*. *Ismael*, the third, who was but a child, was saved by the care of his father's friends, who put him under the protection of a nobleman of *Tabristan*, by name *Pyrchalim*, a friend to their family, who was master of several places on the *Caspian-Sea*. *Pyrchalim* took great care of young *Ismael's* education, and caused him to be brought up in the principles of the sect of his father, who had been artful enough to venture in favour of *Ismael*, one of those predictions that never hurt those for whose advantage they are made, and which are often a great help to them in the execution of their projects. By prepossessing the common people in their favour: in short, he had foretold, that his son would be a great prince and a conqueror; and that by his zeal, and by the conquest of a great part of the East, he would one day equal the glory of *Mohammed* himself.

As soon as *Ismael* was grown up, and began to appear in the world, his behaviour was such as could not but confirm the great hopes people had conceived of him; and, by the noble indifference he shewed upon all occasions for government and grandeur, he opened for himself a path to it, which was so much the safer as he seemed to be the more worthy of it: yet, as an honest case to recover his patrimony, was not inconsistent with the disinterestedness he valued himself upon, he made use of this pretence to arm a good number of his disciples, and having reinforced them with some succours which *Pyrchalim* had sent him, he entered *Armenia*, where the lands lay which *Usun-Cassan* had given his mother for her dowry, and took possession of them by force of arms. This his first success, gave his party a reputation, which increased daily; he next attacked the castle of *Marmurlac*, which was full of riches, and having forced and plundered it, he led his army against *Sumach*, the capital of *Mesopotamia*, which he also took, and gave the plunder to his troops. From thence he marched his army towards *Tauris*, then the capital of *Persia*, and where *Alvante*, lately placed upon the throne, had his residence, and who fled at his approach, and retired towards *Armenia*. *Alvante* had created himself many enemies in *Tauris* by his cruelties, and was even destitute of the necessary forces for holding out a siege. *Ismael* entered with triumph into *Tauris*, but soon pursued *Alvante*, in order to prevent his joining with his brother *Moratcham*, who was raising troops for him in *Affria* towards *Babylon*; and having surprized him, his troops were defeated, and the king himself killed, fighting at the head of them. *Moratcham* was, in a short time after, totally routed and put to flight, as he was marching to possess himself of *Tauris*. This was in the year 1499, which is reckoned the first of *Ismael's* reign. A series of victory afterwards attended his arms; he reduced *Babylon*, *Mesopotamia*, and all the neighbouring provinces to his obedience; he withstood all the efforts of the *Turks*, and died in 1525, at the age of forty-five years, a quiet possessor of one of the largest and most powerful monarchies in the world, and was reputed one of the greatest and most famous kings that ever ruled in the East.

From him there was a succession of princes by the name of *Thamas*, *Ismael II.* *Mahmet Codabende*, *Emir-Hemse*, and *Ismael III.* till *Abas the Great*, the third son of *Mahmet Codabende*, ascended the throne in 1585, his two brothers *Emir-Hemse* and *Ismael III.* having reigned but a few months. This prince raised the splendor and power of *Persia*

Persia to a very considerable height, and was afterwards justly styled the restorer of it. He vastly enlarged his empire on the side of *India*; on the south reduced *Lar* and *Ormus*, and drove the *Turks* out of *Armenia* and *Georgia*, and all the conquests they had made on *Persia* since the death of *Ismael I.* which were at least 150 leagues in length, from north to south, reckoning from *Tauris* to the extremities of the kingdom of *Caket*, and as much, or even more, in breadth from the western coast of the *Caspian Sea*, to the *Black Sea*; to which may be added *Babylon*, with all *Mesopotamia* and *Assyria*. But as by all those great feats of arms he shewed himself an able soldier, he discovered that he had yet greater talents as a statesman, in the measures he took to make himself absolute in his kingdom, and to civilize it, by crushing the power of the petty princes, who had often supported one another in a total independency on the crown. He died about the close of the year 1629, and was succeeded by his grandson *Sepi I.* a cruel prince, who is supposed to have died by poison in 1642, after a reign of twelve years. His son and successor *Abas II.* was very different from him, and it may be said, that next to *Ismael I.* and *Abas the Great*, *Persia* never had a better king of the *Sophian* family. *Sepi II.* his eldest son, who succeeded him in 1666, was a prince of a cruel and yet indolent disposition; he died in 1694, leaving two sons, *Hussein* and *Abas*, of which the former succeeded him in the throne.

Hussein continued many years in the peaceful possession of his throne, and would have died so, were it not for the corruption and venality of his court. Every thing being set to sale in his reign, *Myrr-Weis*, a popular nobleman, purchased the government of *Candahar*, but was soon after displaced to make room for another nobleman, who had advanced more money. *Myrr-Weis*, hereupon becoming a malecontent, assembled his friends and dependants, and drove his rival out of *Candahar*, after which success he began his march towards *Ispahan*, the capital city, but died before he there. *Mahomood*, his son, advanced with the army to *Ispahan*, took the city, and soon after, though the king had consented to be dethroned, and made over his crown to this *Mahomood*, he had him murdered and all the royal family, with the prime of the *Persian* nobility, except prince *Thomas*, one of *Hussein's* sons, who had escaped and fled to the north of *Persia*. *Mahomood*, some time after, in the exercise of his barbarous and excessive, was murdered by *Esiiff*, officers, who usurped the throne. Prince *Thomas*, having assembled an army, invited *Nadir-Kan* into his service,

The Conclusion of

vice, who had obtained great reputation for his valour, and conduct. He was the son of a *Persian* nobleman, on the frontiers of *Ussac Tartary*, and his uncle, who was his guardian, keeping him out of possession of the castle and estate, which was his inheritance, he took to robbing the caravans; and having increased his followers to upwards of 500 men, became the terror of that part of the country, and especially of his uncle, who had seized his estate. His uncle therefore endeavoured to be reconciled to him, and invited him to the castle, where he was splendidly entertained; but he ordered his followers to cut his uncle's throat in the night-time, and turn his people out of the castle. Prince *Thamas*, by giving him the command of his army, soon after met with all the success he could hope for. He defeated the usurper *Efriff*, put him to death, and recovered all the places the *Turks* and *Russians* had made themselves masters of during the rebellion; and then prince *Thamas* seemed to be established on the throne: but *Nadir-Kan*, to whom *Thamas* had given the name of *Thamas Kouli-Kan*, that is, the slave of *Thamas*, thinking his services not sufficiently rewarded, and pretending that the king had a design against his life, or at least to set him aside, conspired against his sovereign, made him prisoner, and put him to death, as is supposed, after which he usurped the throne, styling himself *Shah Nadir*, or king *Nadir*.

He afterwards laid siege to *Candahar*, of which a son of *Myrr-Weis* had possessed himself. While he lay at this siege, the court of the Grand Mogul being distracted by factions, one of the parties invited *Shah Nadir* to come to their assistance, and betrayed the Mogul into his hands. Hereupon, having marched to *Delly*, the capital of *India*, he summoned all the viceroys and governors of provinces to attend him, and bring with them all the treasure they could raise, and those that did not bring so much as he expected, he tortured and put to death. Having thus amassed the greatest treasure that ever prince was master of, he returned to *Persia*, giving the Mogul his liberty, on condition of restoring the provinces on the west side of the *Indies* to the crown of *Persia*. He afterwards made a conquest of *Ussac Tartary*, and plundered *Bochara*, the capital city. Then he marched against the *Dagistan Tartars*, but lost great part of his army in the mountains without fighting. He defeated the *Turks* in several engagements; but laying siege to *Agad*, was twice compelled to raise the siege. He proceeded to change the religion of *Persia* to that of *Islam*; hanged up the chief priests, put his own son to death, and was guilty of such cruelty,

PERSIA is an absolute monarchy; the king's will is law *Govern-*
in all cases; he judges of the lives and fortunes of his sub-*ment of*
jects, without regard to any other justice or law than his Persia.

own pleasure, and that often leads him to extravagant severities. He has no established council, but is advised by such ministers as are most in favour; and the resolutions taken among the ladies in the harem frequently defeat the best laid designs. The crown is hereditary, excluding only the females; but the sons of a daughter are allowed to inherit. The laws of *Persia* exclude the blind from the throne; and this is the reason that the reigning prince usually orders the eyes of all the males of the royal family, of whom he entertains any jealousy, to be put out. The prime minister is called *Attemaet Doulet*, which signifies *Prime minister*, the director of the empire, and also *Vizier Azem*, or the great supporter of the empire, as he alone almost sustains the whole weight of the kingdom. This minister's chief study is to please his master, to secure to himself an ascendant over his name, and to avoid whatever may give him any uneasiness or umbrage. With this view he never fails to flatter him, to extol him above all the princes upon earth, and to throw a thick veil over every thing that might help to open his eyes, or discover to him the weakness of the state. He even takes particular care to keep the king in utter ignorance, in him, or such as he chooses, all unwelcome news, and to exert in

andize his family, and to
raise

raise his friends to the first posts in the empire; nor does he ever want a pretence for ruining some, and advancing others; and this is the easier for him to do, as all in employment are guilty of mal-administration. He has also a thousand opportunities of serving those in his interest, who give him a share in their plunder, and of sending them those royal vests, called calaat, by the officers of his house, who are greatly rewarded for the same, which serves them instead of wages. The governors of provinces and cities endeavour, by underhand practices, to procure those presents of honour; nor do they spare any money to obtain them, to render their government more respectable, as none must dare complain of their misdemeanors, when they see them so much in favour at court as to obtain these robes. Thus it is, that the prime minister is in perpetual agitation to support himself, to raise some, and destroy others, according as he is actuated either by love or hatred. Yet, with all his arts and precautions, he can never be quiet in his mind; for it is impossible for him to be sure of the fidelity of any one person; those he has been kind to being often the first to hasten his destruction, when they find that fortune has given him a shock. Infidelity and ingratitude have taken such deep root all over this country, that children make no scruple to cut off the ears, the noses, and even to cut the throat of their own parents, whenever the king commands it, and this with the base and mercenary view of possessing their posts in the government; a barbarity of which there are many instances. However, the prime ministers in *Persia* continue generally in their employment during life, or if removed, are only banished to some city, where they spend the remainder of their life in a private station.

*Principal
officers of
state.*

THE great officers of the state after the prime minister, are the Nadir, or grand master of the household; the Mehter, or groom of the chamber, who is always a white eunuch; the Mkr-akbor-bashe, or master of the horse; the Mir-shikar-bashe, or great huntsman and falconer; the Divan-beggi, or chief justice; there is a lieutenant of police, stiled Deroga, in every town, but there may be an appeal from his sentence to the Divan-beggi: the Vacka-nutiez, or recorder of events, or first secretary of state; the Mussashe-elmenalick, or master of the accounts and finances of the kingdom; the Numes-hum-bashes, or king's chief physicians; the Shick-adabashe, or inspector of the palace and regulator of rank at court; and the Khans, or governors of provinces, under whom are other governors, called Soltans, appointed also by the king.

THE chief in spirituals is the Zedder, or great pontiff, *Ministers* who has the direction of all the wealth and emoluments con- *in spiri-*
secrated to public worship or religious uses; under him are *tuals.*
the Shuk el selom and Cadi, who decide all points of religion,
and make all contracts, testaments, and other public deeds;
they are appointed by the king in all the principal towns:
and, next to these are the Pichnamas, or directors of the
prayers, and the Moullahs, or doctors of the law.

THE king is exceeding rich in gold, plate, and jewels of *King's*
all sorts; and his store is continually increased by the pre- *riches and*
fets made him by the Khams or great lords, which they *revenues.*
often repeat, especially every new year's day. He has many
lands, which he farms out at the rent of one fifth, third, or
sometimes half the produce. He has the monopoly of silk,
large subsidies from the several companies of tradesmen; and
all estates confiscated by delinquency, revert to the crown.
These, together with many smaller taxes, raise his revenue
to the amount of eight millions of tomans *per annum*, each
toman being worth about 3*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* of our money; and
indeed, the charge of his army is so great, his stables are so
largely furnished with fine horses, some of which eat out of
golden mangers; his court is so numerous, his equipages
so sumptuous, his attendants so many, his gardens so sur-
prisingly spacious, and so elegantly laid out, his wives and
concubines so many, and in short his grandeur in all respects
of pomp and expence so remarkable, that it cannot be main-
tained with a less revenue.

THE arms of the king of *Persia* are a lion couchant, *His arms.*
looking at the sun as it rises over his back. His usual title *and titles;*
is Shah, or Patshah, the disposer of kingdoms. To his titles
are also added those of Sultan and Kham, the title of the *Tar-*
tar sovereigns. He does not subscribe his name to acts of
state, but the grant runs in this manner, *viz.* "This act,
(or edict) is given by him whom the universe obeys."

THERE are three sorts of militia in *Persia*, which compose, *Forces;*
as it were, so many distinct armies, namely, the Korthies,
the G. d. l. ans, and the Tashngtchies. The first are descended
from an ancient, but foreign race, which have been famous
on account of their courage. They encamp under tents,
fight always on horseback, are well paid and kept, and often
be promoted to the highest employments. There
are generally about 22,000 of them in pay. The second
are slaves, or the children of slaves of all nations, but par-
ticularly *Georgians*, they serve the king very well,
and also on horseback: their number is about 18,000. The
third are a body of infantry, to the amount of 40 or 50,000;
they

they are commonly picked out of the country, from amongst the most laborious and robust of the people.

Religio

The religion of the *Persians* is the same in substance with that of the *Turks*, though no nations in the world have one another so much on the account of religion as they do. The true ground of their division is, that the *Turks* pretend, that *Abubeker* was the lawful successor of *Mohammed*, *Omar* the successor of *Abubeker*, *Osman* of *Omar*, and then *Ali*; whereas the *Persians* assert, that *Ali* succeeded *Mohammed*, or ought to have succeeded him, as being his son-in-law, and that the rest were but so many usurpers of his right. This is the reason that the *Turks* hold the *Persians* to be hereticks. The *Persians* further say, that *Ali* was the first of the twelve imams or priests whom they much honour, and who succeeded one another, and of whom the last, called *Mahomet-Mehedi-Sahabremon*, or the master of times, was snatched out of the hands of those who would have killed him, and translated as *Enoch* and *Elias* were; and that he will also come at the day of judgment to force the world to embrace the faith of *Mohammed*, that *Jesus Christ* will be his lieutenant, and will marry: for they look upon it as a great defect in his person, that he was not married. There is something very singular and curious in the religion and other practices of the *Gaures*, who are the remains of the ancient *Persians*; but we shall defer giving any account of them, till we examine the analogy which is supposed to be between them and the original inhabitants of *Indostan*.

Trade, manufac- tures, coins

THE *English* and other nations trade with the *Persians* several ways, particularly by the gulph of *Ormuz* at *Gembron*, by the way of *Turky*, and by the way of *Russia* through the *Caspian Sea*. Woollen manufactures are exchanged with them for raw and wrought silks, carpets, camblets, leather, and other manufactures of the country; but the trade is carried on in *European* shipping, the *Persians* having scarce any ships of their own, and the *Russians* having the sole navigation of the *Caspian Sea*. The trade to *Persia* through *Russia* is disused at present, being prohibited by the court of *Russia*, who were apprehensive the *English* would teach the *Persians* to build ships, and dispute the navigation of the *Caspian Sea* with them. There is not a richer or more profitable trade carried on any where than between *Conner* and *Surat* in the *East Indies*; and the *English East India* company frequently let out their ships to transport the merchandise of the *Banians* and *Armenians* from *India* to *India*: but there has been scarce any trade there since the civil wars began. The king of *Persia* is the chief merchant, and he usu-

employs his *Armenian* subjects to traffic for him in every part of the world. His agent must have the refusal of all merchandize before his subjects are permitted to trade. His greatest ministers do not think the business of a merchant beneath them. Thus it was before the civil war commenced. The most current money in *Persia* are the *abassi's*, worth about 1 s. 4 d. sterling: they are of the finest silver. An *abassi* is worth two *mahmoudi's*, a *mahmoudi* two *shais*, and a *shai* ten single or five double *cashbeghi's*. These last pieces are of brass; the other three sorts of silver; for gold is not current in trade. A *toman* is a certain sum of money, and no coin, worth fifty *abassi's*; and in *Persia* they generally reckon by *tomans*.

THE *Persian* blood is generally thick, as may be seen in the *Gaures*, the ancient *Persians*, who are homely, ill shaped, dull, and have a rough skin and olive complexion. The same is observed in the provinces next the *Indus*; but in other parts of the kingdom, the *Persian* blood is now grown clearer by the mixture of the *Georgian* and *Circassian*; and the men are of a good stature, shape, and complexion, and the women handsome and well shaped, but still inferior to the *Georgian*. The men wear large turbans on their heads, some of them very rich, interwoven with gold and silver; a vest girt with a sash, and over it a loose garment something shorter, with sandals or slippers on their feet. The women's dress does not differ much from the men's, only their vests are longer, and they wear a stiffened cap on their heads, and their hair loose. The men are exceeding fond of riding, which they do every day, if it be but to a house in the same town; they wear pliant boots of yellow leather; and the furniture of their horses is immoderately rich, their stirrups generally silver; and, whether on foot or horseback, they wear a broad sword and dagger in their sash. They have also a particular passion for hunting, which is commonly managed by birds of prey. Their hawks are the best instructed of any in the world, and they are taught not only to fly at birds, but at hares, deer, and all manner of wild beasts. The *Persians* have been always esteemed a brave people, of great vivacity and quick parts, lovers of learning, and their polite men are upon a level with the polite of *Europe*. They excel more in poetry than any other kind of literature, and astrologers are in as great reputation in *Persia* as the magi were formerly. Their books are all manuscripts, the art of printing having not yet been introduced among them; but they excel in writing, and have eight several hands. They write from the right to the left like the

Persons, habits, genius, temper, &c. of the Persians.

Arabs. In a kind of short hand they use the letters of the alphabet, and the same letters differently pointed will have twenty several significations. They are famed for nothing more than their humanity and hospitality. Their greatest foible is profuseness and vanity; whence the richness of their cloaths, and number of their servants and equipage, too often exceed their revenues, and bring them into difficulties. In short, they are born with as good natural parts as any other people, but few abuse them so much, becoming dissemblers, cheats, flatterers and liars, to gratify, if possible, their eager bent to voluptuousness and a luxurious life.—They drink coffee for breakfast, and at eleven dine upon melons, fruit, or milk. Their chief meal is in the evening, when they usually have a dish of pilo, consisting of boiled rice, fowls, or mutton, so over-done, that they pull the meat in pieces with their fingers, using neither knives, forks, nor spoons. Their meat is seasoned very high with salt and spices when they dress it; but they never salt up their meat, eating it the same day it is killed. They spread a cloth upon a carpet, and sit down cross-legged at their meals, washing both before and after they eat. They are frequently entertained with music, both vocal and instrumental, at their festivals, and girls dance to divert the company. Their usual drink is water or sherbet, wine being prohibited by their law; but several of them frequently break through this restraint, and none of them make any scruple of intoxicating themselves with opium. There is no place where women are so strictly guarded and confined as in *Persia*, especially in the courts or harems of their princes and great men. When the king's women remove, they are sent away in covered litters, with a strong guard; and all men are required to quit their habitations, and remove to a considerable distance from the places they pass through, on pain of death. There is no nobility in *Persia*, nor any respect given to a man on account of his family, except to those who are of the blood of their great prophet, or patriarchs; but every man is esteemed according to the post he possesses; and when he is dismissed, he loses his honour, and is no longer distinguished from the vulgar. The *Arabic* is the learned language of the *Persians*; the *Turkish* is usually spoken at court, and in the provinces adjoining to *Turkey*; in other parts, they generally speak the *Persian* tongue, which is a modern language, and much of the same date with their religion.

C H A P. VIII.

Of Great Tartary and Asiatic Russia.

THIS country, called *Great Tartary*, to distinguish it from the *Lesser Tartary* in *Europe*, is the ancient *Scythia* and *Serica*. It lies between the 53d and 138th degree of longitude east from *London*, and between the 40th and 80th of north latitude; which makes it about 4000 miles in length, and 3400 in breadth. The soil of so extensive a country cannot be expressed in general; the climate is so various, that the produce of the earth must be different in the several districts; but according to the best accounts, the southern parts would be fruitful if duly cultivated. It is true, that even there the land is much incumbered with mountains, so that we hear of no profitable commodity brought from thence but rhubarb, which it seems grows there very freely.

Situation and extent.

Soil and produce.

The people are an offspring of the northern *Scythians*, who came down southwards above 500 years ago, and like the *Goths* in *Europe*, and *Saracens* in *Africa*, carried all before them. They conquered *Persia* and a great part of *Asia-Minor*; and though beaten thence, they found their way westward, and established a monarchy in *Taurica Chersonesus*, which continued above 300 years. That the *Tartars* are of *Scythian* original, is evident from their sentiments and manners at this day. The *Scythians* sacrificed to their gods the prisoners taken in war. The *Tartars* do not indeed deprive their prisoners of life, but they make death preferable, by selling them to masters that equal themselves in cruelty. The ancient *Scythians* lived on mare's milk, applied themselves to the feeding of cattle, and neglected tillage. They had no other habitations but tilted waggon, which were drawn from pasture to pasture as herbage failed and necessity required. Their cloathing was the skins of beasts. They made use of poisoned arrows. To cross a river they filled sacks with cork, on which they placed themselves, and were drawn over by horses which they held by the tail. They had no written laws, but administered justice according to the natural dictates of reason. These customs still subsist with little variation among the *Tartars*. There was one very singular custom among the *Scythians*: when two friends wanted to swear a lasting friendship, they made incisions in their fingers, and received the blood in a cup. Both dipped the points of their swords in it, and lifting them to their heads, eagerly sucked it. When the modern

Inhabitants, their conquests, manners, character, and proved to be of Scythian original.

Tartars take an oath, they dip their sabres in water, which they afterwards drink. The barbarity of some of their customs appears to have been softened by time: but one thing which has remained inviolable in the character of these people, is their rage of invading the neighbouring nations upon every opportunity that offers, and often of falling upon one another, when they are confined in their own country by superior force or fear. Their wars, their incursions, their ravages, differ in nothing from those of the *Scythians*. We may apply to them what the prophet *Jeremiah* said, speaking of the irruption of their ancestors into *India*, "Their chariots are as a whirlwind; their horses are swifter than eagles, and their quiver is as an open sepulchre."

ASIA, as before observed, has often felt that they have lost nothing of the brutal impetuosity of their ancestors. Their success is less surprising than that continuance of their valour, which, though not always sufficient to preserve their conquests, still kept up in them a desire to recover them. Thus, though expelled *China* in †368, after possessing it above a century, they never ceased their efforts to recover it; and in 1644, reduced it in such a manner, that they have no reason to apprehend a second expulsion. The exploits of *Tamerlane*, the chief of one of their rulers, are well known. He was equal to *Cæsar* in courage, and not inferior to *Alexander* in good fortune. He conquered the *Indies*, subdued *Persia*, vanquished the *Turks*, and ravaged all *Egypt*. His name and reputation have reached nations to whom his country is still unknown.

*Tartars
divided
into three
powers.*

THE *Tartars* are generally divided into three distinct powers: the first are those known by the name of *Tartars*; the second are the *Calmuks*; and the third the *Moungals*. The *Tartars* properly so called, live to the west of the *Caspian Sea*. The most considerable of them are the *Usbees*, the *Kara-Kalpacks*, the *Nagais*, who are subject to *Russia*; the *Baskirs*, who also hold of that empire; and the *Daghestans*, who depend on no power, and are more savage and untractable than any of the rest. The *Narais*, who at present occupy the lands of *Astrachan*, between the *Jaick* and the *Wolga*, and the *Baskirs*, who are situated in the eastern part of the kingdom of *Casan*, between the *Wolga* and the river *Kaya*, formerly received tribute from *Russia*, which the great *Czar* of *Muscovy*

was obliged to send
of his court, to meet the persons

tribute, and who were the poorest and most wretched of all their tribes. *John* or *Iwan* duke of *Muscovy*, surnamed the Great, was the first who, to free himself from this shameful mark of servitude, attempted to bring the *Tartars* under subjection. His son *Basil* continued to reduce them; but the final blow was given them by *John Basilides*, a prince detested for his barbarity, but resolute and valiant. He extended his power over the most distant of their hords. The kan of the *Calmucks* who occupy a great part of the country which lies between the *Moungal* and the *Volga*, is so powerful, that it is said he can bring an army of 100,000 men into the field. There is always a body of them in the *Russian* army. They are rather short than tall; but strong, robust, courageous, and inured to fatigue. Their complexion is tawny, their faces flat, and their noses sunk to a level with their cheeks; their nostrils are the only parts that are striking, because larger than their eyes; and these are so small, that they would be scarce perceptible, if they were not very black and sparkling. They have scarce any beard; and their hair, of which they wear only a tuft on the crown of the head, is rough like a horse's mane. They wear a round bonnet with a border of fur, in the *Polish* manner, and a kind of loose coat of sheepskins, which comes down to the middle of their leg. They serve only on horseback; their arms are a bow which is larger, and arrows which are longer than usual. It is said that their arrows are so sharp-pointed, and that they make them fly with such force, that they will pierce a man through. They carry also a musket, which hangs by their side, and a lance, which they handle with great dexterity. They are all Pagans: the name *Calmucks* is a kind of nickname given them by the *Mohammedan Tartars*, with which they are much offended. They want to be called *Mogouls*. Those *Tartars* who are at present called *Moungals*, are situated, on one side, between these last people and the sea of *Japan*, and on the other between *China* and *Siberia*.

The kingdom of *Astracan* begins in the 43d degree and $\frac{1}{2}$ Kingdom of latitude, under the finest of climates, and ends towards the 50th, comprehending about as many degrees of longitude as latitude; bounded on one side by the *Caspian Sea*, on the other by the mountains of *Circassia*, and still reaching beyond the *Caspian Sea*, along *Mount Caucasus*, watered by the great river *Volga*, the *Tauck*, and several other rivers, between which, as our countryman the engineer *Perry* pretends, canals may be formed, which, serving as a bed to inundations, would produce the same effect as the channels of the *Nile*, by increasing the fertility of the land; but this fine country, to

the right and left of the *Volga* and *Jaiick*, was infested; rather than inhabited by the *Tartars*, who never cultivated any thing, and who have always lived as strangers on the earth.

ENGINEER *Perry*, employed here by *Peter the Great*, found vast deserts covered with pastures, different sorts of pulse, cherry and almond trees. Wild sheep, which yielded excellent nourishment, fed in these solitudes. To second therein nature, it was necessary to begin by taming and civilizing the men of these climes.

THIS kingdom of *Astracan* is a part of the ancient *Caspia* conquered by *Gengis-Kan*, and afterwards by *Tamerlane*. The dominions of these *Tartars* extended as far as *Moscw*. The czar *John Basilides*, as before mentioned, delivered his country from the *Tartar* yoke in the tenth century, and added the kingdom of *Astracan* to his other conquests in 1554. *Astracan* is the boundary of *Asia* and *Europe*, and may trade with either, transporting by the *Volga* the merchandize brought by the *Caspian Sea*. This was one of the grand projects of *Peter the Great*. It was partly executed by him. An intire suburb of *Astracan* is inhabited by *Indians*.

Orem-
burg.

AT the south-east of the kingdom of *Astracan* is a small country newly formed, called *Oremburg*. A town of the same name was built in 1734, on the banks of the river *Jaiick*. The face of this country is uneven and rugged by some branches of *Mount Caucasus*. Forts raised at equal distances defend the passage of the mountains, and the rivers that descend from them. It is in this region, formerly inhabited, that the *Persians*, for some years past, have been laying up and secreting from rapacious robbers their effects that escaped the civil wars. The town of *Oremburg* is become the refuge of the *Persians* and their fortunes, and has increased by their calamities. The *Indians* and people of the *Great Bukaria* come to traffic there, so that it may be said to be a mart for *Asia*.

Govern-
ments of
Casan and
the Great
Permia.

BEYOND the *Volga* and the *Jaiick*, towards the north, is the kingdom of *Casan*, which, together with *Astracan*, fell to the lot of a son of *Gengis-Kan*, and afterwards of a son of *Tamerlane*. This is also a conquest of *John Basilides*. It is still peopled by a great number of *Mohammedan Tartars*. This great country extends as far as *Siberia*. It was formerly rich and flourishing, and still retains some opulence. A province of this kingdom, called the *Great Permia*, and afterwards *Salikem*, was the staple of *Persian* merchandize and *Tartar* wares. A great quantity of the coins of the first caliphs, and some gold idols of the *Tartars* have been found in *Permia*; but these monuments of former wealth were found in the midst of

of poverty, and in deserts where no vestiges of commerce could be discovered. Such revolutions happen but too soon and easily in a barren country, since they have happened in the most fertile.

The famous Swedish prisoner, *Stralemberg*, who turned to so good an account his misfortunes, after the battle of *Pultawa*, and who examined all those vast tracts of land with so much attention, is the first who made probable a fact which could never gain credit, concerning the ancient commerce of these regions. *Pliny* and *Pomponius Mela* relate, that in the time of *Augustus*, a king of the *Suevi* made a present to *Metellus Celer* of some *Indians* cast by a storm on the coasts near the *Elbe*. How should the inhabitants of *India* navigate the *German* seas? This adventure appeared fabulous to all our moderns, especially since the commerce of our hemisphere changed by the discovery of the *Cape of Good Hope*. But formerly it was not more strange to see an *Indian* trade into the northern countries of the west, than to see a *Roman* pass into *India* by *Arabia*. The *Indians* went into *Persia*, embarked on the sea of *Hyrcania*, sailed up the *Rha*, which is the *Wolga*, proceeded as far as the *Great Permian*, by *Kama*, and from thence might embark on the *North Sea*, or *Baltic*. There have been in all times enterprising men. The *Tyrians* undertook and succeeded in more astonishing voyages.

If, after having passed in review all these vast provinces, you cast your eye to the east, there again in the limits of *Europe* and *Asia* are confounded. A new name should seem requisite for this great part of the world. The ancients divided into *Asia*, *Europe*, and *Africa* their known world; they had not seen the tenth part of it; and this is the reason, when the *Paius Mentis* is passed, that it is not known where *Europe* ends and *Asia* begins. All beyond *Mount Taurus* received the vague appellation of *Scythia*, and afterwards that of *Tartary*. It would be proper, perhaps, to call by the name of *Arctic Land*, or *Land of the North*, all the country that extends from the *Baltic* to the confines of *China*, as the name of *Austral Land* is given by some to the part of the world, not less vast, situated under the antartic pole, and which makes the counterpoise of the globe.

FROM the frontiers of the provinces of *Archangel*, *Resan*, *Siberian*, *Siberia* extend to the east, with further tracts of land as far as the sea of *Japan*; it touches the south of *Russia*, *Mount Caucasus*; from thence to the country of *Kamchatka* about 1200 common leagues are reckoned; and from *South Tartary*, which takes it as a boundary, as far as the *Frozen Sea*, there are about 400, which is the least breadth

Discovery
and con-
quest of
Siberia.

of this country. *Siberia* produces the richest furs, and it was this that occasioned its discovery in 1563.

A *Don-Cossack*, by name *Yarmak*, being obliged by some accident, to leave his native country, and having no means of subsistence, betook himself, with a few accomplices, to robbing on the highway. He soon became famous and powerful, for he robbed only the rich, and by a generosity uncommon in such a character, liberally bestowed on such as were in want. He never killed, or even hurt any person, unless compelled to such outrages in his own defence. This behaviour so raised his reputation, that all the idle fellows in the country enlisted themselves in his gang, and he became at last so troublesome, that the governors of the southern provinces sent out troops to apprehend him; but he being informed of their design, withdrew from the land, and procuring boats upon the *Volga*, commenced pirate. Being attacked here also, he was forced to cross the *Caspian Sea*, and shelter himself on the *Persian* shore, where he passed for a merchant. Being again discovered, he was obliged by the *Persians* to quit their coast; and now his only refuge was to retrace the *Volga*, where he behaved with great circumspection, often lurking in woods and villages; and being in no want of money, he paid liberally for every thing he needed. Foreseeing, however, that such a numerous gang could not be long concealed, he took the resolution of leaving the *Volga*, and steered his course up the river *Kama*, at that time little frequented by the *Russians*, or any other nation: here he hoped to find, at least, a safe retreat during the winter. *Yarmak*, therefore, with his followers, amounting to 200, continued their voyage up the *Kama*, till they were stopped by the ice, at no great distance from a large village. The inhabitants, alarmed at the sight of so many armed men, whom they were not able to oppose, gave them a hospitable reception. *Yarmak* demanded only provisions and winter-quarters for his men, promising to leave them unmolested in the spring. In consequence of this declaration, he and his followers passed the winter very quietly in that remote place; but apprehensive, at the approach of summer, of being discovered by the government, and uncertain what course to steer, it was at last determined to cross the mountains of *Verchaturia*, and go to the eastward, in hopes of finding some uninhabited country, at least, a safe retreat.

HAVING passed the mountains, they arrived at the river *Tur*, and finding it navigable, soon made a sufficient number of canoes for the whole gang. After rowing for some days down the *Tur*, they discovered several villages of *Mohammedan Tartars*.

Tartars, who were surprised at the sight of such a number of strangers, of whom they had before never so much as heard. *Yarmak* having got what intelligence he could procure of the situation and government of the country, pursued his voyage to the river *Tobol*; where he found the towns populous, and the lands well cultivated. His approach alarmed the king of the *Tartars*, who assembled a numerous body of horse and foot, armed with bows and arrows, lances and other such weapons, with whom our adventurer had many skirmishes, and defeated great multitudes by means of his fire-arms, which had never before been known in these parts. The poor *Tartars* were as much amazed and terrified at the sight of the *Russians* and their arms, as the inhabitants of *Mexico* on the arrival of the *Spaniards* in *America*; in which *Siberia* may, in many respects, be compared.

YARMAK, finding his enemies daily more numerous the nearer he approached the residence of the *Tartar* king; having also lost many of his men in continual encounters, and spent the greatest part of his ammunition; knowing, besides, of no place of safety, where he might pass the winter, which is both long and severe in this quarter, at last determined to retreat. He therefore steered his course to the west, up the *Tobol* and *Tur* rivers. The *Tartars* gave him no rest, but harassed him perpetually from the bank. He himself and a few more escaped with a considerable booty, and returned to the village where they wintered before. The inhabitants, on seeing the rich furs and other spoils, gave them a welcome reception; and *Yarmak* did not forget to dispense his favours liberally among those who had entertained him in his distress, when he fled from justice.

OUR adventurer had now time to reflect on his miserable circumstances. He considered, that his lurking in these parts, though remote from any town, could not be long kept a secret; to make another attempt against the *Tartars* with a handful of men, if provided with arms and ammunition, might perhaps be ruinous, and certainly unsuccessful. He therefore resolved to submit himself to the czar's clemency, in hopes of obtaining a pardon for himself and his accomplices, on condition of pointing out the way to a rich and easy conquest of a country which he had discovered. The proposal was made at court by a friend, and was of too great importance to be neglected. In short, *Yarmak* was brought to *Moscow*, under a safe-conduct, where he communicated the whole affair. He begged his majesty's pardon, and asked a certain number of troops, which he promised to lead to a glorious conquest. His majesty granted him pardon, approved of the expedition, and

and gave orders for the troops to attend him. They marched to *Solikamski*, where they passed the winter in making preparations for their enterprize.

DURING this interval, *Yarmak* behaved with surprising prudence and activity, and discovered himself to be a person of uncommon genius. He collected such of his former followers as remained, and formed them into a company, in whom he could confide on all occasions.

AT the proper season, the troops set out towards *Siberia*. On coming into the inhabited parts of the country, they found many straggling parties of *Tartars* in arms, ready to oppose them, and a number of boats upon the rivers, full of armed men; the king of the *Tartars* himself was on board one of these vessels. This expedition was of short duration, and fully answered the expectations of the *Russians*. The *Tartars* in the boats being pursued by the *Russians*, a battle ensued on the river *Irtish*. *Yarmak* observing the king's barge, ordered his crew to board her, which he endeavouring to do at the head of his men, jumped short, fell into the river, and was drowned, to the great grief of all his followers. Thus fell poor *Yarmak*! Notwithstanding this misfortune, the *Russians* gained a complete victory. The brave king of the *Tartars* lost his life also in the action. His son, and the rest of the royal family, were taken prisoners, and sent to *Moscow*, where they were honourably received by the czar, and treated according to their quality. The prince had an extensive property granted him in *Russia*, which the family now enjoys, together with the title of *Sibirsky Czar*, or prince of *Siberia*.

How the
Samoieds
were discovered.

It was not in the reign of the czar *Fedor Iwanowicz*, at in that of *Iwan Basilides* in the sixteenth century, that a v.-e person of the neighbourhood of *Archangel*, a man ch for his condition and country, perceived that men of extraordinary figure, clothed after a manner till then unknown in his part of the country, and speaking a language which he understood, came down regularly every year a river anat falls into the *Duina*, bringing with them, to market, martens and black foxes, which they exchanged for nails and bits of glass, as the savages of *America* first gave their gold to the *Spaniards*. He had them followed by his children and servants as far as their country: they were *Samoieds*, a people that appear like the *Laplanders*, but not of the same race. They are ignorant, as the *Laplanders*, of the use of bread; they have, as they, the assistance of rein-deer, which they yoke to their sledges. They live in earthen and huts in the midst of the snow; but nature has otherwise set some very distinguish-

guishing marks between this species of men and that of the *Laplanders*: their upper maxilla, or jaw, more advanced, is on a level with their nose, and their ears are higher up; the men and women have hair only on the head; the nipple of their breasts of a black ebony colour. Neither sex of the *Laplanders* have any of these marks; so that it is without any just foundation that the species of the *Laplanders* and *Samoieds* have been confounded. There are many more different races of men than are thought of; those of the *Samoieds* and *Hottentots* seem to be the two extremes of our continent; and, if we attend to the black breasts of the *Samoied* women, and the apert nature has given the *Hottentot* women, and which descends to the half of their thighs, we shall have some idea of the varieties of our animal species.

THE morality of the *Samoieds* is equally singular with their physics. They pay no worship to the Supreme Being: their religion is a sort of Manicheism, or rather the ancient religion of the Magi, in the one point of acknowledging a good and bad principle. The horrid climate they dwell in, seems, in some respects, to excuse this belief, so ancient among so many people, and so natural to the ignorant and unfortunate. Theft and murder are not heard of among them: being almost without passions, they are without injustice. They have no terms in their language to express vice and virtue. Their extreme simplicity has not yet permitted them to form abstracted notions; sentiment alone directs them, and it is, perhaps, an incontestible proof that men love justice by instinct, when their passions do not blind them. Some of these savages were persuaded to suffer themselves to be conducted to *Moscow*; every thing there struck them with admiration: the emperor they regarded as their god, and submitted to give him yearly an offering of two fables per each inhabitant. Some colonies were soon established beyond the *Ob*, and the *Irtish*, and even forts were built there. A *Cossack* was sent into the country in 1595, and conquered it for the *Czars*, with some soldiers and artillery, as *Cortez* subdued *Mexico*; but he scarcely conquered any thing more than deserts.

AT the confluence of the rivers *Irtish* and *Tobol*, a small habitation was found by the *Russians*, which they converted, since their conquest, into the city of *Tobolskoy*, the capital of *Siberia*, at present considerable. It contains about 15,000 inhabitants. The clergy consist of about fifty monks, or priests. There was a good trade from this place to *China*, by caravans, but the mutual knavery of the *Russians* and *Chinese* merchants soon reduced it to a languishing state; and some differences which arose between the two powers have

Revoluti-
on among
the Cal-
mucs.

have since totally destroyed it. These differences were occasioned by a revolution which happened among the *Zungars Calmucs*, after the death of *Galdan-Tcherin*, in 1746. *Galdan-Tcherin* was kan of the nation which inhabited that part of *Northern-Tartary* which is situated between *Siberia* and *China*. This nation admitted no sovereign but its kan, and upon the death of *Galdan-Tcherin*, a civil war broke out among several competitors to succeed him. The *Chinese*, who dreaded the power of this nation, which was become formidable to all its neighbours, contrived first to weaken it on this occasion, by favouring each of the competitors by turns, and then to fall upon the conqueror, and destroy his power at once. The name of this unhappy prince was *Amoursaman*; and the wretched remains of this once mighty nation, consisting of about 20,000 families, took shelter under the protection of *Russia*, upon the banks of the *Volga*. *Amoursaman*, after having wandered from place to place, at last retired to the frontiers of *Siberia*, in 1757, where he died of the small-pox in 1760. The *Chinese*, as soon as they heard he had retired to *Siberia*, demanded that he should be delivered up, or, as the *Russians* say, that he should be confined for life. He continued for some time at *ToBolfskoy* before his death, and his body was sent to the frontiers of *Siberia*, whither the *Chinese* sent commissioners more than once to examine it. Two *Calmuc* ambassadors, who had been sent to *Petersburgh* whilst *Amoursaman* was still living, learnt, on their return to *ToBolfskoy*, that their nation was no longer existing.

WHO would believe it, that this country was, for a long time, the abode of the same *Huns* who ravaged all as far as *Rome*, under *Attila*, and that these *Huns* came from the north of *China*? The *Ussac-Tartars* succeeded the *Huns*, and the *Russians* the *Ussacs*. These savage countries were disputed, after the manner that nations exterminated each other for more fertile. *Siberia* was formerly better peopled than it is, especially towards the south; some sculch monuments and ruins are a sufficient argument, that it was so.

Verchatu-
ria moun-
tains.

ALL this part of the world, from the sixtieth degree, or thereabouts, to the mountains, eternally frozen, which bound the north seas, resembles in nothing the regions of the temperate zone. The earth does not afford the same plants and animals, nor the lakes and rivers the same fish. The ridge of the *Verchaturia* mountains, which may be considered as a branch of *Mount Caucasus*, extending to the southward, and separating *Asia* from *Europe* quite to the *Frozen-Sea*, is no where higher than from fifty to eighty fathoms,

thoms; but the declivity is very steep, and the summit is covered with pine, birch, and fir. The way over these mountains is very frightful, and by night extremely dangerous; for if the sledge deviates ever so little from the beaten track, the unfortunate traveller will inevitably be buried in a gulph of snow. Here there is seldom any sign of a more clement season, not so much as by the flight of a bird; for even the raven and crows, which abound through all *Russia*, abandon these horrid deserts, where nature herself seems benumbed, and it is only by the traces of the sledge that the country is known to be inhabited. The gloom of desolation surrounds it on every side, and a horrid silence, which is never broken but by the outcries of those that suffer from the perils of the way. The inhabitants are shut up in their hovels nine months in the year; the snow appears upon the mountains in the beginning of *September*, and so great a quantity descends in a short time afterwards, as to leave scarce any traces of a habitation upon them. The inhabitants are then obliged to break a way through it, and it seldom begins to thaw there till the middle of *April*; and though it gives somewhat sooner in the plain, it does not totally disappear till the end of *May*; so that the severity of the winter is suspended only three months in the year, during which time, however, they sow rye, oats, barley, and pease, which they get in by the end of *August*; but none of them are perfectly ripe.

THE inhabitants of this country, for the most part, profess the religion of the *Greek* church, but with a fanaticism *Inhab-* that seems gradually to increase with the distance from the *ants de-* capital. As their state *is not* admit the indulgence of artificial wants, their desires are necessarily few: they have neither manufacture nor commerce; their provision is very bad, and therefore easily procured, consisting of dry or stinking fish, pease, and a coarse black kind of bread, made of rye; their drink is a wretched kind of beer, and a liquor they call *quas*, which is no other than water fermented with bran, and then mixed with a small quantity of *men.* They live in total idleness and inactivity, shut up in their stoves, the extreme nature of which is not to be conceived. They are, however, fond of their condition, and hate the thoughts of stirring out of their dunghill, especially to bear arms; but, if forced into the service, brandy, and the fear of punishment, will make them tolerable soldiers. The unwholesomeness and inconvenience of their hovels are greatly increased by the severity of the winter, which prevents their communication with the fresh air, their windows are seldom more than a foot wide, and six inches high; and they are also

also deprived of the light of the sun all the while he is passing through the southern signs; nor have they any artificial light but by splinters of birch-wood, which they set on fire, and stick up in the chinks of the floor: this practice is, indeed, common through all *Russia*, and frequently causes fires, which almost immediately spread over half a town, as the houses are all built of wood, except in the cities and principal towns. But, notwithstanding all this inactivity, confinement, and nastiness, they enjoy robust and uninterrupted health; so effectually does perpetual temperance counter-balance all that can weigh against health and life. There is scarce one among them that is weakly or deformed, and their manner of education secures to them this good fortune. The child, as soon as born, is laid upon a heap of straw or old rags, in a basket, where it sprawls about, and stretches its limbs, without any restraint; it is nourished with milk by means of a horn which is fitted to a cow's-teats, but sometimes suckled by the mother; the basket is hung at the end of a long elastic pole, so that it may easily be put in motion, and the child rocked as in a cradle; but before it can go alone, it is placed upon the ground, where it rolls about at pleasure, till it learns first to stand, and then to totter along, with nothing to cover it but a shirt, which scarce reaches to the middle of the thigh. By this management their children walk sooner than ours can stand alone, and, as soon as they are able, are suffered to run about, and, at the end of the winter, are playing in the road in the midst of the snow, while the weather is still so cold, that the traveller is afraid of getting out of his lodge, though covered with fur from head to foot. They are of a large stature, extremely muscular and strong, and live longer than the inhabitants of any other known part of the world. This, however, is not because their situation, upon the whole, is favourable to life in the tender years of infancy, but is rather the reverse; for all the children who are not strong by constitution, die soon, and none are reared but those who are born with the greatest natural advantages. More than ^{two} thirds of the children that are born here die in their infancy, and it is common to find but three or four alive, in families that have had sixteen or eighteen. Many other causes concur gradually to depopulate the villages that are scattered through this vast desert. The small-pox frequently carries off half the inhabitants of one of these hamlets at a time, and sometimes a greater proportion; the scurvy is also very fatal among them; and where they can procure spirituous liquors, the roads of disease and mortality are in proportion to their want of the advantages which

which makes intemperance less fatal in other places. The venereal disease also makes great havock among these unhappy wretches, to whom the method of cure is wholly unknown; it prevails so much in *Siberia* and *Northern Tartary*, that there is great reason to believe it will at length depopulate the country. The manners of the people of *Tobolskoy* are rather more corrupt than those that live dispersed in the country. The women of all ranks and ages paint here, and are in general handsome, but have not that feminine softness which is the principal charm of the sex.

BELOW the country of the *Samoieds*, along the river *Oby*, *Ostiacs* lies that of the *Ostiacs*: they are quite different from the *Samoieds*, except that, like them, and the men of the primitive ages of the world, they are hunters, shepherds, and fishermen. Some of them are without religion, as living separate; others, composing hords, have a kind of worship, and make vows to the principal object of their wants: they adore a sheep's-skin, because no other sort of cattle is more necessary to them. The same way the ancient *Egyptian* husbandmen made choice of an ox, to adore in the emblem of this animal, the divinity that produced it for man's use. The *Ostiacs* have also other idols, of which neither the origin nor worship does deserve our attention, any more than their adorers. Some of them have been converted to Christianity about the year 1712; but they are such Christians as the poorest peasants, without knowing what they are. Several authors pretend, that this people came originally from the *Great Permia*; but this *Great Permia* is almost a desert. Why should its inhabitants settle so far off, and so indifferently? These obscurities are not worth our researches. Every people that has not cultivated the arts, ought to be condemned to oblivion. It is particularly among these *Ostiacs*, and the *Burates* and *Jakutes*, their neighbours, that the ivory is often found in the ground, of which the origin cannot be accounted for without having recourse to the Universal Deluge. Some believe it to be a fossil ivory, others, the teeth of a sort of elephant, which of these is destroyed. In what country do we not find natural productions, which equally astonish and confound philosophy? Several mountains of these countries abound with the amianthus, or that incombustible flax, of which sometimes cloth is made, and sometimes a kind of paper. The *Burates*, another people not yet made Christians, live to the south of the *Ostiacs*; and eastward are several hords not yet entirely subjected. None of these people have the least knowledge of the calendar; they reckon their time by snows, and by the apparent course of the sun.

As

As it snows regularly, and for a long time, every winter, they say, I am so many snows old, as we say so many years old.

THE *Swedish* officer *Stralemberg*, who had been made prisoner at the battle of *Pultowa*, and spent fifteen years in *Siberia*, all parts of which he had visited, says, that there are still some remains of an ancient people, whose skin is partly coloured and spotted, and that he had seen many of that race. This fact has been confirmed by some *Russians* born at *Tobolskoy*. It seems, that the variety of the human species has much diminished; we find but few of these singular races, which, probably, others have exterminated:—for example, there are very few of the white *Moors*, whereof one was presented, some time ago, to the Academy of Sciences at *Paris*. The same may be said of several animals, whose species is become very rare.

Siberia, *absence de-*
nominated. THIS country was called *Siberia*, only since its conquest by the *Russians*, from a *Slavonic* word, signifying a prison, having been made such, on account of its extreme coldness and barrenness. The prisoners of state who are banished here, some during life, some for a term of years, according to their crimes, or pleasure of the czars, either without any, or with a very small allowance, as, perhaps, a penny a-day, are obliged to shoot for their living, or starve. They are, besides, obliged to bring in weekly a certain quantity of furs as a tribute to the czar, else they are severely punished by task-masters set purposely over them. They must also be very careful, that the furs have no holes in them; and this makes them exceedingly diligent in shooting those creatures only in the head, and with a single ball.

ALL the southern parts of these countries are peopled by numerous hords of *Tartars*. The ancient *Turks* passed out of this *Tartary* to conquer all the territories they are now in possession of. The *Calmucs*, the *Moguls*, are the same *Scythians*, who, headed by *Madies*, seized upon the *Upper-Asia*, and conquered *Cyaxares*, king of the *Medes*. These also are they whom *Gengis-Kan* and his children led forwards into *Germany*, and who formed the *Mogul-empire* under *Tamerlane*. These people are a great example of the changes that have happened among all nations. Some of their hords, far from being formidable, are become vassals of *Russia*. Such is a nation of *Calmucs* that dwells between *Siberia* and the *Caspian-Sea*. Here were found in 1720, a subterraneous house of stone, urns, lamps, ear-pendants, an equestrian statue of an Oriental prince, with a diadem on his head; two women sitting on thrones; a roll of six *Scripts*, sent by *Pe-*
ter

ter the Great, to the Academy of Inscriptions at Paris, and found to be in the language of Tibet. All these were illustrious testimonies that the arts once inhabited this country, now barbarous; and they were also sufficient proofs of what Peter the Great was often heard to say, that the arts had made the tour of the world.

KAMTSCHATKA is the last province of Siberia. It was Kamtschatka known by that name to the geographers of former times: but so little were they acquainted with its situation, that they described it to be joined to Yesso; whereas a large sea, interspersed with many islands, lies between the two countries. At present, Kamtschatka is known to be that great peninsula which makes the boundary of Asia to the north-east, stretching from north to south about 7 deg. 30 min. It begins at the rivers Pustai and Anapho, lying in the latitude of 59 deg. 30 min. The first runs into the Penschinska-Sea, and the other to the eastward. At these places the isthmus is so narrow, that the sea may, in fair weather, be seen on both sides from the hills in the middle. As the country runs broader towards the north, this place may be reckoned the isthmus that joins the peninsula to the main land.

THE natives of this country are divided into three different people; the Kamtschatkans, Koreki, and Kuriles. The Kamtschatkans live upon the south-side of the promontory of Kamtschatka: The Koreki inhabit the northern parts on the coast of the Penschinska-Sea, and round the eastern ocean, almost to Anadir: The Kuriles inhabit the islands in that sea, reaching as far as those of Japan. They are all as wild as the country itself. Some have no fixed habitations, but wander from place to place with their herds of rein-deer; others have settled habitations, and reside upon the banks of the rivers, and the sea-shore, living upon fish and sea-animals, and such herbs as grow upon the shore. The former dwell in huts, covered with deer-skins; the latter in places dug out of the earth; both in a very barbarous manner. Their dispositions and tempers are rough; and they are entirely ignorant of letters or religion.

It is very probable, that the Kamtschatkans lived formerly in Mungalia, beyond the river Anur, and made one people with the Mungals, which appears from their having several words common to the Mungol Chinese language, and their terminations in ong, ing, oang, chin, cha, &c. kfung. But not to insist upon the language only, both are of a low stature, swarthy, have black hair, a broad face, sharp nose, eyes sunk in, small ears, small and thin, a hanging belly, slender legs and arms, and both are remarkable for cowardice, boast-

boasting, and slavishness to people who use them hard, and for their obstinacy and contempt of those who treat them with gentleness.

BEFORE the *Russian* conquest, they lived in perfect freedom, having no chief, being subject to no law, nor paying any taxes; the old men, or those who were remarkable for their bravery, bearing the principal authority in their villages, though none had any right to command or inflict punishment. They resemble the other inhabitants of *Siberia*; but differ in this, that their faces are not so long as the other *Siberians*, their cheeks stand more out, their teeth are thick, their mouth large, their stature middling, and their shoulders broad, particularly those who inhabit the sea-coast.

THEIR manner of living is slovenly to the last degree; they never wash their hands or face, nor cut their nails; they eat out of the same dish with the dogs, which they never wash; every thing about them stinks of fish; they never comb their heads, but both men and women plait their hair in two locks, binding the ends with small cords. When any hair starts out, they sew it with threads to make it lie close; by this means, they have such a quantity of vermin, that they scrape them off by handfuls, and are nasty enough to eat them. Those that have not a sufficient stock of natural hair wear false locks, and sometimes as much as weigh ten pounds, which makes their heads look like a haystack.

THEY have extraordinary notions of God, of sins, and good actions. They have filled almost every place in heaven and earth with different spirits, which they both worship and fear more than God, because, in case of troubles and misfortunes, they curse and blaspheme him. Their chief happiness consists in idleness, and gratifying their natural lusts and appetites. They have no notion of riches, fame, or honour; therefore covetousness, ambition, and pride, are unknown among them. Their trade is likewise not so much calculated for the acquisition of riches, as for procuring the necessaries and conveniencies of life. They sell the *Koreki* fables, fox, and white dog-skins, dried mushrooms, or such trifles; and receive in exchange, cloaths made of deer-skins and other hides. Among themselves they exchange what they abound with for what they want, as dogs, boats, dishes, troughs, nets, hemp, yarn, and provisions. This kind of barter is carried on under a great shew of friendship; for, when one wants any thing that another has, he goes freely to visit him, and without any ceremony makes known his wants, though, perhaps, he never had any acquaintance with that person before. The landlord is obliged to behave according to the custom

custom of the country, and gives his guest whatever he has occasion for. He afterwards returns the visit, and must be received in the same manner; so that both parties have their wants supplied.

THO' their manner of living is most nasty, and their actions most stupid, yet they think themselves the happiest people in the world, and look upon the *Russians* who are settled among them with content: however, this notion begins to change at present; for the old people, who are confirmed in their customs, drop off, and the young ones, being converted to the Christian religion, adopt the customs of the *Russians*, and despise the barbarity and superstition of their ancestors.

In every ostrog, or large village, by order of her late Imperial majesty *Elizabeth*, is appointed a chief, who is sole judge in all causes, except those of life and death; and not only these chiefs, but even the common people, have their chapels for public worship. Schools are also erected in almost every village, to which the *Kamtschatskans* send their children with pleasure. By these means, their barbarity, very probably, will, in a short time, be rooted out.

In a late expedition of the *Russians* to this country, the sea-officers delineated exactly all the eastern coast of *Kamtschatka*, as far as the cape of *Tchuktzkoi*, all the western to the *Penchinska* gulph, and from *Ochotskoy* to the river *Amur*; they described the islands lying between *Japan* and *Kamtschatka*, and also those between *Kamtschatka* and *America*. At the same time, the gentlemen of the Academy undertook to determine the situation of *Kamtschatka* by astronomical observations, and to remark every thing worthy of notice in the civil and natural history of the country and places adjacent.

A *COSSAC* officer went first by land from *Siberia* to *Kamtschatka*, in 1701, by order of *Peter the Great*, who, after the unfortunate affair of *Narva*, still extended his care from one extremity of the continent to the other. Afterwards, in 1725, some time before death surprised him in the midst of his great projects, he sent the Danish captain *Bering* with express orders to go by the sea of *Kamtschatka* to the land of *America*, if the enterprize was practicable. *Bering* could not succeed in his first navigation. The empress *Anne* sent him again in 1733. *Spengberg*, a captain of a ship, who was appointed to keep company in this voyage, set out the first from *Kamtschatka*, but could not put to sea till 1739; by reason of the time required to arrive at the port where they were to embark, and build and fit out ships with all necessaries. *Spengberg* penetrated as far as the north of *Japan*;

The Conclusion of

pan, through a streight formed by a long chain of isles, and returned, without any farther discovery than this passage.

IN 1741, *Bering* sailed through this sea, accompanied by the astronomer *De l'Isle de la Croyer*, of the *De l'Isle* family, which has produced such learned geographers. Another captain went also on the discovery. *Bering* and he arrived at the coasts of *America*, on the north of *California*. This passage, so long sought for through the North-seas, was, therefore, at last discovered, but no succour nor refreshments were found on these desert coasts. Fresh water failed them, and the scurvy carried off a part of the ship's crew. They saw, for the space of an hundred miles, the north shores of *California*, and they perceived copper canoes, which carried men like the *Canadians*. All was fruitless. *Bering* died in an island to which he gave his name. The other captain, finding himself near *California*, landed ten of his men, but they never appeared again. The captain, after expecting them in vain, was obliged to return to *Kamtschatka*, and *De l'Isle* expired as he just got to land. These disasters are the destiny of almost all the first attempts on the North-seas. It is not yet known what benefit will be derived from such painful and dangerous discoveries. Hereafter, in describing *America*, we shall have an occasion to speak of that part of it which lies nearest to *Kamtschatka*.

WE have specified whatever composes in general the dominions of *Asiatic-Russia*. All the great parts of the *Russian* empire have been united at different times, as it has happened in all the other kingdoms of the world. *Scythians*, *Huns*, *Massagetes*, *Slavonians*, *Cimbrians*, *Gotes*, *Sarmatians*, are now the subjects of the czars. The *Russians* are, properly speaking, the ancient *Roxelans*, or *Slavonians*.

AFTER a few cursory reflections, we shall find, that the greater part of other states are composed in this manner. *France* is an assemblage of *Goths*, *Danes*, called *Normans*, septentrional *Germans*, called *Burgundians*, *Franks*, *Allemands*, and some *Romans*, mixed with the ancient *Celts*. *Great Britain* and *Ireland* are much the same way compounded, except that the blood of the *Scots*, *Irish*, and *Welsh*, remains still more unmixed. In *Rome*, and in *Italy*, are several families descended from the people of the North, as *Lombards*, *Goths*, *Teutons*, and *Cimbrians*; and now none of the ancient *Romans* are known in this country. The *Spaniards* are a race of *Arabs*, *Carthaginians*, *Jews*, *Phrygians*, *Vigoths*, and *Vandals*, incorporated with the inhabitants of the country. When there is such a mixture of nations, it is long before they can be civilized, or even brought to form their language.

Some

Some admit of being polished sooner, others later. Police and arts are established with so much difficulty, and revolutions ruin so frequently the commenced edifice, that there is good reason to be astonished, that the greater part of nations do not live like *Tartars*.

CH A P. IX.

Of the Empires of China and Japan.

THE vast, ancient, and opulent empire of *China*, situated on the most eastern verge of the *Asiatic* continent, is bounded on the north by east and west *Tartary*, from which it is divided by a prodigious wall, of 1500 miles in length, and partly by high, craggy, and inaccessible mountains. On the east, it is bounded by the Eastern ocean, on the west by part of the Mogul's empire, and *India* extra *Gangem*, from which it is parted by ridges of other high mountains and sandy deserts; and on the south, partly by the kingdoms of *Lao*, *Tonquin*, *Ava*, and *Cochin-china*, and partly by the Southern ocean, or *Indian-Sea*, which flows between it and the *Philippine-Islands*. It is of such great extent, that it reaches in latitude from 18 to almost 43 degrees, so that its utmost length, including the island of *Hai-nan*, will be 1800 miles, and its breadth, measured from the sea-port town *Nimpo*, in the province of *Che-kien*, to the utmost boundaries of *Su-chuen*, will be 1260.

THE country is for the most part temperate, except towards the northern parts, which are intolerably cold, not so much from their situation, as from the ridges of mountains that run along them, which are excessive high, and commonly covered with deep snows. The soil is different, according to the diversity of climates, and the face of the country, in some parts mountainous, in others champaign; but the inhabitants are such expert and diligent masters of agriculture, that they leave no spot uncultivated. As they abound with artificial canals and reservoirs for watering and fertilizing their low lands, so they have been no less industrious with respect to their high ones; first, by levelling a great many of them, whenever the labour and number of hands could compass it to advantage: secondly, by levelling and flattening the very summits of many of their mountains, in order to make them bear variety of grain, pulse, and the like; and thirdly, by dividing their declivities into as many flat stages as they can conveniently bear; by which means the

waters, whether of rain and dew, or of the springs that come down from the tops, have a proper time to sink into the ground, and to nourish the sown seed, instead of rooting it up and washing it down, as happens in other countries, by the violence of their descent along their natural declivity. Nothing can be more agreeable than to view, from the lower vallies, those sides of the mountains cut into such a number of terraces one over the other, and all covered up to the top with variety of corn and fruits. These mountains are nothing near so hard and stony as ours, but rather of a soft porous nature, and what is still more surprising, may be dug with ease some hundreds of feet deep; so that the salts which transpire through their pores, prove a constant and excellent manure to these artificial grounds: but where the mountains are rocky, they content themselves with planting them with all sorts of fruit, and other trees, according to the nature of the ground. They are no less curious and careful in improving every sort by a proper manure; and thus, as well by their abundance of water, as warmth of the climate, their ground yields in some provinces two, and sometimes three, plentiful harvests in a year.

Produce.

THE product of the country is corn and grain of all sorts, in great plenty; with silk, cotton, honey, wax, fruits of all the sorts we have in *Europe*, and several others, all exquisite to the sight and taste, not known amongst us. Their oranges, grapes, figs, pomegranates, ananas, and many others, are in as great perfection as in any part of *India*. Their rich pasture-grounds breed prodigious numbers of cattle. Game is in great plenty and variety, particularly bears, boars, buffaloes, deer of several kinds, whose skins are a profitable commodity. Besides these, there are a number of elephants, tygers, fierce, and extremely dangerous, seeking their prey commonly in large droves; and leopards, with various kinds of other wild creatures, not to be found in many other countries. The musk-cat, which carries that noble perfume in a kind of bladder under its navel, is caught here, and is in great esteem. They have horses, camels, oxen, swine, in no less abundance than in other countries; their mules in particular, which are wild, are fitter for eating than for other uses. Their birds are eagles, cranes, storks, birds of paradise, pelicans, peacocks, pheasants, geese, swans, ducks, and a numberless variety of others. As for fish, there can be no doubt but that the multitude of rivers, canals, and lakes, as well as the sea that runs along the southern coast of the country, must supply them with the greatest plenty and variety of it. Besides these, most of the great and rich people

ple have large canals and ponds stocked with them for their own use; but the most curious in these kinds of fish-ponds, adorn them with one particular kind, which they call gold and silver-fish, from their colour.

THIS strange and beautiful species is about the length of one's finger, and thick in proportion. The male is of a delicate red from the head to the middle, and from thence to the tail of a bright colour, which by far exceeds the finest gilding. The female is white, and has a tail like a nosegay, which, with part of its body, shines like polished silver. They generally swim near the surface of the water, and give a most exquisite resplendency and variety to it, and they multiply so fast, that if care be not taken of their eggs, which float upon the water, the whole surface will be covered with them. These eggs are exceedingly tender, and easily killed by heat or cold, strong smells, thunder, or the report of a cannon; the way of preserving them is to take them gently out of the water, and put them in small vessels, well sheltered from wind, rain, and cold, till they are hatched by the sun, and grown to about an inch in length; then, with safety, they may be removed into their primitive reservoirs, where they are justly admired as a wonder of nature.

Gold and silver fish.

THE Chinese have also plenty of sugar, tobacco, and oil, extracted not from olives but from seeds; vast quantities of olives of a different kind from ours, yet of a fine taste, tho' either unfit to produce, or not thought worth extracting oil from; and a variety of excellent wines, some from grapes, others from rice, others from quinces and other fruits, palm, and other trees. Camphire, ebony, sanders-wood, oak, pine, and other lofty and strait trees, are found in great abundance, especially on those mountains, which are not otherwise cultivated. The low country abounds with variety of canes, junks, and bamboes of exquisite beauty, together with vast quantities of medicinal roots, such as china-root, rhubarb, gen-sen, and many more; and, among a vast variety of shrubs, that so much esteemed of late in Europe, called tea.

Other products.

ALL teas are the leaf of one and the same shrub; the supposition that green is from one kind of tree, and bohea from another, is a vulgar error; for they differ only as malt may do in being higher or slack, dried, or being finer or coarser. The tea-shrub is of the kind of our dog-tree, and its leaf of an astringent, bitter, astringent taste, without any aromatic warmth. It has very little oil in it; and that which it has is of the resinous kind, and is narcotic and stupefactive. It has also but very little salt, and that is of the fixed kind.

Tea.

Besides

The Conclusion of

Besides the general division of teas into ^{four} sorts, green and bohea, they are differently denominated and known by sub-distinctions, according to the provinces or districts where they grow, the period of ripeness when gathered, the size of the leaf, or the method of curing; as Hyson, Imperial, Bloom, Congo, Singlo, Souchong, &c. The leaves, when immediately pulled from the shrub, are so extremely bitter, as to yield an infusion which is very disagreeable to the taste; therefore, to abate this unpleasant quality, the people, who are appointed in *China* to prepare them for use, infuse them, soon after collecting, for a certain time in water, by which a portion of their bitter resinous particles being taken away, they become to be so mild as to be pleasant, and very engaging to the palate. After being infused, they are dried in the following manner: the bohea, which is made from the leaves when full-ripe, and ready to fall from the tree spontaneously, being thus brought to a proper flavour by infusion, is immediately dried by the sun, or fire, so that it may be preserved for use; therefore, as the tree, or shrub which yielded it, incurs no detriment from the leaves being pulled off, as they were in a deciduous state, this tea can be afforded at a cheaper price than the green; and this will account for the leaves of the bohea being darker in colour, and smaller in breadth; because, being almost dry when they are collected, and then steeped in water, in curing they are higher dried, and so more contracted and corrugated than the green tea. This, on the contrary, is pulled from the same shrub in a more violent way, just as the leaf is expanded to full maturity; whereby the tree which produces it suffers so much detriment, that two or three years of respite are allowed it to recover its pristine vigour; and the leaves it produces, in those years of recovery, are collected when they fall, and prepared for the bohea; on which account the green tea is sold at a higher price than the bohea; and the bloom tea still much dearer than either. Green tea also becomes dearer by a more expensive preparation; for, as soon as it is reduced to a proper pitch of flavour by the previous infusion in water, it is immediately exposed to the warm rays of the sun, and carefully and assiduously turned for a convenient time; after which it is strewed upon broad sheets of copper laid upon embers, where it is baked and turned by the hands of proper persons, who are armed with gloves of leather to protect them from the mischief, to which they have found by experience, they are in this business exposed, by the metallic efflorescence from which the green tea derives its more agreeable colour; and, according to general, but false estimation,

mation, its superior excellency over the bohea : for, in things of this sort, the delusion or infatuation is almost universal, which prevails among *Asiatics* and *Europeans* indiscriminately, and engages them to make the consideration of health subservient to the gratification of the palate, and the Delights of the eye : therefore, the verdant beauty of this artificial colour is more alluring, and more esteemed, though often pernicious, than the brown hue of the bohea, which is prepared in a manner more consistent with the simplicity of nature, and the safety of health. The *Chinese* very rarely drink the green tea ; and it is observable, that those amongst them who drink it to any excess, become tabid and die emaciated. In short, the drinking of tea in general may be reckoned a great cause of the manifest effeminacy and diminutiveness of their persons ; for what other reason can we assign so probable, for the obvious constitutional difference between them and the more robust people, who live almost under the same latitude. If we also compare the nature of tea with the nature of *English* diet, no one can think it a proper vegetable for us, having no parts fit to be assimilated to our bodies ; its essential salt does not hold moisture enough to be united with the body of an animal ; its oil is but very little, and that of the opiate kind ; and therefore, it is so far from being nutritive, that it irritates and frets the nerves and fibres, exciting the expulsive faculty, so that the body may be lessened and weakened, but cannot be increased and strengthened by it. And, indeed, the nervous complaints, so frequent of late years, especially among the weaker sex, may be chiefly attributed to the use of this exotic beverage.

THE *Chinese*, it is said, have been obliged to the use of *Brackish* tea for their common drink, ever since they had found by experiment, that nothing else could correct so well their waters, which are almost every where brackish. The most considerable of those waters are, the *Ky-am*, or blue-river, which rises in the kingdom of *Tibet*, and crosses the country from east to west ; the *Ts-ambu*, or yellow-river, because, after rains descend, it is of that colour, and extremely muddy. It rises near the extremity of the mountains, which divide the province of *Su-chau* from *Martary*, near the frontiers of the *Mogul*, and runs a course of above 1900 miles. There are many other great rivers of the same nature, like rapid and muddy ; some of which have great cataracts of a vast height, and make a noise like continued claps of thunder. There is one always as red as blood, another that glitters by night, occasioned by the great quantity of precious stones contained in it, from which it is stiled the pearl-river.

There

There is a third near *Fomin*, which turns blue in harvest, at which time the inhabitants are used to dye that colour. We are told of another near *Pan-gau*, whose waters are so light, that they will bear no timber: those of another near *Cbing-tien*, are said to be sweet-scented; and that called *Kin-xa*, or *Golden River*, is so named from its great quantity of gold sand. There is one in the province of *Fokien*, whose water is green, and is affirmed to turn iron into copper; those who are witnesses of the fact may believe it. That called *Xo* is said to cure divers diseases; but the most remarkable is one that yearly rises upon a certain day, with such a prodigious high tide before the city of *Hang-chen*, that multitudes of people crowd from all parts, to see so surprising a phenomenon, which neither their own, nor *European* philosophers, it is said, have yet accounted for. These waters supply the people of the inland parts with salt, which is made by paring off the superficial earth of the muddy shores, drying it in the sun, rubbing it small, and throwing it into a pit, which they cover with fait water, and afterwards draining it into jars, and boiling it till they bring it to a proper consistence; but in the maritime parts, they make salt of sea-water, after the usual way.

Mines, minerals, fossils, &c.

THE mountains of *China* abound with variety of metals and minerals; among the former they have several mines of gold and silver; but their monarchs, they pretend, will not suffer the mines of silver to be wrought, that the people should not be forced to such slavish work: but it is more probable that they either keep them in case of need, or rather perhaps to keep down the price of labour, which would rise in proportion to the quantity of circulating money. Their workmen in general have not above five farthings sterling per day, and this is a sufficient reason for the circulation of such immense quantities of their produce and manufactures throughout the world.

As to the mines of gold, it seems, nothing more is done to them than gathering such particles as are washed down by the rivers, and are found sticking on the banks, or caught by fleeces, and other strainers laid across the water. Great multitudes of people live wholly upon this business, and it is said, vast quantities of metal are washed down from the mountains, and that is found among the sand and mud of those rivers. Their mountains have also mines of copper, lead, iron, and quicksilver, which are manufactured in great quantities, with great neatness and curiosity. Besides these, they have some others, which are mixed in a peculiar manner, and therefore kept as a great secret among

among them; such, for instance, is that famed one, called tonbaga, or donbaga, which is of the colour of very pale brass, or a dull kind of tin; they ascribe several extraordinary virtues to it, particularly of expelling poison, stopping hemorrhages, and the like, by only wearing a ring or necklace made of it. Among other articles produced in their mountains, we may reckon likewise plenty of pitcoal, many salts, excellent quarries of stone, some of marble, and so curiously variegated with landships and other natural resemblances, as if drawn by design with a pencil. Several other sorts are esteemed for their fine colour and hardness, some of which bear a noble lustre like diamonds; and others, when burnt, yield a metal, of which they make swords and other weapons. We are told of others of a precious kind, shaped like a flower, and others of great efficacy in divers diseases.

THE provinces of *Quang-si* is famed for a yellow earth, *Earthsand* which has the virtue of expelling poison, and curing by external application the bite of venomous creatures. Some of the sorts of earth they have of a fine vermilion colour, and others of a delicate white, which the ladies use for paints. In several places of the empire, they press a sort of lime from the bark of a tree, which is tough like pitch, and which, when mixed with proper colours, serves to paint their houses, cabinets and other utensils, and has a fine lustre and smoothness like glass. This lime they call giran, but it is more commonly known amongst us under the name of japan-work, because that which comes from *Japan* far exceeds any that is made in *China*, in lustre, hardness, and fine variety of paintings. This secret the *Chinese* are so jealous of having discovered by foreigners, that they have poisoned several, and some of our nation, whom they suspected to have pried too narrowly into it.

BESIDES the common bees-wax, they have another sort, *Singular* the clearest and whitest in the world, which is produced by an insect no bigger than a flea, on the top of the branches of some particular trees, where these little creatures lay their eggs, which in the spring turn into small worms. The proprietors of these trees gather this wax, and make it into cakes, which are quite transparent. The inhabitants of *Xantum* put these worms into large cans, and by selling them to the adjacent provinces, make a considerable profit of them.

THE empire of *China* is divided into fifteen principle provinces, but most commonly into the following distinct parts or districts: 1. North of the great wall are, *Niuche*, *Corea*, and *Laotinge*, the chief towns of which are *Niuche*, *Petcheo*, and *Chinyan*. 2. Within the great wall and adjoining it are *Pekin*.

Pekin, Xanfi, and Xensi; the chief towns *Pekin, Tayen, and Sigam*. 3. On the coast of the *Chinese* sea; *Xantun, Nanking, and Chckian*; the chief towns, *Chinchii, Nanking, Nimpo, and Chufan*. 4. Midland, comprehending *Honan, Huquann, and Kiamsi*; the chief towns *Honan, Toangfu, and Nankan*. 5. Southern, as *Fokien, Canton, and Quamf*; the chief towns, *Fochen, Amoi, Canton, and Quelin*. 6. Western, as *Suchuen, Quecheu, and Yunam*; the chief town, *Tchinku, Queyang, Quecheu, and Yunam*. 7. The *Chinese* islands, which are *Formosa, Anan, Macao, and the Bafire* islands, the chief towns of which are *Tambay, Lincato, and Macao*.

Surveyed
by the Je-
suits.

CHINA was begun to be surveyed by the Jesuit missionaries the fourth of July 1708, and finished the first of January 1717. They determined the latitudes of above 500 cities by observations, and their longitudes by the method of triangles being also assisted by maps and histories preserved in the tribunals of the cities, and the information of the mandarins, as well as the chiefs of the people through whose territories they passed.

Cities and
towns de-
scribed.

THE cities and towns of *China* are all built in one form, as near as the ground will permit; that is, square. Two great streets, which cross one another in the middle of the town, divide it into four quarters; and from the center the four principal gates may be seen at once. The gates stand due east, west, north and south. *Pekin*, the capital, consists of two cities joined in one, by the name of old and new: the old is the *Tartar*, and the new the *Chinese* city, which is the more populous. Both together are six leagues in circumference. *Pekin* is supposed to contain not less than two millions of inhabitants. Its walls are fifty cubits high, and defended by square towers about a bow-shot distance from one another. Every gate of the town has a fortress or redoubt built before it of equal height with the gate; the arches or gateways are built with marble, but the rest of the walls with brick. The emperor's palace stands in the middle of the *Tartar* city, and is an oblong square, about two miles in length and one in breadth, defended by a good wall. Without the gates of every town there are usually two magnificent towers erected, and near each tower a temple of idols, and another dedicated to the genius and guardian angel of the place. In almost every city are triumphal arches, built to the honour of some great men who have been benefactors of their country; and colleges and temples founded in memory of their great philosopher *Confucius*, where his precepts are taught. Without the gates of *Nanking* (formerly the capital of *China* before the imperial residence took place at *Pekin*) there are two towers built alike, in the form of a cone. One of

of them is called the porcelain tower, being faced therewith on the outside. It is of an octangular figure, contains nine stories, and is 200 feet high. Above the eighth story there is a cupola, which rises thirty feet higher than the tower, and on the top is a very large golden ball. This tower has stood above 300 years, appears very beautiful, and is said to be the best contrived and noblest structure in the East. There is scarce a city or village in the whole empire, especially in the southern provinces, but enjoys the benefit of some navigable river, lake, canal, or arm of the sea, inasmuch, that almost as many people live upon the water as on land. Wherever there is a town on shore, there is another of boats upon the water, and many people are born, live, and die upon the water, keeping hogs, poultry, dogs, and other domestic animals on board. Besides these vessels, there are a prodigious number of floats of timber perpetually going up the rivers and canals, which carry whole villages of people upon them. Some of these floats are a mile in length; the proprietors build little huts on them, where they live till they have disposed of their timber, which they carry sometimes a thousand miles by water; and thus every part of this extensive empire has an easy communication with the other, which is a vast advantage to trade.

THE great wall, which separates *China* from *Tartary*, begins in the province of *Xensi*, which lies on the north-west of *China*, in about 38 degrees north latitude, and is carried over mountains and vallies, and terminates at the *Kang Sea*, between the provinces of *Pekin* and *Laotonge*. The whole course of it, with all the windings, is about 1500 miles. It is almost all built with brick, and such well tempered mortar, that it has now stood about 1800 years, being very little decayed. It was built by the emperor *Chihohamiti*, to prevent the incursions of the *Tartars*. Its height is about thirty feet, and it is broad enough for eight people to ride abreast. It is fortified all along by square towers, at the distance of a mile from each other. Great wall.

THE Jesuits have computed that there are in *China* 155 capital cities, 1512 of the second rank, 2357 fortified towns, ten millions of families, and fifty millions of people.

CHINA is reckoned by most geographers to have been the country of the ancient *Sina* mentioned by *Ptolemy*, and so *China* called from one of its ancient monarchs, named *Chin*, or *Cina*, who is said to have reigned here above fifty years before the birth of Christ. But this country boasts a much older date; and though it might receive its name from that monarch, it had probably many others before, as it had since; for

for it is a maxim in this empire, that when the government falls from one family to another, the first prince of the new always gives his name to the whole country. We are also told, that there have been no less than twenty-two such families, who have each changed its name for their own. Some therefore think from thence, and with good reason, that it had the name of *Chin* from its fine produce of silk, which is here the finest in the world, and is manufactured in the finest manner and variety.

When and by whom discovered. THE *Portuguese* discovered this remote and opulent country somewhat upwards of 200 years ago. It was indeed, in some measure, known to the ancients, under the name of *Seres*, and some commerce was carried on between them; but the vast sandy deserts and inaccessible mountains, that lie between it and *India*, its great distance from *Europe*, and the old *Chinese* policy of not admitting strangers among them, or suffering their own people to go into other countries, made it impossible for *Greeks*, *Romans*, or any other nation on this side the *Ganges*, to know any thing of this country, or its inhabitants, except what they might guess by the commodities brought from thence, which were but few in comparison to its present exports. 'Tis true, *Paul the Venetian's* account of *Cambalu*, which, in all probability, was the city of *Pekin*, and his mighty character of the cham and his subjects, is now by all applied to *China*; but it was then understood of *Tartary*, and so continued till the discovery of *China* by the *Portuguese*, who opened, by their vast improvements in navigation, a new way to, and commerce with it. They were so greatly surprized at its opulent condition, and the excellent genius and politeness of its inhabitants, considering them as a people that lived intirely within themselves, and had received no helps or instructions from other nations, that the reports they made of them at first appeared more like romance than truth. But we cannot be said to have been fully acquainted with the true state of the *Chinese* nation, till the zeal of the missionaries of the church of *Rome* excite them to go and preach the gospel among them. The *Jesuits* and others, who were first intended for this mission in 1580, being informed that the *Chinese* had but an imperfect insight into the mathematical sciences, took care before they set out, to make themselves thorough masters of them, in order by that means, to recommend themselves to the *Chinese* gentry and nobility, who shewed a particular fondness for that kind of study. Accordingly they took with them the best maps, globes, spheres, and other mathematical instruments; and, in a short time, shewed a skill in these sciences, especially astronomy,

com-^vmerce and navigation, so far superior to that of the *Chinese*, that they easily introduced themselves into the acquaintance and favour of persons of the highest rank, the emperor not excepted, who raised some of them to the dignity of mandarins, or lords of the council; allotted them apartments in the royal palace, and gave them all manner of encouragement, even to a full permission of propagating their religion all over his dominions. It is therefore to these gentlemen that we are indebted for our present knowledge of *China*, though their accounts did not gain so universal a credit, many things having been thought exaggerated by them, till they had been for the most part confirmed to us by persons of our own, and other nations.

THE origin of the *Chinese* nation may be justly considered *Original* in the same light as the spring-head of the *Nile*, or other *of the Chi-* such rivers; and what their popular traditions say of it deserves no less to be exploded by men of sense, since they pretend to an antiquity anterior, not only to the flood, but even to the creation. Some of the translators of the *Chinese* history ascribe the foundation of this monarchy to *Fohi*, who is there said to have began his reign about 2952 years before Christ. This *Fohi* is affirmed to have been the first who reduced mankind into societies, and to have taught them agriculture and other social arts, which were afterwards improved by his successors. Among these, *Huam-ti*, surnamed the *Yellow Emperor*, because he assumed that colour, since become peculiar to the imperial dignity, rectified the *Chinese* cycle, invented music and musical instruments, navigation, fishing, arms, and other arts. His queen, at the same time, is said to have invented the raising and feeding of silk worms, and to have laid the foundation of that noble manufacture. These two are supposed to have reigned 2697 years before Christ. *Xao-Hao*, their successor, began to build cities, and to surround them with walls; and, for the more expeditious bringing together of proper materials for building, contrived the way of conveying them by carts, drawn by oxen. He died, according to the same chronology, 2517 years before Christ; and his nephew and successor *Cheuen-Hio*, made a law, that none but the emperor or the world should sacrifice to the emperor of heaven. He reformed the calendar, and ordered it to begin at the nearest new moon to the spring season. *Ti-cho*, his nephew, who succeeded him 2457 years before Christ, is said to have been the inventor of vocal music, in which he received no small help from his four wives. These six princes were followed by the two famed emperors and lawgivers, *Yo* and *Xoun*, from whom the *Chinese* received their civil and

religious institutes. These two reigned 158 years, which joined to the reigns of the other six, make in all 737 years; and from these eight persons descended the imperial families, 1. Of *Hia*, of which there were seventeen emperors, who reigned 458 years. 2. Of *Xam*, including twenty-eight emperors and 644 years. 3. *Cheou*, thirty-five emperors, 873 years. 4. *Chin*, three emperors, forty-three years. 5. *Han*, twenty-seven emperors, 426 years. 6. *Hsi-hun*, two emperors, forty-four years. 7. *Chin* II. fifteen emperors, 155 years. 8. *Soum*, seven emperors, fifty-nine years. 9. *Chi*, five emperors, twenty-three years. 10. *Leam*, four emperors, fifty-five years. 11. *Kin*, five emperors, thirty-two years. 12. *Soui*, three emperors, twenty-nine years. 13. *Tam*, twenty emperors, eighty-nine years. 14. *Heou-tam*, two emperors, ten years. 15. *Heou-tam*, four emperors, thirteen years. 16. *Heou-chin*, two emperors, eleven years. 17. *Heou-han*, two emperors, four years. 18. *Heou-cheou*, three emperors, nine years. 19. *Soum* II. eighteen emperors, 329 years. 20. *Yeven*, nine emperors, eighty-nine years. 21. *Mim*, twenty-one emperors, 276 years. 22. *Chim*, two emperors, fifty-three years. This was the last family that reigned before the late conquest of *China* by one of the *Tartar* princes.

M. de Voltaire tells us, ^p that the *Chinese* history is incontestible, being founded on celestial observations, and traced by the most accurate chronology, so high as an eclipse calculated 2155 years before our vulgar æra, which the reverend missionaries skilled in mathematical learning have confirmed. To this account we can by no means assent, for these reasons.

*Voltaire's
opinion,
concerning
the anti-
quity of the
Chinese,
refuted.*

FIRST, it is well known the *Chinese* make use of no letters, but represent words by arbitrary marks, which renders their characters too numerous to be retained by the memory, makes writing very tedious, and the knowledge of what is written to be attended with infinite obscurity and confusion, as the connection between these marks, and the words they represent, cannot be retained in books, but must be delivered down by oral tradition. The history and inventions of past ages must therefore frequently be unintelligible, and the learning and boasted antiquity of this nation, in many instances, extremely problematical.

SECONDLY, the *Chinese* themselves are not agreed in settling the antiquities of their country; for there are some who fix the original of their empire hundreds of thousands of years

^p In his introduction to the General History and State of Europe.
before

before the creation. This opinion prevails among the vulgar. Some make *Fohi* the founder of the kingdom 2952 years before the birth of Christ. Another set of learned men maintain, that the foundations of this kingdom were laid about 4025 years since by a certain prince named *Yas*. This last opinion is looked upon as an article of faith; and if a *Chinese* should publicly deny it, he would be esteemed an heretic, and severely punished. The Jesuits are obliged to adopt this opinion, upon pain of death, and obtained leave from the pope to stick to the Septuagint version, which agrees with it better than the *Hebrew*.

THIRDLY, the *Chinese* chronology is very uncertain and fictitious. Father *du Halde*, a zealous admirer of it, offers nothing in its defence, except an eclipse of the sun, which happened in the reign of *Chong-kang*, 2155 years before the commencement of the Christian æra. But M. *Maigrot*, bishop of *Koxon*, with great reason believes the chronology of ancient times among the *Chinese* to be very uncertain and precarious; as also that the *Chinese* annalist *Chubi* has adjusted both the years and eclipses solely according to his own fancy. Of this no one can doubt, who considers that the *Chinese* were little versed in astronomy, even when the Jesuits first came among them; and that they were so far from being able to calculate an eclipse, or even likely to make any celestial observations, 2155 years before the birth of Christ, that they probably knew as little then of any thing relating to eclipses, and the other heavenly phenomena, as the bulk of mankind, or even the most illiterate nations, at present do.

FOURTHLY, if *China* had been so large, rich, and learned an empire as it is pretended, the *Persians* would most certainly not have remained in utter ignorance of it, when their emperors had made part of *India* tributary to them, which was a country contiguous to *China*; and yet we find that there was not the least intimation of this people till the time of *Alexander the Great*, who penetrated into *India*, and even then we find nothing of moment relating to them.

FIFTHLY, the *Chinese* observations of the heavens are frequently fictitious; for as father *Martini* informs us, the sun, according to the *Chinese*, had not set for ten years. Can any one be so sanguine, as to believe this to be a real observation? will not this invalidate their other observations, when they exceed all belief, or at least have not a proper degree of probability? Nothing is therefore more chimerical, than the conclusion drawn from the eclipse 2155 years before the birth of Christ, in support of antiquity equally absurd and romantic.

SIXTHLY, The *Chinese* have no historical records, but only fragments of their classical or canonical books; and those, we may suppose, greatly corrupted: for the emperor *Shi-wangti*, in the year before Christ 213, ordered all the copies of books in his empire, except those written by lawyers and physicians, to be burnt, which was done accordingly. Nay, he ordered many learned men to be buried alive the next year, lest they should invent a method of transmitting to posterity the historical memoirs of the empire, which he was resolved to annihilate.

SEVENTHLY, *Confucius* in his time complained of the want of genuine historical memoirs, and yet the Jesuits and modern *Chinese* pretend to give us authentic memoirs of the monarchs of *China*, who lived 2000 years before that philosopher. This is a most absurd pretension, as evidently appears from the translation M. Bayer has given us of the *Chun Quieu* of *Confucius*. This contains a most crude, jejune account of the *Chinese* dynasties and reguli preceding his own age, and deserves not the name of an history. If the *Chun Quieu* be as old as *Confucius*, it was written about 500 years before the birth of Christ. If so learned a man could write no better, or had no better materials, what can we think of those who lived in the remotest ages? But there is the greatest reason to think that this book is far from being genuine, or coeval with *Confucius*: for the *Chinese* records were destroyed about 267 years after the death of *Confucius*; and we may justly believe that but a small part of his historical works is now remaining. This single remark is enough to destroy the authority of those romantic accounts of the first emperors of *China*, which the modern *Chinese* and their adherents would impose on us. M. de Voltaire should not therefore have endeavoured to establish an opinion as uncontested, which he must certainly know has been greatly contrived, and, in the opinion of the most learned and candid judges, fully confuted.

THE *Chinese* monarchy, great as it is, must of consequence be supposed, like all others, to have had but a small beginning; especially as their more authentic accounts date its infancy only about two or three hundred years after the flood. About this time, it is probable, some of *Noah's* children, or grand-children having penetrated through the eastern parts of *Asia*, settled on that fertile and delightful spot, which is on the south-east part of *China*. *Fohi*, the founder of the *Chinese* monarchy, from the resemblance of names and other circumstances, has been supposed by several learned men, of our own and other nations, to have been the same with *Noah*;

and,

By whom
first peo-
pled.

and some have gone even so far as to suppose this patriarch to have been the first planter of *China*, just after the flood; and that the *Ararat* mentioned by *Moses*, on which the ark rested, was not that ridge so called in *Armenia*, but one of those which divide *India* from *China*.

THE *Chinese* have been governed since the year 1645 by *Chinese* Tartar princes. Two factions in *China* having engaged the whole empire in a civil war, the weaker called in the champion of *Niuche*, a little Tartarian kingdom, to their assistance. Subdued by the Tartars.

This prince had no sooner enabled his allies to crush their enemies, than he took an occasion to pick a quarrel with the party that called him in, and made an intestine conquest of the country, where he so well established himself, that his posterity still remains in peaceable possession of the throne. As he was very sensible his *Tartars* were much inferior to the *Chinese* in number, he obliged all the *Chinese* soldiers, especially those who had lifted amongst his troops, to cut off their hair, and change their habits to the *Tartar* fashion, in order that being looked upon as *Tartars*, they might over-awe the rest. This he extended immediately after to the *Chinese* in general; and had it not been for this politic proceeding, the *Chinese* would soon have been sensible of their superiority, and put an end to the *Tartar* usurpation. But what contributed still more to the establishment of the *Tartars*, was their employing the *Chinese* both in their civil and military affairs: they advanced the most popular of the *grande*es to be viceroys and governors of provinces, and so made them accessory to subduing their own country; they remitted to the people one third of their taxes, governed them by their own laws, and delivered them from that tyranny the great men used to exercise over them: so that, except in the matter of their hair and habits, the *Tartars* seem rather to have submitted to the laws of the *Chinese*, than to have imposed any upon them; and *Tartary* may now be said rather to be subject to *China*, than *China* to *Tartary*: for in *China* is the seat of the empire; there the supreme courts of justice are held; there, all the wealth of the united kingdoms centers; there all honours and degrees are conferred: whence *China* may be said to have gained a vast addition of strength by *Tartary*; and has now no enemy to fear. Their indigent northern neighbours are under the same sovereign, who keeps them so much in subjection, that they are no longer in a condition to disturb *China*. The petty *Tartar* kings, as they are called, are no more than his viceroys or governors of provinces; and the emperor has forts and garrisons through their whole country. The present emperor *Ganghi* is the grandson of *Xunchi*, or *Tsonie*, the Tartarian prince, who conquered

The Conclusion of

quered *China*, now upwards of 100 years ago. At his accession in 1722, he took upon him the name of *Yong Ching*, which signifies Lasting Peace. The empire of *China* is hereditary, unless the reigning emperor makes an alteration in the succession, which he cannot do without the concurrence of his great council, which consists of the princes of the blood, and great officers of state.

Govern-
ment, no-
bility,
forces, re-
venues.

THE emperor of *China* is as despotic and arbitrary as any oriental prince; for he has an absolute power over the lives and fortunes of all his subjects, the princes of the blood not excepted. His will is a law, and his commands admit of no delay or neglect under severe penalties. Notwithstanding, his government is one of the most regular in the world, and the tribunals and magistracy are established in the most exact and uniform manner that can be contrived for the administration of justice, and the due performance of all the offices of a well regulated government. For the better managing the great affairs of his vast empire, he is assisted by two sovereign councils, which sit at *Pekin*, the capital; the one styled extraordinary, and composed of princes of the blood only, and the other ordinary, which, besides those princes, consists of several mandarins, and other ministers of state, called *Colaos*. Six other superior tribunals are held in the same city for civil and military affairs; to each belongs a different employ or inspection, and their authority extends over all the empire. Every mandarin or governor is obliged to transmit to court an account of his administration annually, and is severely punished if he endeavours to palliate any miscarriages; but as corruption prevails to a great degree in *China*, he that can bribe highest is morally sure of gaining his point. Except the princes of the blood and tributary kings, there is at present no hereditary nobility among the *Chinese*, or any distinction but what their places and offices, or superior wealth or learning create. The forces of the empire are said to amount to five millions, which are a kind of militia called out only as the exigencies of the state require. They have no naval force, though they have a sea-coast of several thousand miles; and their skill in navigation is trifling, if compared to that of the *Europeans*. The revenues of the empire are said to amount to upwards of twenty millions sterling *per annum*.

Religion
and learn-
ing.

THE religion of the *Chinese* is gross idolatry, or rather, they are said to worship one supreme God, and several inferior deities, who appear to have been men eminent in their several ages, particularly the inventors of arts and sciences. They also worship things inanimate, as mountains, woods, and rivers; but never sacrifice to vice, as is customary with other

other Pagans. There are three sects in *China* at this day; first, the followers of *Li-Laokun*, who lived, they say, above 500 years before Christ. He taught that God was corporeal, and had many subordinate deities under his government. His disciples study magic, and pretend to make that drink which will give men immortality. The second is the sect of the learned, or disciples of the so much celebrated *Confucius*, who left many admirable precepts of morality, and instructed the people in philosophy. He speaks of God as a most pure and perfect principle, and the fountain and essence of all beings. Though we are told he prohibited idolatry, he has temples and images erected to him, and is worshipped with the profoundest adoration, as appears from the pope's decree against the Jesuits for allowing their converts to mingle this idolatrous worship with that of Christianity. The third sect, which is of the worshippers of the idol *Fo*, or *Fohi*, the founder of the *Chinese* nation, is much more numerous than either of the former. They stile him the only Saviour of the world. His priests teach several moral precepts, and a state of rewards and punishments after this life. The punishments consist chiefly in animating some vermin or beast of burden after life; whence, it seems, the doctrine of the transmigration of souls has been long known to them. The *Chinese* have besides an image of immortality, which they worship in the form of a monstrous fat man, sitting cross-legged, with a huge prominent belly. There is another called the idol of pleasure, about twenty feet high; and between these, in their temples, is another large image thirty feet high, gilded over with a crown upon his head, and richly dressed: this they call the great Kang, to whom they pay adoration. The emperor being of *Tartar* descent, follows the idolatry of this nation, which does not differ much from that of the *Chinese*, except that they worship a living man, whom they stile the Great Lama. They give him the name of Eternal Father, and all the eastern *Tartars* have the greatest veneration for him. He is shewn in a dark place in his palace, illuminated with lamps. That he may be thought immortal, his priests chuse one out of their number as like him as possible, who succeeds him when he dies. None of his votaries wait of his living for ever. His urine and excrements are held as sacred, and are distributed in presents to the *Tartar* princes, who mix them up as something very delicious in the sauces of their food. The Christian religion made a great progress in *China* about 100 years ago. The Jesuits relate, they had 200 churches and chapels there; but falling out with the other missionaries, and endeavour-

deavouring to ruin each other, they were all in general banished the kingdom by the present monarch, and their proselytes were compelled by him to renounce Christianity. We are told, that Christianity was first planted in *China*, and the *Indies*, either by the apostle St. *Thomas*, or by some of his disciples. The *Chinese* records seem to intimate that a man came there about that time, who preached a heavenly doctrine, and confirmed it by miracles. In an ancient *Chaldee* breviary of the church of *Malabar*, the conversion of the *Chinese* is attributed to that apostle. There is also an ancient marble pillar raised in the province of *Xen-si*, in memory of a man that brought Christianity thither in the year 636. However, the missionaries of the church of *Rome*, did not find, as we learn, the least vestige of Christianity remaining in *China* when they came there. As to the learning of the *Chinese*, it seems wholly confined to the study of their own language. Their characters are a sort of short hand. Every character signifies a word or sentence. They have not to this day the use of letters. There are upwards of 20,000 of these characters, and their most learned men are scarce masters of all of them. Those in common use do not exceed three thousand, which are understood in every part of the empire. They write from the top to the bottom of the page. This vast number of characters is reducible to a pure and simple alphabet, like any other language; for a *Chinese* character is no more than a word written with its proper consonants and vowels; not indeed at length, as we do, but intermingled one with another, by some peculiar method known only to them, or perhaps only to the learned among them, and concealed from the vulgar, and more especially from strangers. It would be no difficult matter to imitate the *Chinese* method of writing, in ours, or any other *European* language, by joining and intermingling the vowels and consonants of each word in the same or such like order as they do theirs; that is, by making the first letter the chief and largest character, and placing the rest regularly round it, either jointly or separately. In all other respects the *Chinese* are nothing near so learned as cried up. They were almost as bad astronomers, geographers, and musicians, as any of their barbarous neighbours, before the missionaries came amongst them; and whatever proficiency they have since made in logic, natural philosophy, geometry, anatomy; or any art or science, was intirely owing to the instructions they received from the same missionaries. They are still so fond of their old astrology, that they mark the lucky and unlucky days in their almanacs; and indeed, they are such superstitious observers of times, and rely so much

much on the predictions of their astrologers and fortune-tellers, that they govern most of their actions by the direction of such people, and will not undertake a journey or any business of moment without consulting them.

THE *Chinese* are generally of a moderate stature, broad faces, black hair, small black eyes, short noses, and thin beards. Their complexions incline to tawny near the tropic; but in the north they are as fair as other people under the same parallel. The women are remarkable for their little feet, being esteemed their greatest beauty. In order to keep them little, they are bound up from their infancy so tight, that they cannot grow to the common size: the foot of a full grown woman is not much bigger than a child's of four years old. The men wear a bell-shaped cap on their heads, which does not cover their ears; they also wear a vest and sash, and over the vest a loose coat or gown, and a kind of silk boots quilted with cotton. When they are at home among their friends, they throw off every thing but a pair of drawers, and appear as naked as the common people about the streets; but this must be understood of the southern provinces. The women dress with their hair down, and keep nothing on their head, in the south. They generally wear a silk vest, red, blue, or green, and over it a loose gown, with white sleeves, and embroidered silk shoes, but by reason of the smallness of their feet, hobble prodigiously when they walk. In most other countries mutual consent constitutes the validity of marriage; but there is no such thing in *China*. The parties never see each other till the bargain is concluded by the parents, which usually happens when they are perfect children; nor is the woman's consent ever demanded afterwards. Great pomp is used in the marriage ceremonies. The bride brings no dowry, but is rather purchased by the spouse, who, besides the price he pays for her, commonly spends very considerably on the nuptial feast, and makes a very splendid and costly cavalcade in bringing her home. This is the constant custom of the rich; but the poorer sort, who cannot afford to pay money for a wife, go to some of their foundling hospitals, and beg for one, which is seldom denied; and this both saves charges, and makes the wife commonly more submissive to her husband. In regard to the treatment of persons that die, there is scarce any country where grief is manifested to so great a degree, especially for a near relation, or where mourning is so deep or continued so long. Every *Chinese* keeps in his house a table, whereon are written the names of his father, grandfather, and great grandfather, before which they frequently burn incense, and

strate themselves; and when the father of a family dies, the great-grandfather is taken away, and the deceased added to make up the number. No persons are ever buried within the walls of a town or city, nor is a dead corps ever suffered to be brought into them, if the person dies in the country. Mountains and solitary places are generally chosen by the great men to build their sepulchres in; and some of them are said to be little inferior to palaces. If the sepulchre is erected in a plain they raise a vast heap of earth over it, which they carry almost to the height of a mountain.

THE *Chinese* are exceeding fond of shows and magnificence, an instance of which we shall here give in an account of a festival not long since solemnized in their country. It has been an ancient custom among them to celebrate the sixtieth year of the emperor's mother with most amazing pomp. The last three months of the year 1751, were taken up in making preparations for this approaching grand festival. All the painters, sculptors, architects, musicians, and carpenters of *Pekin* and the neighbouring provinces, were employed, each in executing some master-piece of his respective art. The main object was to charm the eyes and ears of the most delicate and voluptuous court in the universe. The whole distance from one of the emperor's houses of pleasure, to his palace in the center of the *Tartar* city in *Pekin*, being about twelve *English* miles, was to be decorated in the most superb manner; and as the procession would be, in great part, along the river, it was foreseen, that the barks constructed to carry the emperor, the empress-mother, and the whole court, were likely to be of very little use, on account of the ice, the time of the ceremony falling out in the most rigorous season of the year. However, certain mandarins undertook the removal of these obstacles, by employing, night and day, for more than three weeks together, some thousands of hands in continually beating the surface of the water to prevent its freezing, and a like number in breaking the ice already formed; but, in spite of all these precautions, the cold prevailed, the whole river was set fast, and the project abandoned. The principal director of this fruitless enterprize was mulcted two years salary, and obliged to furnish sledges instead of the barks. Both sides of the river were covered with edifices of divers forms, which gave a striking pleasure to the beholders. On such parts of the river as were wider than the rest, wooden houses were erected upon piles, and disposed in groups, to which bridges conducted; the whole gilded, painted, and most superbly ornamented. In some were choirs of musicians; in others, companies of comedians; and in others,

magnificent thrones, with all varieties of refreshments for the emperor and his mother, if they should be pleased to stop there. In the city, from the gate of entry quite on to the palace, were grand buildings, peristyles, pavilions, colonades, galleries, and amphitheatres, with numberless rich trophies. Facitious jewels sparkled in all parts, and the gaudy objects were reflected and multiplied by an infinite number of little mirrors of polished metal. These glittering edifices were here and there interrupted by artificial mountains and vallies, cattle, trees, and fountains; in other places, with gardens stocked with fruits and flowers of every season of the year, which, though artificial, could hardly be distinguished from natural, so exquisite was the illusion. In some places rocks arose, and children cloathed in skins, played the part of monkeys and other animals, skipping from cliff to cliff. Some weeks before the ceremony, the streets were divided into three parts, of which, the middle was destined for those who rode on horseback, or in carriages; one of the sides for persons advancing forwards, and the other for those who were returning. A number of soldiers, armed only with staves, prevented all disorder and confusion; and as women never intermix with men in the streets, the emperor appointed certain days for them alone. The presents made on this occasion in a great measure equalled the magnificence of the spectacle. The *Europeans* distinguished themselves by a most ingeniously contrived piece of machinery, with which the emperor was so highly delighted, that he caused it to be deposited in his palace, and frequently amused himself in visiting it. The expense of this pompous entertainment exceeded 300 millions of roupees, and it was graced with the presence of the two imperial personages on the 6th of *January*, 1751.

THE *Chinese* are undoubtedly a very ingenious and industrious people, as appears by all their fine manufactures daily brought into *Europe*; such as their wrought silks, cabinets, and other japanery, their curious porcelain; though in this they are excelled by the *Japanese*, and are still likely to be more so by the *Saxons* and *Germans*, where a manufacture has not long since been set up, which exceeds them both, especially in the beauty of the painting. The admirable cultivation of their land, their great and many canals, and variety of magnificent structures, are further testimonies of their genius and industry: to which we may add, what seems now generally agreed on all hands, that they have had the use of the miners compass, of gun-powder, and the art of printing for many centuries; inasmuch that some are of opinion, that they were all these brought from thence to *Europe*, either

either by *Paul the Venetian*, or by some other channel. And indeed, with respect to the last, whoever considers that the first essay of *Faustus*, who invented, or rather improved that art, was done upon wooden blocks, in the same way as has been done in *China* from time immemorial, will be apt to own, that theirs gave the first notions to *Europeans*, though they have since so infinitely surpassed them. They are likewise masters of several arts and sciences, though not to the perfection we are; but they value themselves extravagantly, and despise others highly, which is a great blemish to their characters. To this we may add, that they are of a most insinuating address, and will not decline the most hazardous enterprises where there is a prospect of gain. The men of figure are perpetually engaged in pursuits of places and preferments, which they procure by bribes, or presents, as they are called. Their laws oblige them to certain rules of civility in their words and actions; but they are naturally a fawning, cringing generation, and the greatest hypocrites on the face of the earth. Trade and commerce, or rather cheating and over-reaching, seems to be the natural bent and genius of this people: gain is their god, they prefer it to every thing. A stranger is in great danger of being cheated if he trusts to his own judgment; and if he employs a *Chinese* broker, it is well if he does not join with the merchant to impose on the stranger.

State of the
Chinese
trade.

• THE *Chinese*, from the remotest antiquity, exported the growth and commodities of their country, chiefly raw silk, wherein it abounds, all over the east. It is from thence they were, by the *Greeks* and *Romans*, called *Seres*. Under the reigns of some former emperors, *China* was, as *Japan* now is, shut up, and kept from all commerce with foreign nations, and the inhabitants strictly forbid, under severe penalties, to export the growth of the country, or to have any communication with their neighbours. Things stood thus, when the late *Tartarian* conqueror, thinking it would very much conduce to the honour of his subjects, and the advantage of his dominions, for the future to permit a free and undisturbed commerce, resolved to suffer his subjects to trade abroad, and to give free access to his dominions. The *Europeans* purchase the merchandize of *China* with *bulion*, or foreign coin, which is taken by weight, the *Chinese* pound containing sixteen ounces.

As there is a great affinity between the religion, customs, books, learned languages, arts and sciences of the *Chinese* and their neighbours the *Japanese*, and as the *Japanese* islands
make

make an entire and considerable empire, we may, with some propriety, describe them here.

THE great and opulent country of *Japan*, which has the *Japan de-* title of empire justly given it, as being divided into many *scribed.* distinct dominions, stiled kingdoms, under one monarch or emperor of the whole, is situate on the most eastern, and most remote part of *Asia* from us, in all our hemisphere, and, consequently, the place where the rising sun is first seen; and being above 130 degrees from us, they have their morning, noon, and other times of the day, at least eight hours before us. The *Europeans* call it *Japan*, but the inhabitants *Names.* *Nippon*, from the greatest island belonging to it, and the *Chinese Siphon*, probably, on account of its eastern situation; these names signifying in both languages, the basis or foundation of the sun. Though it has but one general name, it *Consists of* must not therefore be imagined to be one continued tract of *several* land, or one single island; for it consists of several large ones, *islands.* besides a number of small. *Nippon* is by much the most considerable of the rest, reaching from south-west to north-east, about 900 miles, and in breadth, in some parts near 360 miles. The whole empire, exclusive of the small islands that lie scattered at a distance, consists of three principal ones, *Nippon*, *Ximo*, and *Xi Coco*; they extend almost eleven degrees, that is, from lat. 30. to almost 41; and from east to west, almost 17. that is, from 130. to 147. of east longitude.

ALMOST all the coasts of this extensive empire are surrounded with such high and craggy mountains, and such shallow and boisterous seas, that sailing about them is extremely hazardous; and the creeks and bays are choked up with such rocks, shelves, and sands, that it looks as if Providence had designed it to be a kind of little world by itself; and this may best account, perhaps, for the first peopling of those islands. The *Chinese* do indeed pretend, that they were *How peo-* first peopled by themselves; but it is more probable, their *pled.* original inhabitants were a mixture of different nations, driven thither by those tempestuous seas, and at different times; and this appears from the great difference observable between the present inhabitants, in regard to features, complexions, shapes, habits, customs, genius and languages; notwithstanding their having been so long united one under monarch. *Character* Whatever affinity there may be between the *Chinese* and *Ja-* *Character* *panese*, one thing, however, is certain, that in the character of the *Ja-* they bear with other nations, they appear in a quite opposite *panese.* light. Whilst the *Chinese* are looked upon as crafty, cunning, covetous, and knavish, the *Japanese* are admired for their strict

strict honesty, fidelity, and generosity: they are generally wise, acute, and ingenious, surpassing all Orientals, and even *Europeans* in docility. They enjoy themselves as much in innocent pleasures as any other nation, but can at any time forego them for better employment, and are content when their circumstances do not easily admit of them. Neither are they covetous after much wealth, being satisfied with a competency, as the best preservative against lying and cozening, against envy or detraction. In conversation, they observe a great decorum, and avoid all loose, light, and vain speeches, affecting a kind of laconic style, and an aversion to railing and defamation. In diet, they are abstemious; in dress and furniture, clean and decent. Drunkenness and gluttony are scarce known amongst them, any more than cheating and dishonesty; yet, with these virtues, which many of them possess in an eminent degree, they are frequently cruel and revengeful, and carry their resentment to excess; and in great misfortunes, as injuries, disgrace, affronts from their superiors, or other such mortifications, they most commonly make away with themselves. Their women are more particularly guilty of this crime of suicide, especially, whenever their chastity, conjugal fidelity, or even modesty, are called in question.

Climate.

THE situation of *Japan* is such, as to possess the fifth and sixth climates, so that the longest day is between fourteen and fifteen hours; and their heat might be expected to exceed ours by many degrees, though we are told, that their winters are excessive cold, by the vast quantities of snow that usually fall there, and the great rains and bleak winds, to which those islands, which lie very high, are constantly exposed. The *Dutch* in general assure us, that the land is fertile, well cultivated and peopled, and that, besides corn, rice, and other grain, it produces a great variety of fruits, and breeds vast numbers of cattle of all sorts. Some parts are incumbered with woods and forests, and intersected by long ridges of mountains of a considerable height; but some of these mountains are enriched with mines of gold and silver

Soil and produce.

Mines, &c.

in large quantities, and extraordinary fine, with copper exquisitely fine, tin, lead, iron, besides a great variety of other minerals and fossils; whilst others abound with several sorts of marble, and other curious stone of a more precious nature. Some of those mountains also may be justly intitled to a rank among the natural rarities of this country: one, in that island of *Nippon*, is of such prodigious height, as to be easily seen forty leagues off at sea, though its distance from the shore is above eighteen. Some authors think it ex-

ceeds the famed peak of *Teneriffe*; but it may be rather called a cluster, or group of mountains, among which, no less than eight have very dreadful volcanoes, burning with incredible *Volcanoes.* fury, and causing great disorder and devastations round about them, not unlike those of *Vesuvius*. But, to make some amends, they afford great variety of medicinal waters of different degrees of heat; the most remarkable of them is that mentioned by *Varenius*, which is said to be as hot as boiling oil, and to scorch and consume every thing thrown into it.

AMONG the artificial rarities of this country, we shall only *Colossus at* mention the famed colossus of the city of *Meaco*, which is all *Meaco.* of gilt copper, and of such a prodigious size, that, being seated in a chair eighty feet in breadth, and seventy in height, no less than fifteen men can stand conveniently on its head. Its thumb is fourteen inches in circumference, and the rest proportionable to it. This is one of the principal idols or deities of this island. But the *Japanese* are so greatly addicted to this kind of idolatrous worship, that every place swarms with idols. They have them not only in their temples, but in their other public and private buildings, in their streets, market-places, and even along the highways. The temple of *Meaco* in particular may be considered as a *Japanese* Pantheon, containing no less than 3333 idols within its walls.

THE government of these islands, is, and has been for a *Government.* long time monarchical, though formerly, it seems to have been split into a great number of petty kingdoms, which were at length all swallowed up into one. The imperial dignity had been enjoyed for a considerable time, till the year 1500, in a constant succession, by prince under the title of *Dairos*, a name, it is supposed, derived from *Dairo*, the head of that family. Soon after that ill-fated epoch, such a dreadful civil war was raised, and lasted so many years, that the empire was quite ruined. During this horrid confusion, in which all the petty kings and princes were committing the greatest devastations against one another, a common soldier, by name *Tayckoy*, and a person of obscure birth, but of an enterprising genius, found means to raise himself to the highest power. He began at first with fifty soldiers, equally intrepid and daring; but was seconded by such an uncommon share of fortune, that their numbers quickly increasing to a great army, he carried on his conquests with incredible success and celerity. In little more than three years time, he *Revolution.* subdued all the contending parties, took their cities and castles, and raised himself to the imperial dignity. The *Dairo*, not being in a condition to obstruct, or put a stop to his progress, was forced to submit to his terms; and might, perhaps,

harder, had not *Tayc-ko* been apprehensive, lest his soldiers, who still revered their ancient natural monarchs, should have revolted in his favour. To prevent this, he granted him the supreme power in all religious matters, with great privileges, honours, and revenues annexed to it; whilst himself remained invested with the whole civil and military power, and was acknowledged and proclaimed emperor of *Japan*. This great revolution happened in 1517, and *Tayc-ko* reigned several years with great wisdom and tranquillity; during which, he made many wholesome laws and regulations in his new empire, which still subsist, and are much admired to this day. At his death, he left the crown to his son *Taycokosamma*, then a minor; but the treacherous prince, under whose guardianship he was left, deprived him of his life before he came of age. By this murder, the crown passed to the family of *Jejasamma*, whose great-grandson *Tsinjos*, was upon the throne, when our last accounts came from thence. *Tayc-ko*, and his successors, have contented themselves with the title of Cubo, which, under the *Dairos*, was that of prime-minister, whose office is now suppressed; so that the Cubo, in all secular concerns, is quite as absolute and despotic, and has as extensive a power over the lives and fortunes of all his subjects, from the petty kings down to the lowest persons, as ever the *Dairos* had. The *Dairo* resides constantly at *Meaco*, and the Cubo at *Jedo*.

Japan,
koru, and
when dis-
covered.

•WHETHER these islands were known to the antients or not, is a question not worth inquiring into. *Paul*, the *Venetian*, gave some account of them, which he had from the *Chinese*, prior to their discovery by the *Portuguese* in 1548, when one of their ships, bound from *Siam* to *China*, was driven upon those coasts by stress of weather. It was not long before their nation got admittance into this empire; and having recommended themselves to the emperor by their great skill in the liberal sciences, not only obtained a free commerce, but likewise a free exercise of their religion, and in time, a liberty and encouragement to propagate it through his dominions; insomuch, that if their accounts may be credited, about one third of the inhabitants were converted, and the emperor himself an extraordinary favourer of, if not a zealous proselyte to it. All these great advantages were at length intirely lost, partly by the indiscreet zeal of the missionaries, partly by the jealousy of the unconverted nobles, and especially of the *Japanese* priests, who could not without the greatest envy and regret, behold their old religion, with all its powerful attractives of profit, popular esteem and res-

pect, daily losing ground; but more particularly, by the policy or treachery of the *Dutch*, who found effectual means to undermine them. All the Christian converts were put to the most cruel deaths, and the *Europeans*, except the *Dutch*, were, under pain of death, forbid to come within the *Japanese* dominions. The *Dutch* have ever since engrossed the trade of *Japan*, exclusive of all other *Europeans*, but are under such restrictions, that it is quite out of their power to form any designs upon the country.

THE commodities exported by the *Dutch* are chiefly rice, *Trade of* silks, cotton, the finest of porcelane, varnish, gold and sil. *the Dutch* ver, copper and steel, elephant's teeth, very rich furs, tea of *with the* all sorts, some kinds of such excellent flavour and taste, that *Japanese*. they are sold at a prodigious rate, even above that of gold, weight for weight; a great variety of medicinal herbs, roots, and gums; all which, as well as the tea, are sold genuine, without the adulterations committed by the *Chinese* in theirs: ambergrease, pearls, coral, &c. in exchange for which, the *Dutch* bring them not only glasses of all sorts, woollen and linen cloths, &c. from *Holland*, but furnish them likewise with many other commodities from *Siam*, *China*, and other parts of *India*. In the carrying on of this commerce, there is this further encouragement, that no custom is paid for goods, either imported or exported.

C H A P. X.

Of India, and the Oriental Islands.

INDIA has lost nothing among the moderns of that esteem *Importance* which it was possessed of among the antients. The cu- *of India.* rious do not hesitate to make a voyage of above 300 leagues to visit the wonders of that country; its riches make our merchants forget the trouble, the fatigue, and danger of a long and painful navigation; the learned, throughout all *Europe*, carefully seek after its animals and plants, to study the singularities of nature, more various and fertile in these countries than in their own; its beauties adorn the palaces of princes, and add splendor to the diadems of sovereigns.

SINCE these 260 years, that the *Portuguese* had found the way to *India* by the *Cape of Good-Hope*, the voyages thither by the *English*, *Dutch*, *French*, *Portuguese*, and *Spaniards*, have been almost infinite. Every one of these nations has made its particular discoveries there, and at present, that country is almost as well known to us, as any of the *Euro-
pean*.

Extent and boundaries. *India*, according to the latest observations, extends from the 83d degree of longitude to the 130th; and from the Equator to the 23d degree of north latitude. From *China* to *Persia*, which bound these countries on the east and west, are reckoned about 500 leagues; and there are almost as many from the extremity of the peninsula beyond the *Ganges* to *Tartary*, which bounds *India* on the north side.

Air and Soil. THE air cannot be the same throughout this vast extent of country, but in general, it is good and healthy. The rains, which fall continually from the beginning of *June* till the end of *August*, serve to refresh it, especially in the two peninsulas, which are almost intirely within the torrid zone. They render the earth fruitful, which furnishes in abundance all the necessaries of life, except towards the north, where it does not answer equally the cares of those who cultivate it. From hence arises that almost infinite number of inhabitants in *India*, which compose, even at this day, fifty-two kingdoms and different principalities, whereof, it is true, the greatest part depend on the principal sovereigns of the country.

Grand division. THIS country is divided into two principal parts; the first called *India* within the *Ganges*, *Indostan*, or the empire of the Great Mogul; and the second, *India* beyond the *Ganges*, or its further peninsula, governed by different princes.

Boundaries, situation, extent, and divisions of the Mogul empire. THE empire of the Mogul is bounded by *Ussac-Tartary* and *Tibet* on the north; by another part of *Tibet*, *Acham*, *Ava*, and the bay of *Bengal*, on the east; by the *Indian-Ocean* on the south; and by the same ocean and *Persia* on the west. It is situate between 66. and 92. of east longitude, and between 7 and 40 of north latitude, and extends 2000 miles in length, and 1500 in breadth. The south east coast of *India*, situate on the bay of *Bengal*, usually called the coast of *Cosmandel*, contains the provinces of *Madura*, *Tanjour*, east side of *Bisnagar*, or *Carnate*, *Golconda*, and *Orixa*. The south-west coast, or coast of *Malabar*, those of the west-side of *Bisnagar*, or *Carnate*, *Decan*, or *Visiapour*, and *Cambaya*, or *Guzarat*. The north-east division comprehends the provinces of *Bengal*, on the mouths of the *Ganges*, and those of the mountains of *Naugracut*, distinguished into *Bengal-Propre*, and *Naugracut*, *Jesuat*, *Patna*, *Necbal*, *Gor*, and *Rotas*. The north-west division on the frontiers of *Persia* and the river *Indus*, contains the provinces of *Soret*, *Tesfelmere*, *Taka*, *Buckar*, *Multan*, *Haican*, and *Cabul*. And the middle division, those of *Candish*, *Berar*, *Chitor*, *Ratpor*, *Narvar*, *Qualcor*, *Ayra*, *Belli*, *Lahor*, *Hendous*, *Cassimere*, *Jengopour*, and *Afme*.

THE chain of mountains which run through this peninsula from north to south, are the cause of an extraordinary phenomenon in natural history. The countries which are separated by these mountains, though under the same latitude, have their seasons and climate intirely different from each other; and while it is winter on one side of the hills, it is summer on the other. On the coast of *Malabar*, a south-west wind begins to blow from the sea at the end of *June*, with continued rain, and rages against the coast for four months, during which time the weather is calm and serene on the coast of *Cormandel*; and towards the end of *October*, the rainy season, or change of the monsoon, begins on the *Cormandel* coast; at which time, the tempestuous winds beating continually against a coast, in which there are no good ports, make it so dangerous for the shipping to remain there for the three ensuing months, that it is scarce ever attempted. This is the cause of the periodical return of our ships to *Bombay*, where there is a secure harbour and convenient docks.

THIS great extent of country has been inhabited, from the earliest antiquity, by a people who have now little or no resemblance, either in their figures or manners, with any of the nations which are contiguous to them. Its first inhabitants were probably from *Persia*, that kingdom being an inlet to it, and in the way of *Mesopotamia*, where it seems to be agreed the descendants of *Noah* first settled after the flood: but, whoever were the first inhabitants, the *Ethiopians* next possessed the southern division of the peninsula, as appears from their posterity still remaining there, not a white man, or any other complexion but blacks, possessing any part of that country; and that they came from *Ethiopia* is evident, not only from their complexion, but from their long hair and regular features, very different from the other *African* blacks. A further evidence of their being the descendants of the *Ethiopians*, is, that the queen of *Sheba*, or *Ethiopia*, made presents to *Solomon* of the finest spices, which only grow in *India*, and were brought from the colonies of the *Ethiopians* and planted here. It may be said, perhaps, that the people of this country were originally black; but this is far from being probable, because none of the natives of the other parts of *India* are black, though they lie much nearer the Equator. The *Arabs* were the next that possessed the maritime parts of this country; for almost all the coast was subject to *Arabian* or *Mohammedan* princes, when the *Portuguese* arrived here in 1500; and they had dispossessed the *Ethiopians*, and driven them up into the midland country, where

The Conclusion of

Aureng-
zebe and
his descend-
ants.

they still remain. *India* was afterwards, about the year 1400, invaded by the *Mongul-Tartars* under *Tamerlane*, who fixed his third son *Miracha*, in the north of *India* and *Persia*; but the southern peninsula of *India* was not reduced under the obedience of the Mogul princes, until the reign of *Aurengzebe*. This prince deposed and confined his father *Shah Geyhan*, who died in 1666; and having murdered his three brothers, and some of their children to acquire the throne, he maintained himself in it near fifty years; but with so strict an attention to the government of his empire, and with so laudable an administration, that the crimes he was guilty of to pave the way to his accession, if they appeared such in the eyes of his countrymen, were quite obliterated, and he seemed entitled to be ranked with the ablest princes who had reigned in any age or country. He conquered more than half the provinces of *Indostan* in person, and his viceroys conquered or subjected almost all the rest, the sea-coasts of *Malabar* excepted. The revenues of the empire amounted, in his time, to thirty-eight millions of pounds sterling. He was near an hundred when he died in 1707. He never eat any flesh-meat, nor tasted strong drink. But all his abilities did not give him the power of securing his crown to one of his sons in preference to the rest; and it appears by his will, that he foresaw the contests which ensued amongst them after his death. His sons, *Azem Shah*, and *Mahomed Mauzum*, fought at the head of armies not equalled since the time of *Tamerlane*. That of *Mahomed Mauzum* consisting of more than 300,000 fighting-men, of which 150,000 were cavalry; *Azem*, who seems by his father's will to have been the favourite, was defeated and killed, and *Mauzum* was proclaimed emperor, under the title of *Badabr-shah*, after which he attacked his brother *Kaunbuksh*, who was taken prisoner and died of his wounds. *Badabr-shah* died after reigning about six years, and his four sons disputed in like manner the throne. By that dependance to the great men of the kingdom, to which their contest for the crown had reduced the descendants of *Aurengzebe*, the emperors elected, though despotic with the multitude, ascended the throne in bonds, and were, in reality, nothing more than the slaves of their ministers. *Abdallab khan*, and *Hoffam-Aly khan*, two brothers, were powerful enough to make four, and depose five emperors of *Indostan*. But still the blood of *Tamerlane* continued to be held in too great veneration throughout the empire, to permit any others but his descendants to entertain the thoughts of ascending the throne with impunity. The two brothers, and those who stood nearest to the throne, in virtue of their

offices and power, were therefore contented to rule the empire as they pleased, by shewing to the people a pompous sovereign, who, in reality, was to command nothing but the women in his seraglio. With this view, they at last fixed their choice on *Mohamed Shah*, son of one of the princes who perished in disputing the succession of their father *Behadr-Shah*. The beginning of his reign was not without a stroke of authority in the mode of eastern politics. The courtiers, to please him, assassinated *Hoffam-Aly* khan, one of the two brothers, whose hands had been imbrued in so much of the blood of his family. The other brother immediately appeared in arms, but was soon taken prisoner, and died of the wounds he had received in a battle, which he fought for another emperor of his own nomination. The removal of two such dangerous enemies to the throne, placed *Mahomed-Shah* in possession of it with a security unknown to his predecessors, since the reign of *Aurangzebe*; but this security served only to render him unworthy of it. Indolent, sensual, and irresolute, he voluntarily gave to favourites as great a degree of power, as that which the ministers of the throne had lately possessed, in defiance of the will of their sovereign. The favourites quarrelled with *Nizam al Muluk*, the viceroy of the southern provinces, who had under his jurisdiction very near a fourth part of the empire, and who, without rebellion, had rendered himself almost independent of the emperor. He censured openly the pusillanimous administration, *Extraor-* and dissolute manners of the court, *No* degenerate from that *inary re-* of *Aurangzebe*, under whose eye he had been bred. At last, *voluntion,* pretending there could be no remedy to such desperate evils, *how* but a total revolution of the empire, he advised *Thamas*, *brought* *Kouli-Khan*, who had usurped the throne of *Persia*, to come *about.* and take possession of that of *Indostan*; and *Thamas Kouli-Khan* followed his advice. An army furnished by its own numbers, commanded by chiefs, unanimous in nothing but their unwillingness to fight, and these by an emperor who could not command his fears, submitted to enemies whom they outnumbered five to one; but these enemies had been inured to conflicts under the most desperate soldier of the age, and were rendered invincible by the expectation of plundering the capital of the richest empire in the world. A skirmish decided the fate of the empire. *Mahomed-Shah* laid his regalia at the feet of *Thamas Kouli-Khan*, who took possession of *Bombay*, plundered it, and massacred 100,000 of its inhabitants. The conqueror reserving to himself all the countries lying to the westward of the rivers *Indus* and *Rtee*, restored all the rest to *Mahomed-Shah*, and reinstated him in the throne

The Conclusion of

with formalities; after which he returned to *Persia*, carrying with him out of *Indostan* a treasure, which in effects, silver, gold, and jewels, was valued at upwards of seventy millions of pounds sterling. He entered *India* from *Candabar* in the beginning of the year 1738, and returned to *Candabar* at the end of the year 1739. This dreadful incursion is reckoned to have cost *Indostan*, besides its treasures, the loss of 200,000 lives.

THE cruelties exercised in *India* by *Thomas Kouli-Khan*, were such, that a dervise had the courage to present a writing to him, conceived in these terms: "If thou art a God, act as a God; if thou art a prophet, conduct us in the way of salvation; if thou art a king, render the people happy, and do not destroy them." To which he replied, "I am no God to act as a God; nor a prophet to shew the way of salvation; nor a king to render the people happy; but I am He whom God sends to the nations which he is determined to visit with his wrath."

THE prince whom *Kouli-Khan* had reinstated, is said to have been murdered by the vizier *Gauze Odin-Khan*, who thereupon exalted *Allum Geer*, to the throne of *Indostan*; but some time after, being dissatisfied with his own election in the person of this prince, he imprisoned him, kept him in close confinement for several years, drove his children from *Delli*; and at length, to complete the system, murdered him also, and proclaimed another prince at that capital. This is the present state of the Mogul family, and it is *Allum-Geer's* son, by the title of *Shah Zadeh*, who of late has occasioned great disturbances in the government of *Bengal*, by making a party there. When he was apprized of his father's assassination, he did not long delay to assert his title to the inheritance of his ancestors. He caused himself to be acknowledged king immediately by his dependants, and was recognized as such by his followers; and he demanded homage and obedience from the Nabob of *Bengal*.

It is generally supposed, that the peninsula within the *Ganges* is under the immediate government of the Mogul himself, and that the royal mandates from *Delli* are, according to the received notion of so arbitrary a dominion, obeyed in the most remote parts of the coast. This is so far from the truth, that a great part of that vast peninsula never acknowledged any subjection to the throne of *Delli*, till the reign of *Aurengzebe*, as abovementioned; and the revenues from those *Indian* kings and *Moorish* governors, who were conquered or employed by him, have, since his death, been intercepted by the viceroys, whom his weaker successors have appointed

Govern-
ment of
Indostan.

For the government of the peninsula: so that at this time, neither can the tribute from the several potentates reach the court of *Delli*, nor the vigour of the government extend from the capital to those remote countries. And ever since *Indostan* was ruined by *Thamas Kuli-Khan*, the weakness of the Mogul, and the policy and confirmed independency of the viceroys, have, in a manner, confined the influence of the government to its inland department. Let it therefore be understood, that the sovereign possesses a third only, and that the least valuable part, of his own vast empire. *Bengal*, the smallest, but most fertile province, is governed by a viceroy. The other division, called the *Decan*, extending from *Balasore* *Jagonut*, or thereabouts, to *Cape Comorin*, is also delegated by the Mogul to another viceroy of exceeding great power, having within his jurisdiction seven large territories, to which he has the undisputed right of nominating seven Nabobs, or governors of provinces. In all parts of *India*, there are still large districts, which have preserved with the *Gentoo* religion, the old form of government under *Indian* kings, called *Raja's*; such are *Mailfore*, whose capital is *Seringapatam*, and *Tanjore*, the capital of the same name. There are also, among the woods and mountainous parts of the country several petty princes, distinguished by the name of Polygars. These are all tributary to the Nabobs, and those to the viceroy, whose capital is *Aurengabad*. The *Carnatic* is that part of the *Decan* which comprehends the principal settlements of the *Europeans*, *Madras*, *Pondicherry*, and also *Arco*.

NOTHING appears a greater difficulty to the military men in this part of the world, than the possibility of subsisting such vast multitudes as the *Asiatic* armies frequently consist of, especially so large a proportion of horse; but, if it be a matter of astonishment, that such numbers of fighting-men are frequently brought into the field, how will it appear when it is added to the account, that every horseman has two servants, one to take care of his horse, the other to procure him forage, and that all these are accompanied by their wives and children: that there always follows the camp a moveable town of shops, where every thing is to be sold as in their cities; besides some hundreds of elephants for state only, and a train of women, with their numberless retinue, belonging to the prince and the great officers: for whenever the sovereign moves, he is more taken up with a vain ostentation of pomp and magnificence, than with the object of the war; and it is his pleasure that his subjects should abandon the capital, in order to augment his numbers. In imitation of their sovereign

reign, and from the same motives of pride and vanity, the lesser princes and viceroys affect the same magnificence in the splendor of their camps, and the number of their followers. To provide for all these, the whole country is put in motion, and the strictest orders are given for all provisions to be brought into the camp. By these means, all the cities, far and near, are exhausted, but the camp, for the most part, is plentifully supplied. However, it must be supposed, that these numerous armies seldom keep the field any time, without great loss by famine; for a very considerable diminution is scarcely felt among such numbers, and very little regarded from any notions of humanity: a famine is, therefore, neither considered as any thing extraordinary, nor will the remembrance of it ever prevent the assembling of another multitude, who must also be liable to the same chances of subsisting or starving, as accident shall determine. In like manner, allowance must be made for the great loss and damage they sustain in men, beasts, and all the implements of war, as often as they move in difficult roads and dehles, and particularly in their method of passing over great rivers: for their rivers, when they are not fordable, in the rainy season become torrents, being swelled to such a degree, that they are not to be passed but swim-wise, the landing-place being frequently above a mile below the place of embarkation.

Want of courage in the Indians, to what owing. It is owing merely to an ignorance of the manners of the *Asiatics*, that many people imagine they can never be made soldiers. It may, perhaps, be shewn, that they never will, whilst the same wretched government and abhorrence of innovation subsists; but these are greatly mistaken, who attribute their dread of fire-arms, and particularly of artillery, to a dastardly disposition, and an invincible timidity. The true cause lies in the inexperience of their leading men, who never understood the advantages of discipline, and who have kept their infantry upon too low a footing. Their cavalry, though not backward to engage with sabres, are extremely unwilling to bring their horses within the reach of great guns; so that they do not decline an engagement so much through fear for their lives, as for their fortunes, which are all laid out in the horse they ride on. Such of the natives as have been disciplined and encouraged by *Europeans*, and formed into a regular infantry under officers of their own, and generally known by the name of *Sepoys*, have familiarized themselves to fire-arms, and behaved well behind walls; and when we give them serjeants to lead them on, they make no contemptible figure in the field. In war with the *Asiatics* alone, we have a much greater advantage in their being so very

Obstacles to their success in war.

very tenacious of their old manners, than in their want of bravery. When we march round them with our light-field pieces, and make it necessary to move those enormous weights, their bullocks, which are at best very untractable; if a shot comes among them they are quite ungovernable; and, at the same time, so ill-harnessed, that it causes no small delay to free the rest from one that shall happen to be unruly or slain. Besides, not only the prince himself, but every Raja, who has the command of all the forces he can bring into the field, be they more or less, always appears among them mounted on an elephant, and is at once the general and ensign, or standard of that corps, who keep their eyes constantly on him, and if they lose sight of him for a moment, conclude that all is lost. Thus we find *Aurengzebe* gained two battles by the treachery of those who desired his two victorious brothers to get down from their elephants, mount their horses, and pursue the vanquished: their troops missing them, immediately dispersed. The same practice, continued to this day, affords our engineers a fair opportunity of deciding the fate of a whole detachment, by one well-directed discharge of a six-pounder; and those enormous beasts now seem to be brought into the field for no other end but to be a mark for our artillery. It is said, they begin to see the danger of this practice, but surely that might have been found long since; for before the use of artillery, the general, thus distinguished, was, in like manner, exposed to the arrows of a whole army, and yet we always find them in the same perilous station. *Porus* is said to have been pierced with nine arrows, and to have sunk from his elephant with innumerable wounds. It should seem probable, that not merely their regard for ancient manners, but the expediency of keeping their troops together by this signal, will induce them to continue the same method; the necessity of which will appear from the conduct and success of *Aurengzebe*, who, when he found his army giving way on every side, ordered chains to be fastened about the legs of his elephant, to convince them that he would not give the example of flight; and that those to whom his life was dear or interesting, could preserve it by no other means but firmly maintaining their ground. To shew, however, that they themselves are sensible of the danger of being thus exposed, they will sometimes avail themselves of the only device that can afford them any security; for it has been observed, that several elephants apportioned alike, with riders in the same rich and splendid habits, have appeared in different parts of the field on the same day. Another great obstacle to their success in war, is their superstition, and par-

their strict observance of lucky and unlucky days, which often prevents them from taking the most obvious advantages of an enemy. Being fond of all kinds of beasts of prey, they keep great numbers of them, and often visit them before they give battle. If they find them heavy and dull, they think it a bad omen, and a reason sufficient to postpone their intended design of an action; and, on the other hand, the accidental fury of the animal is regarded as a happy omen of success. They have also a custom of matching two wild beasts, most commonly elephants; and having given their own name to the one, and that of the enemy to the other, they bring them together to fight in presence of their army; but, in this custom they are not altogether to be condemned for superstitious folly, since they have the policy to make it a very unequal match, and give their own name to the stronger. We shall add to these observations, that notwithstanding they have so severely suffered by being surprized in the night by the *Europeans*, they can never be brought to establish either order or vigilance in their camp. At the close of the evening, every man eats an inconceivable quantity of rice, and many take after it some kind of soporific drugs; so that about mid-night, the whole army is in a dead sleep. The consequence of these habits is obvious; and yet it would appear a strange proposition to an Eastern monarch, to endeavour to persuade him, that the security of his throne depended upon the regulation of the meals of a common soldier; much less would he be prevailed on to restrain him in the use of that opium, which is to warm his blood for action, and animate his soul with heroism. It must fill the mind of an *European* soldier at once with compassion and contempt, to see a heap of these poor creatures, solely animated by a momentary intoxication, crowded into a breach, and both in their garb and impotent fury, resembling a mob of frantic women.

THERE is certainly an appearance of effeminacy in the eastern dress, which has at all times greatly contributed to lessen their military character with the *European* nations, who, from their own habits and prejudices, will naturally receive a strange impression, upon seeing a body of horse in silk or cotton robes; and yet, there is no character they are so fond of as that of a warrior; and as they have no other notion of government, they have been, from time immemorial, continually at war with one another.

Character,
religion,
manners, THE original inhabitants of *Indostan* have lost very little of their original character by the establishment of strangers amongst them. Besides the particular denominations which they

they receive from the casts and countries in which they are *customs,*
born, there is one more general, which is applied indiscrimi- *&c. of the*
minately to distinguish the original natives from all who have *original*
intruded themselves amongst them, *Hendoo*, from whence *inhabi-*
Indian. *tants of*
Indostan.

THE *Indians* have lost all memory of the ages in which they began to believe in *Vishnou*, *Eswara*, *Brama*, and a hundred thousand divinities subordinate to these. These divinities are worshipped in temples called pagoda's in every part of *Indostan*, the whole extent of which is holy-land to its inhabitants; that is, there is no part in which some divinity has not appeared and done something to merit a temple and priests to take care of it. Some of these temples are of immemorial antiquity: they are, at the same time, monuments of such stupendous labour, that they are supposed to have been built by the gods to whom they are consecrated. The histories of these gods is a heap of the greatest absurdities. It is *Eswara* twitting off the neck of *Brama*; it is the sun, who gets his teeth knocked out, and the moon, who has her face becomen black and blue at a feast, at which the gods quarrel and fight with the spirit of a mob. They say, that the sun and moon carry in their faces to this day the marks of this broil. Here and there a moral, or metaphysical allegory, and sometimes a trace of the history of a first legislator, is discernible in these stories; but in general they are so very extravagant and incoherent, that we cannot help being surprised how a people, so reasonable in other respects, should have adopted such a code of nonsense as a creed of religion, did we not find the same credulity in the histories of nations much more enlightened.

THE *Bramins*, who are the tribe of the priesthood, descend from those *Brachmans* who are mentioned to us with so much reverence by antiquity; and although much inferior, either as philosophers or men of learning, to the reputation of their ancestors as priests, their religious doctrines are still implicitly followed by the whole nation, and as preceptors, they are the source of all the knowledge which exists in *Indostan*.

THE religion and history of the *Gaures*, or ancient *Per-Writings*
skins, are in a great measure the same with those of the *Brach-* and *religi-*
mans, or primitive inhabitants of *India*. They are derived on of *Zo-*
from *Zoroaster*, and besides, being a very interesting object of *roaster.*
themselves, they merit the attention of the learned, by the
connection these people have had with the *Hebrews*, *Greeks*,
and perhaps, even the *Chinese*. Great lights may be had
from the works of *Zoroaster*, by men of true genius, who are
well

The Conclusion of

well skilled in the antient languages, by comparing them with other Oriental manuscripts; and very important discoveries may be made concerning the origin of mankind, and the histories of those ages which were near the general deluge. Such of the writings of *Zoroaster* as still remain, speak of the creation of the Universe, of the terrestrial Paradise, of the dispersion of mankind, and the cause of the respect paid by the *Perfes*, or *Parfes*, to fire, which they call *Athro Eboresmesdao*, Son of God. They contain also an account of the origin of evil, moral and natural; eulogiums on all the angels that were appointed to the government of the universe; many historical facts, which are more fully related in other works, written in modern *Persic*; they also frequently mention the king and heroes of the first dynasty, and exhibit their chronologies; lastly, they contain predictions with respect to the latter times; several particulars relating to the end of the world, and the resurrection; some excellent moral precepts, and a very extensive ceremonial code. God is called by *Zoroaster*, *Menioffeneste*, which signifies a Being absorbed in excellence. Such of the *Persians* and *Indians*, who profess themselves observers of his law and worship, are thoroughly persuaded of his divine mission, and suppose that he received the books of his law from God himself, after having passed ten years at the foot of his throne.

BUT to return to the *Bramins*: it may be said as to the particulars of their science and religion, that some of them are capable of calculating an eclipse, which seems to be the utmost stretch of their mathematical knowledge. They have a good idea of logic, but it does not appear that they have any treatises on rhetoric: their ideas of music, if we may judge from the practice, are barbarous; and in medicine they derive no assistance from the knowledge of anatomy, dissections being repugnant to their religion. They shed no blood, and eat no flesh, because they believe in the transmigration of souls; they encourage wives to burn themselves with their deceased husbands, and seem to make the perfection of religion to consist in a punctual observance of numerous ceremonies performed in the worship of their gods, and in a strict attention to keep their bodies free from pollution. Hence purifications and ablutions, as dictated by their scriptures, are scrupulously observed by them, and take up no small portion of their time. A *Bramin* cannot eat any thing which has been prepared, or even touched by any other hand than that of a *Bramin*, and from the same principle cannot be married to a person of any other tribe in the kingdom, because his own tribe is the highest, even above that of the kings.

kings. They say, that they were formerly the kings of the whole country, and retain to this day the privilege of commuting capital punishment, when merited, by the loss of their eyes. To kill a Bramin is one of the five sins, for which there is scarce any expiation.

THE pre-eminence of the Bramins admitted, it seems as if the *Indians* had determined to compensate the odium of such superiority, by forming themselves into a number of distinct tribes or gradations of people; who respectively submit to the different degrees of estimation, in which they have at last agreed to abide, as implicitly as all agree to acknowledge the superiority of the Bramins. The many temporal advantages which the Bramins derive from their spiritual authority, and the impossibility of being admitted into their tribe, have perhaps given rise to that number of *Joquees* and *Facquires*, who torture themselves with such various and astonishing penances only to gain the same veneration which a Bramin derives from his birth.

THE tribes into which the *Indians* are divided, are reckoned by travellers to be eighty four: perhaps when *India* is better known, we shall find them to be many more; for there is a singular disposition in the *Indian*, from very trifling circumstances to form a sect apart from the rest of his neighbours. But the order of pre-eminence of all the tribes in a particular city or province is for the most part indisputably decided. The *Indian* of an inferior tribe thinks himself honoured by being suffered to adopt the customs of a superior tribe; which on its side never fails to assert its prerogatives: the inferior receives the victuals prepared by a superior with respect, but the superior will not partake of a meal which has been prepared by the hands of an inferior. Marriage is circumscribed by the same bounds as the rest of their intercourse; and hence, besides the national physiognomy, the members of each tribe preserve an air of still greater resemblance to one another. Some tribes are remarkable for their beauty, others for their ugliness. All these tribes acknowledge the *Bramins* for their priests, and with them admit transmigration. It is on account of this opinion that some afflict themselves at the death of a fly, though occasioned by their inadvertence. But the far greater number of tribes are not so scrupulous, and eat, though very sparingly, both of fish and flesh; but, like the *Jews*, not of all kinds indifferently. Their diet is chiefly rice, and vegetables dressed with ginger, turmeric, and other hotter spices, which grow almost spontaneously in their gardens. They esteem milk the purest of foods, because they think

think it partakes of some of the properties of the nectar of their gods, and because they esteem the cow itself almost a divinity.

AN abhorrence to the shedding of blood, derived from his religion, and seconded by the great temperance of a life which is spent in a very sparing use of animal food, and a total abstinence from intoxicating liquors; the influence of the most regular of climates, in which the great heat of the sun and the great fertility of the soil lessen most of the wants to which the human species is subject in austerer regions, and supply the rest without the exertion of much labour; these causes and their various consequences, have all contributed to render the *Indian* the most enervated inhabitant of the globe. He shudders at the sight of blood, and is of a pusillanimity only to be excused and accounted for by the great delicacy of his constitution. His manners are gentle, his happiness consists in the solaces of domestic life; to which sufficiently inclined by the climate, he is obliged by his religion, which esteems matrimony a duty indispensable in every man who does not quit the world to unite himself to god: such is their phrase. Though permitted by his religion, according to the example of his gods, to have several, he is seldom the husband of more than one wife; and this wife is of a decency of demeanour, of a solicitude in her family, and of a fidelity to her vows, which might do honour to human nature in the most civilized countries. His amusements consist in going to his pagoda, and assisting at religious shews, in fulfilling a variety of ceremonies prescribed by him on all occasions by the Bramin; for, subject to a thousand lapses from the ideas he has adopted of impurity, the *Indian* is always offending his gods, who are not to be appeased till his priest is satisfied. But, in a country of such great extent, divided into so many distinct sovereignties, it cannot be expected that there should be no exceptions to one general ascription of the character of the inhabitants. There is every where in the mountains a wild inhabitant, whose bow an *European* can scarcely draw. There are in the woods people who subsist by their incursions into the neighbouring plains, and who, without the ferocity of the *American*, possess all his treachery.

Arts and manufactures of the Indians.

THE arts which furnish the conveniencies of life have been carried by the *Indians* to a pitch far beyond what is necessary to supply the wants of a climate which knows so few. At the same time no ideas of taste or fine design have existed amongst them; and we seek in vain for elegance in the magnificence of the richest empire of the globe. Their know-
ledge

ledge of mechanical powers is so very confined, that we are left to admire, without being able to account for, the manner in which they have erected their capital pagodas. It does not appear that they had ever made a bridge of arches over any of their rivers, before the *Mohammedans* came amongst them. It is to the suppleness with which the whole frame of an *Indian* is endow'd, and which is still more remarkable in the formation of his hand, that we are indebted for the exquisite perfection of their manufactures. The same instruments which an *Indian* employs to make a piece of fine muslin, would, under the rigid fingers of an *European*, scarcely produce a piece of canvas. Thus, not content with the presents which nature has showered on their climate, the *Indians* have made improvements when they felt no necessities. They have cultivated the various and valuable productions of their soil, not to the measure of their own, but to that of the wants of all other nations; they have carried their manufactures to a perfection which surpasses the most exquisite productions of *Europe*, and have encouraged with avidity the annual tributes of gold and silver which the rest of the world contest for the privilege of sending to them. They have from time immemorial been as addicted to commerce, as they are averse to war. They have therefore always been immensely rich, and have always remained incapable of defending their wealth.

THE *Mohammedan* princes of *India* naturally gave a preference to the service of men of their own religion, who, the *Mos-* from whatever country they came, were of a more vigorous constitution than the stoutest of the subjected nation. This preference has continually encouraged adventurers from *Indostan*, *Tartary*, *Persia*, and *Arabia*, to seek their fortunes under a government, from which they were sure of receiving greater encouragement than they could expect at home. However, though the present *Mohammedans* in *India* may be computed at near ten millions, they are still out-numbered by the *Indians* ten to one; and this inferiority of number has obliged the *Mohammedans* to leave many *Rajas*, or *Indian* princes, in possession of their respective sovereignties, which they are permitted to govern without molestation, on condition that they pay the stipulated tribute, and do not infringe any of the articles of the treaties by which they or their ancestors have acknowledged the sovereignty of the great mogul. Besides the *Indians* who reside in the territories of the *Rajas*, there are every where great numbers in those parts of the country which are immediately subject to the great mogul, without the interposition of an *Indian* prince to govern them.

them. They are the only cultivators of the land, and the only manufacturers of the immense quantities of cloths which are made in the empire. It is rare to see in the villages or fields a *Mohammedan* employed in any thing except levying contributions or acting in some other respects as an officer of the great mogul.

IN all the countries absolutely subjected, the great mogul styles himself proprietor of all the lands, and parcels them out at will as revenues for life to his feudatories; but still these grants take not away from the cultivator the right of sale and bequest. The policy of all the *Indian* governments of *Indostan*, as well as that of the great mogul, seems to consist more in a perpetual attention to prevent any one family from obtaining great possessions, than in the intention of making slaves of the body of the people; for such a slavery would soon leave the monarch little grandeur to boast of, and few subjects to command.

It has been observed, that all the *Mohammedans* established in *India* acquire, in the third generation, the indolence and pusillanimity of the original inhabitants, and at the same time a cruelty of character to which the *Indians* are happily strangers. Hence we are almost induced to give assent to the opinion, that the prohibition of shedding blood of any kind, inculcated by the *Indian* religion, was a political institution, wisely calculated to change into gentler manners the sanguinary disposition, which is said to have characterized all the inhabitants of *Indostan* before the religion of *Brama* was introduced among them.

British
establish-
ments in
Indostan.

THE *British* establishments in the kingdom of *Indostan* are divided into three governments, independant of each other. *Bombay* commands the factories on the western side of the peninsula, commonly called the *Malabar Coast*, together with those in *Persia*: the establishments and possessions on the eastern or *Cormandel* coast are under the government of *Madras*; and those in *Bengal* depend on *Calcutta*. From the year 1745 to the conclusion of the late peace, the *English* have been continually engaged in war, in one or other of these divisions; and the preservation of their commerce in the *East Indies* absolutely depended on the conduct and success of the wars of *Cormandel* and *Bengal*. The *French* were beaten by them out of all their settlements; the treacherous designs of the *Dutch* were prevented; great armies of *Indians* were totally defeated; in short, there is no part of our world in which the *British* arms have, of late years, acquired more honour. It is not our business to discuss the merits of the revolution of *Bengal* that was brought

brought about towards the close of the war in those parts, nor of the contests that have since arisen concerning the misbehaviour of the succeeding nabobs: these particulars are variously agitated; but the present peaceful condition of the province, by the reinstating of *Jaffer Aly Cawn*, in whose favour the revolution was first brought about, and the sending over lord *Clive*, seems to make here any observations on those events unnecessary. We shall therefore proceed to the other part of *India*, which is called the *Further India*, or the peninsula beyond the *Ganges*.

WE should in vain seek for any lights, with respect to India ^{beyond the} this country, in the writings of the ancients. They had ^{Ganges, &c. described.} no idea of it in the time of *Alexander*, and only knew it by the report of those whom trade or curiosity had incited to undertake so long and dangerous a voyage. All of them, astonished at the greatness and rapidity of the *Ganges*, which has not its equal in *Asia*, imagined it was the *Pisón*, one of the four rivers of the terrestrial paradise. *Josephus* is the first whom we know to have mentioned this; and he has been followed by many fathers of the church, commentators on scripture, and modern divines. It is difficult to determine whether foreigners or *Indians* have given rise to this notion. All we know is that the latter entertain great reverence for the waters of the *Ganges*. From a persuasion that they deface all the spots of sin, they go in crowds from the remotest parts of the country to wash in them. The reason of this is, because they imagine this river does not take its source from the bosom of the earth, but that it descends from heaven into the paradise of *Devendree*, and from thence into *Indostan*. Nothing is more childish than the fables related by the *Bramins* on this subject; yet the confidence of the people is what gives them all their authority. The mogul and the prince of *Goleonda* drink no other water but that of the *Ganges*; foreigners, on the contrary, pretend that it is very unhealthy, and that it cannot be drank, unless first boiled. There are a great number of ^{im-}mensely rich. At certain festivals, which last several days, there has sometimes been a concourse of 100,000 people, who come to bathe. But the great virtue of this river, and the only one which renders it valuable is, that it washes down gold in its sands, and throws it on its banks; that it is placed in the first rank of those rivers which produce precious stones; that the gulf of *Bengal*, into which it discharges itself, abounds in pearls and valuable stones, and that the *Ganges* is looked upon as the origin of them.

*Extent and
divisions
of the pe-
ninsula
beyond the
Ganges.*

THE peninsula beyond the *Ganges* stretches its whole length into the sea, and modern geographers give it 530 leagues from north to south, and 360 from east to west, its greatest breadth. It is divided into three parts: the north, in which are the kingdoms of *Acham*, or *Azem*, *Ava*, *Pegu*, *Laos*, and some others little known: the south, which contains those of *Siam* and *Malaya*: the east, which comprehends those of *Tonquin*, *Cochin-China*, and *Camboia*.

*Kingdom
of Azem.*

THE kingdom of *Azem* lies to the east of the great mogul's dominions, to the north of the kingdom of *Ava*, and to the west of the lake *Chiumay*. It was hardly known before *Mirgimola*, general of *Akrengzebe*, conquered it about the middle of the last century. He undertook this expedition with the more confidence, as that country had been without any wars for the space of 6 or 700 years, and the people had intirely neglected the use of arms. It was not difficult to conquer such a people; yet tradition attributes to them the invention of gunpowder, which passed from *Azem* to *Pegu*, and from *Pegu* to *China*, which has given occasion to say, that the *Chinese* were the authors of that discovery. It is said, that, in that war, *Mirgimola* had taken several pieces of cannon, which were all of iron.

THIS kingdom is one of the best in *Asia*, and produces every thing that is necessary for the sustenance of man. Mines of gold, silver, steel, lead, and iron, are found here, the property of which the king has reserved for himself, on condition of not levying any subsidies on his people; and in order not to harass them by any unseemly labour, he employs none but slaves purchased from his neighbours, to work them. Thus all the inferior subjects of *Azem* enjoy themselves in ease and affluence, which is not the case with the rest of the *Indians*, who have scarce any thing but slavery and misery for their portion, in the midst of a country where they ought to live in riches and plenty. The princes reside in the city of *Kemmerouf*, about twenty-five or thirty days journey from the ancient capital, which bore the same name; but their tombs and those of all the royal family are in the city of *Azoo*, on the banks of the river *Laquia*. Every prince builds a kind of chapel in the great pagoda to serve for his burial-place; and being persuaded that after their death they go to another world, and that those who die, sullied by any crime, suffer a great deal, chiefly by hunger and thirst, they place all necessaries near the corpse, to serve them as they may want. The king is interred with those idols of gold and silver which he worshipped in his life-time, a live elephant, twelve camels, six horses, and a great

great number of hounds, in the belief that all these things will be useful to him in the other world. Barbarity accompanies superstition in this funeral solemnity. At the king's death, the woman whom he has loved best, and the principal officers of his household, poison themselves, that they may have the glory of being interred with him, and of serving him in a future state. If a private person, all his friends and relations must assist at his funeral; and every one must throw into the grave the bracelets and other ornaments he wears.

THE accounts of those who have travelled into the East, *Kingdom of Ava.* give us little or no information about the kingdom of *Ava*, which is said to be four times as large as *Great Britain*. They only tell us that the prince is immensely rich, which appears by the magnificence of his palace.

ALL that historians relate of the kingdom of *Pegu* is drawn *Kingdom of Pegu.* from *Gasper Balbi*, a rich *Venetian* merchant, who once traded thither. According to him, that kingdom had been exposed to several revolts, and had been the theatre of a bloody war during all the 16th century. The *Peguans* may be ranked amongst the nastiest and most superstitious of all mankind. They maintain and worship crocodiles, and will drink nothing but the waters of the ditches where those monstrous animals harbour. By thus exposing themselves to the manifest hazard of their lives, they have frequently the misfortune to be devoured. They have five principal festivals in the year, called *sapans*, which they celebrate with an extraordinary magnificence. In one of them the king and queen make a pilgrimage about twelve leagues from the city, riding on a triumphal car, so richly adorned with jewels, that it may be said without an hyperbole, that they carry about them the value of a kingdom. This prince is extremely rich, and has in the chapel of his palace several pagods of inestimable value, some of them being of massy gold, or silver, and adorned with all sorts of precious stones. The talapoins, or priests of this country, have no possessions, but such is the respect paid them by the people, that they are never known to want. They preach to them every *Monday* not to commit murder, to take from no person any thing belonging to him, to do no hurt, to give no offence, to avoid impurity or superstition, but above all not to worship the devil. But their discourses have no effect in the last respect. The people attached to *Manichæism* believe, that all good comes from God, and that the devil is the author of all the evils that happen to men; and that there-

fore they ought to worship him, that he may not afflict them. This is a common notion among the *Indian* idolaters.

*Kingdom
of Laos.*

THERE is no country, where more ivory is to be had than in the kingdom of *Laos*, or *Lao*. Elephants are so numerous in it, that the inhabitants are said to have taken their name from them; many kinds of animals, as oxen and buffaloes, which are here very common; a great quantity of benjoin, the best in the East; lacca, being a kind of earth met with in some forests lying about ant-hills; garden fruits, vast quantities of rice, fish of an enormous bulk with which the rivers abound, and salt spontaneously formed of a kind of foam which the great rains leave upon the earth, are the other advantages of this kingdom. Nothing can be more senseless than the whims with which the priests here have possessed the people, and which they give out as the foundation of their religion. This is, that a buffalo, or wild ox, which nature had formed with all imaginable defects, produced a gourd full of black and white men; and that there are four Gods who governed the world 18000 years before it was renewed, and who afterwards retired into a very large and spacious column, which was raised towards the north. Such visions, accompanied with corrupt morals, could only render the people as vicious as their priests, if the severity of the law did not put a restraint on their licentiousness. The propensity which the *Laoans* have to passion and bloodshed, has forced their kings to punish, not only those who give a blow, but even those who shew anger against another. Nay, frequently to inspire the greater terror, the innocent is involved in the punishment of the guilty. If the chief of a family is convicted of any great crime, all who belong to him in the different degrees of consanguinity are degraded, and deprived of their offices, rights, and privileges; and, for the future, are employed in nothing but the service of the elephants, as gathering grass for them, carrying it to the king's stables, and watching them all night.

*Kingdom
of Siam.*

To the south of those countries lies the kingdom of *Siam*, the most famous of all the *Indies*. The *Portuguese* have given the name of *Siam* to the capital of the kingdom, which the natives call *Crung si ayn, thaya*, that is, the excellent city, or admirable, extraordinary, and angelic city, because they believe it impregnable. It is built on the river *Menai*, which means the sea of waters, and forms an island two leagues in circuit. The place is besides every where surrounded with a strong wall, and has within itself

resources sufficient to support a siege of many months against an army 50,000 strong. The chief of these resources is an infallible succour from the overflowing of the river every six months; so that there are no lines which it does not carry off, nor army which it does not oblige to retire. By means of those waters, they have made several canals, which run through all the streets, without doing any damage; and there are few houses to which there is not access to with a boat. The convenience of transporting their effects and landing them quite from the sea at the warehouses, with the other advantages of the kingdom, have drawn traders thither from all parts. At first the *Portuguese* were masters of the commerce; but some insults offered to the *Indians* and *Dutch* merchants gave the latter a pretence to declare themselves their enemies; and in 1634 they built one of the finest lodges they have in the east. Notwithstanding, the *Portuguese* were not intirely expelled; they have still factories there as well as the *English*, *French*, *Chinese*, and some others, who all dwell in the two vast and rich suburbs which lie to the east and west of the city. Here it is that some modern travellers relate that they have seen immense treasures of all kinds. The riches of the country are chiefly displayed in the pagodas, and the prince's palace, by the quantity of workmanship in gold with which they are adorned; by their prodigious bulk, their admirable structure, and the incredible collections of precious stones of all kinds. However, all this kingdom, which is very large, is nothing better than a desert. In proportion as one advances into the country, scarce any thing is seen but forests and wild beasts. The people, who are miserable, dwell on the banks of the rivers, and prefer that situation to any other, because the lands, which are overflowed six months in the year, produce, almost without any culture, great quantities of rice, which does not thrive but in water. In this rice consist all the riches of the country. Thus in going up from *Bangkok* to *Jong*, is seen, with respect to the people and the cities, that can merit any attention in this kingdom. Haughtiness, despotism, and an absolute government, are the only marks by which the prince chuses to be distinguished from all other sovereigns. The respect which he demands of his people reaches almost to adoration, and the posture in which they must appear in his presence is a testimony of it. Even in council, which lasts sometimes four hours, the ministers of state, and the mandarins, are continually prostrated before him. They never speak to him but on their knees, having their hands raised to their heads, making every moment

profound reverences, and accompanying their discourse with pompous titles, celebrating his power and his goodness. When he goes abroad, all are obliged to keep within doors. His subjects are slaves, who possess nothing but what belongs to him. Even nobility is not hereditary, consisting only in honours and employments, which the prince bestows, and which he may withdraw whenever he pleases.

Kingdom
of Ma-
lacca.

THE king of *Siam's* dominions stretch southward to the neighbourhood of *Ligor*, where the kingdom of *Malacca* begins. This country is that peninsula or tongue of land which lies between the strait of that name and the gulph of *Siam*. Some travellers assure us, that it is divided into seven kingdoms, every one of which may be about ten leagues in breadth, and thirty in length. It was discovered in 1509, by *Seguera*: and in 1511, by *Alphonso Albuquerque*, who made himself master of the city of *Malacca*. The *Dutch*, supported by the forces of the king of *Thor*, in 1606, began to disturb the *Portuguese* in their possession, and after thirty-five years of continual hostilities, took it from them in 1641.

THE inhabitants of *Malacca*, or the *Malais*, are, for the most part, savages, and live after the manner of beasts. The heat of the climate, which is almost under the Line, renders their colour extremely swarthy; and they are very fond of *Europeans* on account of their whiteness. As soon as they arrive on their coasts, they offer them their wives and daughters, that they may have children like them. Notwithstanding the barbarity of their manners, their language is reckoned the finest in all the *Indies*, where it is at least as common as the *French* in *Europe*. It is very easily acquired, because it has no inflections, either in nouns or verbs. The country is rich only on account of its commerce with the *Chinese*: it must then have been through ignorance or mistake, that the ancients gave it the name of the *Golden Chersonese*; or rather it is evident they did not give it to that kingdom. Yet we are told by some missionaries, that they reckon their riches by bars of gold; and that every bar contains four quintars.

King-
dom
of Cam-
boia.

IN the south and west by the sea, and the dominions of the king of *Siam*, lies the kingdom of *Camboia*. This country, which throughout its whole extent is watered by the river *Mecon*, produces in abundance all that is necessary for the life of man, whether in rice or flesh, in cocoas, or fruits of all other kind. Yet it is ill-peopled, and its trade inconsiderable. The capital of the same name, is the only place which deserves notice. The prince resides in a very ordinary palace, but it is defended by a great number of *Chinese* cannon and other pieces of artillery which were saved from the wreck

wreck of two *Dutch* vessels thrown upon the coast of this kingdom. There is a temple here of a very particular structure, whose beauty is much commended. It is supported by wooden pillars varnished with black; the foliages and reliefs are gilded: even the pavement is valuable, and is preserved by mats laid over it. The priests who serve in it hold the first rank in the state.

THE use of betel is not peculiar to the people of this country; nothing is so common throughout the *Indies*, and bread is not more so in other places of the world. It is a plant which creeps along the ground like peas or hops; and its stalk being weak, it must be supported by a prop, or planted near the tree areca, to which it fixes itself like ivy. Its leaf resembles that of the citron-tree, though a little longer; its stalks and fibres are also stronger, and it becomes reddish when dried. Betel thrives best in watery places, such as the banks of the sea or rivers. There it bears a fruit shaped like a rat's tail, but produces none in climates too hot or too cold, where the inhabitants must be contented with the leaf, which is prepared with the fruit of the areca, and a little lime made of oyster-shells. An *Indian* is seldom seen without betel in his mouth. As soon as any one goes into a house on business, or to make a visit, it is brought and presented to the company by way of compliment. When foreign ambassadors are admitted to an audience of the king, they find him commonly reposing on his couch, or seated cross-legged on a carpet on the ground with an officer in waiting, who holds his betel, which he chews continually, throwing out the husks and the saliva which it produces. The greatest honour he can do them is to invite them to taste his betel. The *Indians* say it fastens the gums, preserves the teeth, makes the breath sweet, is good for the stomach, promotes digestion, prevents wind and vomiting, to which they are very subject, and lastly, prevents the scurvy. Notwithstanding all those real or imaginary properties, few *Europeans* can accustom themselves to it. In many occasions sickness, others it perfectly intoxicates, but so as not to last long.

THE areca, which is used with the leaves of the betel, is from a tree nearly resembling the cocoa in height and shape, except that its trunk is smaller, and its leaves shorter. From beneath the leaves there proceeds a long mass, which forms a bunch or cluster of fruit like nuts or apricots: the flowers lie intermingled with the fruit. Two months after the flowers fall off, the husks which cover the fruit, begin to open and fall off: then an oblong fruit appears, of the

bulk of a middling plum, and of a whitish and shining colour; its shell becomes firm, compact, and reddish; the pulp contained in it is of a brown cast, bordering on red, and soft and astringent to the taste. The *Indians* prepare the pulp, or kernel, of this fruit with the leaves of the betel, dividing a nut into eight or ten parts.

*Kingdoms
of Ciam-
pa and
Cochin-
China.*

SOUTH-EAST of the kingdom of *Camboia* lies that of *Ciampa*, but so small, that it has not merited the particular attention of travellers. It is bounded on the north by the deserts of *Cochin-China*, another kingdom, of which authors have given us a notion more splendid than real. We ought, therefore, to prefer the simple and ingenious account of *F. Alexander of Rhodes*, a Jesuit, and famous missionary in those parts. This kingdom, according to him, was formerly a province of *China*, and was separated from it now upwards of two centuries ago, by the revolt of a governor sent thither by the king of *Tonquin*, who caused himself to be declared king. There is no country in the torrid zone wherein the four seasons are better distinguished. Though the rivers are not considerable, they are sources of its plenty. During the months of *September*, *October*, and *November*, they rise every fortnight, overflow all the fields for three days, and render them so fertile by their slime, that they can sow and reap twice a year. The soil produces rice, several sorts of fruits and herbs, pepper, cinnamon, benjoin, eagle, and calemba-wood. Gold, silver, silk, cotton, and porcelain, are likewise to be found here. Amongst other rare animals, are rhinoceros's and elephants, of an extraordinary size and surprising docility. The sea abounds with excellent fish. There are sixty good harbours, which occasion the inhabitants to apply themselves much to trade and navigation; that of *Faiso* is one of the most considerable. The city is inhabited by *Chinese* and *Japanese*, who carry on a free trade under the protection of the prince. It is defended by a fortress, and situated on a navigable river, a little above its mouth.

*Kingdom
of Ton-
quin*

NORTHWARD of *Cochin-China* lies the kingdom of *Tonquin*. The voyages to this place which religion and commerce have given occasion to, have procured us a very circumstantial knowledge of the government and nature of this country. *Tonquin* had been heretofore subject to the vast empire of *China*, when a famous robber, called *Bi*, put himself at the head of a body of men of his own profession, into whom he inspired the resolution of taking up arms, and throwing off the yoke of all servitude. He succeeded, and those whom he engaged in the revolt, out of

gratitude, placed the crown upon his head. The happiness which the *Tonquinese* flattered themselves to have acquired by their independence, became to them a source of miseries and cruel wars, still more pernicious than their former subjection to the *Chinese* emperors. For seven centuries after their revolt, they were almost continually in arms, one against another, in support of the different factions which ambition and jealousy had raised up among them; and the families on the throne have been already changed six times.

THE issue of the last civil war, was a treaty, by which the competitor of the king *Le*, less desirous of the title of sovereign than of real power and royal authority, left him all the external splendor of a monarch, on condition that he should have the absolute command in the armies, with the greatest part of the revenues of the kingdom, and that his descendants should succeed to the same privileges. By virtue of this agreement, there are two sorts of kings; he who receives all the honours of royalty is called *Bua*, and the *Chouah* has all its advantages. The *Bua*, sensible of the diminution of his power, is seldom seen out of his palace. He is taken up almost every day in giving audience to his subjects, hearing their complaints, and determining their private differences; which is the utmost extent of his power, for he can set forth no act or edict concerning the public government, without the consent of the *Chouah*. The princes, his sons, partake of his servitude: they never go out of the palace but four times a year, and that only six days each time; and they are, besides, attended by officers whom the *Chouah* appoints for them. In the first of those six days of liberty, they visit the temples; the two following they take the diversion of hunting; and, during the three last, they sail upon the river in galleys magnificently adorned. The right of primogeniture does not regulate the succession to the crown; the will of the father decides it in favour of him whom he loves or esteems most. As soon as he is declared, the *Chouah*, followed by his principal officers, the counsellors of state, and the eunuchs, do him homage, and take an oath to place him on the throne after his father's death.

THE pomp and magnificence of all the ceremonies observed at the king's funeral, are very extraordinary. During the sixty-five days that follow his decease, he is served as if still alive, and provisions are distributed amongst the bonzes and poor. The whole nation puts on mourning, and every one wears it according to his rank: the mandarins

rins for three years; the king's household nine months, the nobles six, and the people three. These three years are times of sadness, during which no rejoicings are allowed, except at the coronation of the succeeding prince. The custom is to carry the body of the dead king into the deserts lying beyond *Bodego*. It is two days journey from *Keco*, the capital of the kingdom, to that city. But, as the king and all the court go thither on foot, it takes them up fifteen or sixteen days. All the road is covered with a stuff of a violet colour, and at every quarter of a league there are places for refreshment. The *Chouah* takes care that there shall be lodgings for every day. In the midst of an immense and magnificent retinue of officers, horses, and elephants, is the chariot which carries the king's coffin, drawn by eight barts trained for that purpose. After the corps comes to *Bodego*, it is put into a galley, and is attended only by the six principal eunuchs of the court, who inter it in a remote place, after having obliged themselves by oath never to reveal it. This secrecy is, perhaps, an article of religion, or a precaution to prevent the treasures buried with him from being carried off, which they imagine he may have an occasion for in the other world. It is said, that the princes and princesses order themselves to be buried near him, out of a motive of gratitude, and that they may continue to render him their services.

AFTER this funereal ceremony comes on the coronation of the new king, which diffuses pleasures and diversions over the city of *Keco* and the country about. He is carried upon an elephant into the great court of the palace, which is covered with rich tapestries in form of a tent, and there he receives the oath of fidelity from the great men of the kingdom, to whom he makes a present of several cakes of gold, and small bars of silver, the only money used in this country. Afterwards, a large camp is erected in the midst of a vast plain along the river *Chale*. The king goes thither with all the officers of his household, and a great part of the army, and there receives the oaths of the deputies of his kingdom, and of the people. One half of the month passes away in rejoicings; every day is remarkable for the diversity of festivals, and the generosity of the prince; even the darkness of the night is not unemployed; for then the amusement of various scenes of fireworks charm the senses, which are said to be infinitely finer and more curious than those we have in *Europe*.

Thus particular species of ingenuity as well as many are a consequence of the emulation which the kings
of

of *Tanquin*, like those of *China*, have encouraged amongst their subjects, in order to refine and improve all the sciences. Nobility, with suitable revenues, is the reward of those who excel in the knowledge of the laws, of mathematics, astronomy, and natural philosophy. Several days in the year are set apart for the examination of those who present themselves, and sometimes there are near 3000 candidates. The king honours this ceremony with his presence; he confers nobility on those who have given satisfaction to the questions of the mandarins; he orders a robe of violet satin to be given them, and appoints the cities and villages which are to produce the revenues he is pleased to assign them.

THE physicians are another class of the learned, and much esteemed; all their study is to know simples, and to apply them according to the different distempers. They pretend to infallible remedies for several diseases thought to be incurable in *Europe*. They make use of tea, which is brought from *China* and *Japan*, for the cure of pains in the head, the stone, and cholic.

WHERE the arts flourish, it seldom happens that the manners of the people are rough and unpolished. The *Tonquinese* are affable, and naturally formed to the laws of reason. The gravity and modesty of their garb, shews their character. Both sexes are clothed almost in the same manner: their dress is a long robe, pretty strait, with a close neck, reaching down to the heels, and kept tight about the waist with a silk girdle of gold and silver tissue: the military dress comes no farther than the knees. It is the common custom of the country to go barefooted all the year. The *Tonquinese* ladies are as modest and reserved as the common women are free; they wear a sort of very broad hat, made of the leaves of a tree, and adorned with a net-work of thread curiously wrought. They wear their hair as long as it will grow, dress it with great care; the men tie it under the neck, or leave it loose behind, especially the mandarins and learned men. They are of a strong and hardy constitution, their stature middling and well-proportioned, their features just and agreeable. Those who live in the cities are rather white than brown, but the country people are almost all olive-coloured. All are indefatigable in whatever business they apply to. Their judgment is just, and they are capable of long application. Nature has blessed them with so happy a memory, that, perhaps, there is no nation which surpasses them in that particular; whatever they study or write, all is done singing, in order to imprint it the bet-

ter on their minds. They still make use of lunar months. The lower class of people are slaves during one part of the year; for, except the citizens of *Keco*, all tradesmen whatever are obliged to work three months for the royal family, and two more for the mandarins and great lords. One of their most laborious employments is to lop the trees for feeding the elephants belonging to the king and the army. Their principal riches consist in great quantities of silk, musk, and aloes-wood, which they sell to foreigners: they value themselves much on their fairness in trade, which is the more surprising, as they are neighbours to the *Chinese*, and have frequent dealings with that cunning people, who are versed in all manner of deceit.

THESE are the advantageous lights in which the *Tonquinese* appear; but, when we take a view of their worship, the scene is changed: nothing is seen but error, impiety, and extravagant superstition. Of the three sects into which they are divided, that of a hermit, called *Chachabout*, might be considered as the only reasonable one, by the observation of the precepts of the law of nature, of which he has made ten express commandments, if it was not corrupted by imaginations and chimeras founded on the metempsychosis, and if it did not bring up its votaries in idolatry. The second is, that of the philosopher *Confucius*, whose memory is so famous throughout *China* and the neighbouring states. The doctrine of his books, as explained by the learned men of this country, is nothing but idolatry, or, perhaps, a refined atheism, acknowledging no other God but the heavens, or virtue, and supposing, that the human soul evaporates into air at death. The third sect is, that of *Lanthu*, originally a *Chinese*, whose whole study was the contriving of enchantments, and the impostures of magic, which he unhappily rendered respected by a false outside of zeal and charity for the poor. Most of the bonzes, or *Tonquinese* priests, offer no sacrifices, and give no responses till they have consulted the devil by some magic charms, or ceremonies, all tending to that wicked purpose.

Indian
and Ori-
ental
islands.

WE now come to the *Indian* and *Oriental* islands, which consist of, 1. The *Ladrone-Islands*. 2. The *Japan-Islands*. 3. The *Philippina-Islands*. 4. The *Moluccas* and *Ambeyna*. 5. The *Banda-Islands*. 6. The islands of *Celebes*, *Gilolo*, *Ceram*, &c. which surround the *Moluccas* and *Banda-Islands*. 7. The *Sunda-Islands*, as *Borneo*, *Sumatra*, and *Java*, and those that lie to the eastward of *Java*, *Bally*, *Lomboe*, *Timor*, &c. 8. The *Nicobar-Islands*. 9. The *Andaman-Islands*. 10. The *Maldiva-Islands*. And 11. The island of *Ceylon*.

THE

THE *Ladrone*, called also the *Marian-Islands*, are about *Ladrone*-twelve in number; they are situate in the *Pacific-Ocean*, in *Islands*.

140 degrees of east longitude, and between 12 and 24 deg. of north latitude. *Guam*, the largest, is forty miles long and twelve broad. The *Spaniards* have a fort, and a small garrison of thirty or forty men, in the chief town of the same name; and most ships touch here in their voyage from *Mexico* to the *East-Indies*. These islands were discovered by *Magellan*, in his voyage to the *Spice-Islands*, in *India*, by the west, in the year 1521. They are remarkable for producing a fruit as big as a football, which yields a soft pulp like the crumb of a white loaf, and is therefore called bread-fruit by seamen. Their swift-sailing sloops, going generally twenty-four miles in an hour, is another peculiarity. One of them that was dispatched to *Manila* in the *Philippine-Islands* performed the voyage in four days, being 1200 miles. It was at the little island of *Timian*, situate north of *Guam*, that lord *Anson* first touched, after passing the *Pacific-Ocean*, in his voyage round the world. He found great refreshments in it, the island, though uninhabited, abounding in cattle, fruits, and other necessaries. The *Japan-Islands* may be seen described in the same chapter with *China*.

THE *Philippine-Islands* are situate in the *Chinesian-Sea*, Philip-
pine-
Islands. between 114 and 131 deg. of east longitude, and between 5 and 19 of north latitude; comprehending the islands of *Luconia*, or *Manila*, *Tandaga*, or *Samar*, *Mosbato*, *Mindona*, *Luban*, *Paragoa*, *Panay*, *Leyte*, *Bohol*, *Sibu*, *Sogbu*, *Negros*, *St. John*, *Xollo*, and *Mindanao*. They lie 300 miles south-east of *China*: and *Manila*, the chief, is 400 miles long, and 200 broad. They were discovered by *Ferdinand Magellan*, a Portuguese gentleman, who had served his native country both in the wars of *Africa* and in the *East-Indies*; particularly under *Albuquerque*, the famous Portuguese general, who reduced *Goa* and *Malacca* to the obedience of that crown. *Magellan*, having a considerable share in those actions, and finding himself neglected by the government of *Portugal*, and even denied, as it is said, the small advance of a month in his pay; left the court of *Portugal* in disgust, and offered his service to *Charles V.* then emperor of *Germany* and king of *Spain*, to whom he shewed there was a probability of discovering a way to the *Spice Islands* in the *East Indies*, by the west: whereupon, the command of five small ships being given him, he set sail from *Seville* on the 10th of *August*, 1519; and, standing over to the coast of *South-America*, continued his voyage to the southward to 52 deg. where he formerly hit upon a strait, since called

the Strait of Magellan, which carried him into the Pacific Ocean, or South-Sea; and then, steering northward, repassed the Equator; after which, he sailed west over that vast ocean, till he arrived at Guam, one of the Ladrões, on the 6th of March, 1521, and soon after came to the Philippine-Islands, which he took possession of in the name of the king of Spain, but happened to be killed in a skirmish in one of them. His people, however, arrived afterwards at the Moluccas, or Clove Islands, where they left a colony, and returned to Spain, by the way of the Cape of Good Hope, being the first men that ever sailed round the globe. But there was no attempt made by the Spaniards to subduer or plant, the Philippine Islands, until the year 1564, in the reign of Philip II. king of Spain, when don Lewis de Velasco, viceroy of Mexico, sent Michael Lopez Delagasspes, with a fleet thither from Mexico, and a force sufficient to make a conquest of these islands, which he named the Philippines, in honour of Philip II. son of Charles V. who was then upon the throne of Spain, and they have ever since been subject to that crown.

In the late war, Spain having entered into engagements with France, in consequence of the Family Compact of the house of Bourbon, it was found expedient in England to declare war also against Spain; whereupon a force was fitted out from our East-India settlements, particularly Madras, for the conquest of the Philippine-Islands. Manila, the capital, was taken on the 6th of October, 1762, by storm, after twelve days operation; but to save so fine a city from destruction, it was stipulated to pay a ransom for it, to the amount of a million sterling.

THE inhabitants of the Philippine-Islands consist of Chinese, Ethiopians, Malais, Spaniards, Portuguese, Pintados, or painted people, and Mestees, a mixture of all these. It is observable, that the features of the blacks of these islands are as agreeable as those of the white people. Manila, lying between the eastern and western continents, was once esteemed the best situation in the world for trade. Two vessels sailing yearly to Acapulco in Mexico, loaded with the riches of the East, returned, as they do at this day, freighted with silver, and make 400 per cent profit. There is not a soil in the world that produces greater plenty of all things necessary for life, as appears by the multitude of inhabitants found in the woods and mountains, and only subsisted by the fruits of the earth, and the venison they take. Nor can any country in the world appear more beautiful: for there is a perpetual verdure, and buds, blossoms, and

fruit, are found upon the trees all the year round, as well on the mountains as the cultivated gardens. Vast quantities of gold are washed down from the hills by the rains, and found mixed with the sand of their rivers: there are also mines of other metals, and plenty of cattle of all sorts. These islands also, being hot and moist, produce abundance of venomous creatures, as the soil does poisonous herbs and flowers, which not only kill those that touch or taste them, but so infect the air, that many people die in the time of their blossoming. They are also subject to terrible earthquakes: by one that happened in 1645, a third part of the city of *Manila* was overthrown, and no less than 3000 people perished in the ruins. The *Spanish* viceroy resides at *Manila*, and lives in the state of a sovereign prince. The present viceroy is an archbishop, and the same who agreed to surrender these islands to general *Draper* and admiral *Cornish*, who commanded on the expedition. The government is said to be one of the best in the gift of the king of *Spain*: the archbishop is a kind of pope in this part of the world; but as the inhabitants are a compound of every *Indian* nation, every religion is tolerated.

ALL the *Philippine-Islands* belong to the crown of *Spain*, except *Mindanao*, the largest of them next to *Manila*. It is near 200 miles long, and 150 broad, inhabited by very different people; those of the inland country are supposed to be the ancient Pagan inhabitants, whom the *Mohamedans*, who possess the coasts, have driven up into the mountains.

THE *Moluccas*, or *Clove-Islands*, are situate south of the *Moluccas*, *Philippines*, in 125 degrees of east longitude, and between or *Clove-* 1 degree south, and 2 degrees north latitude, comprehending the islands of *Lachiam*, *Machiam*, *Motyr*, *Ternate*, and *Tytor*. They produce neither corn nor rice, but the natives make bread of sago. Besides the tropical fruits, they once produced great quantities of cloves; but the *Dutch* send people every year to root up all the plants of that kind, lest other nations should possess them, and have transplanted the cloves to *Anboyna*, which lies south of the island of *Ceram*. The east of the *Molucca-Islands* is *Ternate*, which is not thirty miles in circumference.

THE *Banda*, or *Nutmeg-Islands*, are situate between 127 *Banda-* and 128 degrees of east longitude, and between 4 and 5 deg. *Islands.* of south latitude, comprehending the islands of *Lantor*, *Paleron*, *Rosising*, *Pooloway*, and *Gonapi*. These alone produce the nutmeg, which is covered by the mace: they also produce most of the tropical fruits, but scarce any corn or cattle; the largest of them is scarce twenty miles round. The

The *Dutch* keep the inhabitants entirely dependent on them for their provisions.

*Islands
surround-
ing the
Moluccas
and Ban-
da.*

Amboyna.

THE islands surrounding the *Moluccas* and *Banda*, and lying under, or near the Equator, are, *Amboyna*, *Celebes*, or *Macassar*, *Gilolo*, *Ceram*, *Flores*, *Timor*, *Mijacomby*, *Bouton*, *Bouro*, and a few others.

AMBOYNA is situate in 126 degrees of east longitude, and 3. 40. of south latitude, between the islands of *Molucca* and *Banda*, and commands both. It is about seventy miles in circumference, and the *Dutch* have a strong castle in it, defended by 7 or 800 men, to protect their plantations of cloves. Here the *English* and *Dutch* had their respective factories and settlements, and had by treaty agreed to divide the *Spice-Islands* between them; but the *Dutch*, under pretence of a plot the *English* were concerned in against them, seized upon the *English* factors and merchants, tortured them by all the cruel methods they could invent, in order to make them confess a plot, and then put them to death. They also seized upon the *English* shipping, expelled the *English* from their settlements in the *Banda-Islands*, which had put themselves under the protection of the king of *Great-Britain*, and proceeded to massacre and extirpate the natives, and this in a time of full peace, in the year 1622, just after a treaty was concluded between the two nations for confirming their respective rights and possessions in the *East-Indies*; and they have continued in possession of these invaluable islands ever since.

*Celebes,
Gilolo,
Ceram,
&c.*

THE island of *Celebes*, or *Macassar*, is situate under the Equator, between the island of *Borneo*, and the *Spice Islands*; and is 500 miles long, and 200 broad. It produces no spice, except pepper, but opium in abundance. No place is furnished with a greater variety of poisons; and the natives, it is said, study which will have the most speedy operation. Their darts, which are dipped in poison, give instant death; if a limb be cut off immediately after the wound is received, it will not save the patient's life. The *Dutch* have fortified this island, as a barrier against all nations that may attempt to visit the islands where cloves and nutmegs grow. *Ceram*, another large island, which lies under the Equator, near the *Spice-Islands*, is fortified by the *Dutch* in like manner. *Ceram* also, which covers the nutmeg islands, they have secured by their fortifications, and will sink any ship that shall attempt to traffic in those seas.

*Sonda-
Islands.*

THE *Sunda-Islands* are situate in the *Indian Ocean*, between 93 and 120 degrees of east longitude, and between 8 deg. north, and 8 deg. south latitude, comprehending the

islands of *Borneo, Sumatra, Java, Bally, Lamboc, and Banca.*

BORNEO is situate under the Equator, and is the largest island in the world, being 800 miles long, and 700 broad. The flat country near the coast is overflowed most part of the year, which makes the air very unhealthful; and they build their towns upon floats in the middle of their rivers. Besides rice, cotton, canes, pepper, and the tropical fruits, diamonds are here found of a large size, and excellent water. The coast is governed by Mohammedan princes, and the inland parts inhabited by Pagans.

SUMATRA is divided into two equal parts by the Equator, extending five degrees and upwards north-west of it, and five to the south-east; and is 1000 miles long, and 150 broad. This is supposed to be the *Ophir* of the ancients, being rich in gold; but what the *Europeans* trade with the inhabitants chiefly for is their pepper. Both the *English* and *Dutch* have several colonies and settlements here: the chief of the *British* settlements are those of *Bencoolen* and *Fort Marlborough*, on the west coast, from whence the *East-India* company import more pepper than from any other country in *India*. *Bencoolen* was taken in the late war by the *French*, who put the *Dutch* in possession of it; but the definitive treaty of peace has since recovered it for the *English*. The coasts are possessed by Mohammedan, and the inland country by Pagan princes.

JAVA, situate south of *Borneo*, is 700 miles long, and 200 broad. The country is mountainous and woody in the middle, but a flat coast and a great many marshes render the air unhealthful. It produces pepper, sugar, tobacco, rice, coffee, cocoa-nuts, plantains, and other tropical fruits. The *Dutch* are absolute masters of the greatest part of the island, particularly of the north-coast, though there are still some princes beyond the mountains on the south-coast, who maintain their independency. *Batavia*, in this island, is the capital of all the *Dutch* dominions in *India*, an exceeding fine town and port, well fortified, and defended by a castle and strong garrison: they have about 20,000 forces in the island, either *Dutch*, or formed out of the several nations they have enslaved; and they have a fleet of between twenty and thirty men of war, with which they give law to every power on the coast of *Asia* and *Africa*, and to all the *European* powers that visit the *Indian Ocean*. It was but a little before the Revolution they expelled us our settlement at *Bantam*; but no nation has been dealt more cruelly with than the *Chinese*, who fled thither, rather than submit to the *Tartar* princes.

There

There are 100,000 of them in the island, and about 30,000 resided in the city of *Batavia*, where they had a particular quarter assigned them, and grew very rich by traffic. In the year 1740, the *Dutch*, pretending that the *Chinese* were in a plot against them, sent a body of troops into their quarter, and demanded their arms, which the *Chinese* readily delivered up; and the next day the governor sent another body of troops, with orders to murder and massacre every one of the *Chinese*, men, women, and children. Some relate, there were 20,000, others 30,000, that were put to death without any manner of trial; and yet the barbarous governor, who was the instrument of this cruel proceeding, had the audacity to embark for *Europe*, imagining, he had amassed wealth enough to secure him against any prosecution in *Holland*; but the *Dutch*, finding themselves detested and abhorred by all mankind for this piece of tyranny, endeavoured to throw the odium of it on the governor, though he had the hands of all the council of *Batavia*, except one, to the order for the massacre. The states, therefore, dispatched a packet to the *Cape of Good-Hope*, containing orders to apprehend the governor of *Batavia*, if he came to *Europe* that way, and to send him back to *Batavia* to be tried. He was accordingly apprehended at the *Cape*, but has never been heard of since. It is supposed, he was thrown over-board in his passage to *Batavia*, that there might be no further enquiries into the matter; and it is said, all the wealth this merciful gentleman had amassed, and sent over before him in four ships, was cast away in the passage. The rest of the *Sunda-Islands* are inconsiderable.

Andaman and Nico- THE *Andaman* and *Nicebar-Islands* lie near the coast of *Malacca*, at the entrance of the bay of *Bengal*; they afford no merchandize but provisions, besides the tropical fruits, with which they supply the shipping that touch there.

Maldivia- THE *Maldivia-Islands* consist of numberless little rocks, just above the water, lying between the Equator and *Cape Comorin*, in the *Hither-India*, and afford little more than rice, the tropical fruits, and fish; besides the little shells called cowries, which serve instead of small cash in most of the *Indian* nations.

Island of *CEYLON*, is the last island of note in this part of the world. It is situated about 45 leagues from *Cape Comorin*, between the 6th and 10th degree of north latitude and between the 79th and 82d degree of east longitude; and is about sixty leagues long, and above 200 in circumference. Some imagine it to be the *Taprobana* of the ancients. It was first discovered by the *Portuguese* in 1506, and in 1602, began

to be visited by the *Dutch*, who; encouraged and assisted by the natives, successively seized all the forts possessed by the *Portuguese*, whom they drove quite out of the island in 1657, by the reduction of *Colombo*, the handsomest and strongest town in *Ceylon*. In 1672, the *French* made an attempt to settle on this island; and the king of *Candi* desirous of employing them against the *Dutch*, as he had formerly employed the *Dutch* against the *Portuguese*, had ceded to them by treaty the port of *Gottiar*, situated at the bottom of the bay of *Trinquemaille*, on the east side of the island; but the enterprize failed, so the *Dutch* company remained sole masters of the coasts, and of the cinnamon trade; but were still on bad terms with the natives, who continually reproached them with their knavery, and would place no confidence in them. The seeds of discontent once sown seldom fail to shoot out. The *Dutch* on their side were continually bent upon oppressing and enslaving the natives; their inherent temper; wherever they have any power, can never shew them in the character of lenity: at last their repeated cruelties caused the natives to rise and destroy most of them, with the plantations of cinnamon and other spices. This happened lately in the year 1761. Whether they have since repossessed themselves intirely of their settlements in this island is uncertain; they have at least endeavoured to do so, and it is likely they have got some footing again, having had for a considerable time none to oppose them but the natives:

CEYLON produces many things besides cinnamon, with which the inhabitants might carry on a great trade; such as long pepper, cotton, ivory, several drugs and roots useful in dying and in medicine, cardamum, mirabolans, silk, tobacco, ebony, excellent timber for building, lead ore, betel, wild honey, musk, wax, crystal, saltpetre, sulphur, sugar, corcoma, rice, of which the *Dutch* carry a great quantity to the coast of *Cormandel*. iron, steel, copper, gold and silver, all sorts of precious stones, except diamonds; and, lastly, elephants. Indeed, the mines of gold and silver are prohibited to be worked, the precious stones are all reserved for the king; and sulphur and saltpetre are not allowed to be exported, but are refined on the island: whence the commerce of the *Dutch* may be said to be confined almost to cinnamon; and even for this they trade only with the natives adjoining to their settlements, who are kept under subjection by the awe of their garrisons. The cinnamon tree does not grow on all parts of the island, some parts produce very few trees, and others none at all. What is called the cinnamon-field, which be-

longs wholly to the *Dutch*, lies between *Negambo* and *Gallies*, comprehending the west and south coasts of the island. The best cinnamon grows in the neighbourhood of *Colombo* and *Negambo*; that at *Point de Galles* is pretty good; the rest is middling. Cinnamon is divided into three sorts; finest, middling, and coarse. The best is taken from young trees; and as the trees advance in years, the bark degenerates. The trees multiply very fast, and almost without culture: but the *Dutch*, to keep up the value of cinnamon, obstruct their propagation. The *Dutch* also export a considerable number of elephants from *Ceylon* to *India*, where they are much valued, the smallest selling for upwards of fifty guineas, and the largest for about seventy pounds sterling. Their teeth are larger, whiter, and of a finer grain than any that come from *India* or *Africa*.

BEFORE the *Europeans* appeared in *India*, the *Chinese* were masters of the trade of *Ceylon*; afterwards the *Persians*, *Arabs*, and *Ethiopians* came in for a share of it; at last the *Dutch* excluded all other nations.

Some reflections on Asia in general.

ASIA has much the advantage over the other three parts of the world in respect to fertility, opulence, and populousness, except where the tyranny of the government has laid an invincible obstacle on them. With regard to its soil, it is plain that nature has been extremely munificent to it, and that it abundantly repays all the cost and labour expended on it, both in the quantity and quality of its produce; and that the grain and fruit it yields, are by far more delicious than those of *Europe*, and in much greater plenty and variety. This is visible by what has been said of *Persia*, *China*, *Japan*, and some other parts, where the lands are hereditary, and every owner encouraged to make the best of every spot; whereas, in those vast tracts of *Asia* which groan under the *Turkish* yoke, though naturally as rich and fruitful, at least they were so in better times, and under easier governments, scarce one tenth part is turned to the advantage it formerly was, and might still be, with proper encouragement. This is a plain indication, that it is not the pretended natural indigence of the inhabitants, but the precarious property of the lands, that makes so many rich and fruitful countries lie uncultivated, so many once opulent cities and provinces either intirely laid waste, or so poorly inhabited in the latter; whilst, in the former, where property is secured to the industrious owner, every country is well tilled, and full of inhabitants; and among these, a much greater number of ingenious men than of rude and idle, who take pleasure in exerting their application to trades,

trades, manufactures, and all sorts of commerce, all which must naturally rise and fall, according to the good or bad principles that constitute the policy of the government.

Now, considering the state of arts, religious rites, and civil institutions, as spread over the face of our globe, it will appear from the lights we have concerning these matters, that *Asia* has originally contributed to the peopling of the other parts, and that consequently a good argument may be deduced from hence in favour of the truth of the *Mosaic* history. According to the scriptures, the whole race of mankind issued from thence at two periods, first, on the expulsion of *Adam* from *Eden*, a place situated near the *Tigris* and *Euphrates*; and secondly, when the earth was repopled upon the descent of *Noah* from the ark at *Mount Ararat*, a considerable eminence likewise in *Asia*. *Moses* himself has informed us concerning the first inhabitation of many of the eastern countries, and of the names and extraction of the first planters of them; but what is most remarkable in the case, the most ancient histories and accounts we have, those of *Moses* excepted, are concerning such countries and kingdoms as lie in the eastern parts of the world, such as *Egypt*, *China*, *Babylon*, &c. clearly shewing, according to the *Mosaic* account of things, that these places were the first inhabited, and the first cultivated. Hence, it would be no difficult matter to evince the progress of arts and sciences, of religious usages, and civil customs; and even to trace the introduction of many trees, plants, and animals from the same quarter into the more western parts.

THE rite of sacrifice prevailed in the eastern *Asia*, and from thence was brought into the western, and into *Egypt*, *Greece*, and *Rome*. The law of matrimony, instituted at first in the East, spread itself afterwards all over the West; and if it was the custom in *Persia* and *Egypt*, and in some parts of *Greece*, for a brother to marry a sister, it is very natural to suppose, that even this practice might be taken up from what necessarily passed under the first race of men. The rite of circumcision descended from *Abraham* into *Egypt* and *Arabia*. Polytheism or idolatry was a very ancient corruption of the eastern *Asiatics*, being at least as old as *Serug*; and we find it spread over *Asia-Minor*, *Egypt*, and *Greece*, though in different modes. As to *Greece*, it seems first to have come into *Crete*, where *Jupiter*, whose age is sufficiently ascertained, both lived and reigned. The institution of the sabbath, or the rest of one day in seven, is as old as the creation, and accompanied *Noah* into the ark; and the *Greeks*, and other ancients, though more western nations, had it among them.

The Conclusion of

Thus again, we have very early accounts in scripture of the practice of hunting, which yet in appearance did not arrive in *Greece* till the time of *Diana*, a daughter of *Jupiter*. The *Asiatics* had corn of every kind; and the time is in a manner known when it was first brought into *Greece*, being introduced by *Ceres*, who taught *Triptolemus* the method of its cultivation. The *Greeks* before then lived upon fruits, acorns, plants, and roots. The *Asiatics* also had the vine, which *Bacchus* meeting with in his excursions eastward, he brought into *Europe*, and for his service in that respect, had a place assigned him amongst the Gods, as the case had been before with *Diana* and *Ceres*. The olive, we must suppose, was unknown in *Europe* till the building of *Athens*, as likewise was the horse; when, on occasion of the fabulous contest between *Minerva* and *Neptune* about the patronage of that city, she produced the olive, and he the horse; whereas both had been long known before in the eastern parts of the world. The art of ship-building was begun by *Noah* in the fabrication of the ark, and was revived from thence in the maritime parts of *Phœnicia*, from whence it was brought, perhaps by *Tiphys*, into *Greece*, and thence travelled westward, if it had not done so before by means of the *Phœnicians*. Music was not known in *Greece* till the time of *Apollo*, *Mercury*, and *Pan*, and yet was in *Asia* an antediluvian science. The same may be said of the use of metals, which seem not to have been manufactured in *Greece* till the age of *Vulcan*, son of *Jupiter*. Alphabetical letters, it is well known, were brought into *Greece* by *Cadmus* the *Phœnician*. The cock, that most useful creature, and consequently the hen, came originally into *Greece* from *Persia*, as appears from *Aristophanes*, and other authors. The pheasant takes its name from the river *Phasis* in *Asia*, which plainly shews the country from whence the *Greeks* and *Romans* received this fowl. The turkey, an eastern bird, as the name itself shews, did not get into *England* till the reign of king *Henry VIII.* The *French* call this fowl "Coq d'Inde," or the *Indian* cock, which shews, that it was not known amongst them till after the discovery of the *Indies*. Cherries, as *Pliny* tells us, were brought from *Pontus* into *Italy* by *Lucullus*. *Pliny* also has traced the several stages of the plane-tree from *Syria* through the *Grecian* islands, till it arrived in *Italy*, and passed thence to the western parts of *Gaul*. All these particulars tend to shew, that the progress of things, has, in fact, been from east to west, and that the emigrants for peopling the western parts had of course brought their arts and sciences, and inventions, fruits,

fruits, animals, vegetables, religion, and languages, in part along with them; and what they had not at first brought, they afterwards endeavoured, if possible, to supply themselves with.

S E C T. II.

Of Africa.

C H A P. I.

Of Africa in General.

AFRICA, one of the four principal parts of the world, lies south of *Europe*, and west of *Asia*, and is bounded on the north by the *Mediterranean*, which parts it from the former; and on the east by the *Red Sea*, which separates it from the latter, to which it only joins by that small isthmus, or neck of land, which cuts off the communication between these two seas, and is commonly known by the name of *Suez*. On the south and west, it is surrounded with the main ocean, so that it may be properly stiled a vast overgrown peninsula, joined only to the continent of *Asia* by the isthmus abovementioned. It extends a prodigious way, not only on each side of the equator, but of the tropics likewise, the southern verge of it reaching quite to the 35th degree of south, and the northern almost to the 37th of north latitude; whereby its utmost extent, from north to south, is almost seventy-two degrees, or about 4320 miles. From east to west it reaches still farther, *viz.* from seventeen west to sixty east, or seventy-seven degrees of longitude, that is, 4620 miles. It is of a triangular or pyramidal figure, the base being the northern part of it, which runs along the shores of the *Mediterranean*, and the point or top of the pyramid the *Cape of Good Hope*.

ITS situation for commerce is certainly beyond any of the other quarters of the world. It stands, as it were, in the center between the other three, and has thereby a much nearer communication with *Europe*, *Asia*, and *America*, than any other quarter has with the rest; for it lies opposite *Europe* in the *Mediterranean*, almost 1000 miles in a line east and west.

and west, from beyond *Tripoli* to *Cape Spertel* at the straits mouth; the distance seldom 100 miles, no where 100 leagues, and often not twenty leagues. It is opposite *Asia* all the length of the *Red Sea*, north and south; the distance sometimes not being above five leagues, seldom fifty; and it fronts all the southern coast of *Asia*, viz. the coasts of *Cilicia*, and that of *India*, though at a greater distance, yet much nearer than any other country. It is also wonderfully accommodated for commerce, by the interposition of islands from *Madagascar* to *Malabar*; and more particularly by means of the alternate trade winds, which render the navigation safe, easy, and constant. Lastly, it lies opposite to *America*, about the distance of 500 to 700 leagues, including the islands, by a coast of above 2000 miles; whereas *America* no where joins *Europe* or *Asia*, except where it may be a *terra incognita*, the former under a distance of 1000 leagues, the latter under that of 2500.

Other advantages by rivers; fertility of the soil, &c. It is furnished with the greatest and most convenient navigable rivers, and perhaps with as many of them, as any other of the chief parts of the world; such are the *Nile* and *Nubia* on the north shore, running into the *Mediterranean Sea*; the *Niger*, or *Rio Grand*, running into the *Atlantic ocean*, on the west side of *Africa*; the *Congo*, the *Zairi*, and the *Loango*, three rivers of prodigious extent, south of the line, which empty themselves into the *Ethiopic ocean* on the same west side, but beyond the *Gold Coast*: also the *Natal*, the *Prio St. Esprit*, the *Melinda*, and the *Mozambo*, all rivers of a very great length and breadth, which empty themselves into the *Indian ocean* on the east side of *Africa*. Besides these, there are innumerable others, which though not equal to them, are yet very noble streams, fitted for navigation and commerce; and was this country blessed with a people qualified for trade and business, they might become the medium of an endless commercial correspondence. It is, indeed, populous to a greater degree than commonly thought; the soil fruitful, and the air salubrious: and, if once a turn for industry and the arts was introduced among the natives, a greater quantity of the *European* produce and manufactures might be exported thither, than to any other country in the whole world. And, as in general, they stand in great need of *European* commodities, so they have the most valuable returns to make for them. This is not the state of trade between *Europe* and *Asia*: *Europe* calls for a vast variety of goods from *Asia*, and *Asia* calls for more money than any thing else from *Europe*: yet there seems to be a kind of peculiarity in this trade, to the infinite advantage, particularly of

State of
the African
and
Asiatic
trade.

of the *Indian* and *Chinese* commerce, and the great disadvantage of most, if not all the nations of *Europe*: for the trade of *Asia* drains the whole western world of their ready money, in return for their mere products and manufactures. However, in the main, this is not such a disadvantage to *Europe* as some are inclined to think; and it need only be observed, that some great politicians have looked upon gold and silver in no other light than as commodities, and ought to be as freely exported and imported, except in our own coin, as any other whatsoever: and, if *Europe* at present contained all the gold and silver that *Africa* and *America* have ever produced, it is to be questioned, whether she might be said to be ever the richer, by reason that gold and silver would then be as was said of *Solomon's* time, as plenty as the stones in the streets, and therefore of little or no value. So that a commerce which takes off from the *Europeans* some proportion of its silver, may be as necessary as any other, to keep its value equally with that of gold, the latter always finding its value according to the quantity of the former.

BUT to return to the valuable returns the *Africans* have to make, which the *Europeans* experience, from the share of traffic they carry on with them at present: to what a degree they abound in gold, we have not only the testimony of the *Portuguese*, the *Dutch*, and the *French*, as well as the *English*, who have settlements on the coast of *Africa*, but the vouchers of the most authentic historians. There is no country in the world, says *Leo Africanus*, richer in gold and silver, than some kingdoms in *Africa*, as those of *Mandingo*, *Ethiopia*, *Congo*, *Angola*, *Buta*, *Quiticui*, *Monomotopa*, *Casati*, and *Mehenemugi*. By means of settlements of strength on the continent of *Africa*, the *Europeans* might, by the exchange of their commodities, draw into their hands all the gold of those countries. And here is a prodigious number of elephants, which would not only facilitate the inland intercourses of commerce, but also afford a very beneficial branch of traffic, in the teeth of these notable animals. In the same historian are numberless passages relating to those rich mines, and shewing how easy it would be for the *Europeans* to carry on a very extensive traffic with that part of the globe. This account of the great treasures of *Africa* is confirmed likewise by the *Nubian* geographer, who says, that the king of *Guinea*, the greatest city in all the countries of *Negroland*, has a mass of gold of thirty pounds weight. It was naturally produced in the mines; which is completely pure, tough, and malleable, without having been melted by the ordinary arts of refining that metal from native ore. Father *Labat* has descended to a

Valuable
products of
Africa.

very minute specification of a great variety of rich mines, which, he says, are very shamefully worked by the negroes, by reason of their being totally ignorant of the nature of mining; nor have they ever yet come to the main vein of any of their mines. Copper is the next valuable ore found in this part of the world. The quantity of it is not fully searched into, though there is good reason to believe it is so exceeding great, that it is commonly said amongst them, that the mountains which we call *Atlas*, are all copper. On the northern coasts they have such plenty of corn, that their fields, though but very meanly cultivated for want of a knowledge in agriculture, yield them an hundred-fold increase; Gums, ivory, wax, civet, ostrich-feathers, are in such quantities, that any expence of them can scarce ever be missed: and in these warm climates, the country, besides what nature has of herself disseminated, is, and must be capable of improvement, in all the nicest and most estimable productions, which the well-cultivated world supplies us with, from other places in the same latitude. It cannot be doubted but the fruitful rich lands every where to be found upon the coasts, and within the country, upon the banks of the rivers near the *Gold Coast*, and the *Slave-Coast*, would produce all the richest articles of the *East* and *West-India* commerce. The spices of *Banda*, *Ternate*, and *Amboyna*, might be produced on the rich and fruitful shores of *Melinda*, on the east side, or of the *Slave-Coast* on the west side of *Africa*; and that as easily, and to as great advantage, as where they are now produced; the latitude being the same, and the soil not unlike. The cinnamon of *Ceylon*, the tea of *China* and *Japan*, and the coffee of *Mocha*, would all three be produced on the same coast, from the *Rio de St. Esprit*, and southward to the river *Natale*; a temperate, fertile, healthy, and manageable soil. It has been affirmed that the sugars of *Barbadoes* and *Jamaica*, as also the ginger, cotton, rice, pepper, or pimento, with the cocoa, the indigo, and every other plant which comes from these islands, would be as easily produced in *Africa*, and the crops equally profitable and plentiful, if supported by the same industry as in *America*: and we are assured that ginger, cotton, and indigo, have been attempted by the *English* factories on the *Gold-Coast* of *Africa*, where they have thriven to admiration. Upon the foundation of these facts, nothing seems wanting to render *Africa* equal by nature, if not in many respects, superior to any of the other parts of the world: for though the middle of it, lying between the tropics in the torrid zone, and under the line, is exceeding hot; yet even in the hottest part it is habitable and inhabited; and the people abound in plenty.

have cattle, corn, cooling fruits, shades and rivers, and live very agreeably and healthy : as, for instance, in the island of *St. Thomas*, under the very line ; also on the *Gold-Coast*, and in the kingdom of *Benin* and *Angola* on the west shore ; and in *Ethiopia*, *Melinda*, the coast of *Zanguebar*, and several of the more intemperate places on the eastern shore. But making allowance for some of the inland countries remote from the sea, which we are told are without water, and therefore desert ; yet are they not equal to the uninhabited wastes of *Europe*, *Asia*, and *America*. Notwithstanding this, *Africa*, in the respect of feeling no cold, has an advantage over the other parts of the world : the most northerly latitude is about 37. and the most southerly about 35 degrees ; so that the far larger part enjoys the finest and most temperate climate. It is, however, melancholy to observe that a country which has near 10,000 miles of sea-coast, and noble, large, deep rivers, should yet have no navigation ; streams penetrating into the very center of the country, but of no benefit to it ; innumerable people, without knowledge of each other, correspondence, or commerce. At the entrance of these rivers into the sea are the most excellent harbours, prodigious in number, deep, safe, and calm, covered from the wind, and capable of being made secure by fortifications ; but no shipping, no trade, no merchants, even where there is plenty of merchandizes. In short, *Africa*, though a full quarter of the globe, stored with an inexhaustible treasure, and capable, under proper improvements, of producing so many things delightful, as well as convenient within itself, seems utterly neglected by those who are civilized themselves, and its own inhabitants are quite unsollicitous of reaping the benefits which nature has provided for them. What it affords in its present rude unimproved state is solely given up to the gain of others, as if not only the people were to be sold for slaves to their fellow creatures, but the whole country was captive, and produced its treasures merely for the use and benefit of the rest of the world, and not for their own.

WHETHER, instead of making slaves of these people, it would not rather become such nations that assume to themselves the name and character of Christians, to give them a relish for the blessings of life, by extending traffic into their country in the largest degree it will admit of, and introducing among them the more civilized arts and customs, may be submitted to consideration. The *Dutch*, by recommending their dress and introducing their customs in the *Spice-Islands*, have wonderfully humanized the inhabitants, who were as strange in their manners as the negroes. But it is to be feared,

*Reflections
on the
African
slave-
trade.*

feared, that while the slave-trade with these people continues to be the great object of the *Europeans*, it will ever spirit up wars and hostilities among the negro princes and chiefs, for the sake of making captives of each other for sale. This, therefore, will ever obstruct the civilizing these people, and extending their trade into the bowels of *Africa*, which, by the contrary means, might be easily practicable. The obtaining a competent number of servants to work, as the negroes at present do, in the colonies belonging to the several *European* potentates, who have settlements in *America*, does not seem at all impracticable. *Europe* in general affords numberless poor and distressed objects for that purpose; and if these were not over-worked, as the negroes are in some of the *American* colonies, the *Europeans* would make as good servants for the planters as the blacks do; and, if also all the *Europeans* were upon a level in regard to the price of labour in their colonies, they would all, very probably, find their account in laying absolutely aside the slave-trade, and cultivating a fair, friendly, humane, and civilized commerce with the *Africans*.

*Ancient
State of
Africa.*

AFRICA once contained several kingdoms and states, eminent for the liberal arts, for wealth and power, and the most extensive commerce. Then almost all the northern parts of *Africa* were full of people, from the *Red Sea* to the *Atlantic* ocean; the kingdoms of *Egypt* and *Ethiopia* were much celebrated, and the rich and powerful state of *Carthage* extended her commerce to every part of the then known world: even the *British* shores were visited by her fleets, till *Juba*, king of *Mauritania* and tributary to *Carthage*, unhappily called in the *Romans*, who, by the assistance of the *Mauritanians*, subdued *Carthage*, and made all the kingdoms and states in *Africa* subject to them. After this, the natives constantly plundered, and consequently impoverished by the governors sent from *Rome*, neglected their trade, and cultivated no more of their lands than might serve for their subsistence. Upon the decline of the *Roman* empire, in the fifth century, the north of *Africa* was over-run by the *Vandals*, a barbarous northern people, who contributed still more to the destruction of arts and sciences; and, to add to this country's calamity, the *Saracens* made a sudden conquest of all the coasts of *Egypt* and *Barbary* in the seventh century: these were afterwards succeeded by the *Turks*; and both being of the *Mohammedan* religion, whose professors carry desolation with them wherever they come, the ruin of that once flourishing part of the world was thereby completed.

THREE different people inhabit this continent, namely, *Pagans*, *Mohammedans*, and *Christians*. The first are the most numerous, possessing the greatest part of the country from the tropic of Cancer to the *Cape of Good Hope*, and these are generally black. The *Mohammedans*, who are of a tawny complexion, possess almost all the northern shores of *Africa*. The people of *Abyssinia*, or the *Upper Ethiopia*, are denominated *Christians*, but retain abundance of *Pagan* and *Jewish* rites: there are some other *Christians* upon the sea-coasts on almost every side of *Africa*; but the number is small, compared with that of the *Pagans* or *Mohammedans*. There are also some *Jews* on the north of *Africa*, who manage all the little trade that part of the country is yet possessed of. But it is remarkable, that though the *Carthaginians*, who inhabited this very country of *Barbary*, had greater fleets and a more extended commerce than any other nation, or than all the people upon the face of the earth when that state flourished, the present inhabitants have scarce any merchant ships belonging to them, and no other ships of force than what *Sallee*, *Algiers*, *Tunis*, and *Tripoli*, fit out for piracy, and these but few and small, their whole strength not being able to resist a squadron of *European* men of war.

THERE are scarce any two nations, or indeed any two of the learned, that agree in the modern division of *Africa*; and for this very reason, that scarce any traveller has penetrated into the heart of the country, and consequently we must be content to acknowledge our ignorance of the bounds, and even the names of several of the midland nations. These may still be reckoned among the unknown and undiscovered parts of the world; but, according to the best accounts and conjectures, *Africa* may be commodiously divided into ten parts, consisting of, 1. *Egypt*. 2. *Ethiopia Superior*. 3. *Commodi-Zanguebar*, with *Adel*; all which lie on the east of *Africa*. 4. *Monacmusi*, *Monomotapa*, and *Cassraria*, called by some the *Lower Ethiopia*, which lie on the south. 5. *Guinea*, on the south-west. 6. *Nigritia*, or *Negroland* in the middle of *Africa*, extending almost quite through the country from east to west, on both sides of the great river *Niger*. 7. *Zaara*, or the desert to the northward of *Nigritia*. 8. *Biledulgerid*, the ancient *Numidia* to the northward of *Zaara*. 9. The empire of *Fez* and *Morocco*, containing the north-west part of *Africa*. 10. The East of *Barbary*, on the north, containing the countries of *Algiers*, *Tunis*, *Tripoli*, and *Barca*.

C H A P. II.

Of Egypt.

Names of
Egypt.

EGYPT is supposed to derive its name from *Egyptus*, the brother of *Danaus*, once sovereign of this country. The *Hebrews* and *Arabs* called it *Misraim*, from the son of *Cham*, and grandson of *Noah*, of that name; and it has also been known by the name of *Coptus*, the capital city of *Upper Egypt*, from whence the natives are called *Cophtis*, as the Christians of *Egypt* are at this day; and though not the most numerous are looked upon to be the true descendants of the ancient *Egyptians*. The *Turks* call this country *El-kebit*, which signifies one that is overflowed.

Boundaries, situation, and extent.

EGYPT is situated on the north-east part of *Africa*, being bounded by the *Mediterranean* sea on the north; by the *Red-Sea*, and the isthmus of *Suez*, which divide it from *Asia*, towards the east; by the empire of *Abyssinia* and *Nubia* towards the south; and by the desert of *Barca* towards the west. It extends from the 21st degree of north latitude, to the 31st, and a few minutes beyond; and consequently must be about 600 miles in length from south to north; but the breadth in many places does not seem to be near 200.

Air, waters, and fertility.

THE air of this country is not healthful, the situation being very low; the mud, which covers the best part of it after the overflowing of the *Nile*, sending up a noisome vapour. The sandy deserts also, which encompass *Egypt* on three sides, render it excessive hot. Nor are there more than 3 or 4 springs in the whole country to refresh the parched inhabitants; so that they seem to be under a necessity of building their towns on the banks of the *Nile*. Accordingly, most of them stand near the river upon rising ground, so made by art or nature; and when the river overflows, they appear like so many islands, which have a communication with each other only by boats. It seldom rains in summer; but in the winter, modern travellers assure us, it rains plentifully sometimes, especially in the *Lower Egypt*. However, the fertility of the country, especially in corn, is not owing to these rains, but to the course and

Boundaries of the Nile.

overflowings of the river *Nile*. As to its swelling, geographers inform us, that it corresponds exactly with the rainy seasons between the tropics. They commence in the mountains about the beginning of *May*, and the water of the *Nile* begins to swell about the middle of it; so that there are fifteen days

days allowed by nature for the course of the water from the latitude of *Ethiopia* to that of *Egypt*, which is esteemed a pretty exact allowance; the distance being from 13 or 15, to the latitude of 28 and 30, which may very well correspond with the time. As to the continuance of the inundation, this is said to be just the same, keeping time with the rains; for as it is in several parts of *Africa*, so it is in *Ethiopia*, the rains abate at the beginning of *September*, and cease by the beginning of *October*. Thus the inundation answers exactly fifteen days, the same space as before. After the rains begin to abate in *Ethiopia*, the inundation of the river begins to abate in *Egypt*; and ten days after the rains cease in *Ethiopia*, the *Nile* is quite reduced to its ancient channel in *Egypt*. This being the case, there can be no room any longer to doubt of the rains in *Ethiopia* being the cause of this inundation. In regard to the height to which the waters rise, some authors give an account of the swell being about forty feet in height perpendicularly; which, though it be extraordinary to imagine, and must, in our imagination, as before observed, place all the towns on a hilly situation, or suppose them to be laid under water; yet, since so many affirm it for truth, we must assent to what they say. The effects of this inundation are fructifying the earth, not only moistening it instead of rain, but enriching the land with the fattening slimy substance, which it receives from the richness of the soil in *Ethiopia*, from whence it comes. This is said to be peculiar to the river *Nile*, as the country of *Ethiopia* is rich and fruitful beyond all that part of *Africa*. It is true, that the *Niger*, the *Congo*, and several other rivers on the coast of *Africa*, which overflow the country, do make it fruitful, and enrich the soil as well as the *Nile* does, but none in so extraordinary a manner.

EGYPT is commonly divided into lower, middle and upper.

*Division
of Egypt.*

LOWER Egypt, or *Egypt* properly so called, is so stiled on account of its situation, according to the course of the *Nile*, it being the last of the three through which that river runs, and from which it discharges itself into the sea. It is bounded on the south by *Middle Egypt*, on the north by the sea, on the west by the desert of *Barca*, and on the east by the isthmus of *Suez*. This country is very fertile, and so well improved, that it abounds with pasture grounds, corn, wine, rice, dates, senna, cassia, balsam, medicinal drugs, plants, and some other valuable articles. Its principal towns are,

BUSIRIS, an ancient city, but now dwindled into a village called *Abbasar*. *Alexandria*, by the Turks called *Scanderiv*, is towns.

is situate at the mouth of the *Canopean* branch of the *Nile*, where it forms a noble spacious haven, in form of a crescent; and which, though not very safe, is much frequented. This city boasts of its antiquity, having been built by *Alexander the Great* after the taking of *Tyre*, that he might preserve the trade between *India* and *Europe*, which he found, to his great dissatisfaction, was ruined by the destruction of *Tyre*: so great a value was set upon the *East-India* trade even in those days. This trade from *India* was carried on for many ages with infinite advantage by the *Tyrians*; and *Alexander*, who was ill advised in extirpating the *Phœnician* merchants, to make the world amends, erected this city, making it a free port, and giving it his own name. But though he exerted his utmost sagacity and authority to bring the *Indian* merchants to settle there, and make it the staple of their manufactures, a great part of their commerce took another turn, and passing from *India* by the river *Oxus*, and the city of *Samarcand* into the *Caspian Sea*, and thence by land to *Trapezond*, from whence it crossed the *Euxine Sea*, and passing other neighbouring seas, at length centered in the city of *Cōrinth*, which by that means became a great and opulent city. *Alexander*, however, so far prevailed, that a great part of the trade from *India* came this way, particularly such of it as was carried on at the coast of *Malabar*, and in the *Persian* gulph, which coming up the *Red Sea*, landed goods at *Elam*, now *Suez*, and they were thence carried over land to the *Nile*, and then again by water to *Alexandria*. That this city, in the most flourishing state of its commerce, was a large, opulent, strong, and magnificent city, is certain; and that, since the decay of its trade, it is now little more than the skeleton of what it has been, is not less true. Its conflagration by the *Saracens*, indeed, effected its present ruinous state, in comparison to what it was in its splendor. It has still some trade, and is populous, but not considerable. *Rosetto* also, and *Damietta*, and even *Grand Cairo*, have lost the fund of their wealth and glory from the time that the *Portuguese* unhappily for them, found the way to the *East-Indies* by the *Cape of Good Hope*.

THE ground *Alexandria* stands upon is so extremely low, that it can scarce be discerned by mariners till they are just upon it, which was probably the occasion of erecting that famous *Pharos*, or high-water tower, is frequently mentioned in history for a sea-mark. In the room of it there is now built a castle, which serves for the same purpose. The old town of *Alexandria* stretched from east to west, and was about seven miles in circumference, but is now a heap of ruins, scarce

scarce any thing being left standing, except one long street, indifferently built, with some houses facing the harbour, and a part of the walls, which are very magnificent, having great square towers at about 200 paces distant from each other, and a little tower between them. It was built upon arches, supported by marble pillars, and under every house were cisterns, to receive the waters of the Nile, which were conveyed thither by aqueducts. Among the ruins are several fine pillars of porphyry and granite, with hieroglyphics upon them. But the finest piece of antiquity still left standing is Pompey's pillar, about 200 paces from the town, erected by Julius Cæsar, in memory of his victory over that great man, who fled thither from the battle of Pharsalia, and was murdered on the Egyptian coast.

THE body of the pillar is one entire piece of granite marble, or some composition as durable and beautiful as marble. The height of it is seventy feet, and the circumference twenty-five, with a noble capital and base; on which are several hieroglyphics. It is amazing how such a prodigious stone could be brought here, and as difficult to conceive with what kind of engine it was raised. Some imagine it was made or cast upon the place, and this has occasioned it to be suggested, that the ancients had an art of casting stone, and of imitating, or rather excelling, the most beautiful pieces of natural marble, particularly the Egyptians; but this is much doubted by the learned.

THE next considerable place to Alexandria is Rosetto, a healthy, pleasant, and populous city, situate on a branch of the Nile. The chief business of the inhabitants is carrying the European merchandizes, which are brought hither from Alexandria, to Cairo in boats. For this purpose, the Europeans have their vice-consuls and factors to expedite business, and all letters and bills brought from Alexandria. Letters of consequence are conveyed by land across the Desert by foot-messengers directly to Cairo.

ABOUT an hundred miles eastward of Rosetto, stands the city of Damietta, or Pelusium, in one of the eastern branches of the Nile, about ten miles from the mouth of it. It is reckoned one of the keys of Egypt; is large, though ill built, and has about 25,000 inhabitants, without reckoning a good, large, and populous town, on the other side of the river, chiefly inhabited by sailors and fishermen, and a much greater number of strangers from all parts. In account of traffic, all which have contributed not a little to make it opulent and considerable. The towns and villages between this city and Cairo lie pretty thick, and a good number of the inhabitants are

Method of
making
Sal Ammo-
niac in
Egypt.

are employed, some in hatching vast multitudes of eggs in ovens, and rearing the chickens; and others in making great quantities of Sal Ammoniac. This salt is procured from the foot which arises from the burnt dung of animals that feed only on vegetables; but the dung of these animals is only fit to burn for Sal Ammoniac during the four first months of the year, when they feed on fresh spring grass, which, in *Egypt*, is a kind of trefoil, or clover; for when they feed only on dry meat it will not do. The dung of oxen, buffaloes, sheep, goats, horses, and apes, at the proper time, is as fit as the dung of camels for this purpose: it is said that even human dung is equal to any other. The foot arising from the burnt dung is put into glass vessels, and these vessels into an oven or kiln, which is heated by degrees, and at last, urged with a very strong fire for three successive nights and days; the smoke first shews itself, and in a short time after, the salt appears adhering to the glasses, and, by degrees, covers the whole opening. The glasses are thus broken, and the salt taken out in the same state and form in which it is sent to *Europe*.

Middle-
Egypt.

MIDDLE Egypt is situate between the Upper and Lower, having the former on the south, and the latter on the north, the *Red-Sea* on the east, and the desert of *Barca* on the west. At present it is chiefly known by the names of *Bakeirah* and *Benesor*. It is divided in two by the *Nile*, on the banks of which the soil is fruitful; but more sandy and barren the farther the land runs from it.

Cairo.

CAIRO, the capital of *Egypt*, and by far the largest and most populous in the whole kingdom, is pleasantly situated on the *Nile*. It appears from the vast number of squares, caravanseras, bazars, and other such public buildings, to have been a place of extraordinary commerce, now decayed, since the trade to the *East-Indies* by the way of the *Cape of Good-Hope*; yet it still is famed for some manufactures, especially that of *Turkey* carpets, and a good trade by means of the caravans. The beglerbeg, or viceroy of the whole kingdom, resides here in the castle, which stands on the top of a hill in the south-quarter of the city, and commands a noble prospect of it and the environs. It is two or three miles in circumference, and appears like another city. The walls are high and thick, with towers after the ancient way of fortification; and it is said, that there are several subterraneous vaults or passages leading from them to distant towns. But what travellers seem to be the most taken with here, is a well 280 feet deep, which has obtained the name of *Joseph's* well. This and another are the only springs in the

Castle of
Cairo.

king-

kingdom of *Egypt*. There are also shewn, in the ruins of a noble building, which is pretended to be *Joseph's* hall, where he sat in judgment, thirty fine pillars of *Theban* marble, with part of the roof overlaid with gold and azure.

BETWEEN three and four leagues to the westward of *Pyramids Cairo*, stand those three vast pyramids so justly the admiration of all that view them. That which has suffered least by the injuries of time, is situated on the top of a rock, in the sandy desert of *Lybia*, about a quarter of a mile to the west of the plains of *Egypt*, above which the rock rises upwards of an hundred feet with an easy ascent. Each side of this pyramid, at the base, is 693 feet, according to the *English* standard; its perpendicular height is 499 feet; but if taken as the pyramid ascends, inclining, then the height is equal to the breadth of the base, viz. 693 feet. The whole area of the base contains 480,249 square feet, or eleven acres of ground, and 1089 of 43,560 parts of an acre. This pyramid is ascended on the outside by steps; the breadth and depth of every step is one intire stone, many of them thirty feet in length, and the number of steps from the bottom to the top is 207. On the north side of this pyramid, going thirty-eight feet up an artificial bank of earth, there is a narrow, square passage, leading into the pyramid, about three feet and a half high, and three feet and a quarter broad: this passage is very steep, and runs downwards ninety-two feet and a half; the smoothness and evenness of the work, and the close knitting of the joints, shew it to have been the labour of some exquisite hand: the curious traveller having passed, with lighted torches, through this strait, which, towards the end grows so narrow, that he is forced to creep upon his belly, comes into a place somewhat larger; but nothing worth description is observed in it, except the monstrous bats, said to exceed a foot in length, by which it is inhabited. The length of this obscure broken place contains eighty-nine feet, the breadth unequal, supposed to have been dug for the discovery of some hidden treasure. On the left, adjoining the narrow entrance first passed, a stone eight or nine feet high must be climbed up, to enter upon the lower end of the first gallery, of which the pavement rises gently, and consists of smooth polished marble, of a white and alabaster colour, being about five feet in height, and as many in breadth. This gallery contains in length 110 feet; and at the end begins a second gallery, a very stately piece of work, not inferior in materials or workmanship to the most magnificent buildings. The length of this gallery is 124 feet, and if we consider the narrow entrance at the mouth of

The Conclusion of

the pyramid, by which the first descent is made, and the length of the first and second galleries, by which the ascent is again in one continued line, and leading to the middle of the pyramid, we may easily apprehend the reason of that strange echo of four or five voices, mentioned by *Plutarch*, or rather of a long continued sound, which is heard on discharging a musket at the entrance; for the sound being shut in, and conveyed in those close smooth passages, as in so many pipes or tubes, finding no issue out, makes a repercussion upon itself, and causes a confused noise and circulation of the air, which by degrees vanishes as the motion ceases: but to return. This second gallery is paved and lined with white polished marble, cut in vast squares or tables: the roof is of the same materials; and the junctures of the stones are so close and exact, that they are scarce perceptible. The height of this gallery is twenty-six feet, and the breadth six; and there are benches on each side of polished stone. Passing from the second gallery, through a small square hole, into some closets, or little chambers, lined with *Thebaic* marble, there is an entrance to a very noble hall, or chamber, which stands in the centre of the pyramid, equidistant from all the sides, and almost in the midst between the base and the top. The floor, sides, and roof of this room, are all of exquisite tables of *Thebaic* marble. From the top to the bottom of it there are but six ranges of stone; and the stones which cover it are of a stupendous length, like so many huge beams lying flat, and traversing the room, and nine of these form the roof. The length of this hall is somewhat more than thirty-four *English* feet, the breadth seventeen, and the height nineteen and a half. There stands a tomb in it, supposed to be that of *Cheops*, or *Chemus*, king of *Egypt*, the founder of the pyramid. This tomb is one entire piece of marble made hollow; it is uncovered at the top, and sounds like a bell on being struck. There are no signs of any corps having been laid in it. The hollow part is little more than six feet in length, and two in depth and breadth; from which dimensions it has been observed, as well as from the embalmed bodies seen in *Egypt*, that there is no decay in nature, but that the men of this age are of the same stature they were 3000 years ago.

Second pyramid.

IN passing from the first pyramid to the second, are seen the ruins of a pile of building, all of square polished stone, supposed to be the habitation of the priests. The stones of this pyramid are white, and not near so large as those of the former, nor do the sides rise by degrees, or steps, like the other, but are all plain and smooth. The whole fabric, ex-

kept on the south, is very intire and free from any deformed ruptures or breaches; and the dimensions, both as to height and breadth, are equal to the first; but no entrance has been yet discovered into it, nor is it known whether there be any apartments within, though it is highly probable there are, this being designed for the sepulchre of *Cephren*, the brother of *Cheops*, another *Egyptian* king. This pyramid has, on the north and west-sides, two very stately buildings, thirty feet in depth, and fourteen hundred in length, hewn out of the solid rock: these, it is supposed, were designed for lodging the priests, but have no other entrance into them than such square openings hewn out of the rock, of the same bigness with those described in the first pyramid, and within are square chambers arched and made out of the rock.

The third pyramid stands a furlong distant from the second, upon a rising of the rock, which makes it seem equal to the former at a distance. It seems to be intirely built of a clear white stone, something better and brighter than that of the other two. Each side of the base is somewhat more than 300 feet, and the height the same. There are several other pyramids dispersed about the *Lybian* desert, to the amount of twenty, but most of them much inferior in bulk to any of these three. One, which stands twenty miles south and by west of those above described, is of the same dimensions with the first, with steps or degrees on the outside, but more decayed. It has also an entrance on the north-side, but blocked up, so that there is no getting in to see the apartments.

THESE pyramids are supposed by many of the learned, to have been built by the *Israelites*, which is confirmed by *Josephus*, who says, that when time had extinguished the memory of the benefits of *Joseph*, and the Kingdom was transferred to another family, they used the *Israelites* with great rigour, wasting them by several labours. It is very probable, the kings of *Egypt* employed them in these stupendous works, more on a political account, than for any ostentation of power and grandeur. It seemed expedient to keep a mutinous people in action, who, upon the least respite from their labours, were ready to break out into rebellion; and, as it appears at the time of their leaving *Egypt*, there were no less than 600,000 of them, besides women and children, there cannot be a properer epoch assigned for erecting these vast structures, than when they dwelt in this kingdom.

THE general opinion is, that the pyramids were erected for sepulchral monuments, and in confirmation of it, *Ibn Abd Alhakem* the *Arabian* relates, that *Almamun*, the caliph of *Babylon*, when he caused the largest pyramid to be opened,

Occasion of
Ibn erecting
the

between 8 and 900 years since, found in it towards the top, a chamber with an hollow stone, in which there was a statue like a man, and within it a man, on whom was a breast-plate of gold set with jewels; upon the breast-plate lay a sword of inestimable price, and at his head a carbuncle of the bigness of an egg shining like the light, and upon him were written characters with a pen which no man understood. But there is this farther reason given, (which sprung from the theology of the *Egyptians*, who believed that as long as the body endured, so long the soul continued with it :) that they therefore kept their dead embalmed, that their souls might continue with them a great while, and not pass suddenly into other bodies; and for the same reason, they enclosed them in the most durable buildings, endeavouring thereby, as much as in them lay, to render them eternal. The *Egyptians*, says *Diodorus Siculus*, make small account of the time of this life, as being limited; but highly value that which after death is accompanied with a glorious memory of virtue. They call the houses of the living, inns; because they inhabit them but a short space; but the sepulchres of the dead, eternal mansions, because they continue with the gods for an infinite space: therefore, in the structure of their houses they are not very solicitous, but think no cost sufficient in sumptuously adorning their sepulchres. However, though the *Egyptians* were of opinion, that as long as the body endured, the soul continued with it; yet it did not quicken or animate the body, but remained only as an attendant, or guardian, unwilling to leave her former habitation.

The reason why the *Egyptians* built their sepulchres in the form of pyramids, was, because this is the most permanent form of structure, being neither over-pressed by its own weight, nor so subject to the sinking in of rain as other buildings are: or they might hereby intend to represent their gods; for anciently the *Gentiles* expressed them by columns fashioned like cones, or by quadrilateral obelisks.

Mummy-pits, or catacombs. • THE mummy-pits, as called by modern travellers, are in the *Lybian* deserts, three or four leagues distant from the three great pyramids, and a little to the westward of the place where the city of *Memphis* once stood: these pits are square, and built of good stone, or hewn out of the solid rock. When the people, who have the care of the mummies, have removed the sand from the surface, they take up a great stone which covers the mouth of the pit, and let down those who would view them by ropes, or a man may go down by putting his feet into the holes on the sides: the shallowest of these pits are thirty-two feet deep; at the bottom are square
open.

openings and passages ten or fifteen feet long, which lead into square arched rooms, in which the embalmed bodies lie, some of them in chests or coffins of wood, others in stone-coffins, and others in coffins made only of pieces of linen-cloth, gummed or glued together, which are as strong as the wooden ones. With these mummies are usually found the figures of birds and beasts, and little images of several sorts, some made of copper, others of stone, and others of several sorts of earth. The danger of entering the pyramids and mummy pits is intimated by several travellers, on account of the thievish *Arabs*, who watch all opportunities of plundering those who come to view them.

In speaking of the pyramids, we should not omit mentioning the colossus, or, at least, the head of one, which stands near the largest pyramid. It is usually called a sphynx; the upper-part of which should resemble a woman, and the lower part a lion. By this figure the *Egyptians* in their hieroglyphics represented an harlot; intimating, the danger of being smitten with a beautiful faithless woman, whom the fond lover would, probably, in the end, find as cruel and rapacious as a lion. Nothing more of this figure is now discernable but from the shoulders upwards, and yet it is near thirty feet in height, and seems to be hewn out of the solid rock. It is a question whether there was ever any more of the figure, though *Pliny*, and some of the ancients, give it a belly, and much larger dimensions, making it to be 102 feet in compass; and some of our modern writers pretend, that there is a subterraneous passage from the first pyramid to the head, which is hollow, suggesting, that the heathen priests used to deliver their oracles from it; but it does not seem well proved that there is any such passage under ground from the pyramid to the sphynx, or that any oracle were ever delivered from hence.

ANOTHER curiosity, mentioned by ancient and modern writers, is a labyrinth near the banks of the river Nile, towards the *Upper-Egypt*, built by king *Psammiticus I.* the greatest part of it under ground, and containing, within the compass of one mile, twelve palaces and a thousand houses; the walls, pillars, and roofs of marble, to which there was only one entrance, and so many intricate turnings and windings, that it was impossible for a stranger to find his way through, or get back again, if he had entered it without a guide. The marble, it is said, was laid with so much art, that neither wood nor cement were used in the whole fabric.

AT *Muterra*, about five miles north-east of *Cairo*, there is a well, which with that in the castle of *Cairo*, is the only one celebrated well.

Upper-
Egypt.

one of good water in the whole country. It is reported, that the Virgin *Mary*, and her husband *Joseph* rested here, when they fled with our Saviour from *Herod*, and that being very thirsty, a spring issued suddenly out of the earth for their relief.

THE province of the *Higher*, or *Upper-Egypt*, anciently called *Thebais*, is bounded on the east-side by the *Red-Sea* all the way, on the north by *Middle-Egypt*, on the west by the desert of *Barca*, and on the south by *Nubia* and the coast of *Abex*. It is by far the least cultivated and populous of all the three. Most of its towns, or rather villages, are very thinly inhabited. *Sayd*, anciently *Thebes*, or the city with an hundred gates, was formerly here the capital of the kingdom; but it is now inconsiderable, and has nothing to boast of its grandeur, but vast columns of marble and porphyry, which lie half buried in the ground, and statues and obelisks of a prodigious size, with hieroglyphics upon them. The same are to be met with in most parts of this country, an argument that it once had very considerable towns, and magnificent buildings. *Minio*, a neat town, is famous for an earthen manufacture of water-pots, or vessels, not only very curiously made, but said to give an uncommon freshness to the water; and, on that account, are in great request all over *Egypt*, but especially at *Cairo*. The *Turks* and *Arabs* make the best opium at the village of *Aboutic*, which is of note for the vast quantities of black poppies that grow in and about it. This opium is thence conveyed all over *Turky* and *India*. The inhabitants of this division of *Egypt* are composed chiefly of *Copti* Christians and *Arabs*: the former are the more numerous, and have their bishops to preside over them, who are subject to the patriarch of *Alexandria*.

Some
things E-
gypt is re-
markable
for.
Papyrus.

THERE still remain some remarkable things to be related of this country, which every curious traveller who passes through it takes notice of. In this rank is,

THE papyrus, an aquatic plant, or growing by the banks of the river *Nile*. According to the description *Pliny*, after *Theophrastus*, gives us of it, its stalk is triangular, and of a thickness that may be grasped in the hand, its root crooked, and it terminates by fibrous bunches composed of long and weak pedicles. It has been observed in *Egypt* by *Guilandinus*, an author of the sixteenth century, who has given us a learned commentary on the passages of *Pliny* where mention is made of it; and it is also described in *Prosper Alpinus* and in *Lobel*. The *Egyptians* call it *ard*, and they eat that part of the plant which is near the roots. A plant named *papero*, much resembling the papyrus of *Egypt*, grows likewise in *Sicily*: it is described in *Lobel's Adversaria*: *Ray*, and several others

others after him, believed it was the same species; however, it does not seem that the antients made use of that of *Sicily*; and *M. de Jussieu* thinks, they ought not to be confounded, especially by reading in *Strabo*, that the papyrus grew only in *Egypt*, or in the *Indies*. *Pliny*, *Guilandinus*, *Montfaucon*, and the count *de Caylus*, are of this opinion. The internal parts of the rind of this plant were the only that were made into paper, and the manner of the manufacture was thus: strips, or thin flakes, of every length that could be obtained being laid upon a table, other strips were placed across, and pasted to them by means of water and a press; so that this paper was a texture of several strips, and it even appears, that, in the time of the emperor *Claudius*, the *Romans* made paper of three lays. *Pliny* also informs us, that the strips of the papyrus were left to dry in the sun, and afterwards distributed according to the different qualities fit for different kinds of paper; scarce more than twenty strips could be separated from each stalk. The paper of the *Romans* never exceeded thirteen fingers breadth, and this was their finest and most beautiful, as that of *Fannius*. In order to be deemed perfect, it was to be thin, compact, white, and smooth; which is much the same with what we require in our rag paper. It was sleeked with a tooth or shell, and this kept it from soaking the ink, and made it glisten. The *Roman* paper received an agglutination as well as ours, which was prepared with flour of wheat, diluted with boiling-water, on which were poured some drops of vinegar; or with crumbs of leavened bread diluted with boiling-water, and passed through a bolting-cloth. Being afterwards beaten with a hammer, it was agglutinated a second time, put to the press, and extended again with the hammer. This account of *Pliny* is confirmed by *Cassiodorus*, who, speaking of the leaves of the papyrus used in his time, says, that they were white as snow, and composed of a great number of small pieces, without any junction appearing in them, which seems to suppose necessarily the use of size. The *Egyptian* papyrus seems even to be known in the time of *Homer*; but it was not, according to the testimony of *Varro*, till about the time of the conquests of *Alexander*, that it began to be manufactured with the perfection art always adds to nature. Paper made in this manner, with the rind of this *Egyptian* plant, was that which was chiefly used till the tenth century; when some person imagined the making of it with pounded cotton reduced into a pulp. This method, known in *China* several ages before, appeared at last in the empire of the East, yet without any certain knowledge of the author, or the time and place of

the invention. All public acts and diplomas were written on the *Egyptian* paper, till the eleventh century; and it is probable, that linen-rag paper was invented some time in that century, as then the *Egyptian* paper began to be disused in the West, and that of cotton in the East. However, there is no finding an exact date to this discovery; for, notwithstanding the most diligent search of the learned antiquary *Montfaucon*, both in *France* and *Italy*, he could never find a book, or leaf of paper, such as is now used, before the year 1270.

*Hatching
chickens in
ovens.*

THE next remarkable thing to be met with in *Egypt*, is the hatching of chickens in ovens. The eggs are kept heated with so temperate a warmth, which imitates so exactly the natural heat of a hen, that chickens are at length formed and hatched. It has been disputed whether this can be effected in any other country besides *Egypt*, where the natural heat of the climate is thought to contribute much towards these productions; but *M. Thevenot* tells us, that the duke of *Florence* sent for some of the *Copti's* (who are the only *Egyptians* that follow this business) and hatched chickens in *Italy* in the same manner. Very lately some experiments have been made in *France*, for hatching chickens by the fermentation of tan. (P.)

(P.) *M. Bauffau du Bignon*, the author of these experiments, inserted in the fourth volume of the *Memoirs*, presented to the Academy of Sciences, says, that the best tan for this purpose is that which is used for the hides of oxen, that come to *French* generally from *Ireland*. This tan must be procured when newly taken out of the pits, because it will serve longer, and it must not be suffered to contract any more moisture, being already too wet. First, a pretty high and broad bed is to be made of it, in order that the vessel, which is to serve as an oven for the chickens, may be on all sides surrounded with three times as much tan as it measures in diameter. Previous to this, if the tan is too moist, the humidity and smell may be diminished by often stirring it.

In a fortnight, three weeks, or a month, at latest, the tan will be heated by the required degree; but if it does not grow hot in this time, by still retaining too much moisture, it must be stirred again, and as it shrinks in proportion to its moisture, it must be stirred more than once, if it be much shrunk and collected into a mass.

It may be known when it has acquired a proper degree of moisture or dryness, if a drop of water cannot be squeezed out of a handful, and if scarce any moisture remains in the hand of him that treads it. Then it usually ferments in a fortnight, and its heat is easily ascertained, by introducing a slender stick from the top to the bottom, and drawing it out immediately after, to judge of the degree of heat by feeling it. The tan will retain its heat

ANOTHER thing which creates admiration in the credulous traveller, as well as the superstitious natives, both Christian and Mohammedan, is the pretended annual resurrection of human bodies, some say of whole limbs, and others, intire bones, in a certain burial-place, near *Old Cairo*, on *Good-Friday*, and the two preceding days. Mr. *Thevenot* relates, that he went to see the place on *Good-Friday*, where he found a good many bones, but suspected they were scattered there on purpose to serve the lucrative views of some pious fraud. Discovering his opinion to some about him, he was taken to be an atheist, and would have exposed himself to the danger of being insulted, had he not prudently desisted from undeceiving the multitude, by seeming to join them in opinion.

THE animals, which *Egypt* is remarkable for, are, first, *Crocodiles*. the crocodile, formerly thought to be peculiar to this country; but there is no material differences between these creatures and the alligators at the mouth of the *Ganges*, and in

at 32 degrees during an intire month, without any other care than keeping the opening of the oven more or less shut up, and the heat will continue naturally for three months successively at the 28th degree.

As the heat increases during some time, there is no occasion to be uneasy, if it is not yet at the 32d degree. Two or three days are required to be assured of its constancy, to fix it and dissipate the vapours and interior moisture of the vessel or oven, during which time the 32d degree will happen; and as the heat increases insensibly for a fortnight or three weeks, and decreases when past this term, it will be easy not to be mistaken, the covering and different accounts kept from time to time being sufficient to prevent all inconvenience.

Nothing more for reheating is required than a second batch of tan, made in a month, or three weeks later than the first; and it will be ready to receive

the eggs and chicks when the first appears to grow too cool. During the heat of the second, the first may be immediately stirred up, and it will afterwards yield the same service as the second, which may be so continued for three years successively.

The author adds, that it is now three years since he has made these experiments with great success, and that in this manner he has brought forth and reared a great number of very fine and well tasted chickens. He found also, by his experiments, that tan ferments for more than three years after it has been taken out of the pits; so that the curious who have tan, and use it for maintaining heat in their green-houses, may likewise see birds produced from its warmth in the most rigorous seasons; which, no doubt, must be a double pleasure, to them arising from the same cause.

other rivers of *India* and *America*. Both are known to be amphibious animals, accustomed to land and water; they grow to a prodigious length, twenty feet and upwards. In shape they are like a lizard, with four short feet, or rather claws, and some of them are so large as to swallow a man: they have a flat head, their eyes indifferently large, and their back covered with broad scales, like some antiquated pieces of armour. They seem to move with the greatest strength and agility in the water; and though they run a great pace by land, yet their bodies are so long and unwieldy, that they cannot easily turn; whereby their prey escapes them on shore. They watch therefore in the sedge, and other cover, by the sides of rivers, and so much resemble the trunk of a tree, that, it is said, travellers, mistaking them for such, have been unwarily surpris'd. As for the tears and alluring voice, ascribed to the crocodile by the ancients, they may be considered as mere fiction; and the same may be said of the little bird trochileus, which is reported to live on the meat she picks out of the crocodile's teeth; and the rat ichneumon, which jumps into the crocodile's mouth, and eats his way out again through his belly. Notwithstanding crocodiles grow to such a prodigious size, it seems, they proceed from an egg no bigger than a turkey's hatched in the warm sand.

The hippopotamus.

THE hippopotamus, or sea-horse, is another amphibious animal which frequents the *Nile*. M. *Thevenot* says, he saw one, which was shot by some janizaries as it was grazing on the land. It was about the bigness of a camel, of a tawny colour, the hinder part made more like an ox, and the head like that of an horse, with great open nostrils; the eyes and ears small; thick large feet, almost round, and four claws; the tail like an elephant's, and not more hair than upon an elephant. In the lower jaw it had four great teeth, half a foot long, two of them crooked, and as large as the horns of an ox, and the other two straight, but standing out in length. These monsters are very rare, even in *Africa*, for none had been seen there many years before.

The camelion.

THE camelion is reckoned among the remarkable animals of *Egypt*, but is not peculiar to this country. In shape and size, it partly resembles a lizard, and partly a frog, and is, in a true light, of a greenish colour, but assumes the colour of most things it stands near. It was formerly thought to have lived only upon air, but has been observed to take flies, by darting out its tongue, which is of an extraordinary length: however, those that have kept them in boxes, observe, that they will live several months without any nourishment but what they draw in with their breath.

THE ostrich is another animal very common in the deserts *Ostrich* of *Egypt* and *Arabia*. They are the tallest fowls we meet with any where, and will strike a blow like a horse, with their huge feet. Their backs are shaped almost like a camel's, and they run a prodigious pace, assisted by their wings, which are of little use to them in flying, for they can scarce raise themselves from the ground, and the *Arabs* frequently ride them down.

THE serpent called the basilisk, or cockatrice, whose very *Basilisk* eyes dart certain death, if we may credit the ancients, is said to be found also in *Egypt*; but this may be rather supposed to be only a simile of the ancient poets, to illustrate how fatally young men are frequently allured and captivated by the eyes of some fair charmer to their destruction. The asp is another little serpent found also in this country, by *Ass* whose bite the celebrated *Cleopatra* and her ladies chose to die, the poison operating suddenly, and throwing the party into a deep sleep, though its effects are said to be various, some who are wounded by it dying in a laughing fit, and others weeping.

EGYPT is famous for camels, dromedaries, and fine horses, *Other ani-* as the neighbouring country of *Arabia*. Oxen, buffaloes, *mals.* goats, and sheep, are to be met with likewise in great plenty here; especially the sheep with fat tails, which weigh several pounds. They abound also with poultry, geese, ducks, and a great variety of small birds; but fish is not very good or plentiful, unless in the maritime parts, and near the mouth of the *Nile*. Upon the retiring of the waters of that river to the usual channel, a multitude of frogs and other insects are produced; and was there not a large fowl like a stork, perhaps, the ibis of the ancient *Egyptians*, which constantly devours them, they would be annually afflicted with the plague of frogs.

As *Egypt* is inhabited by several different people, their *Present in-* stature, complexion, and habits are different. The genius, *habitants* character, persons, and manner of life of the *Turks* and *Arabs*, of *Egypt* are as already described in treating of their countries in *Asia*. The *Moors*, and common people, who are natives of the country, are almost as swarthy as the *Arabs* in this hot climate; and they are generally an ill-looking people and very slovenly, especially the *Copts*. The *Egyptian* women that are not exposed to the sun have fine complexions as well as features. All of them, in general, are very frugal in their diet.

THE *Egyptians* are certainly a very ancient nation, though *History of* far from being so ancient as they make themselves, when *the Egp-* they *tian sove-* reigns.

they give us a catalogue of their princes, some of whom, according to them, must have lived several thousands of years before the creation. But as it is observed by some, that the *Egyptians* by years did not intend the periodical revolution of the sun, but of the moon, it may not be difficult to account for this mistake; besides, as it has been long since observed of the *Chinese* and other people, who run up their original so very high, that they give us no tolerable account or history of those pretended times, but, on the contrary, relate that all arts and sciences, even agriculture, were introduced among them about the times our histories relate; if the world had been so old as they suggest, it must be very strange that these arts had not been introduced before, without which it would be very difficult for mankind to subsist.

THAT *Egypt* was planted by *Misraim*, the grandson of *Noah*, cannot be asserted, because it is very difficult to shew who were the first planters of almost any nation in the universe. It is sufficient that it appears, that this and several of the neighbouring nations, were planted soon after the dispersion of the people at the tower of *Babel*. *Cham*, the son of *Noah*, is generally held to be the same with *Jupiter Ammon*; and *Misraim*, his grandson, the same with *Osiris*, the great deity of the *Egyptians*, and from him, it is said, descended that race of monarchs who had the general denomination of *Pharaohs*; but from whom or how the word *Pharaoh* came to be the style of their kings, no satisfactory reason can be given.

THERE are reckoned above sixty princes of the line of these *Pharaohs*, and they reigned, as it is said, in an uninterrupted succession to the year of the world 3435, when *Pharaoh Psammiticus*, the second monarch of that name, was conquered by *Cambyses II.* king of *Persia*, who united *Egypt* to that empire, under which it remained till the reign of *Darius*, being upwards of 100 years, when it revolted from that crown, and became an independent kingdom again under *Amyrteus*, the first king after the revolt, in which state it continued about fifty years, when *Ochus* king of *Persia* recovered the dominion of it again; and it remained subject to the *Persian* monarchs till *Alexander the Great* defeated *Darius*, when it fell under the power of that prince, with the rest of the provinces of the *Persian* empire.

AFTER the death of *Alexander*, *Ptolemy* the son of *Lagus*, or, as others insinuate, the son of *Philip* of *Macedon*, and consequently half brother of *Alexander*, found means to mount the throne of *Egypt*, and render it an independent kingdom once again. His successors ever after retained the name of *Ptolemy*;

Ptolemy; and this line continued between 2 and 300 years, the last sovereign being the famous *Cleopatra*, wife and sister to *Ptolemy Dionysius*, the last king and mistress successively to *Julius Cæsar* and *Mark Anthony*.

It was *Ptolemy Philadelphus*, son of the first *Ptolemy*, who collected the *Alexandrian* library, said to consist of 700,000 volumes, and the same prince caused the scriptures to be translated into *Greek*; but whether by seventy-two interpreters, and in the manner as is commonly related, is justly questioned. The *Ptolemies* sometimes extended their dominion over great part of *Syria*, and were frequently at war with the kings of *Syria*, in which they met with various success. After the death of *Cleopatra* this kingdom fell under the power of the *Romans*, and continued a *Roman* province, till the reign of *Heraclius*, the emperor of *Constantinople*; when the people, being disgusted with their governors, called in *Omar* the third caliph of the *Saracens*, and submitted themselves to the *Mohammedan* power about the year 640. But surely the administration of the *Greek* emperors must be very grievous, which could induce a Christian nation to make choice of a *Saracen* for their sovereign.

THE caliphs of *Babylon* were sovereigns here till about the year 970, when the *Egyptians* set up a caliph of their own, called the caliph of *Cairo*, to whom the *Saracens* of *Africa* and *Spain* were subject; but the governors of the provinces, or sultans under the caliphs of *Babylon* and *Cairo*, soon wrested the civil power out of the hands of their caliphs, or high-priests, leaving them only a shadow of sovereignty.

ABOUT the year 1160, *Affareddin*, or *Saracen*, general of *Norradin*, the *Saracen* sultan of *Damascus*, subdued the kingdom of *Egypt*, and usurped the dominion of it, being succeeded in this kingdom by his son *Saladin*, who reduced also the kingdoms of *Damascus*, *Mesopotamia*, and *Palestine*, under his power, and about the year 1190 took *Jerusalem* from the Christians. It was this prince who established a body of troops in *Egypt* like the present *Janizaries*, composed of the sons of Christians taken in war, or purchased of the *Tartars*, to whom he gave the name of *Mamelukes*, which signifies no more than slave. Among the forces of the *Mohammedan* princes the title of slave is indeed very honourable, being expressive of a particular devotion to the service of the sovereign, and such consequently are intitled to greater privileges than other subjects. The posterity of *Affareddin* enjoyed the crown till the year 1242, when the *Mamelukes* deposed *Elmutan*, as they had done his father *Melick Affalack*

some years before, and set one of their own officers upon the throne. The first king of the race of the Mamalukes was *Turquemenius*, and he and his successors were engaged in continual wars with the Christians in *Syria* and *Palestine*, till *Araphus* the sixth sultan intirely dispossessed the Christians of the Holy Land. The ninth sultan *Melechnassar* subdued the island of *Cyprus*, and made it tributary to *Egypt*. About the year 1501, *Campson Gaurus* the fifteenth sultan of the Mamalukes, entering into an alliance with *Ismael*, the sophi of *Persia*, against *Selimus* the third emperor, and tenth king of the Ottoman family, the confederates received several memorable defeats; and *Tonorbeius* II. who succeeded *Campson Gaurus*, was deposed and murdered by *Selimus*, and, according to some accounts, hanged up at one of the gates of *Grand Cairo*. *Gazelle*, one of the grandees of the Mamalukes, maintained a war for some time against *Selimus*, but was at length defeated, and *Egypt* made a province of the Ottoman empire. The Mamaluke sultans were always chosen by a majority of Mamalukes out of their own body, who were so jealous of the kingdom's being made hereditary, that they scarce ever elected the son of the preceding sultan; and if the choice ever happened to fall upon such a one, they were so apprehensive of its being made an ill precedent, that they never rested till they deposed him.

Present government of Egypt.

SINCE the Ottoman emperors have had the dominion of this kingdom, they always governed it by a viceroy, stiled the Bassa of *Grand Cairo*; but as *Egypt* is subdivided into several inferior governments, these governors are not sent from *Constantinople*, or appointed by the viceroy, but are natives of *Egypt*, and seem to be vested with sovereign power in their respective districts. The grand signior has thought fit to humour them in this respect, rather than hazard the revolt of so rich a province, which is now esteemed the granary of *Constantinople*, as it was anciently of *Rome*; for this is a soil so fertilized by the *Nile*, that it is not in the power of the *Turks*, it seems, to render it barren. But another great reason of its continuing fruitful is, that the *Egyptians*, by being still governed by their own princes, have an inheritance in their lands, which are privileges very few of the *Turks* enjoy besides; neither dares the *Turkish* government to overload this people with taxes, for fear of a general revolt: so that except what the viceroy and his creatures illegally extort from them, the whole revenue raised by the government does not amount to a million of our money, of which two thirds are spent within the kingdom, and not more than one third comes into the grand signior's treasury.

We must not forget that from *Egypt* came that vagrant Gypsies. race called Gypsies, dispersed into every kingdom of *Europe* and *Asia*. They were originally called *Zinganeas* by the *Turks*, from their captain *Zinganeus*, who, when sultan *Selimus* made a conquest of *Egypt* about the year 1517, refused to submit to the *Turkish* yoke, and retired into the deserts, where they lived by rapine and plunder, and frequently came down into the plains of *Egypt*, committing great outrages in the towns upon the *Nile*, under the dominion of the *Turks*. But being at length subdued, and banished *Egypt*, they agreed to disperse themselves in small parties, into every country in the known world; and, as they were natives of *Egypt*, a country where the occult sciences, or black art, as it was called, was supposed to have arrived to great perfection, and which, in that credulous age, was in great vogue with persons of all religions and persuasions, they found the people wherever they came, very easily imposed on.

If we trace these cheats, these illusions of fancy back to their original source, we shall find them all flowing from the superstitious in which the ideas of the *Egyptians* were primitively immersed. How could this people avoid being highly superstitious? *Egypt* was the country of enchantment; imagination was there perpetually struck by the grand machines of the marvellous, and nothing was to be seen but phantoms of terror and admiration. The prince was an object of astonishment and fear: like the thunder which gathers in the depths of the clouds, and seems there to roll with greater grandeur and majesty, it was from the inmost recesses of his labyrinths, and his palace, that the monarch dictated his will. The kings never shewed themselves without the terrifying and formidable apparatus of a power sprung from a divine original. The death of the king was an apotheosis: the earth sunk under the weight of their mausoleums. By these powerful Gods *Egypt* was covered with superb obelisks, filled with wonderful inscriptions, and with enormous pyramids, whose summits were lost in the air: by these beneficent Gods those lakes were formed, which secured *Egypt* against the attentions of nature.

MORE formidable than the throne and its monarchs, the priests and their pontiffs still farther imposed on the imagination of the *Egyptians*. In one of these temples was the colossus of *Serapis*: no mortal dared to approach it. With the duration of this colossus was connected that of the world: whoever should break this talisman would have replunged the earth into its first chaos. No bounds were set to credulity;

dulity: every thing in *Egypt* was ænigma, wonder, and mystery. All the temples gave oracles; all the caverns bellowed forth horrible howlings; every where were seen tremulous tripods, the *Pythia* in a rage, victims, priests, and magicians, who, invested with the power of the gods, were ready to exert their vengeance.

THE philosophers, armed against superstition, rose up against it; but soon engaged in the labyrinth of too abstracted metaphysics, dispute divided their opinions; interest and fanaticism took advantage of them, and produced the chaos of their different systems: from thence sprung the pompous mysteries of *Isis*, *Osiris*, and *Horus*. Then, covered with the mysterious and sublime darkness of theology and religion, the imposture remained undiscovered. If some *Egyptians* perceived it, by the glimmering light of doubt, revenge, always suspended over the head of the indiscreet, turned their eyes from the light, and locked up truth in their mouths. Even the kings, who to guard against all disrespect, had at first, in concert with the priests, raised up terror and superstition about the throne, were themselves terrified at them, and soon entrusted the temples with the sacred depositum of the young princes; fatal epoch of the tyranny of the *Egyptian* priests! No obstacle could then oppose their power. Their sovereigns were encircled from their infancy with the bandage of opinion, free and independent as they were; and while they might see nothing in these priests but cheats and mercenary enthusiasts, they became their slaves and victims. The people, the imitators of their kings, followed their example, and all *Egypt* fell prostrate before the host of the pontiff, and the altar of superstition.

C H A P. III.

Of Ethiopia, comprehending the Countries of Nubia, Abyssinia, Abesh, and Anian, Zanguebar, Monomotopa, Monemugi, and Caffraria.

THE ancients, as it appears from their histories, called all that they knew of *Africa* to the southward of *Egypt*, *Ethiopia*, and the people *Ethiopes*, from their dark complexions; but the moderns include only under that denomination the countries of *Nubia*, *Abyssinia*, *Abesh*, and *Anian*, which are bounded by *Egypt* and the desert of *Barca* on the north; by the *Red Sea* and the *Eastern Ocean* on the east; by *Zanguebar* and *Caffraria* on the south; and by *Guinea*, *Nigritia*, and *Zaara*, on the west: however, all the countries still, according to the ancient division, that lie almost in a straight line from *Egypt* to the *Cape of Good Hope*, may be comprehended under the general name of *Ethiopia*, divided, as before-mentioned, into upper and lower.

NUBIA is bounded by *Egypt* towards the north; by *Abyssinia* on the south; by the coast of *Abesh* on the east; and by *Zaara* and *Nigritia* on the west. It is said to be 400 leagues in length, and 200 in breadth; but scarce any two historians or geographers agree in these matters, seeming to guess at almost every thing they relate of *Nubia*, which is the case of almost every other inland country of *Africa*. Some tell us of a considerable river that rises here and falls into the *Nile*; that the country abounds in gold, musk, sandal wood and ivory; that it has elephants, horses, camels, lions, and such other animals, wild and tame, as are found in the neighbouring country of *Abyssinia*; but they give us not the least intimation, whether it be a monarchy or commonwealth; or whether it is divided into many little kingdoms and states, the last of which is most probable, because we hear so little of the inhabitants. The same uncertainty we meet with in regard to their religion; but it is highly probable *Paganism*, *Judaism*, *Christianity*, or *Mohammedanism*, is professed by one or other of the natives, people of all those various religions bordering upon them.

ABYSSINIA has now little communication with the rest of the world, the *Turks* having possessed themselves of *Abesh*, which runs along the western coast of the *Red Sea*, and the of it being surrounded by mountains or unpassable deserts. Within these it appears to be an exceeding fine country.

try, diversified with woods and fruitful plains, well planted with palm-trees, dates, and cedars, and watered by several noble rivers. The river *Nile* rises in the midst of it, and having first taken a circuit almost round its source, runs 100 miles to the northward, and afterwards 200 miles towards the east; then turning to the south and south-east, continues its course 250 miles further. In this course it forms the lake of *Dambee*, of 120 miles extent. From thence it takes a semicircular sweep of 500 miles, and then turning directly north, enters the kingdom of *Egypt*. This winding course not only renders the soil extremely fertile, but is of great advantage to inland commerce; though after the *Nile's* entering *Egypt*, there are so many steep falls and cataracts, that the river is no longer properly navigable for the purposes of traffic. Being swelled by the rains which annually fall at a certain season between the tropics, it overflows all the lower grounds that border on it; and this is the case of all the rivers that rise within the tropics, though the ancients were at so great a loss to account for this periodical flood; and what increases the flood still more are the torrents that fall from the numerous hills with which this country is incumbered. The inhabitants, however, have this advantage from their hills, that they can remove thither in the hot season, and enjoy a cooler air than they do in *Egypt*, which lies several degrees north of *Abyssinia*. Their vallies, also, rendered fruitful by the annual rains and the numerous rivulets, produce plenty of corn, rice, wine, flax, sugar, and fruits proper for the climate. Their flax is esteemed the finest in the world; and from hence, it is said, the *Egyptians* had theirs, of which they made the fine linen of *Egypt* mentioned in the scripture: and had they, at this day, an opportunity of exporting the produce of their soil, this country alone, it is thought, might raise rice, sugar, and other commodities, sufficient to supply all the neighbouring countries. The *Turks*, who are masters of the coast of the *Red Sea*, though they will suffer no other nation to trade to *Abyssinia*, annually export great quantities of rice from hence, particularly at the times of the great pilgrimages to *Mecca*, *Arabia* not affording provision sufficient for their subsistence. Gold is also very plentiful here, of which the *Turks* get some; and had the *Abyssinians* an opportunity of bartering it for the merchandize of *Europe*, as great a plenty of it might be found in this country as any where, though none of the gold mines are wrought at present; but only those of silver and copper. Amongst other precious stones they have the largest emeralds in the world. Their cattle are camels, oxen, sheep, asses, all in great plenty, and very

very large; their wild beasts are such as are common to the rest of *Africa*; but what they are most famous for, is an excellent breed of horses, equal to those of *Arabia*; or, as some conjecture, those of *Arabia* are, in reality, bred in *Abyssinia*, where they abound in rich pastures. As to the persons of the *Ethiopians* or *Abyssinians*, they are generally of a good stature; their complexion, a deep black, but their features more agreeable than their southern neighbours, having neither flat noses nor thick lips like other *Cassres*. The sovereign of this country was once absolute; but at present the great men set up for princes in their respective governments, and the king can transact nothing of any consequence without them. It was the king of this country, that the *Europeans* used to stile *Prester John*. The *Portuguese*, it is said, when they first discovered it, seeing a cross always carried before him, stiled him priest, or *Presbyter Maximus*. He took upon him the supreme ecclesiastical as well as civil power; others say the *Turks* gave him the name of *Prester Cham*, or *Cam*, that is, king of slaves, because they purchased most of their negro slaves in this country. The government appears now to be a republic, or rather a mixed monarchy, in which the prince's power is extremely limited by the great men. As to the common people, it is not very material whether the power be lodged in the king or lords, for they are all slaves either to the one or the other. Their religion is a mixture of Christianity and *Judaism*; but they seem to adhere more to the *Greek* church than to the *Latin*. They keep both the *Christian* and the *Jewish* sabbath, and both baptize and circumcise their children, and even their females. They are said to have a great deal of vivacity and natural wit, to be of a teachable disposition, and fond of learning, though they have but few opportunities of improving themselves. The better sort of them are cloathed in vests, made of silk stuffs or cotton, after the manner of the *Franks* in *Turky*; but their poor people go almost naked, having only a small piece of skin or coarse stuff wrapped about their waists. They have no other bread than thin cakes baked upon the hearth as they want them: they eat all manner of flesh almost as the *European* do, except swine's flesh, and such other meats as were prohibited to the *Jews*; they also abstain from things strangled, and from blood, killing their meat in the same manner as the *Jews* do. As to the poor people, they live chiefly upon milk, butter, cheese, roots, herbs, and what their flocks and herds produce. This is the country from whence, it is supposed, the queen of *Saba* came to hear the wisdom of *Solomon*; and from whence the eunuch, prime mi-

nister of queen *Candace*, came, who was converted to Christianity and baptised by St. *Philip*. *Ethiopia* was then a mighty empire, subject to one sovereign, who commanded the sea-coast as well as the inland country. When the *Portuguese* missionaries resorted to *Ethiopia* towards the latter end of the fifteenth century, they brought over a great many of the *Ethiopians* to their religion, and persuaded the emperor not only to acknowledge the pope's supremacy, but to admit a patriarch amongst them sent thither from *Rome*. The government also consented to abolish their ancient rites and ceremonies, and conform intirely to the ritual of the *Latin* church; but many of the nobility and governors of the provinces, with a majority of the common people, having the greatest abhorrence of these innovations, rose in arms against their emperor, which occasioned civil wars in *Ethiopia*, that lasted upwards of 100 years, wherein many thousands were killed. But the court, with the assistance of the *Jesuits*, *European* engineers, and some *Portuguese* troops, were generally victorious over those of the ancient religion, but could never subdue their obstinate perseverance in it; and several provinces revolted intirely from the emperor. However, the *Ethiopian* emperors continued still to profess the tenets of the *Latin* church, and to submit to the dictates of *Rome*; till at length the *Jesuits*, under pretence of maintaining the pope's ecclesiastical jurisdiction, took upon them to direct most secular affairs, treating the prince rather as a viceroy to the pope, than sovereign of the country; and having erected and garrisoned several forts, were sending for *European* forces to maintain their usurped power, when the emperor, as well as the nobility, taking the alarm, agreed at once to abolish popery, and restore their ancient religion. The *Romish* priests were hereupon generally sacrificed to the fury of the people, and their patriarch very narrowly escaped out of the country with his life: and when afterwards three capuchins came as far as *Squaquena*, upon the *Red Sea*, from whence they sent letters to the emperor of *Ethiopia* to obtain leave to come into his territories again; that prince requested the *Turkish* *bassa*, who commanded on the coast, to suffer no *Franks* to come that way into his territories, and to send him the heads of those capuchins. This the *bassa* not only obliged him to, but sent him their skins flayed off and stuffed, that he might know them to be *Franks* by their colour, and priests by their shaved crowns. Thus have the *Romish* missionaries procured themselves to be banished out of almost every country where they have planted their religion. They have indeed by their skill in medicine and mathematics, and an artful address,

insinuated themselves into the courts of many great princes; but their ill advised advancing of the pope's supremacy to an extravagant height, together with their endeavours to control the government in civil, as well as ecclesiastical matters, has ever occasioned their expulsion. Thus it was in *Japan*, where the emperor finding them encroaching upon his civil authority, ordered every Christian in his dominions to be massacred, and that no Christian should ever set foot on shore there again. This also has put a stop to their progress in *China*, and occasioned very severe persecutions of the Christians there. Still the Jesuits persist in their encroachments on princes where they have an opportunity; but the consequence must be, as we lately have found it verified by the conduct of the kings of *Portugal* and *France*, that they will at length procure their own extirpation by the general consent of Christian princes, as the Knights-Templars did by their insolence in the fourteenth century. There seems nothing more material to add in regard to the *Abyssinians*, but that the sons of the emperor succeed according to their seniority, as do those of the nobility who have obtained an independency; but the rest of the people have no inheritance of their lands, nor can dispose of their estates or effects, but by the permission of the emperors, or their respective lords. The prince is stiled Negasch, by his subjects, which in their language signifies, king of kings; and for this reason the *Europeans* give him the title of emperor. The *Perians* also give him the title of Par-sha, the disposer of kingdoms, which is the highest title known in *Asia*, and equal to that of emperor in *Europe*. But every one of these princes, at his accession to the throne, assumes a particular title: one stiles himself the Pillar of Faith; another, the Virgin Incense; and another, the Beloved of God, sprung from the stock of *Judah*, the son of *David*, the son of *Solomon*, &c. for they have a tradition, that their princes are descended from *Solomon* by the queen of *Sheba*. The arms of the emperor are a lion rampant, holding a cross, with this motto, *Vicit Leo de Tribu Judah*.

THAT part of *Ethiopia* which is called by the name of *Abesh and Anian*, is bounded by *Egypt* and *Abyssinia* towards the north and west; by the *Red Sea* and the *Eastern Ocean*, on the east; and by *Zanguebar* on the south, extending from the fifth degree of north latitude to the twentieth. *Anian* lies upon, or near the *Eastern Ocean*, and the *Red Sea*. The *Portuguese* and other *Europeans*, who have visited it of late years, assure us, it is a perfect desert, from latitude 5, to the Straits of *Babelmandel*, and even within those straits for several miles.

miles. The *Turks* are masters of the coast of *Abesh* to the northward of *Anian*, and in the principal ports, *Suaquem* and *Arquico*, about 150 miles distant from each other, keep strong garrisons, which command the country, a fruitful tract of ground, populous, and abounding with plenty of most things.

Zangue-
bar.

UNDER the name of *Zanguebar*, may be included all the east coast of *Africa*, extending from 5 degrees north to 28 south, and comprehending the countries of *Magadoxa*, *Melinda*, *Quiloo*, *Mozambic*, and *Sofala*. All the people upon this coast are in alliance, or rather subject to the *Portuguese*. The country of *Magadoxa* is barren, affording scarce any merchandize or cattle, unless a good breed of horses, which the natives, a mixture of *Pagans*, *Mohammedans* and *Christians*, sell to the *Portuguese*, who dispose of them again to the *Arabs*. *Melinda*, though it lies so near the equator, is exceeding pleasant, fruitful, and healthful, being frequently refreshed with showers and fine sea-breezes. The city of the same name, and the capital of the *Portuguese* dominions in this part of the world, is situate in two degrees and a half south latitude, on an island at the mouth of a river also of the same name. It is a large populous place, well built, and has a good harbour, commanded by a strong citadel. Some calculate that the inhabitants of the city, and the little island on which it stands, do not amount to less than 200,000 souls, great part of them *Christians*. The public buildings, consisting of seventeen churches, nine religious houses, the governor's palace, and the magazine and town-hall, exceed any thing of the kind in magnificence that is to be found in *Africa*. The warehouses are stocked with all sorts of *European* goods, with which the *Portuguese* trade with the natives for gold, elephants teeth, slaves, ostrich-feathers, wax, senna, aloes, civet, ambergrease, and frankincense. The country produces also rice, millet, sugar, and fruits; and the *Portuguese* export great quantities of rice to their other settlements, besides what they use. The king of the country of *Quiloo*, which lies to the southward of *Melinda*, pays, it is said, a tribute in gold to the *Portuguese*, amounting to the value of 100,000 crusades annually. Excellent sugar-canes are here produced, but the *Portuguese* do not improve them, by reason of the unhealthiness of the climate. The country of *Mozambic* lies south of *Quiloo*; the chief town is situate on an island on the mouth of a river of the same name, in fifteen degrees south latitude. It is regularly fortified, and has a good harbour, defended by a citadel; and the island on which it stands, is thirty miles in circumference, and extremely populous. The *Portuguese* think

shipping to and from *India*, call here for refreshments; and, as this country produces great herds of cattle, the *Portuguese* kill beef and salt it up, sending it to the *Brazils*, or selling it to the *European* shipping. They also barter *European* goods with the natives for their gold, elephants teeth, and slaves. The town has six churches and several monasteries. *Mongale*, another island-town in this country, is also garrisoned by the *Portuguese*, being their chief staple for *European* goods. The gold they receive from the natives, is found near the surface of the earth, or in the sands of rivers, no gold mines, or very few, being at present wrought in *Africa*. The country or kingdom of *Sofala* lies south of *Mozambic*, and the gulph of the same name, is part of the channel of *Mozambic*, on the east. From the mouth of the river of the *Holy Ghost* to *Cape Corientes*, the soil is very even, barren, and desert; but from that cape to the mouth of the river *Cumena*, the country is fruitful and very populous. The coast is very low, and mariners discover their approach to it, not so much by their sight as smell, because it abounds with fragrant flowers. The inhabitants assert, that their gold mines yield above two millions of metigals *per annum*, each amounting to about twelve shillings sterling; that the ships from *Zedein* and *Mecra* carry off above two millions a year in time of peace; and that the governor of *Mozambic*, whose office lasts but three years, has above 300,000 crowns revenue, without reckoning the soldiers pay, and the king of *Portugal's* tribute. From hence *Moquet* concludes this to be the *Ophir*, whither *Solomon* sent ships every three years from *Eziongeber* to fetch gold; *Eziongeber* being thought to be *Suez*, a sea-port on the *Red-Sea*. This conjecture is supported by several edifices, which seem to have been built by foreigners. Some think this to be confirmed by the authority of the *Septuagint*, who translate the word *Ophir* by the word *Σοφισα*, *Sophira*; and since liquids are often put for one another, *Sophira* does not differ much from *Sofala*. Besides, *Thomas Lopez*, in his *India* voyage, relates, that the inhabitants of this country boast that they have books which prove, that in the time of *Solomon*, the *Israëlites* sailed every third year towards these parts to fetch gold. The inhabitants of *Quiloa*, *Mombaza*, and *Melinda*, come to this country in little boats, called *Zambues*, with stuffs of blue and white cottons, silk stuffs, yellow and red ambergrease, which they exchange here for gold and ivory, and the natives sell them again to the subjects of *Mamomotopa*, who give them gold in return without weighing it. It is

said, that when the *Sofala* see ships coming, they light up fires, to signify that they shall be welcome. The capital city here, and the only one of note, is also called *Sofala*. It stands on a river of the same name, about six leagues from the sea-coast. The *Portuguese* are masters of it, having built a strong fortress there, ever since the year 1500. Their chief trade consists in ambergrease, gold, slaves, and silk stuffs. They likewise take care to have those mines worked which lie to the south of the town. This country is spacious, and little known to any but to them; and they appear to be wiser in relation to the conduct of their trade in *Africa* than any other of the *European* potentates, having not contented themselves with erecting a few forts and factories, but settled themselves upon the continent in great numbers, and brought the natives to clothe according to the *European* mode; which has created a considerable and profitable commerce to them.

Monomotopa.

MONOMOTOPA, an inland country in this part of *Africa*, has the maritime kingdom of *Sofala* on the east, the river *del Spiritu Santo*, on the south; the mountains of *Caffraria* on the west; and the river *Cauma* on the north, which parts it from *Monemugi*. The air of this country is very temperate, the land fertile in pastures, and all the necessaries of life, being watered by several rivers, on the banks of which grow many fine trees and sugar-canes without any culture; and yet this fine country is not peopled in all parts of it. The inhabitants are rich in horned cattle, which they value more than gold. They have no beasts of burden, but a vast number of elephants, as appears from the great quantity of ivory that is exported from this country. Here are a great many gold mines; and the rivers that run through their veins, carry a great deal of gold dust along with their streams. The inhabitants dive to the bottom of the rivers and lakes, take up the sand, and carry it on the banks, to separate the gold from it. They are tall, well-shaped, strong, healthy, and much more lively than the people of *Mozambique* and *Mezinda*; and they are besides lovers of war, which is the trade followed by all those who do not apply themselves to commerce. This country is divided into seven provinces, or petty kingdoms, vassals to the king. *Manica*, situate on the south of the river *del Spiritu Santo*, is the capital town, and to the south of it are gold mines.

MONEMUGI, another country in the south of *Africa*, has *Zanguebar* on the east, *Monomotopa* on the south, *Mozambique* and *Makoko* on the west, and *Abyssinia* on the north, and partly to the west, though its boundaries that way can not

not be exactly ascertained. It is divided into the following parts. 1. *Mujaco* borders on *Congo* westward, on *Nubia* northward, on *Abyssinia* and on *Makoko* southward. That the extent of this monarchy is very great, appears by the distant countries its confines extend to, and the sovereign's great power, by his being in continual war with his neighbour the king of *Makoko*. The people of *Congo* travel hither for elephants teeth. 2. *Makoko*, otherwise called *Anzico*. Its boundaries northward, eastward, and southward, cannot be well ascertained. The people here do not till the ground, have no property, nor any settled habitation; but, like the *Arabs*, wander from place to place and subsist by plunder. They traffic in the kingdom of *Angola*, whither they carry slaves from their own country; and from *Nubia*, which they exchange for salt, glass beads, silk, knives, and other wares. 3. *Gingiro*, a potent kingdom, lies between *Narca*, the most southern kingdom of *Abyssinia*, and *Makoko* and *Cambate*; north and east of the first of them, and west of the latter. The great river *Zeebe*, that runs down to *Makoko*, almost environs it. When the king here purchases any thing of foreign merchants, he pays them in slaves, and these are the sons and daughters of any family, which he takes at pleasure without contradiction. 4. *Cambate* joins to this kingdom on the west, has *Abyssinia* on the north; *Alaba*, or the country of the *Galas*, on the east; and *Makoko* on the south. The country pays some acknowledgments to the emperor of *Abyssinia*, which are only voluntary. 5. *Alaba*, another large kingdom, still to the eastward of *Cambate*, inhabited by a cruel people, called *Galas*, and reaching to the coast of *Zanguebar*. 6. *Monemugi Proper*, so called, lies in the torrid zone, and about the equinoctial line, south of *Makoko*, west of *Zanguebar*, north of *Monomotopa*, and east of *Congo* and of the northern parts of *Monomotopa*. To ascertain its extent is too difficult a task, being a country so little frequented. The country known abounds with gold, silver, copper mines, and elephants. The natives clothe themselves in silks and cottons, which they buy of strangers, and wear collars of transparent amber-beads, brought them from *Cambaya*, which beads serve also instead of money; gold and silver being too common, and of little value among them. Their monarch always endeavours to be at peace with the princes round about him, to keep an open trade with *Quiloa*, *Melinda*, and *Mombaza*, on the east, and with *Congo* on the west, from all which parts the black merchants resort thither for gold. The *Portuguese* merchants report, that on the east side of *Monemugi*, there is a great lake full of small islands, abounding with all sorts of fowl

and cattle, and inhabited by negroes. They relate also, that on the main land eastwards, they heard sometimes the ringing of bells, and that one could observe buildings, very much like churches; and that from these parts came men of a brown and tawny complexion, who traded with those islanders, and with the people of *Monemugi*. This country affords also abundance of palm-wine, and oil, and such great plenty of honey, that above half of it is lost, the blacks not being able to consume it. The air is generally very unwholesome, and excessively hot, which is the reason why no Christians undertake to travel into this empire.

Caffraria. *CAFFRARIA* is the last country that remains to be described in the southern parts of *Africa*. It begins at *Cape Negro*, about the 15th degree, and 30 minutes south latitude; extends from thence south-easterly to the *Cape of Good Hope*, thence north-east to the river *Del Spiritu Sancto*, about the 25th degree of south latitude, which river separates it on the north-east from *Monomotapa*; on the north it reaches almost to the equator, where it borders on the kingdom of *Matoko*; and on the north-west it has *Congo*, or *Lower-Guinea*, with the kingdom of *Benguela*. *Martiniere* observes, that *Caffraria* is not properly the name of any particular country, and that there is no nation called *Caffres*, the appellation being rather opprobrious, and given by the *Arabs* to all those who do not profess the *Mohammedan* religion. It is derived from the *Arabic* word *Cafir*, which signifies an infidel, or unbeliever. The *Portuguese* taking the name in a more general sense, have called *Caffres* all those nations of *Africa* who have, or seem to have, no knowledge of a deity. From these boundaries of *Caffraria*, it appears to be a very large country, extending from *Cape Negro* to that of *Good-Hope*, near 20 degrees, or 1200 *English* miles from north to south; from the *Cape of Good-Hope* north-east, to the mouth of the river *Del Spiritu Sancto*, about 850 miles; and from the same cape almost to the equinoctial line, about 29 degrees, or 1740 miles. Its greatest breadth, from *Cape St. Tome* to the mouth of the above river, is about 900 miles; but from the tropic of *Capricorn*, up to the equinoctial line, its breadth is not much above 600 miles. *Caffraria* may be divided into the kingdom of *Mataman*, the country of the *Hottentots*, *Terra de Natal*, and *Terra dos Fumos*.

MATAMAN is bounded by the kingdom of *Benguela* on the north; by the river *Bravabul* on the east and south; and by the *Ethiopic Ocean* on the west. It extends from *Cape Negro*, in south latitude 16. 30. to the mouth of the river *Bravabul*, beyond the tropic of *Capricorn*, in south latitude

24. so that its greatest length, from north to south, is about 450 *English* miles; but its greatest breadth, from west to east, is not above 260 miles. About 200 miles to the west of *Cape Negro*, the climate is pretty temperate; and, though the coast is very sandy, the country is pretty fruitful, and produces a great variety of provisions. The lands are extremely sandy all along the sea-coast, and the harbours bad, and little frequented. Here are no towns nor cities bordering upon the sea, but only poor scattering villages.

THE country of the *Hottentots* is bounded on the north-west by part of the river *Bravabul*; on the north it extends to the tropic of Capricorn; on the north-east, the river *Del Spiritu Sancto* parts it from the empire of *Monomotapa*; on the east and south it has the *Eastern-Ocean*; and on the west the *Ethiopic-Ocean*.

THE *Cape of Good-Hope*, which is the most famous place for any traffic among the *Hottentots*, was first discovered in the year 1493, by *Bartholomew Dias*, a *Portuguese* admiral, in the reign of *John II.* king of *Portugal*. The admiral gave it the name of *Cabo dos todos los Tormentos*, or, *The Cape of Great Sorrows*, from the boisterous winds that are almost continually roaring there. But the king changed that name into *Cabo del bonne Esperanza*, or, *The Cape of Good-Hope*; because, says he, there was now good hope of making prosperous voyages to the *East-Indies*; and by that name it has been known in *Europe* ever since. It lies in latitude 34. 15 south, and longitude 20. 10. east of *London*.

THOUGH this famous cape was first discovered by *Dias*, yet he only went so near it as to observe its situation, bays, and anchorings; but the *Portuguese* never made any settlement there; nor did the *Dutch*, who first visited it in the year 1600, immediately discern all the advantages arising from this situation; and they only touched there for many years, in their voyages to and from the *East-Indies*, so traffic for provisions. For this purpose, they went from time to time, in bodies up into the country, and having thrown up a small fort near the harbour, they secured themselves and their purchases in the night-time, till they had shipped them. The *Dutch* made another use of the *Cape*, while things were carried on in this way, which was a notable contrivance. Every commander going out was provided with a square stone, upon which, at his departure from the *Cape*, he caused his own name, that of his ship, and the names of his principal officers, to be fairly cut, together with the day he arrived there, and the day he departed. The stone, with such inscriptions, was buried in a certain place without the fort, and under it

was

was put a tin box, sealed up, containing letters from the captain, and others, to the directors of the *Dutch East-India* company, together with such other letters as any person on board thought fit to send into *Europe*. This stone and box were taken up by the next ship that passed by the Cape, in her return, and by her conveyed to *Holland*. And whoever considers the situation of the Cape, (as a sort of half-way house in the *East-India* voyage) and the satisfaction the company by this means received, from time to time, concerning the fortune and condition of their ships, will acknowledge this a very useful contrivance.

AFTER this manner the *Dutch* used the Cape till the year 1650, when their fleet anchoring before it for the usual purpose, M. *Van Riebeck*, a surgeon, belonging to it, had the penetration to discern the still greater advantages which the company might reap from the Cape, by means of a very little cultivation. He observed, that the country was plentifully stocked with cattle; that the soil was rich, and capable of generous productions; that the natives were tractable, and the harbour commodious and improveable; and upon the whole, made a good judgment to what a degree the *Dutch* trade might be secured, and facilitated by means of this situation: in a word, he saw that it was highly advisable for the *Dutch* to make a settlement there. Accordingly, he digested his observations, and, on his return to *Holland*, laid them before the directors of the *East-India* company, who were so well satisfied with them, that immediately after a grand consultation of the same, they came to a resolution to attempt a settlement at the Cape without loss of time. Hereupon four ships were ordered for the Cape, with all the materials, instruments, artificers, and other hands necessary in such an expedition. *Van Riebeck*, the surgeon, was appointed admiral, with a commission on his arrival, to act as governor and commander in chief of the intended settlement; and with power to treat, manage, and act, for the introduction and establishment of the *Dutch*, in such manner as he should think fit. *Van Riebeck* arriving safely with those four ships at the Cape, the natives were so captivated with the presents he brought them of grass, toys, beads, tobacco, brandy, &c. and so charmed with his address, that a treaty was no sooner set on foot than concluded; wherein it was agreed, that, in consideration of such a quantity of certain toys and commodities to be delivered to the natives, as might cost 50,000 guilders, the *Dutch* should have full liberty to settle there. This being immediately performed, the *Dutch* took possession of the Cape, which with a great deal of ceremony

emony was delivered up to them. The traffic of the *Dutch* with the natives was also, by the same treaty, established on a good and solid foundation, with many considerable privileges and regulations for their commercial interests.

In consequence of these measures, the governor raised a fort, wherein he built dwelling houses, warehouses, and an hospital for the reception of the sick. To this fort he added proper outworks, to secure himself from any attacks from the *Europeans*. But, in process of time, settlers flowing abundantly to the Cape, and trade greatly increasing, the then governor, whose name was *Bax*, took notice, that the company's store-houses which were without the fort, would be soon too small to receive all the company's merchandize at the Cape: he judged likewise, that there was a necessity for augmenting the garrison, since all the trading nations in *Europe* saw, and began to envy the *Dutch*, the advantages they made of the Cape, and that therefore it might be justly apprehended, that one or other of those nations would attempt to wrest it from them. These things he represented to the court of directors, and proposed to them the erecting of a new fort in a more advantageous situation. This was accordingly done, and from time to time has been so augmented, that, at this day, it is a very strong and stately building, and provided with all manner of accommodations for a garrison. It covers the harbour roundly, and is of admirable defence towards the country; and the company's storehouses for merchandizes are very large and commodious.

THE settlement being firmly established, they increased and multiplied in people to such a degree, that in few years, being still joined by new settlers from *Europe*, they began to extend themselves into new colonies along the coast. At present, they are divided into four principal ones: the first is at the Cape, where are the grand forts and the capital city; the second is the *Hellenbogensh*; the third the *Drakenston*; and the fourth the *Waverish* colony. The *Dutch East-India* company has likewise bought, for the future increase of the people, all that tract of land called *Terra de Natal*, lying between the *Mozambic* and the Cape; for which they paid in toys, commodities, and utensils, to the value of 30,000 guilders; so that the province is now become of great extent.

EIGHT particular establishments constitute the present government of the *Dutch* colony at the Cape. These are, a grand council; a court of justice; a petty court of assaults,

&c.

&c. a court of marriages; a chamber of orphans; an ecclesiastical council; a common-council; and a board of militia; by means of all which, this colony is well regulated and governed.

IN the neighbourhood of the Cape are three remarkable hills: the *Table-Hill* is the highest of the three. On the tops are several fine springs, the water as clear as crystal, and of a very delicate taste. Though at a distance no tokens of fertility are discovered on this hill, yet, in ascending it, the eye is surprised with the charms of its fruitfulness. The stately trees with which it is adorned, are hardly to be discovered till one is just near them. On this hill also, between two groves, a silver mine was discovered some years ago. Some ore dug out of it was sent to *Holland*, but not yielding, it seems, such a quantity of pure silver as to induce the company to think that the produce of the mine would answer the charge of working it, the mine was closed up and neglected: this mine may, probably, be wrought to good profit some years hence. Besides the pleasing harbours on this hill, the beauty, variety, and fragrancy of the flowers that grow in plenty, and adorn its tops and sides, are not to be expressed, says *Kalbeke*; and they are more delightful to the eye, and more odoriferous, than any he ever met with in *Europe*. The other is called *Lyon-Hill*, which is separated from the former by a valley, whereon stands a hut for the shelter of two men, posted there by the government, to give notice to the fortress at the Cape of the appearance of any ship making in, of which they give signals to the fort. The last of these is the *Wind-Hill*, which abounds with excellent pasture.

PART of the *Hottentots* have submitted themselves to the *Hollanders*, and are therefore stiled the company's *Hottentots*. The *Dutch* send annually about fifty or sixty persons to trade with them, who purchase their cattle, and give them in exchange, arrack, tobacco, hemp, and such garden-seeds, &c. as they have occasion for, by which means a good understanding is preserved.

SEVERAL authors, particularly the *Dutch*, have been profuse in their descriptions of every thing regarding the *Hottentots*; but it may suffice in general to observe, that they are of a middling stature, with small limbs and active bodies, flat oval faces, large eye brows, black-eyes, and their colour and complexion rather tawny than black. They besmear their bodies with grease and soot, with the latter, perhaps, to appear blacker, and often twist the guts of beasts and fowls about their legs and arms in the manner of bracelets, which

some

Some say they occasionally make use of for food. Upon their heads they wear some shells, and on their bodies a mantle of sheep-skin, with the woolly side outwards, and another piece, like an apron, hanging before from the navel. Their huts are very mean, and so is their furniture, consisting only of two or three earthen pots to dress their victuals in, which are usually herbs, flesh, or shell-fish. In every village the eldest is first in order and dignity, his advice, as to what concerns the whole, being chiefly followed, as having most experience. They have neither temples, idols, nor any other peculiar place of worship; they celebrate, indeed, several nocturnal dances, with singing, at the new and full moon; but these are performed near their huts, and seem to be rather pastimes, or merry-meetings, than any thing relating to religious worship. Their weapons are javelins, with which they are very dexterous at hitting a mark; and bows with poisoned arrows, which are said to be mortal on drawing blood. They are so fond of their own country, and the sweets of a vagabond life, that there is no getting the better of their invincible reluctance to adopt the *European* manners and customs. For this reason, the *Dutch* missionaries, with all their endeavours, have not been able to convert a single *Hottentot*. *Vander Stel*, a governor of the Cape, having procured a *Hottentot* infant, took care to have him brought up in the principles of the Christian religion, and the manners and customs of *Europe*. He cloathed him richly, had him taught several languages; and the boy's progress perfectly corresponded with the attention bestowed upon it. The governor, big with expectations from his pupil's capacity, sent him to the *Indies* with a commissary-general, who employed him usefully in the company's affairs; but, the commissary dying, he returned to the Cape, and in a visit he made to some of his *Hottentot* relations a few days after his arrival, took the strange resolution to exchange all his *European* finery for a sheep's skin. In this new dress he returned to the fort, loaded with a bundle containing the cloaths he had thrown off, and presented himself in the following words: "Be so kind, Sir, as to take notice, that I for ever renounce this apparel. I likewise for ever renounce the Christian religion. It is my firm resolution to live and die in the religion, manners, and customs of my ancestors. All the favour I ask from you, is to leave me the collar and the hanger I wear, I shall keep them for your sake." These words were scarce out of his mouth, when he took to his heels, and was out of sight, nor did he ever appear among the *Europeans* again.

Our *English* seamen who have touched at the *Caffres*, could never be reconciled to the *Hottentots*, but always considered them as the nastiest and most brutal people, in the world. This is chiefly owing to their ill smell, occasioned by their greasing themselves continually; yet this is not a custom peculiar to the *Hottentots*, being used by most of the negroes on the coast of *Guinea*. It is true, that the latter, generally speaking, make use of oil, which is less offensive; but when they cannot get that, like the *Hottentots*, they content themselves with such grease and kitchen-stuff as they can purchase from the *Europeans* who trade with them. This custom prevails likewise in the *East-Indies*, particularly on the *Malacca* coast, but more-especially in the islands; as, for instance, at *Sumatra*, where the natives grease themselves as much, and smell to the full as strong, as the *Hottentots*. The *Javaneze* likewise practise the same; and so do the people of the *Philippines* and of the *Spice-Islands*; but then they commonly make use of cocoa-nut oil, which is far from being disagreeable. In one respect, however, the *Hottentots* exceed them all; for they are particularly careful to grease and smirch their faces, which is what the *Indians* never do. This custom of anointing is not altogether unknown to the *Americans*, though, generally speaking, they rather affect painting their bodies, perhaps, from the same cause that the *Hottentots* and *Indians* anoint themselves, in order to defend their naked bodies from the inclemency of the weather.

TERRA Dos Fumos is but a small country along the sea-coast, from the mouth of the river *Delagoa* to that of *Rio de Ladroon*, or, the River of the Robbers. The *Europeans* have no settlement for trade here, and the *Caffres*, who inhabit this country, have neither towns, villages, nor any settled dwelling.

To the north of the country of the *Hottentots*, is the land of *Mozumbo Aculunga*, which has the kingdom of *Mataman* on the west; the *Hottentot* country on the south; *Monomotopa* on the east; and the province of *Obila* on the north. Next to this, northwards, lies the province of *Obila*. Farther north is the kingdom of *Abilua*, which is said to be rich in gold mines. *Dapper* says, that this province, which he calls *Toroca*, or *Torva*, and others *Butya*, begins to the south of the mountains of the *Moon*, and extends northwards to the river *Magnica*, having the river *Bravagul* on the west. The town of *Fataqa* abounds with gold, silver, and precious stones; and there are two gold mines at *Boro* and *Quitici*, 200 leagues distant from *Sofala*; they are esteemed

the richest in the whole country. Going higher up to the north-east, we find the kingdom of *Chicova*, abounding, as the writers say, with silver mines. In regard to these, and several other barbarous nations, it may be observed, that their gold and silver, and precious stones, have no tendency, like arts and commerce, to civilize and give them any taste for the rational enjoyments of life.

CHAPTER IV.

Of Guinea and Nigritia, or Negroland.

THE great region known by the name of *Guinea*, is divided into the two large countries of *Upper* and *Lower-Guinea*, of which the latter is commonly called *Congo*. These two together extend above 2000 miles along the sea-coast.

THE most general division of *Upper-Guinea* is into three parts, viz. *Malagueta*, *Guinea-Pror*, and *Benin*, which together extend 500 leagues, from the sea to the interior.

1. THE country of *Malagueta* is generally known by the name of the *Grain Coast*, or the *paradise grain*, or *Guinea pepper*, called *Malagueta* in Spanish, which grows here in great plenty. This country is divided into the kingdom of *Sherbro*, *Quoja*, and *Sanguin*, along the coast, and *Massin* inland. But these are little known except near the coast. The chief place frequented by the Europeans is *Sherbro*, the capital of a petty kingdom of the same name. *Sherbro* river is navigable for canoes a great way up; the chief trade here is in cam-wood. Near the mouth of this river is *York Island*, on which the *English* had once a factory, and good fort, now in ruins. There is also another island called *Farellons*, which abounds with poultry, rice, potatoes, banana's, orange and lemon-trees. About twenty-five leagues distant from the mouth of the river *Sherbro*, to the south-east, is *Cape Monte*. It is furnished with numerous villages, and the negroes on this part of the coast are extremely industrious, particularly in the planting of rice and boiling of salt.

2. THE country of *Guinea-Pror*, extends from *Cape Palmas* to the river *Volta*, about 140 leagues along the sea-coast, which bounds it on the south. It has the kingdom of *Benin* on the east; *Gago* and *Melli* on the north; and *Malagueta* on the west. The Europeans divide it into two parts, the *Tooth*, and the *Gold-Coast*; the former extends from

Cape Palmas to the river *Sucira da Costa*; and the latter from thence to the river *Volta*.

Ivory-
Coast.

THE *Tooth*, or *Ivory*, or *Quaqua-Coast*, is thus called from the great plenty of elephants-teeth traded in here. When the natives come to trade with any ship, they take some water into their hands, and let a few drops of it fall into their eyes, which is a kind of oath, whereby they signify, that they would rather lose their eye-sight than cheat those they trade with. They are no less averse to drunkenness than to fraud; and, though their country produces a prodigious number of palm-trees, yet they drink no palm-wine, but only a certain small liquor which they mix with water. They have manufactures of cotton habits, which are called *Quaqua* gowns. A fundamental law of the country is, that every one is obliged to continue all his life-time in the condition in which he was born; so that one whose father was a fisherman, for instance, can never become any thing else, but a fisherman; and so of all other trades and professions.

The *Gold-Coast* follows next; it, since other countries called *Gambia* be well accounted. Doubtless, all the natives are not artists engaged to know where or how to follow a vein, yet they find great quantities of gold in several of their mines, which are also so sacred to them, that they will not permit any *European* miner either to see their mines, or to search for others. They bring down, however, good store of what they find to the sea-coasts, as an article of their traffic. The natives, near the sea, have another way of finding gold. In the rainy seasons, after a wet night, the sea-shore is covered with people, mostly women, each with a couple of bowls, the largest of which they fill with such sand and earth as are driven down from the mountains by violent floods into the rivers and brooks. This sand and earth they wash with many waters, by often turning the bowl round, till it washes over the brim. The gold, if there be any, sinks to the bottom, by reason of its weight; and thus they continue, till they have washed all the earth and sand away, except two or three spoonfuls of the bottom, which they carefully take out, and lay by in the small bowl, after filling of which, they carry the dregs home, and search it diligently for the gold. *Assinee*, on this coast, is a country abounding with gold, and formerly a considerable trade was carried on here; but since the devastation made by a neighbouring nation, there is very little trade, in comparison to what there was; and the little gold dust

ust that is brought hither, is either sophisticated, or of very small value. From the *Affinee* to *Cape Apollonia*, a great tract of land has been cleared and sown with *Indian* corn. The inhabitants here of *Axim*, a town of some note, are generally very opulent, driving a great trade with the *Europeans* in gold, which they chiefly vend to the *English* and *Dutch*. The natives industriously employ themselves in trade, fishing, or agriculture. The latter is chiefly exercised in the article of rice, which grows here, above all other places, in an incredible abundance, and is transported hence all the *Gold-Coast* over. The returns are in millet, yams, potatoes, and palm-oil, all which are very scarce here; for the soil is generally moist, and, though fit to produce rice, and some fruit-trees, does not kindly yield other fruits. The country throughout the *Gold-Coast* abounds in hills, all adorned with extraordinary high and beautiful trees. The valleys between the hills are wide and extensive, and fit for the planting of all sorts of *Senegals*; and if they were as well cultivated as watered, they supply half the coast with provisions. The country is also a great abundance of very good rice, the richest and grain of which is red; yams, potatoes, manioc, and all the grain of which kind; nor is the soil deficient in fruit-trees. The sugar-canes grow here in greater plenty and larger, than any where else on the coast of *Guinea*. Palm-wine and oil are very good and in great plenty; the country also abounds in all sorts of tame and wild beasts.

3. THE country of *Benin* comprehends the *Slave-Coast*, *Slave*-having *Guinea-Proper*, or more particularly, the *Gold-Coast* Coast, on the west; *Gago*, *Brafera*, with the desert of *Seth*, on the north; *Mujaac* and *Makoko* on the east; and part of *Congo*, with the *Ethiopic-Ocean*, on the south. It is commonly divided into three parts, viz. *Whydah* and *Ardah*, containing the *Slave-Coast*, and *Benin-Proper*.

WHYDAH, so called by the *English*, is called *Juda* by the *French*, and *Fida* by the *Dutch*. It is bounded on the west by the river *Volta*; on the south it has the gulph of *Guinea*; on the east the kingdom of *Ardah*; and on the north the kingdom of *Dahomy*. *Whydah* is allowed to be a very delightful country. The number and variety of tall and beautiful trees seem as if planted in fine groves for ornament. The lands were in general well cultivated, till the king of *Dahomy* conquered it. Before this time, the natives were so industrious, that few places thought fertile escaped cultivation; and they were so anxious in that particular, that, the day after they had reaped, they always sowed

The Conclusion of

sowed again, without allowing the land time for rest. The *English African* company have a fort here, wherein mounted several pieces of cannon; and, at a little distance, there is also a *French* fort. *Sabée*, the capital town of *Whydah*, is about four miles distant from the *English* fort, towards the north: but it was reduced to ashes by the king of *Dahomy*. The town was very populous, and had daily markets, wherein many sorts of *European*, as well as *African* commodities, were exhibited to public sale, with a great variety of provisions. Near the *European* factory was a spacious place, where grew a parcel of fine, shady trees, under which the *English*, *French*, and *Portuguese* governors, factors, and sea captains, walked, and transacted business every day on an exchange. All these places were reduced to ashes by the king of *Dahomy's* army. Adjoining to the kingdom of *Whydah* are several small aboriginalities, as *Coto*, *Little Gun*, *Pope*, and *San Quabé*, situate on the *Slave Coast*. At *Limir* land is flat, sandy and barren; but they have there who would cacao-trees in tolerable quantity. They catch also many slaves and *sn. Quabé*; and the inhabitants carry brough

DAHOMY country is situated to the north of the *Slave Coast*, and extends greatly inland. Its boundaries on the west, north, and east, are unknown. This country is healthy, lying high, and being refreshed with cool breezes. The trade of the natives is chiefly in slaves and some gold.

BENIN-PROPER has part of the gulph of *Guinea* and the *Slave Coast*, *for Ludra*, on the west; part of *Gago* and *Brafera* on the north; *Mujac* and *Malakso* on the east; and *Congo* on the south. Its extent, from west to east, is about 600 miles; but from south to north remains unascertained. The country abounds with wild beasts, as elephants, tygers, leopards, boars; and with game, as harts, hares, partridges, pigeons, turtle-doves: the soil produces great variety of trees and plants, as orange, lemon, and especially cotton-trees; pepper, but not in such quantities as in the *East Indies*. The natives are pretty well civilized, and if humoured in their ceremonious way of traffic, may be managed to good advantage. They are very expert in business, though tedious; which, however, they manage with so much civility, that none can well be angry. They seem very obliging to each other; but this is only external grimace, for they repose little confidence in their countrymen. They are jealously prudent, and very reserved, especially in the management of their trade, which they conduct

with the utmost secrecy, lest they should be represented as great traders to their governors; who, upon such a story, would certainly accuse them of some crime or other, in order to possess themselves, though ever so unjustly, of their effects. Those, therefore, who have no share in the government, always pretend to be poorer than they really are, to escape the rapacious hands of those in authority. This obliges them to a cunning sort of civility, to avoid accusers; and the *European* dealers who will concentrate transactions with them, may do business to great profit, in which as have any thing of stock apply themselves to mercantile. Very few of the commonalty among the males are industrious, laying the burden of labour on their wives and slaves, whether it be tilling of ground, spinning of cotton, weaving of cloth, or any other handicraft employment; yet there are but few manual arts, besides weaving, practised or understood among them; the chief workmen are smiths, carpenters, or leather sellers; but all their workmanship is but mean, for want of proper instruction. *Benin*, which gives name to the coast, and is the king's residence, is situate about 100 miles from the sea, at the entrance of the river *Benue*, and is a city of annual markets are kept in this city of cattle, cotton, elephants teeth, and *European* ware. Those who attend the court are rich, but do not concern themselves with trade, agriculture, or any thing else, leaving all their affairs to their wives, who go to all the circumjacent villages, to trade in all sorts of merchandizes, and are obliged to bring the greatest part of their gains to their husbands. All male slaves here are foreigners, for the inhabitants cannot be sold for slaves, and only bear the name of the king's slaves; nor is it allowed to export any male slaves that are sold in this country, but females may be dealt with at every one's pleasure.

AWERRI is about twenty leagues from *Benin* to the south, and is the capital of the kingdom of the same name, whose king is independent of the king of *Benin*.

AREBA, a common trading place for the *Europeans*, is situate above fifty miles higher up than the mouth of the river *Formosa*. So far ships may conveniently come in their passage, sailing by a great variety of the branches of that river, besides creeks. Here formerly were two factories, one of which belonged to the *English*, the other to the *Dutch*; but the *English* have now no fort or factory, having traded here but very little for several years past.

AGAYTON has several circumjacent villages, whose inhabitants resort to it at every considerable market, which is held for five days.

At *Cape Formosa* the trade consists in elephants' teeth, wax, and honey.

Lower-Guinea.

CONGO, or *Lower-Guinea*, has *Upper-Guinea*, or the kingdom of *Benin*, on the north; the *Ethiopic Ocean* on the west; the kingdom of *Mataman*, reckoned part of *Cassraria*, on the south; but its boundaries east and north-east are not well known. The extent of this country from *Cape Negro* to the first degree of south latitude, to *Cape Negro* is about 16 deg. 30 min. *Portuguese* 990 *English* miles; but it extends eastward is not ascertained. The country is watered with many rivers, at these places very fruitful, if better cultivated; but nothing arable. Ad- the laziness of the *Cegroes*, who, for the most part, rather to live in want, than give themselves to labour, situate on get a comfortable life, in the mountains and bar- the most precious metals, gold, silver, and copper, in tole- none but the iron, for spears and arrows, chiefly for the *Qua-* of making arms. It is now next; it is divided into *Pro-* *Proper*, *Angola*, *Angola* seems to be under the best regulation, being governed, especially a good part of the coast, by the *Portuguese*. The number of slaves here is prodigious; the *Portuguese* Jesuits alone, who per- form the office of curates in the country, are said to have upwards of 12,000 slaves at *Loango*, which is the usual resi- dence of the Roman Catholic bishop. However, these slaves are not so serviceable as from other parts of *Guinea*, being naturally addicted to laziness, which seldom or ever can be conquered by any sort of treatment. The inland parts of *Benguela* are little known; but along the sea-coast are several places with which the *Europeans* are better acquainted, particularly the *Portuguese*, who are here pretty numerous, and carry on a good trade in fine linnen and cotton cloths, gum, gunpowder, slaves, some gold, and ivory.

Origin and THE *Portuguese* being the first that discovered the coast *state of the* of *Africa*, they built one fort on the island of *Arguin*, on *English* the north coast; another called *St. George del Mina*, on the *trade of* *Gold Coast*; and a third at a place called *Loango St. Paul's*, *the coast of* on the coast of *Angola*, to the southward of the Equinoctial *Africa* line. By virtue of these possessions, they not only claimed, and for many years enjoyed, the right in and to all the said lands and countries, but likewise seized and confiscated

ships of all nations, as often as they found any of them lying on any part of the said coast.

ABOUT the latter end of the reign of king *Edward VI.* some *London* merchants fitted out the first *English* ships that ever traded to *Guinea*; and in the reign of queen *Mary*, and for the next ten or twelve years of queen *Elizabeth*, sundry other private ships were fitted out for the same purpose; but the *English* not having as yet any settlements or plantations in the *West-Indies*, and consequently no occasion for carrying such ships traded only for gold, elephants teeth, provision, &c. and all such voyages were undertaken and to merchants the hazard of losing the ships and cargoes, if males were into the hands of the *Portuguese*, without the wives and to hope for any redress or satisfaction for the loss of cotton, &c. yet in the 15th year of her reign, being practised by *Spain* and *Portugal*, erected a company for discovering and trading on a trade from the river *Benue*, to the river *Benue*, and from thence to the south-west of *Benin*, where, all along the coast, and the southernmost of the river *Gambia*, &c. and gave them a charter, and granted unto them the sole trade in, to, and from the said river and coast for a certain term of years; with prohibition to all other her subjects to trade to the same places, on pain of forfeiture of ships and goods: and these were the first *English* merchants that ever traded to the coast of *Guinea*, by and under the authority of the crown of *England*.

IN the reigns of the kings *James* and *Charles I.* and during the time of the usurpation, several persons were encouraged by public authority, to trade to other parts of *Africa*, and to take such measures for the better carrying on and improving the same, as they should judge most proper. In pursuance whereof, they built one fort at a place called *Cormantine*, on the *Gold-Coast*, and another on the river *Gambia*, on the north coast; and these were the only places of any consequence which the *English* were in possession of at the Restoration.

KING *Charles II.* soon after his restoration, being made acquainted with the dangerous and precarious state and condition to which the trade of his subjects in those parts was reduced; and having likewise received many complaints touching the interruptions given to, and depredations committed upon, the ships of this nation, by the *Dutch West-India* company on the coast of *Africa*, it became necessary to consider not only of a proper method for protecting and securing

securing the said trade for the future, but likewise how and in what manner reparation might be obtained for such damages and depredations. The result was the institution of the company of Royal Adventurers of *England* trading into *Africa*, by letters patent under the great seal of *England*, bearing date the 10th of *January*, 1662. But this company, though they kept their footing in *Africa* yet, by reason of the consequences of the wars with the *Dutch*, which the nation was then obliged to engage in, they had so many difficulties to struggle with, that they were forced to surrender their charter to the crown. This was in consideration of a certain sum of money, to be paid to them by another new company, then intended to be established. The terms of the surrender being accepted, his majesty established and incorporated, a new *Royal African Company*, by his letters patent under the great seal of *England*, bearing date the 27th of *September*, 1672; and granted unto them, all and singular the *African* countries, haunts, roads, rivers, and other places in *Africa*, from the port of *Sallee*, in *Soudi-Barbary*, to the *Cape of Good-Hope*, for and during the term of 100 years; with the sole and intire trade into these countries, and a prohibition to all his other subjects to visit or frequent the same, without the licence and consent of the said company. He also, with such other powers and privileges, as were judged proper and necessary, for enabling and encouraging them to undertake so hazardous and chargeable a work.

THIS new company met with all possible opposition from the *French* and *Dutch*, and sustained particularly several considerable losses, by means of the wars with the *French* in the reign of King *William III.* inso much that the parliament in 1697, taking the trade to *Africa* into their consideration, thought fit, as a further means of enlarging and improving the same, to lay it open to all his majesty's subjects for thirteen years; and in regard that the *Royal African company of England* had been at the charge of building and maintaining a considerable number of forts and castles on the said coast, which the parliament likewise judged necessary to be kept up, and maintained in future, for the preservation and better carrying on the said trade, they were further pleased to impose a duty of ten per Cent. *ad valorem*, on all goods and merchandize exported to *Africa*, during the said term, to be answered and paid to the said company for enabling them to keep and maintain their forts and castles.

THIS act continued in force from the 24th of June, 1698, to the 24th of June 1712; in which time the charges the company was at in maintaining their forts and castles, amounted, at a medium, to about 20,000 *l. per annum*, and in fourteen years, to 280,000 *l.* in the whole. The duty which the separate traders paid in the same time, amounted, in the whole, to 73,785 *l.* 10 *s.* 6 *d.* and no more; and ten *per cent.* upon the company's own trade for the same time, amounted to the sum of 26,387 *l.* 13 *s.* 1 *d.* $\frac{1}{2}$. From whence it appears, that, even when this act continued in force, the total of the ten *per cent.* did not come very much short of half the charges and expences which the company were at in keeping and maintaining their forts and castles. Under these difficulties, and by the extraordinary rise in the prices of negroes at *Anamaboe*, and other places on the coast, and by the decay of the gold trade which ensued thereupon, the proprietors of the company were for many years obliged either to raise sundry great sums of money for maintaining their forts and castles, without receiving any profit from the trade in return for the same; or to run the risk not only of losing all the money which they had from time to time raised and expended for supporting their own property, but of becoming accessaries to the intestine wars of the trade of *Africa*, and, eventually, by relinquishing and abandoning their forts and castles, to be seized and possessed by such foreign nations as were long watching for an opportunity to get them into their hands. This being the case with regard to the company, and it being the sense of the nation, that the trade to *Africa* should continue free and open to all his majesty's subjects, the only thing that remained to be considered was, whether or no forts and castles were necessary to be kept up and maintained for the preservation of the said trade to this kingdom; and if they were necessary for that purpose, who, upon the footing of a trade still free and open, ought in justice and reason to bear and defray the charges of them?

As there was no reason for the company's being obliged to maintain the forts and castles at their own sole cost and charge, they petitioned the parliament in 1730, and obtained 10,000 *l.* to enable them to support their forts and settlements. This sum was annually continued to them, except two or three years interruption, till the last change made in the state of this company, by an act of parliament of the year 1751. By this act the company were divested of their charter, and after the tenth of April, 1752, ceased to be a corporation, and their forts, castles, and all other their possessions in *Africa*, were vested in a new company of merchants; and

and in consequence of the trade to *Africa* being, by virtue of the said act, and that also of the 23d of king *George II.* may free and open to all his majesty's subjects, the parliament allow this company 10,000*l.* per annum for the support of the forts and castles for the public service:

THE *African* trade, as may be known from the premises, consists of but three capital articles: slaves, ivory, and gold; a very beneficial and advantageous commerce, especially as it was once carried on, when these were all purchased at low rates from the negroes; and even those low rates paid in trifles and toys, such as knives, scissars, kettles, glass beads, and cowries, things of little value; but even this part of the trade is greatly declined in profit, since by the jealousy and envy among the traders, particularly between our late royal *African* company and the separate traders, we have had the folly to instruct the negroes in the value of their own goods, and of the cheapness of ours; & endeavouring to supplant one another, by underselling and outbidding, by which we have taught the negroes to supplant both, by holding up the price of their own production, and running down the rates of what we carry them for sale. Thus that gainful commerce, once superior, to all the trades in the world, which carried out the meanest of all exportations, and brought home the richest, is sinking daily, and we are now obliged to buy even the gold too dear. But all this waste of time is not the least use made of the land; the fruitful soil lies waste; a vast extended country, pleasant valleys, the banks of charming rivers, spacious plains, capable of improvement and cultivation to infinite advantage, remain barren and untouched. But there are now some hopes that these advantages will be no longer neglected, by the open to a more extensive commerce that has been made for us in the late definitive treaty of peace, and particularly by the cession of *Senegal*, of which, with the country of *Nigritia*, it belongs to, we are now going to give some account.

NIGRITIA, or *Negroland*, a country in *Africa*, lies between eighteen degrees west, and fifteen degrees east longitude; and between ten and twenty degrees of north latitude, the great river *Niger* running through it from east to west. It is bounded by *Zaara*, or the desert, on the north, by unknown countries on the east, by *Guinea* on the south, and by the *Atlantic Ocean* on the west. The *Europeans* have several settlements on the branches of the river *Niger*; especially near their mouths. A great many nations inhabit the banks of the *Niger*, of different languages, and independent on each other. The country is fruitful, abounding in rice, *Guinea*

grain, and *Indian* corn, where it is cultivated; cattle are not wanting; but there is abundance of cocoa-nuts, plantains, pulse, palm-trees, and tropical fruits.

The *Niger* and *Sanaga* rivers are esteemed by the most accurate geographers to be the same, or at least the *Sanaga* to be a part of the *Niger*. *Europeans* have been able to trace the main river, but part of the way, beyond which they know nothing of its course, but what is learned from the *Mandingo* Negroes, who, among all the blacks, are the most addicted to travelling and traffic, but are neither expert enough in their observation, nor have gone far enough to know any thing of its real source, since they place it no higher, according to *Labat*, than the lake *Maberia*, in the kingdom of *Tombut*, which is little less than half way to the mouth of the *Nile*. Others, with *Labat*, have stretched its course back eastward, to the lake *Bournou*, which lies under the eighteenth degree of latitude, and 19th of east longitude, and fix its spring-head there; it being difficult to trace it farther, on account of the dangers of such an attempt from the supposed barrenness of the country, but rather from the savage disposition of the inhabitants, who live beyond it; and who can never be civilized till the *Europeans* take wise and honest measures for that purpose. It is certain, however, that the *Niger* or *Sanaga* is a very large and considerable river, and of very great extent in its course, even though we should place its spring-head no farther than the lake *Bournou*. But if we suppose it to spring from the same head with the *Nile*, it will then cross almost the whole country of *Africa* where it is widest, and will have a course of near fifty degrees from east to west, exclusive of its windings. The entrance into it is narrow and somewhat difficult, by reason of its immoveable bar and sandy shoals, as well as the several islands that are at the mouth of it, and the several canals and marshes that clog it: but after sailing up eight or ten leagues, it is found broad and deep, and fit to carry large vessels; and except about five or six leagues on each side above the mouth, which is a sandy and barren ground, in all the rest, as far as the lake *Maberia*, the banks are covered with stately fruit-trees and villages, and the country well watered and very fertile for a great way; for like the *Nile* it overflows it for many leagues, and enriches the land to a great degree, and would do so still more, if the inhabitants were as expert and industrious in making all the advantages they could of it; but this is not the case, though the people on both sides live as near to it as they can, and feed great herds of cattle, and sow large and small millet in great quantities, and with great increase,

As

The Conclusion of

As the *Niger* receives many considerable rivers in its course, which swell it high enough to be able at all times to carry vessels of forty or fifty tons, so it splits itself into several branches, which uniting again, form very large and fertile islands, well filled with towns, villages, and inhabitants.

Island of Senegal.

TOWARDS the coast, the noted island of *Senegal* is situated in the river *Sanaga*, sixteen degrees fifteen minutes north latitude, about fifteen miles from its mouth. It is about one mile and a quarter from north to south; and almost half a mile east to west. It is composed of a bed of loose stone, and is covered with a fine soil, productive of nothing but what is forced with art and manure; and it contains many inhabitants, whose principal food is fish and maize. This corn grows in it so plentifully, almost all over the whole country, that it seems surprizing, that a part of the world, so unhealthy as this, should yet be so populous; but the reason may be, when we come to understand, that the great number of their wives; so that every one takes as many as he is able to maintain; some six, others eight, and others twelve at a time.

Face of the adjacent country.

To the north-east, east, and south-east of this island, lies a prodigious large and low country covered with marshes and woods. Much the greater part of it is utterly unknown to us. It is through this country that the large branches of the *Niger* empty themselves into the sea, particularly the *Sanaga*, *Gambia*, and *Sherbro*. During the rainy months, which begin in *July*, and continue till *October*, they lay the whole flat country under water; and, indeed, the very sudden rise of these rivers is incredible to persons who have never been within the tropics, and are unacquainted with the violent rains that fall there. At *Galam*, 900 miles from the mouth of the river *Sanaga*, the waters rise 150 feet perpendicular from the bed of the river. At the island of *Senegal*, the river rises gradually during the rainy season, above twenty feet perpendicular over part of that flat coast, which of itself alone so freshens the water, that ships lying at anchor at the distance of three leagues from its mouth, generally make use of it, and fill their water there for the voyage home. When the rains are at an end, which usually happens in *October*, the intense heat of the sun soon dries up those waters, which lie on the higher parts, and the remainder forms lakes of stagnated waters, in which are found all sorts of dead animals. These waters every day decrease, till at last they are quite exhaled, and then the effluvia that arise are almost insupportable. At this season the winds blow so very hot from off the land, that

they may well be compared to the heat proceeding from the mouth of an oven, and they bring with them a smell that is quite intolerable. Their effects upon wolves, tigers, lions, and other wild beasts are such, that they are seen to resort to the rivers, plunging their body under water, and only their snout above it; for the advantage of breathing. The birds likewise are seen to soar to an immense height, and to fly a vast way over the sea, where they continue till the wind changes and comes from the west.

Gum Senega.
 One of the most considerable articles of commerce, and the chief inducement to Europeans for settling here, is the gum senega, so denominated from the river *Senegal*, the forests bordering upon that river abounding with this gum. It greatly resembles the gum arabic, but its granules are usually larger, of an oval form, the surface very rough, and the inner substance bright, where broken. It is very hard, but not tough, considerably heavy, and of an extremely fine and even texture. When broke, the colour is frequently of a pale brown, like the gum arabic, sometimes yellowish, reddish, or whitish. Dyers and other artificers consume the greatest quantities of this gum. The French, when they were in possession before the late war of this part of the African coast, from *Cape Blanco* to the river *Gambia*, extending along the shore about 400 miles, found the gum senega so useful in their silk and linen manufactures, that they engrossed the whole trade of it to themselves, and occasionally prohibited its exportation. And hence it is, that this country, quite unhealthy as it is, and those roads so dangerous for shipping, have nevertheless been eagerly contended for by the English, French, Dutch, and Portuguese. All strove to settle here in their turns, being the only place for the gum trade, by being masters of the *Senegal* rivers: a trade, which seems a light matter in itself, but is, in effect, very considerable, whether we regard the price the natives sell the gum for, which is very moderate; or, lastly, the quantity of European merchandizes it takes off ready wrought, the vent of which makes manufactures spread, money circulate, and so finds work for abundance of hands, which is the main end of commerce.

BEFORE we close our account of this part of *Africa*, it will not be amiss to take notice of a tree of a new genus, which grows in *Senegal*, which may be justly reputed the largest vegetable production in nature, and therefore by its vast magnitude a more singular and remarkable phenomenon than all the histories of botany, or perhaps of the world, have yet produced.

*Descrip-
tion of the
baobab.*

The real name of this tree is baobab; the *Oualofs*, natives of the country, call it goui, and its fruit boui; and the *French* know it by the name of calabassier, or calabash-tree, and call its fruit pain-de-finge, or monkey's bread.

The baobab cannot grow out of a very humiditate; it delights in a sandy and moist soil, especially if this soil is free from stones that might hurt its roots; for the first scorch they receive is soon followed by a canes communicating itself to the trunk of the tree, and causing it infallibly to perish.

THE trunk of this singular tree is not very high: M. *Adanson*, (who had lately communicated his observations on the baobab to the *French* academicians) said hardly any exceeding twelve or fifteen feet, from the roots to the branches; but he had seen several seventy-five and seventy-eight feet round, that is, from twenty-five to twenty-seven feet in diameter. The first branches extend almost horizontally; and being very thick and about sixty feet in length, their own weight bends down their extremities to the ground; the latter branches rise perpendicularly, but so as to make a shelving, and the tree being thus regularly rounded, its trunk is absolutely hidden, and it appears as an hemispherical mass of verdure, of about 120, 130, or 140 feet in diameter.

THE roots of the baobab are answerable to its size in all respects: to the branches above there is a correspondent number of radical branches below. That of the middle forms a pivot that strikes very deep into the earth, but the rest spread towards the surface. M. *Adanson* had seen one laid open by a current of water, in the extent of upwards 110 feet; and it was easy to judge by its bulk, that what still remained under ground, was at least forty or fifty feet long; and yet this tree, compared with others, was but of middling bulk.

THE bark of the trunk is greyish, smooth, and, as it were, unctuous to the touch: stripping it off, the inside appears of a green, pricked with red; the thickness is about eight or nine lines. The bark of the younger branches is green and thinly disseminated with hairs; the wood of the tree is very soft and white.

THE leaves are about five inches long and two broad, and pointed at both extremities, pretty thick, of a sprightly green on the upper side, and pale underneath; and adhering three, five, or seven, but most commonly seven, in the manner of a fan, on a common pedicle, much like those of the chestnut-tree: they only grow on the young branches, whereon the

pedicles are alternately placed. The blossoms or flowers are in proportion to the tree, not yielding in magnitude to the largest we know of. They form, when still in the bud, a globe of about three inches diameter; and when blown, are four inches long and six broad. After the falling of the petals and the stamina, the ovarium, as it ripens, becomes an oblong fruit, pointed at both extremities, fifteen or eighteen feet long, and five or six broad, clothed with a kind of greenish down, under which is found a ligneous, hard, almost black rind or peel, and marked with twelve or fourteen furrows, dividing it lengthwise into ribs. This fruit hangs from the tree by a pedicle of about two feet in length, and contains a kind of soft, whitish substance, spongy, and full of fourth water; the pulp seems to make but one mass, when the fruit is new; but, in drying, shrinks and divides of itself into a great number of bodies, with several facets, each containing a brown shining seed, nearly of the figure of a kidney bean, five lines in length, and three in breadth; and the rind that surrounds them, is easily reduced into a powder, brought hither from the *Levant*, and known, for a long time, by the very improper name of *Terra Sigillata* of *Lemnos*, because indeed the *Mandingues* carry it to the *Arabs*, who afterwards distribute it in *Egypt*, and through all the eastern parts of the *Mediterranean*. *Persecutus* *Alpinus* was very sensible that this powder was vegetable; but certainly one might not be aware of seeking after in *Senegal*, a drug that is imported from the *Archipelago*.

M. *Adanson* believes that the baobab may be naturally classed with the malvaceous plants that have but one calix. This tree cannot be transplanted neither when it begins to rise, nor when it is ten years old, as its root would almost infallibly perish. The best plant is that which is from six months to two years old; branches sometimes take from a slip, but they frequently fail; and the progress even of those that do is always slower than that of the plant rising from the seed. Besides the cankers that attacks the trunk of the tree when its roots are hurt, it is also subject to another malady, more rare indeed, but not less fatal to it. This is a kind of mouldiness that gets into the whole ligneous body, and which without changing the texture of its fibres, softens it to the degree of its having no more consistence than the ordinary pith of trees; then it becomes incapable of resisting the ordinary blasts of wind, and this monstrous trunk is broke down by the least storm. M. *Adanson* had seen one in this condition; it was inhabited by a great number of the grubs of beetles and chafers: they did not, however, seem as if they

had

had contributed to the distempered state of the tree; but these eggs might have been introduced into the wood on growing soft, the same way as an infinity of insects introduce their eggs into the willow-tree, when it undergoes a similar state of softness, though they do not attack it when it is sound.

THE real country of the baobab is *Africa*, and particularly the western coast of that part which extends from *Niger* to the kingdom of *Benin*. It is not found in the catalogues of the *Asiatic* plants, nor in those of *America*; might be actually in some of the climates of those parts of the world, which resemble the part of *Africa* it produces it; but the tree does not grow there spontaneously. The negro slave, yearly transported from *Africa* into the *American* colonies, will not to carry them a little bundle of seeds, which they presume will be of service to them, and among these are always some seed of the baobab. It is probably to this transportation that are of will be owing the baobabs found there; such as that *M. de Charvallon*, correspondent of the *French* academy, says he had seen at *Yucatanico*, and which indeed was but young. They may perhaps be naturalized to the climate; but this will not be their first origin, and none for a long time will be seen equal in magnitude to those of the coast of *Africa*; for though a very tender wood, they take up a great time in growing to this enormous bulk.

M. Adanson has carefully collected all the facts he believed could give him any insight in regard to this article; he had seen two of these trees in one of the *Magellan* isles, on the bark of which were cut *European* names and dates, whereof some were later than 1600, others were as far back as 1555, and had been probably the work of those who accompanied *Thevenot* in his voyage to the *Terra Australis*; for he says himself he had seen baobabs in that place: others, in *Africa*, appear prior to 1500; but these might be questioned, characters of the names being about six inches high, and names taking up two feet in length, that is, somewhat than the eighth part of the circumference of the tree. Supposing even that these characters had been cut in the early youth of the tree, it would follow that, if in 200 years grew six feet in diameter, it would require upwards of eight centuries to be twenty-five feet in diameter, supposing it always grew equally; but this supposition can hardly be considered as true; for *M. Adanson* observed that the growth of this tree, very rapid in the first years succeeding its birth, diminishes afterwards very considerably; and though the proportion of this diminution is not well known, it might be thought,

thought, he fancies, with good reason, that the latter growth of the baobab proceeds with an extreme slowness, and that such of those trees which have arrived at the abovementioned bulk might have first appeared out of the earth not long after the time of the universal deluge: but what is very deserving of notice is, that those raised elsewhere carefully, pursuant to the temperature of their climate, do not receive at most but the fifth part of the increase they have at *Senegal* in the same time; an observation which should prove, if it was possible to doubt of it, that artificial heat, in regard to exotics, can be but a very imperfect substitute to that which they experience in their natural climate.

THE baobab, as all the other plants of the malvaceous tribe, has an excellent virtue, capable of maintaining in the body an abundant transpiration, and of opposing the too great heat of the blood. The negroes dry its leaves in the shade, and reduce them into a powder they call lalo, which they mix with their aliments, not for giving them a relish, for lalo has scarce any taste, but for obtaining the just medicinal effect. M. *Adanson* himself experienced the same virtue, and the decoction of these leaves preserved him and a French officer, who confined himself to this regimen, from the effects of urine and hot fevers, which usually attack foreigners at *Senegal* during the month of *September*, and which raged still more furiously in 1751, than they had for several years past. The fresh or newly gathered fruit of this tree is not less palatable than its leaves; its pulp is eaten, which is subacid and agreeable enough; and in mixing its juice with water and a little sugar, a liquor is made, attended with the best effects in all the febrile affections, and in putrid or pestilential fevers; lastly, when the fruit is spoiled, the negroes make an excellent soap by burning it, and mixing its ashes with the oil of the palm, which then begins to be rancid.

THE negroes make still a very singular use of this monstrous tree. We have said that it was subject to a canker, which often flows its trunk; they enlarge those cavities, and make a sort of chambers, where they hang the dead bodies of those they are not willing to grant the honours of burial to; those bodies dry there perfectly, and become real mummies, without any other preparation. The greatest number of the bodies so dried is of the *Guignols*: these people may be compared to the ancient bards and jugglers, so famous among the ancients. They are poets and musicians, and have a great influence of inspection over feasts and dances. Their number is always pretty considerable at the courts of the negro kings.

kings, whom they divert and flatter to an extravagant degree in their poetical compositions. This kind of superiority of talents makes them dreaded by the negroes during their life; they attribute it to something supernatural: but, instead of making, as the ancient *Greeks*, their poets the children of the Gods, they regard them, on the contrary, as forcerers, and ministers of the devil, and believe that in that quality they should draw down malediction on the earth, or even on the waters which might receive their bodies; it is therefore that they hide and dry them in the hollow trunks of the baobab.

HOMER relates, that *Ulysses* had made for himself at *Ithaca*, a complete bedstead of the trunk of an olive-tree, supported on its roots, about which he had afterwards built a chamber. If this prince had in the precinct of his palace a baobab tree, he might have extended the singularity still farther, and procured himself a chamber and all its furniture cut in the same piece of wood.

THE baobab was never described properly, either as to leaves, fruit, or flowers, before *M. Adanson*; and as *Senegal* is now one of our possessions on the coast of *Africa*, the produce of this tree may in a great measure become an important object of our commerce.

C H A P. V.

Of Barbary, Biledulgerid, Zaara or the Desert, and the African Islands.

Boundaries and extent of Barbary.

THE vast tract of *Barbary*, in general, is bounded on the north by the *Mediterranean* sea, which divides it from *Europe*; on the east by *Egypt*; on the south by *Zaara*, or the *Desert*; and on the west by the *Atlantic*, or *Western Ocean*. Its utmost extent from east to west, that is, from *Cape None*, on the most western coast of *Morocco*, to the confines of *Egypt*, is almost 37 degrees, that is, from 10 degrees to 26½ degrees eastern longitude, or about 2200 miles. As for its breadth from north to south, it is very unequal; in some parts not above six or seven degrees, and where widest, as from *Cape None*, to *Tangier*, not above ten degrees; but we must observe, that most geographers have given it a much greater extent both ways; some of them as far as

4000 miles in length, and 1200 in breadth; which can only be meant by including the creeks and windings, which are too precarious and unknown to be depended upon.

BARBARY is, next to *Egypt*, the most fruitful, trading, Soil, pro- and populous part of *Africa*. The soil abounds with plenty duce, com- and variety of grain and fruits, especially citrons, oranges, modities, dates, figs, olives, grapes, pomegranates, and almonds; in &c. all which the inhabitants drive a considerable trade, as well as in coral, *Morocco* leather, *Barbary* horses, and other commodities. The air is temperate, though hot, being refreshed by constant breezes from the *Mediterranean*.

THE coast of *Barbary* was probably first planted by the *Egyptians*. The *Phenicians* afterwards sent colonies thither, *the states* and built *Utica* and *Carthage*. The *Carthaginians* soon be- *on the coast* came powerful and wealthy by trade, and finding the coun- of *Bar-* try divided into a great many little kingdoms and states, ei- bary. ther subdued or made the princes on that coast their tribu- taries, who being weary of their yoke, were glad of the op- portunity of assisting the *Romans* in subduing *Carthage*. The *Romans* remained sovereigns of the coast of *Barbary*, 'till the *Vandals*, in the fifth century, reduced it under their dominion.

THE *Roman*, or rather the *Grecian* emperors, having some time after recovered the coast of *Barbary* from the *Vandals*, it remained under their dominion till the *Saracen* caliphs, the successors of *Mohammed*, made an intire conquest of all the north of *Africa* in the seventh century, and divided the coun- try among their chiefs, of whom the sovereign of *Morocco* was the most considerable, possessing the north-west part of that country, which in the *Roman* division obtained the name of *Mauritania Tingitana* from *Tingis* or *Tangir*, the capital, and is now stiled the empire of *Morocco*, comprehend- ing the kingdoms or provinces of *Fez* and *Morocco*. The emperors of these territories are almost always at war with the *Spaniards* and *Portuguezes*. In the eighth century, their ancestors made a conquest of the greatest part of *Spain*; but after the loss of *Granada*, which happened about the year 1492, they were dispossessed of this country; and *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, who were then upon the throne of *Spain*, obliged them to renounce their religion, or transport themselves to the coast of *Africa*. Those who made choice of the alter- native of going into exile, to revenge themselves on the *Span-* niards, and supply their necessities, confederated with the *Mohammedan* princes on the coast of *Barbary*, and having fitted out little fleets of cruising vessels, took all the *Spanish* merchant ships they met with at sea, and being well ac- quainted

quainted with the country, landed in *Spain*, and brought away multitudes of *Spaniards*, and made slaves of them. The *Spaniards* hereupon assembled a fleet of men of war, invaded *Barbary*, and having taken *Oran*, and many other places on the coast of *Algier*, were in a fair way of making an intire conquest of that country. In this distress the *African* princes applied to that famous *Turkish* rover, *Barbarossa*, desiring his assistance against the *Christians*. He very readily complied with their request, but had no sooner repulsed their enemies, than he usurped the government of *Algiers*, and treated the people who called him in as slaves; as his brother *Heyradin Barbarossa* afterwards did the people of *Tunis*; and a third obtained the government of *Tripoli* by the like means. In these usurpations they were supported by the grand signior, who claimed the sovereignty of the whole coast, and for some time they were esteemed the subjects of *Turkey*, and governed by *Turkish* bashas or viceroys; but each of these states, or rather the military men, at length took upon them to elect a sovereign out of their own body, and rendered themselves independent of the *Turkish* empire. The grand signior has not now so much as a basha or officer at *Algiers*; but the dey acts as an absolute prince, and is only liable to be deposed by the soldiery that advanced him. At *Tunis* and *Tripoli* he has still bashas, who are some check upon the deys, and have a small tribute paid them. All of them, however, in case of emergency, claim the protection of the *Ottoman* courts, and they still continue to prey upon the *Spaniards*, having never been at peace with them since the loss of *Granada*. They make prize also of all other *Christian* ships that have *Spanish* goods or passengers on board, and indeed of all others that are not at peace with them. The *Turks* of *Algiers*, *Tunis*, and *Tripoli*, are an abandoned race, consisting of pyrates, banditti, and the very refuse of *Turkey*, who have been forced to leave their several countries to avoid the punishment of their crimes.

Morocco
empire.

THE empire of *Morocco*, the most considerable on this coast, is bounded by the *Mediterranean* sea on the north; by the river *Fulvia*, which divides it from *Algier*, on the east; by *Biledulgerid* on the south, and by the *Atlantic Ocean* on the west, being about 500 miles long and 200 broad. It is a fine country, consisting of mountains and vast extended plains, none of them unfruitful; of the mountains, those of *Atlas* are the chief, extending from *Algier* in the east to the ocean in the west, which from them has obtained the name of the *Atlantic Ocean*. *Fez*, the capital, so called from the kingdom of the same name, is computed to have about 300,000 inhabitants.

tants. The houses, as well as streets, swarm with men of all professions, and with merchants of all sorts, this place being esteemed the general magazine of *Barbary*, whither all *European* goods are brought and exchanged, and sent into the other provinces, to be exchanged for those of the country. The Jews, who are here above 5000, are the chief brokers, especially between the Christians and Mohammedans. The emperor has a palace at *Fez*, but his chief residence is at *Mequinez*, about thirty miles west of *Fez*, situate in a much more desirable country, surrounded by fine parks and olive grounds, and containing much about the same number of inhabitants as *Fez*. There are no ships of war in this empire, except some small pyritical vessels, commonly called *Sallee* rovers, which are crowded with men, and sometimes take great prizes. As for merchant ships, or foreign trade, the subjects carry on none on their own bottoms. And, indeed, it seems to be a happiness, that all the *Africco* dominions do not afford one tolerable harbour; that of *Sallee*, which is the best, being almost dry at low, and not twelve feet deep at high water, besides a very inconvenient bar. Better ports might be an inducement to their making a figure at sea, and becoming a greater annoyance; but no flourishing trade or improvement can be carried on under a government so despotic, oppressive, and rapacious. The land is judged capable of producing a hundred times more than the inhabitants can consume, yielding three crops a year; yet, except within three leagues of a town, it has no proprietor. Those who have a little money are afraid to let it out upon interest, lest they should be reputed wealthy, and consequently, become a prey; they, therefore, bury it with any furniture of value, nothing being seen in their houses but a mat or two to lie on, and a few ordinary things. Their inland trade consists of caravans, two of which set out every year from *Fez*, to *Mecca* and *Medina*, carrying woollen manufactures, indigo, cochineal, skins, and ostrich feathers. They likewise send caravans to *Guinea* every year, consisting of many thousand camels. The tyranny of the government is said to be the motive of the *Arabs* continuing a wandering life, lest, by living in fixed habitations, they should forfeit all property and liberty by the rapaciousness of the officers. The emperor has a tenth of all corn, cattle, fruits, and produce of the soil; likewise, the tenth of prizes, and of all the captives. His whole revenue, ordinary and extraordinary, is computed at 500 quintals of silver, each worth 385 l. sterling; if the revenue of a

monarch can be stated, who frequently confirms his absolute prerogative, by the ruin and death of the most dignified persons in his dominions. He has 40,000 negroes in his army, and as many *Moors*, horse and foot. The *Moors*, or natives of the country, are of the same complexion as the *Spaniards* on the opposite shores; those that are exposed to the air a little tawny, but the rest as fair as *Europeans*.

Algier.

ALGIER, the next powerful state on this coast, is bounded on the east by *Tunis*, on the west by the kingdom of *Fez*, on the north by the *Mediterranean*, and on the south by the deserts of *Bilddulgerid*. It enjoys a constant verdure; for in *February* the leaves begin to bud, and in *April* they shew their fruit in full growth, which are mostly ripe by *May*. The grapes are fit to gather in *June*; and the figs, peaches, nectarines, olives, nuts, &c. in *August*. The soil is various, many parts being dry, hot, and barren; others fertile in corn and fruit; and others in excellent pasture-grounds. The towns, even along the sea-coasts, are but few and thinly peopled, except the metropolis. The *Algerines* are very great pyrates, and reckoned the most dangerous of all *Africa*. They are extremely avaricious and cruel to those that fall into their hands, especially to the Christians. In the city of *Algier*, the capital of the whole kingdom, are merchants of several nations, and so numerous, that they amount at least to 3000 foreign families, which have settled there on the account of trade, and keep about 2000 shops in the two bazars of the place. The Jews, whose number amounts to 8000, dwell together in a particular quarter, and almost the whole trade here passes through their hands. The greatest commerce of the *Algerines* consists in the merchandize which they obtain by the pyratrical plunder of the Christians over the whole *Mediterranean*, and in part of the ocean. The *Cor-sairs* are continually bringing in prizes, with great numbers of Christian slaves. Their marine is so strong, that they fit out every year to the amount of twenty-three vessels, with 3 or 400 men each.

Tunis.

THE kingdom of *Tunis* is the country which was formerly the celebrated republic of *Carthage*. In its utmost extent it lay stretched along the coasts upwards of 120 leagues; but is now reduced within a very little compass; extending only from east to west about sixty leagues, and about 105 from north to south. Towards the west it is pretty fertile, being watered by some good rivers. Its greatest commerce consists in oil, olives, dates, soap, kali, or ashes, ostrich-feathers, camels, and horses. The many vallies between the high mountains afford plenty of corn, fruit, and pasture. The city

city of *Tunis* is said to owe most of its strength and beauty to the *Arabs*, who came hither from *Carthage*, where they did not think themselves so safe. It is now so populous, that it is computed to contain 10,000 families, and 3000 shops, where they sell linen and woollen; and the *Venetians* and *Genoese* are the two *European* nations that drive the greatest commerce with them. A great part of the inhabitants, both within the city and suburbs, are employed in the linen manufacture, which is here the finest in all *Africa*, their thread being the most delicate and best twisted; and it is of this that they weave that superfine cloth, of which they make those turbans called *tunecis*, so highly esteemed by the *Turks* and *Moors*. But their most advantageous business is piracy, in which they seem to be upon a level with their neighbours, especially in the number of Christian slaves they make. The province of *Susa* here is so called from its capital, an ancient *Roman* city, built upon a rock near the sea-side, over against the island of *Pentileia*, and one of the nearest to *Sicily* of any of the *African* cities. It has a commodious large haven, where the pirates revel in safety; and the inhabitants, though mostly seamen, are reckoned a civil and trading people. The territory is fertile in barley, figs, olives, dates, and pasture-grounds. The city is strong, well walled, and is defended by a good stout castle and garrison. It also drives a pretty good trade in oil, honey, wax, and especially in the tunny-fish, which is here caught and pickled, and in great request.

The kingdom of *Tripoli* has *Tunis* on the west, from which it is parted by the river *Capes*, which rises out of the sandy desert to the south, and falls into the *Mediterranean*. This kingdom has some large, trading, and populous cities on the coasts, where, besides several manufactures, the inhabitants carry on the pyratrical business to great advantage to themselves, though to the great hazard and loss of the *European* nations trading on the *Mediterranean*.

On the south coast of the *Mediterranean*, between *Tripoli* and *Egypt*, is situate the extensive desert of *Barca*, the ancient *Cyrene*, and anciently famed for the temple of *Jupiter Hammon*. It is now truly a desert, scarce a town, or cultivated spot of ground being met with in it.

Of the same nature are *Zaara* and a good part of *Bile-Zaara*, *dulgerid*; both divisions of *Africa*, situate between 20 and 30 degrees of north latitude, having *Negroland* on the south; *Morocco*, and the other parts of the coast of *Barbary*, on the north; the unknown parts of *Africa*, on the east; and the *Atlantic Ocean* on the west. The name of *Zaara* im-

plies a desert country ; and it is in effect so destitute of water and provisions, that great part of the camels, which form the caravan that travels from *Morocco* to *Guinea*, are laden with water and necessaries for the subsistence of the people. *Biledulgerid* is the ancient *Numidia*, and was once tolerably fruitful, when it was possessed by an industrious people ; but the *Mohammedans*, who are now masters of it, taking no care to cultivate the soil, it produces little more than *Zaara*. It is, however, renowned in some measure, for its considerable quantities of dates. The people who inhabit it for the most part are *Arabs* ; they live in tents, and being acquainted with the few springs and places where forage is to be found, pitch their tents sometimes in one part of the country, and sometimes in another ; but though there are scarce any towns here at present, there are some considerable ruins, which shew that the country has been better inhabited and cultivated. What is most remarkable is the change of complexion, there being scarce any blacks north of *Negroland*, but what have been purchased in *Guinea*, and carried to *Morocco*. There is also a change of religion as well as complexion ; the people of *Guinea* and *Negroland* being for the most part pagans, and those of *Biledulgerid*, *Morocco*, and the coast of *Barbary*, *Mohammedans*.

Reflections
on the
pyratical
states of
Barbary.

THE *Mohammedans*, wherever they are established, especially those of them who partake of the genius and disposition of the *Turks*, have very little inclination to the arts of industry. This evidently appears in the inhabitants of those parts we have been now describing on the *African* sea-coast. Being a rapacious and tyrannical people, disdaining all industry and labour, neglecting all culture and improvement, it made them thieves and robbers, as naturally as idleness makes beggars ; and, being trained to rapine and spoil, when they were no longer able to plunder and destroy the fruitful plains of *Valencia*, *Granada*, and *Andalusia*, they fell to roving upon the sea. They built ships, or rather seized them from others, and ravaged the neighbouring coasts, landing in the night, surprising, and carrying away the poor country people out of their beds into slavery. This was their first occupation, and this naturally made pirates of them : for, not being content with mere landing and plundering the sea-coasts of *Spain*, by degrees, being grown powerful and rich, and made bold and audacious by their success, they armed their ships, and began to attack, first the *Spaniards* upon the high seas, and then all the Christian nations of *Europe*, wherever they could find them. Thus this detestable practice of roving and robbing began. What magnitude they are since arrived

arrived to, what mischief they have brought upon the trading part of the world, how powerful they are grown, and how they are erected into states and governments, nay, into kingdoms, and, as they would be called, empires; for the kings of *Fez* and *Morocco* call themselves emperors, and how they are, to the disgrace of all Christian powers, treated with as such, is well known from the histories of those nations who have been at any time embroiled with them.

THE first Christian prince, who, resenting the insolence of these barbarians, and disdaining to make peace with them, resolved their destruction, was the emperor *Charles V.* he was moved with a generous compassion for the many thousands of miserable Christians who were, at that time, kept among them in slavery; and, from a benevolent principle of setting the Christian world free from the terror of such barbarians, he undertook singly, and without the assistance of any other nation, to fall upon them with all his power. In this war, had he been joined by the *French* and *English*, and the *Hans-towns*, (as for the *Dutch* they were not then a nation) he might have cleared the country; at least, he might have cleared the sea-coasts of the whole race, and have planted colonies of Christians in all the ports, for the encouragement of commerce, and for the safety of all the *European* nations. But *Francis I.* king of *France*, his mortal and constant enemy, envied him the glory of the greatest and best enterprize that was ever projected in *Europe*; an enterprize a thousand times beyond all the crusades and expeditions to the Holy-Land, which, during 120 years, cost *Europe*, and to no purpose, a million of lives and immense treasure. Though the emperor was assisted by no one prince in Christendom, the pope excepted, (and his artillery would not go far in battering down stone-walls) yet he took the fortress of *Goletta*, and afterwards the city, and the whole kingdom of *Tunis*; and, had he kept possession, it might have proved a happy fore-runner of farther conquests; but, miscarrying in his attempt against *Algier*, and a terrible storm falling upon his fleet, the farther attempt was laid aside, and the kingdom of *Tunis* returned to its former possessors, by which means their pyracies are still continued.

THERE seems, therefore, to be a necessity, that all the powers of *Europe*, especially the maritime, should endeavour to free themselves from the insolence of these rovers, that their subjects may thereby be protected in their persons and goods from the hands of rapine and violence, their coasts secured from insults and descents, and their ships from capture on the sea. The conquest could not be attended with
any

any great difficulty, if the *English, Dutch, French, and Spaniards* would unite, to join their forces and fleets, and fall upon them in separate bodies, and in several places at the same time. The general benefit of commerce would immediately follow, by settling the government of the sea-coast towns in the hands and possession of the several united powers; so that every one should possess the least, in proportion to the forces employed in the conquest of it: the consequence of the success would soon be sensibly felt by the interested parties; for if the quantity of productions fitted for the use of merchandize be so considerable as we find it to be, even now, under the indolence and sloth of the most barbarous people in the world, how may we suppose all those valuable things to be increased by the industry and application of the diligent *Europeans*, especially the *English, French, or Dutch*. We might also reasonably suppose, that the *Moor*s, being in consequence of such a conquest driven up farther into the country, (for we do not propose the rooting them out as a nation, but only the supplanting or removing them from a situation which they have justly forfeited by their depredations upon other nations;) and being obliged to seek their subsistence by honest labour and application, would at length be induced to increase the product; and, as multitudes of Christians would be encouraged, by the advantages of the place, to go over and settle upon it, the manufactures and merchandizes of *Europe* must soon find a great additional consumption; and the many new ports and harbours where those Christian nations might settle, would be so many new markets for the sale of those manufactures, where they had little or no sale or consumption before. Besides, would not the success be delivering *Europe* from the depredations of powerful thieves, and their commerce and navigation from the rapine of a merciless crew, who are the ruin of thousands of families, and, in some sense, the reproach of Christendom. Such measures as these are far from being impracticable; they are worthy of being undertaken by the princes and powers of *Europe*, and would, therefore, bring infinitely more glory to the Christian name, than all their intestine wars among each other, which are the scandal of *Europe*, and the only thing, that, at first, let in the *Turks* and other barbarians among them.

African-
Islands.

To finish our account of *Africa*, some notice remains to be taken of its islands, some of which lie in the *Eastern* or *Indian Ocean*, and some in the *Western*, or *Atlantic Ocean*. We shall begin with the *Eastern*.

THE first of any note that presents itself in the Indian Ocean, is *Zocotora*, situate in east longitude 53. north latitude 12. thirty leagues east of *Cape Gardesoi*, on the continent of *Africa*. It is about eighty miles long, and fifty four broad, and has two pretty good harbours in it, where ships put in sometimes when they lose their passage to *India*, the country being plentiful, and affording such fruits and plants as are usually found within the tropics; as also frankincense, gum-traganth, and aloes.

BABELMANDEL is situate in east longitude 44. 30. Babel-north latitude 12. It commands the strait at the entrance of the *Red-Sea*; and preserves the communication between *Ethiopia* and *Arabia*; on which account it was formerly much contended for by the *Ethiopians* and *Arabs*: otherwise, it is of very little consequence, being a barren sandy spot of earth, not five miles round.

THE *Comorra-Islands* are situate between 41. and 46 deg. east longitude, and between 10. and 14 deg. south latitude, equally distant from *Madagascar*, and the continent of *Africa*. *Joanna*, the chief, is about thirty miles long, and fifteen broad; and affords plenty of provisions, and such fruits as are produced between the tropics. *East-India* ships bound to *Bombay* usually touch here for refreshment. The people are negroes of the *Mohammedan* religion, and entertain our seamen with great humanity and hospitality.

MAURITIUS is situate east longitude 56. south latitude 20. about 400 miles east of *Madagascar*. It was subject to the *Dutch*, who named it *Maurice*, in honour of their stadtholder, but is now possessed by the *French*. It is of an oval form, about 150 miles in circumference, a mountainous country, well covered with good timber of several sorts, and watered with several rivulets which run down from the mountains. The *Dutch* erected saw-mills upon it, and from thence supplied their settlements in *India* with plank. This island was of great use to the *Dutch* before they possessed the *Cape of Good-Hope*, having then no other place to furnish them with refreshments between *Europe* and *India*.

MADAGASCAR, or *St. Laurence*, the chief of the *African-Islands*, is situate between 43. and 51 deg. of east longitude, and between 12. and 26 degrees of south latitude, 300 miles south-east of the continent of *Africa*, and is about 1800 miles in length from north to south, and generally between 2 and 300 miles broad. It abounds in corn, cattle, fish, fowl, and all manner of animals and vegetables that are to be found on the continent of *Africa*. Here are a great variety of hills, vallies, woods, and champaign, and the island

island is well watered with springs and rivers; neither does it want good harbours, and yet no *European* nation has thought it worth while to plant colonies in it, no merchandize being produced therein that will bear the expence of so long a voyage, except negroes, which are purchased here as well as on the continent, by trading ships. But besides negroes, there are white men and a tawny generation upon the coast, who are descended from the *Arabs*, as is evident from their language, and their religious rites, having a mixture of *Mohammedanism*, *Judaism*, and *Paganism*; but they have no mosques, temples, nor any stated worship. The country is divided amongst a great many petty sovereigns, to whom the seamen that touch there give the title of kings and princes, who, making war on each other, as they do on the continent, sell their prisoners, or slaves, to the shipping which call here, taking cloathing, utensils, and other necessaries, in return. *European* pyrates, of which lately was the noted *Every*, have frequently their stations in the harbours of this island. It is confidently affirmed, that the island has also gold and silver mines; but it is not known in what province they lie. Nor does it want for precious stones, as topazes, amethysts, agates, &c. but the natives value a plate of copper more than the most beautiful precious stone, when rough; and deride foreigners who bid them any thing for them. The island is not populous in proportion to its greatness.

Bourbon. *MASCARIN*, called *Mascarcigne*, or the *Isle of Bourbon* by the *French*, is about 370 miles distant from the coast of *Madagascar* to the east, under the 21st and 22d degrees of south latitude. It was discovered by a *Portuguese* of the house of *Mascarenbas*, who gave it his name. Afterwards *M. de Flacourt*, governor of *Fort Dauphin*, and of the *French* settlements in *Madagascar*, gave it the name of *Bourbon*, in the year 1654, when he took possession of it in the name of his king. However, the *French* did not settle at first upon this island; but, finding afterwards how advantageous it might prove to their navigation, they made a considerable settlement there in 1672, after they had quitted the island of *Madagascar*. They have now pretty considerable towns there, with a governor and several magistrates. There are many good roads for shipping about this island, but no safe ports to secure ships against the violent storms which often rage in those parts. This is, at present, the baiting-place of the *French East-India* ships, and the only one where they can conveniently get refreshments. The island, which is about ninety miles round, is fruitful in plants, and abounds particularly

cularly with aloes, tobacco, white-pepper, ebony, palm, and other fruit-trees; a kind of trees which produce odoriferous gums, as benzoin, &c. and a great many trees proper for timber. The soil is well-watered by several small rivers, rivulets, and springs of very good water; and the rivers abound with fish. On the sea-shore are gathered great quantities of ambergrease, coral, and fine shells. There are many more small islands about *Madagascar*, but not worth mentioning. The islands of the *Atlantic-Ocean*, next in order, are

ST. HELENA, situate in west longitude 6. 30. south latitude 16, 1200 miles west of the continent of *Africa*, and 1800 east of *South-America*. It is a rock in the middle of the ocean, very high and steep, about twenty miles in circumference, and only accessible at the landing-place, which is defended by batteries of guns. A foot of good earth covers the top of it, and produces corn, grapes, and all fruit proper for the climate. It abounds also in cattle, poultry, and other fowls; but the inhabitants are unfortunate in having a multitude of rats in the island, which eat up all the corn as soon as it is sown; and, by burrowing in the rock, there is no practicable means of destroying them; so that all the flour they use is imported from *England*, and in a scarcity they generally eat yams and potatoes, instead of bread. The *East-India* company are proprietors of the island, which was given them by king *Charles II.* soon after it was taken from the *Dutch* by admiral *Monday*, in 1672. There are about 200 families in the island, most of them the children of the *English* that planted it: their complexions are as good as those of the natives of *Old England*, though they lie in so warm a latitude; which may be ascribed to the trade winds, which constantly blow over them, and the sea, which so closely surrounds the island, and renders it cooler than might be expected. Here the *English East-India* ships take in water and fresh provisions in their way home; but the island is so very small, and the wind so much against them outward-bound, that they very seldom see it then; and if a ship overshoots the island, and falls to leeward, it is very difficult to recover it.

THE island of *Ascension* is situate in 17 degrees west longitude, and 7 south latitude, 600 miles northwest of *St. Helena*. It is about twenty miles round and uninhabited; but the *East-India* ships usually touch here to furnish themselves with turtle, or tortoises, which are very plentiful and vastly large, some of them weighing above an hundred pounds a piece.

St. Matthew. THE island of *St. Matthew* lies in 9 degrees west longitude, and in 2. 30. south latitude, 700 miles south of *Cape Palmas*.

St. Thomas. THE island of *St. Thomas* is situate under the Equator, in 8 degrees, east longitude.

Anaboa. *ANABOA* is situate near the coast of *Loango*, in east longitude 8. 30. south latitude 1.

Prince's Island. *PRINCE'S Island* on the same coast, in east longitude 9, north latitude 1.

Fernando Po. *FERNANDO Po* is situate in east longitude 10. north latitude 3. Near the mouth of the river *Cameron*. These five are small islands belonging to the *Portuguese*, which furnish shipping with fresh water and provisions as they pass by, but are not considerable on any other account.

Goree. *GOREE* is situate in 14. 41. north latitude, and 17. 20. west longitude, about eight leagues to the south-east of *Cape Verd*, and within about three miles of the continent. It is about three quarters of a mile in length, and one quarter in breadth. It was taken in 1758, in the late war from the *French* by commodore *Keppel*, and restored to them by the definitive treaty of peace. Its appearance from the sea is low and even, except towards the south-west, where it rises into a rocky hill, upon the summit of which is situated the fort, called *St. Michael*. Besides *French* natives, the island is inhabited by about 300 free negroes, all Christians, who live in the plain to the south.

Cape Verd Islands. *CAPE VERD Islands* are situate between the 13th and 50 minutes, and the 17th and 50 minutes of north latitude, and between the 22d and 25th degrees of longitude west from *London*. They were discovered by *Antonio Noel*, a *Genoise*, in the service of *Portugal*, in the year 1460, and are governed by a viceroy from *Portugal*, who resides in the isle of *St. Jago*. The inhabitants are *Europeans*, or families originally from *Europe*, with a good number of negroes, all professing the religion of the church of *Rome*. The most considerable of these islands are,

MAYO, the whole of which is a very dry sort of soil, without any fresh water or streams to moisten it; but only showers in the wet season, which run off as fast as they fall. There is but one small spring in the middle of the isle, from which proceeds a little stream of water, that runs through a valley between the hills. On the west side of the island, where the road for ships is, there is a large sandy bay, and a sand-bank about forty paces wide, which runs two or three miles along the shore, within which there is a large salina, or salt-pond, contained between the sand-bank and the hills beyond it.

it. The waters which yield this salt work out of the sea, through a hole in the sand-bank, like a sluice, and that only in spring-tides, when it fills the pond, more or less, according to the height of the tides. They who come hither to lade salt take it up in kurns, and lay it up in heaps on the dry-land, before the water breaks in again. Our nation drives a great trade here for salt, and has commonly a man of war stationed here, for the guard of our ships and barques that come to take it in; of which, in some years, there have not been less than an hundred in a year. It costs nothing but men's labour to raise it together, and wheel it out of the pond, except the carriage, and that is also very cheap; the inhabitants having plenty of asses, for which they have little to do, besides carrying the salt from the ponds to the sea-side, at the season when the ships are here. These asses too are a commodity in some of those islands, several of our ships coming hither to freight with them, carry them to *Barbadoes*, and our other plantations. The inhabitants of this island, even their governor and priests, are all negroes, and speak the *Portuguese* language. The negro governor expects a small present from every commander that lades salt, and is glad to be invited aboard their ships.

ST. JAGO is the chief, the most fruitful, and best inhabited of all the islands of *Cape Verd*; and yet is mountainous and has much barren land. On the east-side of the island is a town called *Baya*, with a good port, which, in peaceable times, especially, is seldom without ships: for this has been long a place where ships outward-bound to *Guinea*, or the *East-Indies*, *English*, *French*, and *Dutch*, have been wont to touch at for water and refreshments, but few ships call here on their return to *Europe*. *St. Jago* town, the capital of the island, lies on the south-west part of it, and is the seat of the general-governor, and of the bishop of all the *Cape Verd-Islands*. There are several small sugar-works on this island, from which they send into *Portugal* near an hundred tons every year, and they have plenty of cotton growing in the country, wherewith they clothe themselves, and send also a great deal to *Brasil*. They have some wines, and an abundance of different sorts of excellent fruits.

THE other islands are, *Buena Vista*, *Sal*, or *Salt-Island*, *St. Nicholas*, *St. Lucia*, *St. Vincent*, *St. Anthony*, *Fuego a Vulcano*, and *Brava*; some of which have very good roads and harbours. The island *Sal* is full of large salt ponds, where the water naturally congeals into salt; and, at *St. Vincent*, the *Portuguese* load hides.

Canaries.

THE *Canaries*, antiently called the *Fortunate-Islands*, are situate between 12 and 19 degrees west longitude, and between 27 and 29 north latitude, about 150 miles south-west of *Morocco*. The chief island, called the *Great-Canary*, which communicates its name to the rest, is situate between 27 and 28 degrees of north latitude, and is about 150 miles in circumference. The particular names of the others are *Lancerota*, *Fuert-Ventura*, *Teneriffe*, *Gomera*, *Ferro*, and *Palma*; in all seven in number. These islands enjoy a pure temperate air, and we may judge of the richness of the soil from their having frequently two harvests in a year. They abound particularly in the most delicious fruits, among which the grapes produce those rich wines that obtain the name of *Canary*, whereof no less than 10,000 hogheads are annually exported to *England* in time of peace. They were first discovered and planted by the *Carthaginians*; but the *Romans* destroying that state, put a stop to navigation, especially on the west coast of *Africa*, and these islands lay concealed afterwards from the rest of the world, for many ages, till they were again discovered by the *Spaniards* in 1495. The natives, upon the first landing of the *Spaniards*, were idolaters, worshipping the sun and stars; their number was very considerable; they were robust and active, and well skilled in the managing of the warlike weapons of bows, arrows, and darts. None of the people of the continent could understand their language; but when they had learnt *Spanish* enough to be understood, could give no account of their ancestors, or from what country they came; and though they resembled the natives of the north of *Africa* in their stature and complexion, retained none of their customs, were masters of no science, and did not know there was any country in the world besides their own. Having struggled for their liberties till about the year 1460, they were forced to yield to the superior power of their invaders, who sent a great number of them to *Spain*, to end their days in slavery. Those that were more fortunate have endeavoured to retain their ancient demesnes, by submitting intirely to the *Spanish* yoke in church and state, and now far exceed their teachers in probity and civility to strangers.

THE *Gran Canaria*, the capital, which stands on the south-west side of the island, called the *Great-Canary*, is defended by a very ordinary castle; but its best defence are the rocks that lie under water, which make the approach to the shore very dangerous. There is eighteen fathom water before it, and it measures about a league in circumference; but the houses, though for the most part built well enough, are low, seldom

feldom above one story, episcopal see, the inquisitor's assembly, the states of monks, and convents.

terrified at top. Here is the office, the supreme council, or seven islands, and several houses

ABOUT fourteen leagues from the *Great-Canary*, is *Teneriff*, in which is a mountain called the *Pico*, or *Peak of Teneriff*. It is so high, that as soon as the sun appears, its shadow seems to cover not only this and the *Great Canary Island*, but even the sea to the very horizon; where its top, in the form of a sugar-loaf, seems to turn up, and to cast its shadow into the air. It requires three days to arrive at the top, from whence may be seen to the distance of above fifty leagues round, and all the adjacent islands plainly discovered: and, though it often emits fire, flames, smoke, and ashes, like *Etna* and *Vesuvius*, it is so cold, and covered with snow at the top, that there is no ascending it but from the middle of *May* to the middle of *August*. In the year 1704, there happened so dreadful an eruption of sulphur and melted ore from this mountain, that it ran down like a river, and destroyed several considerable towns, spoiling the richest lands in the island, and converting them into a barren desert.

THE most remarkable curiosity of these islands is the fountain-tree, in the island of *Ferro*. This island has neither river, spring, fountain, nor well, though twenty-five leagues in circumference; but was formerly supplied with abundance of wholesome fresh water by means of this wonderful tree, of nature. All the authors who have recorded the discovery of these islands mention it; and *Lewis Jackson*, an *Englishman*, has exactly described its nature and qualities. This tree is as thick as an oak, between six and seven fathom high, the branches spreading somewhat loose and open, and the leaves like those of laurel, white within and green without. It bears neither fruit nor blossoms, dries, and seems to wither in the day-time, when the sun shines, and drops water all night; when a cloud always hovers about its top. Under each of these trees, of which there are many in this island, there is a cistern or basin, capable of holding sufficient water for 8000 inhabitants, and 100,000 beasts on this island. The principal basin is supposed to have contained 20,000 tons, and was filled in one night, and conveyed through several canals into other reservoirs about the island; a thing incredible, did not experience evince the truth of it. Hence also we may account for its name, *Pluvialia*, in ancient geography, which imports, that this island was supplied with water from heaven. Some modern writers have taken the liberty to decry this account as a mere fiction; merely, because

The Conclusion

cause Providence having taught the inhabitants a more easy manner of saving rain-water in cisterns, and of filtering brackish water for common use, thought proper to alter its former method: and indeed this method of supplying a certain people with water from heaven, is as easy to be accounted for, as God's feeding the *Israelites* forty years with bread from heaven in the wilderness; and there is no more inconsistency in its ceasing now for some years past, since the inhabitants have been providentially instructed to supply their want of water in a more natural way, than there is in God's ceasing to rain manna every morning, after the *Israelites* were arrived in a land, where, by art, cultivation, and industry, they were able to procure corn from the earth for their sustenance. These exertions of God's Providence were done, and continued so long as needful for the support of his creatures, to shew that his mercy is over all his works, and were only discontinued when they were enabled to provide for themselves in a natural way.

Madeira. *MADEIRA*, the best of the *African* islands, lies under the 32d degree of north latitude, and under the 17th and 18th degree of longitude, west from *London*. The air is far more moderate than in the *Canary-Islands*, and the soil more fertile in corn, wine, sugar, and fruits, being much better watered by five or six little rivers; but it is alike stored with the same sort of cattle, birds, plants, and trees, from which are had dragon's blood, mastic, and other gums. Here is a perpetual spring and warm weather, which produce blossoms and fruit every month in the year. The lemons are of a monstrous size, with oranges of all sorts. Fruit-trees from *Europe* thrive in perfection. They make here the best sweetmeats in the world, and succeed wonderfully in preserving large citrons, and beautiful oranges, and in making marmalades and perfumed pastes, which infinitely exceed those of *Genoa*, whatever the *Italians* may pretend. The sugar they make is extremely beautiful, and smells naturally of violets. This is the first place in the west where this manufacture was set on foot; and from hence it has been carried into *America*, where they make such vast quantities of sugar, that the *Portuguese*, finding that this trade was not so profitable to them here as it proved at first, pulled up the greatest part of their sugar-canes, and planted vineyards in their stead, which produce excellent wine, and which foreigners come to buy up, and whereby the *Portuguese* make an immense profit. It is observable of *Madeira* wine, that the heat of the sun improves it much, when exposed to it in the barrel, after the bung is taken off. They make in the whole island, about

28,000 pipes of wine, 8000 of which are drank there, and the rest exported, the greatest part to the *West-Indies*, especially to *Barbadoes*. The chief towns are *Fuchal* and *Porto Santo*, both very populous. This island wants harbours, and has only a bay, which is safe enough, except when the wind blows from the south-west. The *Portuguese* planted this island in 1425, and by burning down the woods with which it was almost covered, rendered it exceeding fruitful. It is computed to be about 120 miles circumference.

S E C T.

Of Europe.

C H A P. I.

Of Europe in general.

EUROPE, one of the four divisions made by geographers of the whole world, is bounded on the north by the *Frozen Ocean*; on the south by the *Mediterranean Sea*, which divides it from *Africa*; on the east by *Asia*, from which it is parted by the *Archipelago*, the *Euxine* or *Black Sea*, and the *Palus Mæotis*, and thence by a line drawn from the river *Tanais* or *Don*, almost to the river *Oby*, in *Muscovy*, and, on the west, it is bounded by the *Atlantic Ocean*. It is extended between 34 and 80 degrees north latitude, and between 5 and 80 degrees of longitude, reckoning the first meridian to pass through the island of *Teneriff*. It contains in breadth as a continent, from the *North Cape* to *Cape Metapan* in the *Morilla*, about 2600 miles; and in length, from the mouth of the river *Oby* in the east, to *Cape St. Vincent* in *Portugal*, west, about 2800 miles.

THOUGH Europe be the least of the four parts of the world, it may justly have the preference for the mildness of the air, the fertility of the soil, the many navigable rivers, the great plenty of corn, cattle, wine, oil, and all things requisite, not only for the sustenance and comfort, but even for the luxury of human life; and more especially for the beauty, strength, courage, ingenuity, industry, and wisdom of its inhabitants; the excellency of their governments, the

equity of their laws, the freedom of their subjects; and, which surpasses all, the purity and sanctity of the Christian religion, which is professed throughout all *Europe*, except that part of it which is possessed by the *Turks*. *Europe* also has for many ages been exceeding populous, and her inhabitants, in general, are justly illustrious for their valour, wisdom, and virtue; by which they conquered the greatest part of *Asia* and *Africa*, and subjected them to the two empires of *Greece* and *Rome*; and, in these latter ages, almost one half of the earth, that was formerly unknown, has been discovered by *Europeans*, and possessed by the colonies they have sent thither.

THE *Europeans* also have been the most renowned for learning and arts. All their scholastic sciences they have brought to a much greater perfection than either the *Asiatics* or *Africans* ever did; and the invention and improvement of numberless useful and ingenious arts, particularly that of navigation, on which all intercourse of foreign commerce between distant nations depends, is wholly owing to the genius and industry of the inhabitants of this part of the world.

Europe
how first
peopled.

EUROPE was peopled after the flood, as is generally believed, by the posterity of *Japhet*, who came from *Asia Minor*, over the *Hellepont* into *Greece*; though some say, that the descendants of *Shem*, passing by land between the *Caspian Sea* and the *Palus Mæotis*, went through *Tartary* and *Scythia* into *Scandinavia*, and thence afterwards into *France*, *Germany*, and the neighbouring countries. Which of these opinions is most to be credited we cannot undertake to determine; but we may account for, with great certainty, the original of the principal states of *Europe*, as to their present constitution, in this manner.

Origin of
the Euro-
pean
States.

THE *Roman* empire was destroyed by those multitudes of people that poured forth from the north at different times into different countries, and most of the nations that are considerable at present were peopled by them, and are in the possession of their descendants. The first of these, that ravaged *Europe* were the *Cimbri*, so early as the year 639 from the building of *Rome*, but they were intirely extirpated by *Marius* before they got footing in *Italy*. The *Visigoths*, or western *Goths*, had better success some centuries afterwards; they sacked *Rome* under *Alaric*, in the year of Christ 409, and settled in *Italy*, *Languedoc*, and *Spain*; though their *Italian* kingdom was ruined by *Narses* the eunuch, *Justinian's* general, in 552. The provinces of *Gaul* fell to the share of the *Franks* and *Burgundians*, and still retain the

names of their conquerors. The *Huns* subdued *Pannonia*, which has ever since been called *Hungary*. The *Romans* being no longer able to defend *Britain* from the incursions of the *Picts* and other wild people, the *Britons* called in the *Angles*, or *Saxons*, to their assistance, who defeated both parties in their turn, took possession of the best part of the country for themselves, and gave it the name of *England*. The *Britons*, thus expelled from their inheritance by their foreign allies, retired, some into that part of *France* which is from them called *Brittany*, and others, who would not adventure to quit the island, retreated beyond the river *SVERN*, into that part of it which was named *Wales* by the *Saxons*.

THE *Longobardi*, or *Lombards*, a people originally from *Scandinavia*, but last from *Hungary*, were the next that settled in *Italy*, part of which is called *Lombardy*. Afterwards the *Normans*, another northern people, over-run that part of *France* which still bears the name of *Normandy*, obtained the crown of *England* under *William I.* penetrated even into *Italy*, and there founded the kingdom of *Naples*.

THE last emperor of the western part of the *Roman* empire was *Augustulus*, driven out of *Italy* by an inundation of barbarous people about the latter end of the fifth century, under *Odoacer*, who changed the title, and was the first who called himself king of the *Romans*. Amongst the effects of these changes, religion was not the least; for as the removal of the seat of empire from *Rome* to *Constantinople* was the true cause of the ruin of the *Roman* state, so it was the very means of the rise of the *Roman* church; for the pope, or bishops of *Rome*, who until that time had no authority but that which their piety and learning gave them amongst an ignorant people, became, in the absence of the emperors, mediators of all the differences of *Italy*. On the destruction of the eastern empire by the *Turks*, the pope had recourse to *France* to support the power they had gained by degrees against the encroachments of the *Lombards*, and it was *Charlemagne* who laid the foundation of and established that vast influence which this spiritual monarchy afterwards obtained. In return for this they made him emperor, and created his son king of the *Romans*, which title is still often vested in the eldest son of the emperor of *Germany*, though not now by creation, but by a majority of the electors of the empire, to which the person so chosen succeeds in course. The pope created the priests near *Rome* cardinals, who soon excluded the people from the right of voting in the election of a pope, and always advanced one of their own college to the papal see. The pope also in the time of

Otho III. deprived the Roman people of the right of voting in the election of an emperor, a privilege they had till then enjoyed, and vested it in the six electorates of Germany, three ecclesiastic, *Mantze, Triers* or *Triers*, and *Cologne*, and three secular princes, *Brandenburg, Palatine*, and *Saxony*; to these latter *Bavaria* and *Hanover* have since been added; the kingdom of *Bohemia* has also a vote in the election. The emperors and popes, though they had thus mutually concurred to the aggrandizement of each other, soon disagreed, in so much that pope *Alexander II.* ventured to degrade *Henry IV.* from the empire. This bold step divided *Italy*, and was the origin of the famous parties of *Guelfs* and *Ghibellines*, the latter of whom favoured the imperial, the former the papal authority. A principal partizan among the *Guelfs* was *Maud* countess of *Tuscany*, who left that part of her dominions which is still called the patrimony of *St. Peter*, to the church. This was a great addition of power to the popes, but the occasion of almost all the wars that happened in *Italy* for two centuries afterwards; for the popes to extend their own dominions, or to erect principalities or dukedoms for their families, called first one foreign power, then another, into *Italy*, and gave rise to all the pretensions which the *French, Spaniards*, and *Germans* have upon most of the territories there; and to those disputes in which so much blood has been shed, and which have required so many treaties to adjust them, even down to the present times.

THE modern powers of *Europe*, built upon the ruins of the *Roman* empire are, the empire of *Germany*, with all its sovereign independent states; the kingdoms of *France, Spain, England, Hungary, Naples*, and *Sardinia*; the territories of the pope, and all the dukedoms and republics of *Italy*. The eastern empire is now intirely under the dominion of the *Turk*, where the sword of *Mohammed* has planted his doctrine, which is likely to continue without the divine interposition; for the interests of *Christian* potentates will always be different, and the humour of entering into wars for the sake of religion is over long since.

ALL these great changes did not only alter the names of the provinces, cities, and rivers, but gave rise to several modern languages; those of *France, Spain*, and *Italy*, being various mixtures of the ancient *Roman* or *Latin* tongue with that then spoken by the new possessors of these several countries. Nothing bids fairer to discover the origin of nations than the critical knowledge of languages; for it is evident, that as historical monuments are far from reaching to the origin of nations, great use may be made of the

Use of languages to discover the origin of nations.

vestiges

vestiges of ~~the~~ ^{many} languages still remaining, especially in the proper names of rivers and forests, and even of countries, towns, and men; and as it may be laid down as a principle, that all proper names were originally appellative, the question will be therefore to find out the signification of those ancient names, which is not always impossible.

We learn from a verse in the poet *Venantius Fortunatus*, that the word *Ric*, or *Ricus*, which was the termination of so many names among the *Germani*, *Franks*, *Alemanni*, *Saxons*, *Goths*, *Vandals*, &c. signified only *fortis*, strong, since that poet renders the name *Chilperic*, *adjutus fortis*, a strengthened helper; and *help*, or *auxilium*, is used still in the *Teutonic* languages, for *auxilium*, assistance. One may observe in the greatest part of our continent, some remains of an ancient prevailing language, which has been as it were perpetuated, by some words used from the *British* sea as far as *Japan*. Without dwelling upon the word *sack*, which has been observed by so many grammarians, the ancient *Celtic* word *mar*, or *mare*, a horse, not only still remains in the word *marechal*, a word common to so many languages, but is not unknown to the most eastern *Tartars*, namely, to those who conquered *China*. Such is again the word *Kan*, king, prince, derived from the verbs *kan*, *können*, which in the *Teutonic* language signify *posse*, to be able; for it is well known that these words, *king*, *kanig*, *chagan*, *can*, denote or denoted, a monarch, a great man, among all the *Germanic* nations, the *Sarmatæ*, the *Huns*, the *Persians*, the *Turks*, and the *Tartars*, as far as *China*.

Hence there is good reason to believe, that the greatest part of the words of that primitive language were formed by onomatopoeia, that is, men endeavoured to express, by a sound, the idea or passion excited in them, by the presence of certain objects; and that therefore for example, the power and strength of those, who first usurped empire over men, are in some measure represented by the strong pronunciation of the word *kan*, which is owing to the letter *k*.

ALL the languages derived from that primitive language may be properly divided into two great classes. The first may call *Saphetic*, or *Scythian* languages; these were spread through the northern countries, in which we may reckon all *Europe*. The second go by the name of *Aramean* languages, and were spoken in the southern countries. Among the latter the *Arabic* seems to have prevailed over all others, the *Syriac*, *Chaldaic*, *Hebrew*, *Punic*, and *Ethiopic*, being only dialects of it. The *Persian*, *Armenian*, and *Georgian* are a mixture of the *Scythian* and *Aramean* languages.

The Conclusion of

As for the *Coptic*, or *Egyptian*, there is so ^{great} an affinity between it and the other southern languages, that its original might well be derived from the ancient language spoken in *Ethiopia*, before the *Arabs* penetrated into that country.

FROM the ancient *Scythian* language sprung those of the *Turks*, *Sarmatians*, *Finnonians*, and *Celtæ*: by the ancient *Scythians* are understood those nations that first inhabited the shores of the *Euxine Sea*, and are called *Cimmerii* by *Homer*. A surprising affinity is found between some words of the ancient *Scythian* language, preserved by *Herodotus*, and those languages which are originally *Celtic*, such as the *Greek*, the *Latin*, the *Irish*, and the *German*. That *Greek* historian informs us that the *Amazons*, a *Scythian* nation, were surnamed *Aorputa*, that is, murderers of men, from these two *Scythian* words *Aor*, man, and *puta*, to kill: but this last word is very like the ancient *Latin* verb *batuo*, which signifies the same thing; and the word *Aor* comes very near these *Irish*, *Irish*, and *German* words, *Vir*, *Báro*, *Herus*, *Herr*, *Er*, *Var*, which denote a man. In the *Greek*, *Latin*, and *German* languages, the etymology of the *Scythian* word *Arimaspi* may be found out. It was, according to the testimony of *Herodotus*, the name of a *Scythian* nation, so called because the men had but one eye; for, says *Herodotus*, *Arima* signifies one, in the *Scythian* language, and *Spu* signifies eye. We find some vestiges of those two words, both as to the sound and signification, in the *Greek* word *ἑγνων*, solitude; in the *German* word *Arm*, poor, desolate, forsaken; and in these *Latin*, *German*, *Italian*, and *French* words, *Specere*, *Spehen*, *Spiare*, *Espier*, which signifies to see, to look. Thus it were to be wished that some learned man would give himself the trouble to make a collection of all the ancient *Scythian* words, as others have collected all the ancient terms used among the *Gauls*, *Phrygians*, *Ethiopians*, &c.

IF we take a survey of the several nations which may be deemed *Scythians* by extraction, we may begin with the *Turks*, with whom may be enumerated the *Little Tartars*, the *Calmucs*, the *Moguls*, and the eastern *Tartars*, because the languages of all those nations have a great affinity: afterwards we may proceed to the *Sarmatians*, called since *Slavonians*, to whom may be referred not only the *Muscovites*, the *Poles*, the *Bohemians*, the *Moravians*, the *Bulgarians*, the *Dalmatians*, and the *Slavonians* of our time, but also other *Sarmatians* more northern, bordering upon the *Baltic Sea*, and called *Wendi* or *Weneds*, of whom are still some considerable remains in the duchy of *Lunenburg*, and in *Lusatia* and *Brandenburg*. Among the *Sarmatians* may also be reckoned the

Huns and the *Mari*, who formerly invaded *Pannonia* or *Hungary*; the *Russians*, the *Servians*, the *Croatians*, and some other nations are their posterity: as for the *Hungari*, they did not make themselves masters of *Pannonia* till a long time after being come from the *Asiatic Scythia*, under the empire of *Charlemagne*. What shews that the *Huns* were *Sarmatians*, or *Sclavonians* is, that in the language of the latter, *Coni*, or *Chuni*, signifies a horse; and it is well known that the *Huns* had no other troops but cavalry, as the *Tartars*; so that hun and horseman are one and the same thing. Besides *Fornandes*, describing the funeral of *Attila*, king of the *Huns*, mentions a great feast, which he calls *Strawa*; a name used to this day, among the *Sclavonians*, to denote a great apparel. As for what concerns the *Finnonians*; *Tacitus*, who calls them *Fennos*, represents them as a wild and fierce people, which very well agrees with the *Loplanders* and *Samseids*, who in some respects are originally *Finnonians*. It is very probable that the inhabitants of *Esthonia* and *Livonia*, and some other nations that live along the shores of the *Baltic Sea*, whose language have no affinity with the *Sclavonian*, might be of a *Finnonian* race; but it is more than probable that the *Hungarians* who came from *Asia*, are of the same race; the more, because there is no language in *Europe* that comes so near to the *Hungarian* as the *Finnonian*.

The *Celtæ* came originally from *Scythia*, and spread themselves through the greatest part of *Europe*: they peopled by degrees, *Germany*, *Gaul*, *Italy*, *Spain*, and *Great Britain*. Hence it seems well grounded that the ancient *Britons* were the first inhabitants of *Ireland*, and that the language of that country would afford the best means of reviving the ancient *Celtic*. The *Cambrians* or *Cimbri*, now called among us the *Welsh*, and the *Anglo-Saxons*, succeeded the ancient *Britons*. The first inhabitants of *Italy* were the *Celtæ*, who came from *Germany* and *Gaul*; and, in process of time, many *Greeks*, *Egyptians*, *Phrygians*, *Phœnicians*, and other nations were incorporated with them. The ancient *Hebræan* language, which is no longer understood, as its characters cannot be read, was in all probability spoken by the ancient inhabitants of *Italy*. As for the *Spaniards*, it may be believed that they are generally of a *Celtic* extraction; but the *Basques* may well perplex any linguist, because their language being far different from all those known to us, it may be thought, with good reason, that, before the arrival of the *Celtæ* in *Spain*, that country was inhabited by some *African* colony, from which the *Basques* are descended. Some have thought they

they found an analogy between this language and the *Irish*; but they are indeed quite different.

GERMANY sent several colonies into *France* and *Italy*, and also furnished *Scandinavia* with new inhabitants, who drove away the *Finnonians*, or *Laplanders*. This opinion seems to differ much from that of several learned men in the north, who look upon the *Germans* as a colony of the ancient *Goths*. Certain it is, that this origin would have some probability, if the inhabitants of the remotest parts of *Sweden* and *Norway* spoke the *Germanic* language. These inhabitants are *Laplanders*, or *Finnonians*; but their language has no affinity with the *German*. It may, notwithstanding, be said, that the *Germans*, having increased in *Scandinavia*, spread themselves again through *Germany*; for it is certain that the *Cimbri*, the *Suecons*, the *Heruli*, the *Vandals*, and some other nations, came from the shores of the *Baltic Sea*; but this happened long after the first migrations.

FROM these cursory reflections on the use of languages, to discover the origin of nations, an ingenious person, besides satisfying curiosity, may find wherewithal to supply with very probable conjectures the deficiency of historical monuments. The hint is improveable, and in the main may be attended with some utility.

Considerations on Europe compared with the other parts of the world.

BUT to resume the course of our general observations upon *Europe*, from which we may seem to have digressed: it may be said, that though *Europe* is esteemed the most happy and valuable quarter of the globe, these prerogatives are not derived from its size, since it is the least of all the four into which the world is divided. It has been supposed, that if the whole habitable globe was divided into 300 parts, *Europe* will contain of these 27, *Asia* 101, *Africa* 82, and *America* 90: and though *Europe* respectively excels *America*, and perhaps *Africa*, yet she falls far short of *Asia*, if we may depend on the accounts of the least experienced travellers. With regard to subterranean riches, as gold and silver mines are not to be compared with those in the other quarters of the world; she has few precious stones, and, as to spices and perfumes, we well know from whence they come. But with regard to territory, if we consider what the *Spaniards*, the *English*, the *Portuguese*, the *French*, and the *Dutch* possess in the other parts of the world, it may be said, that the dominions of the *European* powers are equal, if not superior to *Asia*; and, if it does not contain so many people within its own limits, yet it commands more; and, in consequence of their trade, the *Europeans* enjoy all that nature has bestowed on the other parts of the world.

THE trade of *Europe* has, in a course of ages, undergone *Revival* great alterations. Upon the fall of the *Roman* empire, it seemed to be, in some measure, extinguished, but soon revived *gress of* among the *Saxons*, who, when they became masters of this *the trade* *of Europe*, established a great maritime power here, which did not continue long, the *Danes* becoming masters of this country. After some ages, commerce and maritime power retired southward, and were, in a manner, engrossed by the *Italian* states, particularly by the *Venitians* and *Genoese*, who shared the traffic of the east. In the thirteenth century, several free cities in *Germany* began to league together for the support of their trade, and made their confederacy known to the world, by the title of the *Hanseatic* league. As their trade acquired them immense wealth and power, so it rendered them haughty and insolent, which, with other concurring circumstances, at length brought on their ruin; for in the fifteenth century, the *Portuguese* perfected a new route to the *East-Indies* by the *Cape of Good Hope*; and about the same time the *Spaniards* discovered *America*, which threw the trade of *Europe* and its chief naval power into the hands of those nations, who, if they had known how to cultivate and use them with moderation, might not only have raised it higher, but made it more durable than it proved. But the boundless ambition, and cruel oppression of the *Spaniards*, animated the *United Provinces* to throw off their yoke, and engaged them and the *English* to share in those riches, which were the source of the *Spanish* power; and this gave rise to the maritime powers. The progress of the *Dutch* from this time, in commerce and naval power, was amazingly rapid; for in the space of about half a century, from having scarce any ships at all, they came to have more than all *Europe* together. Since that time, *Great Britain*, by extending her commerce and multiplying her colonies, has raised her maritime force to an equality, and now even to a great degree beyond the *Dutch*. The *French* too have for some years past not only raised a considerable maritime force, but extended their traffic into most parts of the world: for though the three last general wars, in a great measure, ruined their navy, yet we experienced by the *last* war, that they had greatly raised it again, and carried their commerce to a pitch beyond all apprehension; and, whatever disadvantages they later sustained in either, they now seem to be in a fair way of retrieving them: so that maritime affairs of *Europe* have in the last and present century suffered a very great change, though probably they may be greater before the present century is expired. The like

like attention to commerce and maritime power has, within these sixty years, appeared in almost every other nation in Europe. The Swedes and Danes have set up East India companies, and the Russians have opened a new and beneficial traffic, as well on the Caspian as on the Black Sea. The house of Austria has shewed a great desire of reviving the ancient commerce of the Low Countries. The Græges not long since have erected a company of assurances, to encourage their subjects to venture upon long voyages, and, if possible, to recover their ancient reputation, as a maritime power. Nay, even the Spaniards themselves, who, in this respect, have slept for such a number of years, have at length opened their eyes, and erected some companies, and established some capital manufactures for the encouragement and extension of trade throughout their European and American dominions. Whence it is plain, that the navigation and shipping of the Europeans in general, are, within these last sixty years, greatly increased, and now in a very prosperous condition.

Superiority of one European nation over another, by trade and naval power.

THAT nation which augments its commerce and maritime power to the greatest extent, bids fairest to give law to the rest. Thus, for instance, if the house of Bourbon should ever acquire as great a proportion of trade and naval power as either of the maritime powers, by which name they are at present distinguished, this would be an acquisition of much more consequence, than any they have hitherto made in point of territories or dominion. It is therefore the interest of the maritime powers to sustain their characters in that respect at all events, since by this means only they can preserve their independency, protect their subjects wherever they may be settled or dispersed, and assist their allies, notwithstanding the efforts and ambitious designs of any aspiring neighbour. We need not wonder then at a common notion which prevails, as if we had a right to prescribe to some other nations the bounds of their naval greatness. What has been here said in relation to trade and commerce, may likewise be extended from it in an historical light, and enable us, in some measure, to judge of the nature, extent, and comparative strength of what is styled maritime power. We see and know, that whatever state or power is possessed of an extensive commerce may have a proportionate naval force, the effects of which will render her considerable; yet it is requisite to know how this happens, and why the strength and dominion of a maritime power is firmer and more durable than that which arises from a great extent of territory, multitudes of subjects, or rich and fruitful countries.

TRADE is certainly the strength and happiness of a nation, let the form of government be what it will; because it introduces industry and arts, by which the manners of a people are civilized, even from the greatest savageness and brutality. Nor is it the number of subjects only, but the number of useful subjects, that is, trading subjects, that make a state powerful: for commerce introduces property, and without security in that respect, the inducements to pursue trade will flag; but with security, it will thrive and prosper, and wherever this security is thoroughly established, and wisely cherished and promoted, it will draw after it an inconceivable flux of people.

HENCE we may easily sign the true causes of the long duration of republics renowned for their trade; such as *Tyre* and *Carthage* in ancient times, the *Venetians* and *Genoese* in later ages. It is almost impossible, that a nation active and industrious in commerce, and consequently rich and populous, and living under a mild government, should not exert a greater force when employed in attacking others, and have much greater resources in case of being attacked herself, than other states that are defective in those advantages: whence it will appear, how the states of *Holland* rose to such a vast power in so short a time, and how her subjects have been able to thrive and grow opulent under taxes and impositions, which must have beggared them in any other situation than that of a trading republic. Add to this, that trade quite changes the comparative strength of states and kingdoms, because, wherever it relides, it creates so many and so great advantages, and begets such relations and connections, as render a trading country infinitely superior to her neighbours, who are differently circumstanced: for such a state, if on the continent, can fortify her great towns, so as to resist a power, ten times stronger, in respect to people; she can maintain, if requisite, great numbers of regular troops, and on emergency hire more of her neighbours, besides what she may be able to do by the help of her maritime force. Hence arises that great strength, or real power, which by trading republics, when attacked either by ambitious princes, or even by powerful confederates. Thus the *Venetians* have often been too hard for the *Turks*; the *Genoese* for the most powerful princes in Italy; and, in earlier times, the *Lubeckers* for the greatest powers in the north. Hence the famous league of *Cambray*, which was formed for the destruction of the state of *Venice* in 1509, came to nothing, though the greatest princes of that time engaged in it, and though the *Venetians* themselves were guilty of some indiscretions, and though also they had been

been much exhausted by former wars. Thus in like manner, the famous confederacy between *France* and *Great-Britain* against *Holland* in 1672, proved abortive, though at the first, even the *Dutch* themselves thought their affairs desperate; but their love of liberty animated them to exert themselves to the utmost, and their commerce furnished them with the means of getting tolerably out of the war. Nor has trade only a great influence on the particular affairs of nations separately considered, being almost the sole cause of a comparative difference in the strength of most of the powers of *Europe*, but is also of unspeakable advantage to the *European* quarter of the globe in general: it frees us from the apprehensions of being over-run by those barbarous empires which the *Mahomedan* religion has established in the world, and likewise brings us every thing that is rich and costly, every thing that is curious and estimable, even from the remotest quarters of the earth: so that to trade alone, all is due in this part of the world: in a word, it is to commerce that the people of *Europe* owe their freedom and independency, their learning and arts, their extensive colonies abroad, and their riches at home; and, above all, that naval power, which so much surpasses any thing of the same kind in other parts of the world, and whatever was attempted in that way in former ages.

European
balance of
power.

THE reciprocal connections between nations resulting from trade, have quite altered the state of things, and produced within these two or three centuries past, a kind of new system in *Europe*, by which every state is led to have a much greater concern than formerly for what may happen to another. In former ages, a quarrel in the north could only have affected the north, but in the last century things were totally altered. Both the *English* and *Dutch* sent fleets into the *Baltic*, upon the quarrel that happened between the *Swedes* and *Danes*, a little before the restoration of *Charles II.* Not long after this, the crown of *Spain* became a contracting party in the famous triple alliance for maintaining the peace of *Europe*, preserving the *Spanish Low-Countries*, and setting bounds to the power of *France*. After the revolution towards the close of the reign of king *William*, both the maritime powers sent their fleets again into the *Baltic*, with the same view and the same success, and the like has been done more than once since. In all those cases the pretence was the love of justice, and a punctual performance of treaties, which there was somewhat of truth; but the real design was, to prevent those inconveniencies which must have befallen the maritime powers, if either *Sweden* or *Denmark* had

been undone by these wars. May it not, therefore, be truly said, that the balance of power, in the strict sense of that phrase, was created by the treaty of Westphalia, and must continue to be the object more especially of trading countries, so long as they preserve their commerce and freedom? Whenever any power in Europe, therefore, attempts to oppress another, or betrays a design of increasing its own strength by weakening or conquering its neighbour, other potentates are ready to interpose; from a quick sense, not only of the inconveniencies that must arise from the incroachments made by such a power, but from the just apprehensions that these must prove prejudicial to commerce in general, and to that of several nations in particular. Whence it appears, that the balance of power is not an empty name, or a chimerical thing, but a just and significant expression, though a new and figurative one: for the intention is, to preserve the several governments of Europe in their present condition, and prevent any in particular from acquiring such a measure of power, as may be dangerous or fatal to those reciprocal interests before observed; which, as they took rise from, are absolutely necessary to the continuance of commerce; as, indeed, any attempts thereupon must be felt by every nation that has a share of trade to preserve. Now, it follows, that it is the interest of all the powers of Europe to preserve each other's independency, and prevent whatever tends to the appearance of universal monarchy, or the introducing the influence of one court over the greatest part of the rest; because this must be detrimental to the whole, and injurious to the freedom, learning, arts, manufactures, and commerce of Europe in general. Without, therefore, urging more on this head, it appears, that peace and good neighbourhood, the encouragement of arts and sciences, and the pursuit of manufactures and commerce, as they are agreeable to the interest of every particular state, so they are best for the whole; and would contribute to render every particular country of Europe infinitely more populous, and the people in all countries much more happy, than any vain endeavours to aggrandize particular families at the expence of the human species.

As Europe is now the only part of the world that is justly renowned for being the emporium in which all the trade, as it were, of the other parts centres, it will not be improper to pass also in review its commercial correspondence with the other three parts particularly.

RESPECTING *Africa*, its inhabitants, *Egypt* excepted, being mostly barbarians, such as the *Moor*, and *Mohammedans* on the north and north-east part, and the *Ethiopi* on the north-east, or the mere savage and negroes of the south and west parts; *Commerce* of Europe relatively to the other quarters of the world.

parts; they all take no great quantities of merchandizes from *Europe*: they take very little indeed, in comparison of the returns made to *Europe* in exchange. The *European* goods sent to *Africa* are such as the *Moors* of the coast on the south shores of the *Mediterranean* sea take off, which consist chiefly in some *English* and *French* woollen and linen manufactures, and great quantities of toys and baubles; in return for which, *Europe* receives from that side of *Africa* far more than an equivalent in corn, salt, almonds, wax, copper, and a large quantity of very valuable drugs. From the coast of *Africa*, on the side of the ocean west, and on the side of the *Indian* or *Ethiopian* sea, *Europe* receives annually an immense treasure, either brought immediately to them, or carried by the *European* merchants in their own ships, and for their own account to *America*, or elsewhere; and this is properly the *European* trade, and consists of gold, elephants teeth, slaves, and drugs. By these articles (the quantity and value of which is infinitely great, considering that a great part of them is procured by the exchange of mere toys and trifles, scarce worth naming) the ballance of the commerce between *Europe* and *Africa* is greatly to the advantage of the former; and that so far, that it is mighty extraordinary and unaccountable that the several maritime nations of *Europe* do not extend that commerce to a far greater degree; which it is manifest might be done with the greatest ease, and to such a height as, perhaps, might equal all the present improvements by colonies and plantations in *America*, many of which are remote, dangerous, and unhealthy, liable to certain charge, to disaster, and miscarriage: whereas *Africa* is near hand, every way equal in fertility, superior in its productions, the trade safe, the country in many parts extremely healthy, the people tractable, and the returns immensely rich, and doubtless abounding, if we could once carry our traffic into the center of this great and populous country, with an infinite variety of commercial articles, which the *Indians*, at present, are absolutely strangers to. These we for us have been already discussed in our general account of *Africa*.

AMERICA is to be next considered with respect to *Europe*. This is often reckoned by far the largest country of the four into which the world is generally divided; and, we may give credit to the measurement of some geographers, it is equal to the other three, and beyond them all, perhaps, in its extent. And it is found, by the experience of commerce, to be infinitely richer than all in its produce, either on its surface, or from its bowels; for as to manufactures, and the labour of the people, *America*, being unimproved, and

he people therein mostly unemployed, that part is not scarce begun: In that *Europe* and *Asia*, in this respect, go infinitely beyond it. It may be the consequence hereafter, we would not conjecture. As the land of *America* is the property of *Europe*, so is the commerce; and all the wealth of the country passes yearly away, like a tribute, to the several parts of *Europe* to which the various parts of *America* belong. And though it is true, that the wealth of *America* goes away as a tribute to *Europe*, yet it is also true, that it goes thither by way of commerce too, and in return for the manufactures of *Europe*, which are sent to them in *America* for their supply. In a word, the *Europeans* receive the whole product of the country, and sell the *Americans* in lieu thereof, a few cloaths to wear; and these very cloaths are chiefly for the use of the *Europeans* settled there for maintaining the possession as lords of the country; and who, having dispossessed the native inhabitants, and driven them into corners, rule them with a rod of iron, especially the *Spaniards*. The produce of *America* is a prodigy of wealth, immeasurable in its quantity, and inexpressible in its value. It consists chiefly of gold, silver, pearl, emeralds, hides of beasts, tobacco, sugar, cacao, cochineal, indigo, peltry, drugs, spice, cotton, dyers-woods, fish, and sundry other articles. These are re-ported to *Europe* in its proper divisions, thus: the gold chiefly to *Portugal* from the *Brasils*, which is afterwards disseminated in the course of the *Portugal* trade, to divers other parts of *Europe*; the silver to *Spain*, from the shores of the *South-seas*, and from *Mexico* and *Peru*, which also is dispersed throughout the other parts of *Europe*, in the channels of the *Spanish* commerce. The fish from *Newfoundland* is sent to various parts of *Europe*; and the other articles, which are no inconsiderable object, are always disposed of to great profit by their respective proprietors. Upon the whole of this commerce, it is certain, that *Europe* also is the gainer, and that to an excess scarce to be conceived; the balance being so great in its favour, that it has, together with the *African* wealth, immensely enriched and aggrandized all the *European* nations that have any great concern in these capital branches of commerce.

ASIA is likewise a country extremely rich in its product, though, in that respect, not to be compared with either of the former two; but it is rendered so by the prodigious numbers, and inimitable diligence, industry, and application of its inhabitants, who are so circumstanced, that they call for little from any other part of the world; and they are so indefatigable, assiduous, and ingenious in the mechanic and

manufactural arts, so amply supplied by nature with materials, and their workmanship is so extremely cheap, that they are able to fill the whole world with their manufactures and produce: by which means, the state of trade between *Europe* and *Asia* stands thus, as we have before, in some measure, observed, intreating of *Africa* in general. *Europe* calls for a vast variety of goods from *Asia*; great quantities of which are dispersed into *America* and *Africa*, by way of barter and exchange for the productions of these parts of the world; so that although a considerable part of the silver that comes from *America* is sent to *Asia* for their produce and manufactures; yet, as silver is one of the plentiful productions of *America*, it is the same thing as the *Americans* bartering any other commodity for the *Asiatic* commodities. And therefore the trade of *Asia* cannot be so injurious to the wealth of *Europe*, as some have been wont to apprehend: for, let it be supposed, that every ounce of silver that was ever produced in *America* centred in *Europe*, and was in circulation, it is to be questioned whether *Europe* would be ever the richer; and the comparative state of the riches of these *European* nations who shared in the *American* silver, would be the same as it is at present: the labour and manufactures of these nations in *Europe* would be so much dearer in their reciprocal barter and exchanges of produce and manufactures with each other; which would still keep up the same comparative equality, with respect to their riches. But if the riches of nations so much consist in the quantity of silver, as some are pleased to think, the immense quantity of wrought plate which is at present in *Europe*, demonstrates, that all the silver from *America* has not been sent to *Asia*: an immense quantity of it lies dead in these articles; and it may, perhaps, be questioned, whether these nations would be ever the richer, if all the wrought plate among them was coined into money, and preserved as long as the course of trade would permit, in their commercial circulation. If the trade of *Asia* had, for a series of years, been so disadvantageous to *Europe*, as is by some suggested, it would certainly have greatly impoverished all these nations therein concerned, which does not appear to be the case: on the contrary, not only those who have been long interested in this trade, are zealous to preserve and encrease it, but new powers are daily struggling to obtain some share of it, which they would hardly do if they were not convinced that this trade, upon the whole, is really beneficial to the respective potentates who are engaged in it. Add to this, that the peculiar policy of the *Asiatics*, in regard to the importation of silver from *Europe*, may deserve some consideration;

tion; for though silver is a commodity which they take partly in barter for their produce and manufactures, yet, if we are rightly informed, this silver is not coined into money, and kept in circulation: . no, to prevent this, the princes and great men not only turn a great deal into wrought plate, but carry under ground immense quantities; whereby they effectually prevent its coming into their commercial circulation, and consequently, by that means, prevent a rise in all the necessaries, even luxuries of life, and thereby keep the price of labour always low and at a stand; so that by this policy they can afford to sell their produce and manufactures cheaper than any other nation whatever; besides, it is said, that such is the policy of several of the governments in the *East-Indies*, that their priests propagate a notion among the people, that the more silver they are possessed of, the happier they will be in a future state; which notion occasions the silver to be hoarded and buried, and thereby kept out of circulation to prevent any rise in the price of labour and commodities; and this is said to be the occasion of the surprising cheapness of all their produce and manufactures, when bought at first hand, in comparison to those of the richest *European* nations.

If this principle, upon examination, should be found to be *Observations on* a good policy, may not the great paper-circulation of the kingdom of *Great Britain* in particular, which is occasioned by our national debts and taxes, deserve serious consideration? For, if paper circulation, by authority, will answer the end of coined money, the more paper there is in circulation by way of transfer, or otherwise, the more money there is, in effect, in circulation; and if so, do not our debts and taxes, in this respect, as well as in others, contribute to keep up the price of labour, and render our produce and manufactures proportionably dearer than otherwise they would be? Can any thing, therefore, more importantly concern the interests of our commerce, than the exonerating us from our national debts, and, in consequence thereof, from the payment of those taxes, which are appropriated for the payment of the interest and principal? For when the whole debt shall be paid off, and all the paper effects thereby occasioned be annihilated, and consequently the public taxes abated, will not all merchandizes fall in their price? That this will prove a bad case, there are two reasons assignable; the first is, that when those paper effects, which have now the operation of money, are sunk, their operation must cease of course; for, as the value of commodities has risen by the increase of gold and silver within these 150 years, so would they of necessity

fall in their price, if our gold and silver were considerably diminished; the consequence must be the same of that which has the operation of money. The second reason is very obvious; for goods that are taxed bear a price in proportion to the impost upon them. When they are free from this incumbrance, there can be no reason why they should not come to their natural value: for instance, if the duty on malt be sixpence per bushel, when this duty is taken off, malt of course, should be sixpence a bushel cheaper than before. The same must be said of all other commodities that are taxed.

THESE observations may give some idea of whatever is necessary to be considered in regard to *Europe* in general; but as they will more fully appear by descending to particulars, we shall now take a view of the different countries and states of *Europe*, proceeding from west to east, and beginning with *Spain*.

C H A P. II.

Of Spain.

Situation, boundaries, and extent of Spain.

SPAIN is situate on the most western part of all the continent of *Europe*, and is encompassed on every side by the sea, except on the side of *France*, from which it is separated by a continued ridge of mountains called the *Pyrenees*. On the east and south it is bounded by the *Mediterranean*, the straits of *Gibraltar*, and part of the *Atlantic-Ocean*; on the west by the same ocean; and on the north, by the sea called the bay of *Biscay*, and the *Pyrenees*. Its site is in the temperate zone, between the 36th and 44th degree of north latitude, and consequently, under the sixth, seventh, and eighth climates; and in length it extends from the 10th degree of west to the 3d degree of east longitude, that is, 13 degrees from east to west, and nine degrees from north to south.

Divisions.

THIS kingdom is divided into fourteen provinces, viz. *Galicia, Asturias, Biscay, Navarre, Arragon, Catalonia, Valencia, New-Castille, Old-Castille, Leon, Estramadura, Andalusia, Granada, and Murcia.*

Soil and produce.

THE soil of *Spain* has been misrepresented as dry and barren by several writers, who appear to have had no knowledge of it. We may even affirm, that its most mountainous and barren parts do produce something for use. Some are covered with stately trees of several sorts, either for timber or fuel. The rocky parts abound with wild thyme, marjoram, and other aromatic herbs, which serve to feed a vast number of

of sheep and goats, and give their milk and flesh a more exquisite flavour than any which are fed on the richest pastures; and if these happen to be scorched with too much heat in summer, the cattle are driven down to the sides of the hills, where they find plenty of those herbs, and meadow grounds well watered by the great number of rivers with which the country abounds; so that at the worst, they never want a sufficient quantity of herbage to supply their numerous flocks. Other mountainous and rocky lands produce quantities of a famed plant called by them *esparto*, of which they make all kinds of ropes and other cordage. The Spanish wheat is inferior to none, if not the very best in Europe, and the common product of it more than the natives can consume. Their barley is very good, and in such plenty, that it is the common grain for their horses and mules, instead of oats, which are here very scarce; and the straw of it serves them likewise instead of hay, of which they make hardly any throughout the kingdom. Wine they likewise have in such abundance, that the poorest people drink it; and few are unacquainted with the goodness and great variety of it. As for fruits, they not only have the different sorts in much higher perfection, which either naturally grow, or which we cultivate with so much pains here in England, but likewise many others, which, with all our art, cannot be brought by us to any tolerable ripeness, and with which we are more easily supplied from them. The same may be said of their herbs, flowers, and medicinal plants, which, though excellent in their kinds, grow most of them wild here, when, in other places, they could not be produced without great art and industry.

THEIR oil, wax, and honey, are allowed to be as good as any in the world. Few countries exceed this for plenty, goodness, and variety of fowl, both wild and tame; and of four-footed game, as deer, both red and fallow, hares, rabbits, and particularly wild boars. As for their tame swine, those who have had experience of it, allow that the Spanish bacon exceeds even that of Westphalia. Their sheep are most exquisite in taste, but they are still more valuable for their incomparable wool, which exceeds any in Europe. Above all, we must not forget their horses, greatly famed for their exceeding celerity. The Spaniards were from the earliest ages very curious in their breeding of good horses, and very dexterous in the use and management of them, especially in the field. As for the other services of that useful creature, such as carrying, drawing, plowing, they have great numbers of mules; which seem much better fitted by nature for such drudgery, as well as for going over the most

Other valuable articles and commodities for which Spain is remarkable.

craggy and mountainous parts of the country, being both larger, stronger, and surer-footed, than the horses, though nothing so swift. Many of them are sixteen, and some even seventeen hands high, and carry very heavy burdens over such rocky parts, and with such ease and steadiness, as is quite astonishing to those who are not accustomed to them.

*Silk and
other ma-
nufactures.*

THE filken manufacture is at present so encouraged in Spain, that we are told above a million of people are employed in feeding, gathering, and curing silk-worms, and in spinning, weaving, and making all kinds of silks. The same may be said, of their cotton, hemp, and flax, which likewise grow here in large quantities, and employ a proportionable number of hands; not to mention their scarlet dye, saffron, sugar, pitch, rosin, and other commodities that grow above ground.

*Mines,
minerals,
&c.*

IF we dive into the bowels of the earth, we shall find gold, silver, quicksilver, (which latter they send in large quantities into the *West-Indies*) lead, copper, and excellent iron, the best of which is dug from the mountains of *Biscay*, and is sent all over *Europe*, as exceeding any other in goodness. They have also great plenty of sulphur, allum, calamine, and other minerals; as likewise of jet, agate, cornelian, granate, crystal, marble, alabaster, jasper, and other stones. As to their gold mines, it must be owned, that they have quite neglected them ever since they have been able to draw such immense quantities of that metal from *America*. But anciently they had it in as great plenty, or much greater, out of their own.

*Reberty
of the air.*

THE healthfulness of this country may be gathered, not only from its excellent situation and serene sky, but likewise from the stoutness and longevity of its antient inhabitants, whilst they gave themselves up to a habit of exercise and temperance; in which last they always did, and do still excel all other nations in *Europe*.

HAVING thus far run through all that need be said in general concerning this country, we shall now take a view of it, with respect to each of its particular kingdoms and provinces, in the same order as we have before ranged them.

*Province
of Galicia.*

THE kingdom of *Galicia* is washed on the west by the ocean, on the north by the *Cantabrian-Sea*, or *Bay of Biscay*; on the east it borders upon *Asturias* and *Leon*, and on the south upon *Portugal*, from which it is parted next the sea by the river *Minho*. This small kingdom produces wheat, millet, all kinds of herbs, plenty of cattle, especially hogs, whose bacon far exceeds that of *Westphalia*; strong mules, good horses, though not large; but it is most famed for its noble

noble wines, particularly that of *Ribadavia*. It has, besides, plenty of firing, and of timber for building houses and ships, with quarries of fine marble, and some flax, of which a pretty good sort of linen is made.

CORUNNA in this province, called by our seamen the *Corunna*, *Groyn*, is a famed ancient sea-port, on the *Bay of Biscay*. By its situation, it is well fenced against the winds, and against the enemy, by two strong castles. It stands between the two famed promontories of *Finisferre* and *Ortegal*, and is wealthy, being a place of considerable trade.

THE principality of *Asturias* lies on the north-side of the Province of *Biscay*, and borders on the west on *Galicia*; on the south it is divided from *Castile* and *Leon* by a ridge of mountains, called the *Asturian* mountains; on the coast it reaches to the port *Llanes*, now *Santillana*, where it joins a narrow slip of land belonging to *Old Castile*, which runs into the sea between *Asturias* and *Biscay*. The whole length of *Asturias* is about 135 miles, and breadth 60; and it is generally divided into two parts or districts, the one called *Asturias de Oviedo*, and the other *Santillana*. But it is further subdivided into seven merindades, or liberties, besides a little province called *Litana*, about twenty-seven miles long, and twelve broad. It is one of the most craggy and mountainous parts of *Spain*, excessive high, and almost inaccessible. The mountains are called *Eurpæ*, and are in full front of the sea, but produce plenty of corn, wine, fruit, cattle, and game. This country gives a title to the eldest son of *Spain*, who is styled, Prince of the *Asturian*.

THE lordship of *Biscay*, as generally taken, is divided into three parts, viz. *Biscay*, properly so called, *Guipuzcoa*, and *Alava*. The whole is bounded on the west by that slip of *Old-Castile* which reaches to the sea; the ridge of the *Asturian* mountains branching from the *Pyrenæes*, parts it from *Old-Castile* on the south east, as the same mountains part it from *Navarre*, and the river *Giarro* from *France* on the east; and all the north-side is washed by the *Cantabrian-Sea*, called commonly the *Bay of Biscay*. The country is mountainous and barren, scarce producing any thing but timber for shipping, millet seed, and fruit, of which last cyder is made in plenty; but its greatest treasure lies in its inexhaustible mines of iron, which is reckoned the best in the world, and is transported thence into all parts. Here are whole towns where all sorts of iron-works are carried on, especially swords and fire-arms, very elegant, and in great quantities. *Bilbao*, *Bilbao* in *Biscay-Propre*, though no city, is now the capital of *Biscay* and *St. Se-* being a place of great trade, by reason of its good port, *small*.

small vessels coming up to the mole, and others of greater bulk lying farther out. The greatest export here is of the fine wool brought mostly from *Old Castille*, and of exquisite iron chiefly in bars. The town stands six miles distant from the sea, on the river *Ibaichaval*. *St. Sebastian*, in the district of *Guipuscoa*, is another noted port on the *Bay of Biscay*, nine miles from *Fuentarabia*, and almost inclosed with rivers, which fall into the sea in its neighbourhood, particularly that which they call the *Branco*. The mole will receive 200 ships.

Province
of Na-
varre.

THE kingdom of *Navarre* is divided from *France* on the north by the *Pyrenees*, which also cut it into two parts, distinguished into *Upper* and *Lower*; the former, much the larger, is on the *Spanish* side, and belongs to that crown; the other beyond these mountains, is annexed to the crown of *France*. *Spanish Navarre* borders upon *Biscay* and *Old Castille* on the west, on *Castille* and *Aragon* on the south, and eastward upon *Aragon*. Its length is about ninety miles from north to south, and about eighty in breadth from east to west. It is divided into the five districts of *Pampelona*, *Tudela*, *Estela*, *Olite*, and *Sanguessa*, which are paried by prodigious high mountains, yet yield good corn, and other grain, wine, oil, honey, fruits, and herbs, and afford plenty of food and pasture for their cattle, besides an infinite number of fowl both wild and tame. These mountains produce metals and minerals, and had formerly several rich mines of gold and silver, though now either exhausted or neglected. Here are likewise abundance of fine springs, hot baths, and other medicinal waters.

Province
of Arra-
gon.

THE kingdom of *Aragon* is bounded on the north by the *Pyrenees*, which divide it from *France*; on the west it has *Navarre*, and *New* and *Old-Castille*; on the south the kingdom of *Valentia*, and the principality of *Catalonia*. The whole length from north to south is 210 miles, and breadth between 100 and 120. The country is mountainous, but full of delightful and extraordinary fertile vales, which produce great plenty of wheat, wine, oil, saffron, and fruits of the most delicious kind. It also breeds great numbers of cattle, and abounds with all sorts of fowl both wild and tame. The mountains are said to have mines of gold, silver, and other metals, but little is made of any of them, except iron. Here are likewise very considerable rivers, and plenty of good fish: the most remarkable of the rivers is the *Turia*, which fertilizes a great part of the country, not by an overflow like that of the *Nile*, but by its slow and gentle course, which gives opportunity to the husbandmen and gardeners

deners' to cut chadnels from it to water their lands, in-
much, that we are told, their trees will bear fruits three, and
often four times a year; and not only in great plenty, but
in such variety, that they reckon no less than 400 sorts pro-
duced in this kingdom. Their orchards, gardens, and pas-
ture-grounds, are likewise much admired for their continual
verdure and fertility. In a word, *Aragón* is on all these ac-
counts, as well as for the extraordinary serenity of its air,
compared to *Egypt*. The *Mediterranean* helps very much to
enrich the country, both by foreign traffic, and the great
quantity of fish which is caught on those coasts.

SARAGOSSA, the metropolis of this kingdom, is an an-
cient and opulent city, seated almost in the heart of it, on Saragossa.
the bank of the *Ebro*, and in a fertile and delightful plain,
watered with three other rivers, the *Xalón*, *Gállego*, and
Guerva. It is of an oblong form, is rich and populous, and
carries on a great commerce, with a considerable number of
trades and manufactures both within and without the walls.

CATALONIA is bounded on the north by the *Pyrenees*, Province
by which it is parted from the province of *Roussillon* in *France*. of Cata-
on the west by *Aragón*, and a small part of *Valencia*; from lonia.
the first of these it is separated by the rivers *Nagüera* and
Alataruna, and a ridge of hills, and from the latter by the
river *Genia*. On the south and east it is washed by the *Me-*
diterranean, and has many convenient sea-ports along those
shores. The inland is a mixture of plains and mountains;
that part next to *France* is the most mountainous, but fur-
ther in, it abounds with delightful and spacious plains. The
climate which reaches from 41 to 43 degrees of north lati-
tude, and from one degree to 30. 20. east longitude, is
therefore neither so hot as *Andalusia*, nor so cold as *Asturia*
and the north part of *Spain*, being moreover sheltered on the
north by the *Pyrenees*, and on the east by the sea. This
temperature, joined to the many streams and rivers with
which the country abounds, makes it exceeding fertile and
delightful. Its products are much the same with those of
Aragón, besides quarries of marble, alabaster, and jasper-
stone, coral taken out of the sea, salt, and many other com-
modities.

BARCELONA is the capital Province, and is in-
ferior to few in *Europe* that are not courts of princes. It is Barcelo-
pleasantly seated on the *Mediterranean* coasts, a little below na.
the gulph of *Lyons*, and opens to the sea in a beautiful semi-
circle, which, together with its eminence and castle, and the
beauty of its churches and other sumptuous edifices, affords a
most delightful prospect to the ships that sail by or to it, es-
pecially

Other
places of
note.

pecially as it stands between two considerable rivers, the *Llobregat* and *Bages*, which pay their tribute to that sea on each side of it. The coast it stands upon is a good safe road, and the port, though rather too small, has rendered it a place of great trade, especially when *Indian* commodities were brought from *Turkey* and *Egypt* through the *Mediterranean*. Its situation is on a spacious plain, at the foot of the mountain *Monjuque*; and its territory is stored with all necessaries for sustenance and delight. This province has also some other towns and cities of considerable note, as *Tartagona*, commodiously situate near the coast of the *Mediterranean*, with a safe harbour for small ships; *Tortosa*, situate on the bank of the *Ebro*, not far from the sea, with a good bay formed by that river; *Vicque*, pleasantly situated, thirty-six miles north from *Barcelona*, in a kind of peninsula, made by the rivers *Ter* and *Noguerra*, which almost encompass it; and *Cardona*, sixty miles distant from *Barcelona*, and remarkable for a mountain of salt near it, which yields an annual revenue of 30,000 pieces of eight. This salt is transparent, and, when powdered, is exceeding white. All these places enjoy a very fertile and delightful territory.

Province
Valen-
tia.

THE kingdom of *Valentia* lies on the east, along the *Mediterranean*, facing the islands of *Majorca* and *Ivica*, except only a small part towards *Catalonia*, which is parted from it by the river *Gonia*; on the north it has the kingdom of *Arango* on the west *Novo Cyfille* and the small tract of it which runs towards the south, bordering also upon the kingdom of *Murcia*. The greatest length of *Valentia* is about 210 miles, and its greatest breadth about 48. The whole kingdom is so delightful as to be compared to an earthly paradise, being universally allowed to be the most charming part of *Spain*, and by many even of all the world. The surprising excellence of its soil and climate is the cause that the whole country is filled with noblemen's and gentlemen's seats; and where the land is not employed for the purposes of pleasure, it produces immense plenty of corn, wine, oil, honey, flax, and all kind of herbage; also flowers and fruit in great variety, the trees being always covered with verdure and blossoms. To all which we may add, that the sugar, rice, and silk it produces, one year with another, is reckoned to amount to three millions of pieces of eight. The mines of gold, silver, and other metals, besides great quantity and variety of precious stones, which here formerly amounted to an immense value, are now wholly neglected. Here is also abundance of allum, the best and finest white lime, and plenty of cochineal.

VALENTIA, the noble and ancient capital of this king-
dom, is seated on the shady banks of the river *Turio*, over
which it has five stately bridges, and stands about two miles
from the sea. It lies in 39 degrees 20 minutes of north la-
titude, and about 15 minutes east longitude. Its distance
from *Madrid*, the present metropolis of *Spain*, is about 180
miles south-east; from *Barcelona*, south-west, about the same
number; and south from *Saragossa* about 135. Its sea-port,
named *Grao*, which stands on the *Mediterranean*, about a
mile and a half from the city, furnishes it with every thing
either for conveniency or delight, the sea supplying it with
an extraordinary variety of fish, the neighbouring lake of *Al-
bufera*, or little sea, with great abundance of water fowl and
fresh water fish; and the fertile country about with the great-
est plenty of corn, wine, oil, fruits, herbs, and other provi-
sions. It is enriched by the number of quality and gentry
which live in it, by its great commerce, and the variety of
manufactures that are carried on, especially the woollen,
so that the cloth that is made here is reckoned the finest in
all *Spain*.

ALICANT is another famous city of this kingdom, and a
sea-port on the *Mediterranean*, distant from *Murcia*, towards
the north-east, forty-two miles, sixty south from *Valentia*, and
about 210 from *Madrid*. It is a place of great trade by
reason of its commodious harbour, and well known to the
English, for the delicate wines and delicious fruits which they
bring from thence.

THE kingdom of *New Castile* is bounded on the north by
Old Castile, from which it is every way divided by moun-
tains, which are only known by the names of the countries
they run through. On the east it is parted from *Estremadura*,
by another chain of them called *Guadalupe* and *La Serena*;
on the south from *Andalusia*, by those called *Sierra Morena*,
and by an imaginary line from *Murcia*; and on the west by the
river *Segura*, and the mountains of *Aranza* and *Requena* from
Valentia; and from *Aragon* by those of *Alava*, *Durango*, and
Malina. The length of this kingdom from south to north,
is about 180 miles, and pretty near the same in breadth,
where widest, but its figure is irregular in the latter. The
country being all inland, and surrounded with such high
mountains, which contract the sun's rays, as it were, into a
focus, and at the same time, suppress the free passage of the
cooling sea-breezes, its climate is consequently hotter in sum-
mer, and colder in winter, than those which lie along the sea-
coasts, under the same latitude. It is notwithstanding very
healthy, and its soil generally fertile.

Madrid.

MADRID is the capital of this kingdom, and at present of all *Spain*. It is situated on a chain of little hills, surrounded with high mountains, and is about seven miles in circumference, without walls or fortifications, but containing several grand streets and spacious squares. There are three royal palaces here, called the *Palace Royal*, the *Casa del Campo*, and the *Buen Retiro*. The other places of considerable note in *New Castille* are,

Toledo.

TOLEDO, built on a high, steep, and craggy rock, almost inaccessible on all sides, and made much more so by the course of the river *Tagus*, which encompasses it almost round, and over which it has two noble bridges. Here are a great number of merchants, tradesmen, and artificers, especially in the silk and woollen manufactures, which two branches alone are said to employ 10,000 hands. *Toledo* is about thirty-six miles distant from *Madrid*.

Talavera.

TALAVERA de la Reyna is delightfully seated on the river *Tagus*, thirty-six miles west from *Toledo*, and is much famed for its woollen manufacture of stuffs, and particularly for an extraordinary kind of fine earthen ware, that is made at it.

*Province
of Old
Castille*

THE kingdom of *Old Castille* was formerly part of the *Roman Tarracoenfis*, and borders all the way on the south to *New Castille*, from which it is divided by a ridge of mountains, which change their names according to the places of note they pass through, as *Motina*, *Sigüenza*, *Segovia*, &c. by that chain of them which is called *Sierra de Tablada*, and by those of *Pico* and *Banos*, from *Estramadura*, on the west; and by those of *Avila* and *Perina*, with the little rivers of *Garrion*, *Pisuerga*, and *Heban*, from *Leon* on the north-west. It is parted again on the north from *Aurias* and *Biscay* by another ridge of hills branching out from the *Pyrenees*; only in the center, between these two provinces, it has a narrow slip of land which reaches quite to the *Bay of Biscay*; lastly, on the east, the *Ebro* and mountains of *Doea*, for a considerable length, part it from *Navarre* and *Aragon*. The greatest extent of this province from north to south, reaches from 40. 10. to 43. 15. degrees of latitude, and from 1. 30. to 4. 10. degrees of west longitude; that is, about 180 miles, and near about the same number from east to west; that is, both ways taken where largest, for its figure is very irregular, and not near answerable in other parts. The climate here differs somewhat from that of *New Castille*, on account of the country being more mountainous, which makes the several parts vary, according to their situation, the vallies being excessive hot, and the upper grounds proportionably cold and bleak:

bleak: but upon the whole, the soil is generally good. Snow covers the tops of the mountains here all the summer, and it is carried away and sold in the towns, as is usual through all Spain, to cool their wine.

VILLADOLID, in this kingdom, stands on the bank of the river *Pisuerga*, on a pleasant rising ground, and yields a noble prospect by this its fine situation and grand edifices. It is both populous and opulent by means of the woollen manufacture, which is here the best and most considerable in all Spain.

THE kingdom of *Leon*, properly so called, is now bounded, ^{Province} by the *Asturian* mountains; on the east it has *Old Castille*, ^{of Leon.} from which it is divided by the mountains of *Pernia*, and the rivers *Carrío* and *Pisuerga*, as far as the *Ebro*, then by those of *Heban* and *Reganno*, till you come to the mountains *Bonilla de la Sierra*; on the south, the mountains of *Bannor*, and another ridge, divide it from *Estramadura*; and on the west, the rivers of *Agueda*, *Duero*, and a chain of mountains part it from *Portugal*, as does the same ridge of hills continued from *Gallicia*. The whole extent of *Leon* from north to south, is about 120 miles, and from east to west about ninety. The river *Duero* runs almost across the middle of it, leaving one half on the north, and the other on the south. As this kingdom lies in the same climate and latitude with that of *Old Castille*, to which it is contiguous, and is, like it, intermingled with ridges of high hills, capacious vallies, and champain plains, which occasion pretty near the same degrees of heat and cold, dry and moist; its soil and temperature differ very little from it. The natives are here also robust, hardy, laborious, brave, temperate, and lovers of learning. The mountains have some minerals, but chiefly quarries of excellent marble and veined alabaster, jasper stones, and some others of greater value, as turquoises, garnets, amethysts, and the like.

THE province of *Estramadura* is divided from *Portugal*, or ^{Province} from the *Portuguese Estramadura*, on the west, by the rivers of *Estramadura*, *Elya*, *Caya*, and some others of less note; on the north it joins to the kingdom of *Leon*, without any noted mountains or rivers to part them; on the east the mountains of *Banos*, *Pico*, and *Guadalupe*, divide it from *Old* and *New Castille*; and on the south, it is parted from *Andalusia* by the chain of hills called *Sierra Morena*. The rivers *Tajo* and *Guadiana*, running through it from east to west, divide it into three parts; the most northern is that which is beyond the *Tajo*; the next is between that and the *Guadiana*, and the last is that which is south of the *Guadiana*. The length of the whole

whole province from north to south, is 150 miles; and breadth from east to west about 120. The climate indeed is extremely hot and somewhat sultry, being mostly inland, and wanting those cooling gales which the hills and sea communicate to the adjacent provinces; but in all other respects, it may be justly reckoned the pleasantest and most fertile not only in all Spain, but perhaps in the world. For an evidence of which we need but instance in the celebrated plain called *La Vera de Plasencia*, of which it might suffice to say, that several of the ancients placed the *Elysian* fields in it, as knowing of no place more delicious and beautiful. This noble plain is about thirty-six miles in length, and ten in breadth, and so sweetly delightful, that it invites great numbers of nobility and gentry to spend the summer in it. It has thirteen small towns or villages, and about 5000 houses, all beautifully situated, and neat, and all the rest is either covered with the greatest variety of fruit trees which Europe affords, or beautifully variegated and disposed into olive-groves, vineyards, gardens, orchards, meadows and fields, watered with many pleasant springs and streams. Such is, in fine, the product of this valley, that of the territory of only four inconsiderable villages, out of the thirteen that are in it, the product is said to have amounted in one year, to 150 tons of oil, 550 of wine, 60,000 bushels of chestnuts, an incredible quantity of wheat and other grain; whilst other parts of it yielded not only the like, or even larger quantities in proportion, of the same produce, besides fruits, flax, &c. and likewise abundance of silk, wax, honey, saffron, besides pasture, and great numbers of cattle.

Province
of Andalusia.

THE province of *Andalusia* is divided, on the north, from *Estremadura* and *New-Castile*, by the *Sierra Morena* mountains; on the east, from *Portugal* by the river *Chanca*, and from *Algarve* by the *Guadiana*; on the south it has the ocean, the mouth of the *Streights*, and part of the *Mediterranean*; and along the south-east it has the kingdom of *Granada*. No province in Spain exceeds this in fertility and commerce, and the latter is owing to its maritime situation and convenient harbours. Its great quantity of wine and oil is so extraordinary, as to be almost beyond credit. Its cattle also are numberless. Fine oranges, citrons, raisins, almonds, pomegranates, and figs, are the natural growth of this province. To all these articles we may add its great plenty of fine salt and sugar, and an excellent breed of horses.

Seville.

SEVILLE, its capital, is situate on the river *Guadalquivir*, and in one of the most beautiful plains of Europe. Here is an *India* house for the regulation of their *West-India* trade,
a fine

a fine exchange and mint. Silk and silver stuffs are its most considerable manufactures, with those of soap and pottery ware. Without the city are salt-pits and quarries of marble. Along the river are many commodious keys, where ships of good burden may safely lie. *San Lucar de Barameda*, about forty-five miles below *Sevilla*, serves it as a port. It was much more considerable than at present, before the *Spanish West-India* fleets were allowed to set out from, and return to

CADIZ, which is next in rank to the royal cities. Its situation for commerce is very advantageous, the spaciousness of the harbour, seated upon the ocean so near the *Mediterranean*, drawing thither a concourse of ships and merchants, to purchase the product of *Spain*, and, not long since, of the *West-Indies*, which are now first brought to this place. There are in this province several other cities and towns of considerable note for trade and manufactures.

THE kingdom of *Granada* is divided on the north, from *Provinces* the province of *Andalusia*, by the mountains of *Cazorla*, *Sierra of Gra-Morena*, *Segura*, and some others; on the east, another chain nada. of mountains divides it from *Murcia*; on the south it is contiguous again to *Andalusia*, without any noted boundaries; and on the west it is bounded and washed by the *Mediterranean*. The whole length of it from east to west, is about 210 miles, but the greatest breadth exceeds not 72. This country, besides those immense quantities of corn, wine, oil, fruit, cattle, game, and fish, which it has in common with the finest provinces in *Spain*, can boast that its most craggy mountains are every where covered with vines, fruit-trees in the highest perfection, and what would to some appear incredible, if not attested by several undoubted eye-witnesses, that many of its bunches of grapes, like those of the *Promised Land*, are obliged to be carried on a pole between two men; and some of them, we are assured from persons of veracity, have weighed forty pounds. Sugar is likewise cultivated here in great plenty, and exceeds any in *Spain* for fineness; and silk is manufactured in such quantities and great variety, as to be sufficient to serve the whole kingdom, besides what is exported. Those fields, hills, and other places which are reckoned the most barren, are covered with thyme, marjoram, lavender, and all other sorts of aromatic herbs and odoriferous shrubs; so that if we consider this province either with respect to its surprising fertility and plenty of all things for food and delight, or to the admirable prospect of its hills and dales, or the fragrantcy of its fruits and herbs, no country seems to approach nearer to the idea we have of an earthly paradise than this. If we add to all these, its excellent maritime situation, number of commodious

modious harbours and ports, and its vast exports and imports, the number and opulence of its cities, of which *Malaga* is the chief, we shall easily own that this little kingdom is one of the noblest and finest in all *Spain*. Near *Antequera*, in this province, is a famed salt-pit, three miles in length and near two in breadth, which supplies the whole territory with salt. About eight or nine miles from it is a spring, that dissolves the stone and brings it away by urine.

Province
of Murcia.

THE kingdom of *Murcia* borders on the north upon *New Castille*, on the west it is parted from *Granada* and *Andalusia* by the mountains of *Segura*, and some others, which stretch themselves into the sea, and partly by the kingdom of *Valentia*. Its greatest length, from north-west to south-east, is about 100 miles, and its greatest breadth, from north-east to south-west, about 70. Its climate is somewhat of the hottest; but the soil, though mountainous, is exceeding fertile, never failing but through extreme drough. But what makes its chief wealth is the great quantity of silk which is here made and exported, and employs the greatest number of hands. Round about the spacious and delightful plain, in which its capital of the same name is situate, are planted an infinite number of mulberry trees, with the leaves of which the inhabitants feed as many worms as generally make every year 210,000 lb. weight of silk.

Carthage.

CARTHAGENA, in this province, is seated on the side of a hill, on the *Mediterranean* coast, on the mouth of the river *Guadalatin*, and is a commodious, as well as one of the most noted sea-ports in *Spain*. The harbour is well sheltered from storms by a small island called *Escombrada*. There is good plenty of fresh water on the shore, and the air here is so temperate in summer, and so mild in winter, that the trees are every where covered with leaves, blossoms, and fruit. Besides these productions of the earth on the surface, its bowels yield amethysts, garnets, azates, and other such precious stones.

History of
Spain.

WE shall now pass from the description of *Spain* to its history, and in this respect, it will not be improper to observe, that the *Roman* empire in this country lasted something more than 400 years after the commencement of the christian æra, and that the *Spanish* history is connected with the *Roman* for near 600, till that empire was utterly extinct. The *Goths* entered about the year 400. *Himeres*, with the *Suevi* and *Alans*, conquered *Galicia*, about the year 308. These *Suevi*, who gave name to *Galicia*, subdued *Portugal* about the year 464. *Requina*, the son of *Himeric*, conquered *Biscay*, *Andalusia*, and took *Saragossa* and *Tarragona* in 488. *Recaredo* was king of *Spain* in 587, and called a Cortes, at which prelates,

as well as secular lords, assisted, and granted aids to the crown. After him came *Witteric*, to whom succeeded *Gundemar*, in 610. *Sisenando* was chosen king in 631, and called a Cortes at *Tol-do*. The *Moors* entered *Spain* about the year 680, consequently the *Gothic* government did not last 300 years. *Tarif Abenzarca* came in 713.

THE three principal northern nations which came here were the *Vandals*, from whom the province of *Andalusia* received its name; the *Vandals* went afterwards into *Africa*; the *Suevi*, who remained long in *Gallicia*; and the *Goths*, who conquered the whole country, and held it upwards of 200 years. The *Goths* possessed the whole continent of *Spain*, *Mauritania* in *Africa*, and *Gallia Gothica*, or that part of *France* which is now corruptly called *Languedoc*; but in their turn they gave place to the *Moors* or *Arabs*, whose dominion ceased when *Pelayo* was established in his throne. The *Moors* conquered all *Spain*, except those mountainous parts, whither some bodies of resolute Christians fled for refuge. These by degrees planned and concerted measures to shake off the *Arabic* yoke. The first stand against them was made by the mountaineers of *Asturias*, who elected king the infant don *Pelayo*, swearing the nobles over a shield, and crying out, *real! real!* This *Pelayo* was a *Gothic* prince by birth, so that in some measure he restored again the *Gothic* monarchy. He recovered *Gijon* and *Leon*; and his son got possession of part of *Portugal*, and of all *Gallicia*. From this recovery of *Leon* came the race of the kings of *Oviedo* and *Leon*. The boldness and success of these Christians alarming the *Arabs*, they attacked them in their different strongholds, in order to cut off their communications one with another. But this produced a very different effect from what they expected. The Christians, to repel the danger that threatened them on every side at the same time, chose different heads in different places, who being separate one from the other in their governments, defended their subjects independently of one another. This necessary resolution gave rise to the different kingdoms in *Spain*. Such was their undoubted origin, though it is impossible to say at what exact period each kingdom rose, as there are no ancient monuments remaining sufficient to prove that point.

- THE first kingdom or monarchy that arose, after the *Moorish* invasion, was that, as we have said, of don *Pelayo* in the *Asturias*, an elective monarchy; and in proportion as the *Asturian* princes dislodged the *Saracens* of those lands and territories that lay nearest to them, they changed the style of their titles; being first called kings of *Asturias*, then of *Ovi-*

edo, and lastly of *Leon* and *Galicia*, until they were incorporated with the kings of *Castille*, by the marriage of queen donna *Sancha Isabella*, sister of king don *Bermudo III.* its last prince, both of them descendants of king don *Alonzo V.* who married the daughter of *Ferdinand the Great*, to whom some give the title of emperor, and who was first king of *Castille*.

OF this long period, in which the Christian princes gained such glorious successes, and singular victories over the infidels, there are some short and obscure accounts in the little chronicles of don *Alonzo III.* king of *Leon*, surnamed *the Great*, and of *Alvæda*, *Sampiro*, and don *Pelayo*.

AT the same time with these *Asturian* princes, arose many nobles, who signed their deeds and instruments, with the titles of counts or princes, and, among others, those of *Castille*, which state arrived at sovereignty in the time of the great count *Fernan Gonzales*, by his heroic valour, glorious triumphs, and extended power. The most distinguished prince of this house was don *Sancho Garcia*, whose violent death was the cause why this house united itself to the crown of *Aragon* and *Navarre*, by the marriage of the princess donna *Sancha* his sister, with the king don *Sancho Mayor*, whose second son don *Fernando* raised *Castille* into a kingdom. *Castille* afterwards became an hereditary crown in his lineage, in preference to all the other kingdoms, though inferior in origin to *Aragon* and *Navarre*.

THE series and chronology of the several counts is much contested between the *Spanish* writers, *Arredondo*, *Arcuals*, *Sandoval*, and others: a dispute not worth our entering into, since it is certain, that from the bravery, success, and power with which don *Fernando* extended his dominion, so as to be stiled first king of *Castille*, his kingdom became so famous, that all the *Moorish* princes acknowledged him for their sovereign. His son was don *Alonzo VI.* his grand-daughter was the queen donna *Urraca*, with whom ended the barony of *Navarre*; the crown of *Castille* falling back again into the house of the counts of *Burgundy* (who came from the kings of *Italy*) by her marriage with the count don *Raymund*, her first husband; from which match came their son the great emperor don *Alonzo VII.*

THIS prince left his estates divided between his two sons: to don *Sancho*, the eldest, whose great virtues and untimely death gained him the name of the *Regretted*, he left the kingdom of *Castille*, and part of *Leon*: and to don *Ferdinand*, the second, the rest of *Leon*, *Gallicia*, and *Asturias*. He took upon himself the title of king of *Spain*, pretending that the primogeniture

genitute of the *Goths*, which was re-established in *Pelayo*, had centered in himself.

Don Sancho dying, was succeeded by *don Alonzo the Noble*, one of the greatest princes of his time. It was he who gained the famous battle in the plains of *Tolosa* over the *Moors*, destroying, as some *Spanish* historians say, 200,000 of them at one time; but this number must be exaggerated. He dying without issue-male, the two kingdoms of *Castile* and *Toledo* went to *donna Berenguela*, his eldest daughter.

ALTHOUGH the royal barony of *Burgundy* ended in the queen *donna Berenguela*, it returned and united with the kingdom of *Leon*, *Gallicia*, and *Asturias*, by the marriage of king *don Alonzo*, her uncle (who succeeded in those kingdoms to king *don Fernando*, brother to king *don Alonzo the Noble*, her grandfather) from which match came the king *San Fernando*, from whom descended, without interruption, the kings of *Castile* and *Aragon*, until united in *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*. That king was reputed the wisest prince of his time, and his queen was really the wisest of her sex in that age. It was his policy that made the kings of *Spain* great; it was her virtue that made the crown so.

THERE were three things that fell out under their reigns, which intirely altered the face of affairs in *Spain*, and thereby changed the system of *Europe*. The first was the junction of the crowns of *Castile* and *Leon*, with the dominions that belonged to each of them; and this was brought about by their marriage. The second was the total expulsion of the *Moors*, which was effected by the conquest of *Granada*, the last of those principalities which they had erected in that country; and which the union of their dominions put it in the power of these princes to accomplish. The third was the discovery of the New World, and the annexing of it, when discovered, to their dominions; by which *Spain* may be said to commence her maritime power. Thus, in the compass of about thirty years, *Spain* became beyond all comparison the greatest power in *Europe*, which before was very inconsiderable. After their death, the crown devolved to the august house of *Austria*, by the marriage of the queen *donna Juana*, their eldest daughter, to the archduke *don Philip I.* from which great union sprung the emperor *Charles V.* He was at once emperor of *Germany*, king of *Spain* and *Naples*, master of a great part of *Italy*, and lord of the whole *Low-countries*, as well those that now form the republic of the *United Provinces*, as those which were stiled the *Spanish Netherlands*, and now belong mostly to the empress-queen of *Hungary*.

The Conclusion of

HIS son *Philip II.* who, if ambitious princes are to be stiled so, was the wisest king, at least the greatest politician that *Europe* ever saw, and in that quality bade the fairest for universal monarchy; in his pretensions to which, he was rather defeated by providence, than either by the power or prudence of those that opposed him; and yet he had to deal with some of the greatest princes that ever ruled in this part of the world. The mighty power which he established dwindled away and sunk to nothing under his successors, *Philip III.* *Philip IV.* and *Charles II.* so that at last they were protected in the possession of their dominions, by those very powers that had been raised upon their ruin. A strange revolution this! but worthy of attention; because it shews us how the most potent governments are enfeebled and brought to decay by all-grasping princes; and how providence counteracts human policy, so as to draw events directly contrary to their intentions, from the plans laid down and executed by the ablest statesmen, to gratify the desires of the most ambitious princes.

As *Charles II.* of *Spain* had no issue, *England*, *France*, and *Holland*, formed, in 1699, the famous treaty of partition, for dividing the dominions of the crown of *Spain*, upon his death. Each party had, or at least pretended to have, the common view, in this treaty, of preventing such a vast accession of power from passing, either into the house of *Austria*, or that of *Bourbon*, already formidable enough of themselves. This step very sensibly affected the court of *Spain*: *Charles II.* was so much offended at it, that, on his death-bed, he signed a will, by which he bequeathed all his dominions to *Philip* duke of *Anjou*, grandson of *Lewis XIV.* Though that prince had before entered into the partition-treaty, yet, finding the succession thus left to his family, he paid no regard to any former engagements or renunciations; but on the eighteenth of *February*, declared his grandson *Philip*, king of *Spain*, who arrived at *Madrid* on the fourteenth of *April* 1701. This proceeding immediately alarmed the maritime powers and the emperor; the former were apprehensive of *Spanish America's* falling into the hands of the *French*, and the latter, besides the injury he imagined done to his own family, dreaded the too great influence of the power of the house of *Bourbon*. A war ensued; and *Charles*, archduke of *Austria*, was soon after set up, in opposition to *Philip V.* His claim was vigorously supported by the maritime powers, and at first favoured by many of the grandees of *Spain*. In the third year of this war, the king of *Portugal* and the duke of *Savoy* joined likewise in the

the alliance against *Philip*; who, in the following campaigns, was driven from his capital, by the success of the allied forces, and almost obliged to abandon *Spain*. In the end, however, his party prevailed, and, at the peace of *Utrecht* in 1713, he was acknowledged as king of *Spain* by all the confederates leagued against him, except the emperor. The allies then contented themselves with such limitations and restrictions, as might keep the two monarchs of *France* and *Spain* disunited. A treaty of partition may, indeed, be said to have taken place at last; for *Philip*, by the articles of the peace, was only left in possession of *Spain*, its *American* colonies and settlements in the *East Indies*; but the *Spanish* dominions in *Italy*, and the islands of *Sicily* and *Sardinia*, were dismembered from that monarchy, which had also lost the island of *Minorca* and the fortress of *Gibraltar*, both of which places were ceded to *Great Britain*. The duke of *Savoy* was put in possession of the island of *Sicily*, with the title of king; and the arch-duke *Charles*, who two years before had been elected emperor of *Germany*, held *Milan*, *Naples*, and *Sardinia*, and still kept up his claim to the whole *Spanish* monarchy.

THOUGH *Philip*, by the peace concluded at *Utrecht*, was left, by the allies, possessor of the greatest and most important part of the *Spanish* dominions, yet some obstinate enemies still remained to be reduced, before he could be said to have fixed the *Spanish* crown securely upon his head. The inhabitants of *Catalonia* refused to acknowledge him, and finding themselves abandoned by their allies, solicited the assistance of the grand signior, in hopes of establishing themselves into an independent republic. Their blind obstinacy, however, served only to heighten the miseries and calamities to which they had been greatly exposed during the whole course of the war. After a most bloody and stubborn defence, they were intirely reduced by the king's troops, when they were deprived of their ancient privileges, and their country was annexed to the crown of *Castille*, as a conquered province.

THE reduction of *Catalonia* restored tranquillity to *Spain*, which had been harrassed for twelve years by a most cruel and bloody war. *Philip*, by that conquest, finding himself quietly seated upon the throne, began to turn his thoughts to the reunion of the *Italian* dominions, which he had seen wrested from him with the utmost regret. With a view to this re-union, his first wife being dead, he married *Elizabeth Farnese*, heiress of *Parma*, *Placentia*, and *Tuscany*; which alliance afterwards proved a source of new dissensions and wars among the princes of *Europe*; and, to this day, leaves an open field for bloody contests.

THE new queen brought her father's minister into power, who was afterwards so well known by the title of cardinal *Alberoni*. This man, who must be allowed a great genius, projected the revival of the *Spanish* power, and the recovery of her *Italian* dominions, at a time when the former was thought very difficult, and the latter appeared totally impracticable. It is true, that he did not absolutely succeed in this scheme; but it is not less true, that he came much nearer it than any body could have imagined; for he put the affairs of *Spain* into such order, that she had fleets and armies capable of alarming her neighbours, with which he actually recovered *Sardinia*, and would have recovered *Sicily*, if the *British* naval power had not interposed, and given such a blow at *Messina* to his catholic majesty's maritime forces, as ruined all his schemes at once; and, what was still more, obliged his master to part with him, and to accede to the quadruple alliance, which was set on foot to supply the defects of the treaty of *Utrecht*, and to fix the tranquillity of *Europe* upon a more stable basis.

SOME time after, *Philip*, about the beginning of the year 1724, astonished all *Europe*, by publicly abdicating his crown in favour of his eldest son don *Lewis*, prince of *Asturias*, who was then in the seventeenth year of his age. *Philip* himself, though he had not reached his fortieth year, had long been sick of regal grandeur. From a weakness of body and mind, the least application to business had for some years given him a disgust; his mind was continually filled with religious scruples, which rendered him timorous and indecisive in every thing; and he falsely imagined that a scepter was incompatible with a life of integrity.

THE *Spaniards* expressed great joy upon the accession of *Lewis I.* who was endeared to them, not only by being born among them, but by his generosity, affability, and many other virtues. The public joy, however, was soon turned into mourning, by the unexpected death of the king, who died of the small-pox, universally regretted, in the eighth month of his reign.

UPON the death of *Lewis*, *Philip* being persuaded to resume the reins of government, began to meditate new and strange designs, or rather such as were infused into his mind by the queen and his ministers. It is generally believed, and not without good grounds, that cardinal *Alberoni*, who was then at *Rome*, contrived that astonishing scene which astonished all *Europe*; at least it is certain, that it was managed and transacted by one of his creatures, a man born to make a figure in unquiet times. This was the famous *Riperda*, who
nego-

negotiated the treaty of *Vienna*, by which the emperor *Charles VI.* and king *Philip*, in whose quarrel such streams of blood had been shed, and such immense treasures expended, run into a close alliance for the mutual support of each other's interest, against those very powers which had sacrificed so much for the aggrandizement of both. The true motives to this singular measure are by many held to remain still secret; but it seems to be pretty evident, that the views of the emperor were immediate, and those of *Spain* more at a distance. The former thought, that by this means he should establish his *Ostend* company, by which he hoped to revive the trade of the *Low-Countries*; though at the expence of his old friends the *Dutch*; the latter consented to the aggrandizing of the Imperial power, from the flattering expectation that don *Carlos*, by marrying the eldest archduchess, at present empress and queen of *Hungary*, would become the successor to that branch of the house of *Austria*; as himself had been of the other, by which he seemed to renounce his engagements with *France*.

THIS strange turn was more extraordinary, considering the time in which it happened, when both *France* and the maritime powers were labouring to bring about, in a rational and effectual manner, such an accommodation as these monarchs hastily, and, in a great measure, inconsiderately clapped up, with views only to their private advantage. To balance this *Vienna* alliance, *France*, the maritime powers, and *Prussia*, entered into the famous treaty of *Hanover*, in order to provide for their own interests, which they thought could never be safe, while this unnatural conjunction subsisted.

THE emperor and the Catholic king, or rather his queen (for she was at the bottom of all this) seemed determined to persist in the execution of schemes from whence they expected to derive such mighty advantages; but the *Hanover* allies took their measures so effectually, that they were obliged, after some fruitless attempts, to submit to the old method of determining all differences by a negotiation, which produced the congress of *Soissons*.

THIS congress was opened the 14th of *June*, 1728, but to very little purpose, except that it served to shew the ascendancy which the *French* minister, cardinal *Fleury*, had gained by an appearance of probity, and an exterior display of equity and moderation; which demonstrates, that universal monarchy might be attained by any powerful prince, who really possesses those virtues. But this situation growing tiresome to the *British* nation, their ministers entered

into a secret negotiation with the crown of *Spain*, ending in the famous treaty of *Seville*; which it was expected would have determined all differences, and put a period to the labours of the ministers on both sides. But this was so far from answering those sanguine expectations, that the two next years were taken up in contriving expedients for carrying what was stipulated by that treaty into execution.

FOR the emperor's security it was before settled, that *Swiss*, and not *Spanish* troops, should be sent into *Italy*, to maintain don *Carlos* in the countries yielded to him by these several treaties. But the treaty of *Seville* altered this method, and provided, that *Spanish* troops should be substituted instead of *Swiss*. To which the emperor, as it might be reasonably expected, refused his consent in the most positive and direct terms. It was to get over this difficulty with him, that new negotiations were necessary, and, at length, the thing was brought about. The infant, don *Carlos*, was sent to *Italy* with *Spanish* troops, and received in quality of heir-apparent by the grand duke of *Tuscany*, which, it was hoped, would have contributed much, not only to the pacifying these troubles, but securing the peace of *Europe*, for the present age at least. But, as the ablest politicians are very liable to mistake, this last step proved the cause of a war. The infant don *Carlos* arrived in *Italy* in 1731, and, being in possession of all the dominions to which his expectative right had created so many disputes, his mother formed new schemes for enlarging his power, and for enabling him to assume and maintain the regal dignity. In order to this, she set on foot intrigues in *France*, to engage even the pacific cardinal in a measure directly repugnant to his system; and she endeavoured to engage the king of *Sardinia* to facilitate this design, by the promises of the duchy of *Milan*. His majesty had some reasons to wish well to the *Spanish* power, because of his being next in the intail of that monarchy; and, he had stronger reasons to dislike the measures of the Imperial court, which, in respect to him, were not altogether so just, and by no means so grateful or decent as they ought to have been.

THESE were the motives to a new confederacy, which, upon the death of the king of *Poland*, in 1733, broke out into a war in *Italy*; and in the year following, don *Carlos*, or rather the *Spanish* general, *Montemar*, conquered the kingdom of *Naples*, where he fought one decisive battle at *Bitonto*, of which, to perpetuate the memory of his victory, he was made duke. As for the island of *Sicily*, the inhabitants,

ants, though not very remarkable for their loyalty or steadiness, had long shewn an affection for the *Spanish* government, which put don *Carlos* in possession of that country without a stroke. The emperor, though he had no assistance from his allies, made a tolerable defence in *Italy*; and the circumstances of things inclining the court of *France* to a peace, while it was in her power to be well paid for it, *Spain* was forced to submit, and by this means public quiet was restored in 1735. By this peace, don *Carlos* remained king of the *Two Sicilies*, and thereby erected a third monarchy in the house of *Bourbon*; but then he relinquished his maternal succession, which was, (considering the different conditions of the countries) perhaps a full equivalent for it. His *Sardinian* majesty, who had hazarded much, and whose dominions had suffered excessively by the war, gained very little, if we except his gaining such an experimental knowledge of the good faith of the house of *Bourbon*, as must scarce have allowed him to trust it again. *France*, who pretended to get nothing, got all; for she had *Lorrain* added to her dominions, without any colour of right, except the most inglorious abandoning of king *Stanislaus*, chosen a second time king of *Poland*, could be so called. This treaty was concluded at *Vienna*, with which, except *France*, none of the contracting powers either were, or had any reason to be satisfied. After this, king *Philip* might well be supposed to have nothing more in view, than to spend the remainder of his days in peace; and, indeed, this, very probably, might be all the view he had; but, for his queen, her views were without end. She had made her eldest son a king, her third a cardinal, and archbishop of *Toledo*, almost in his cradle; and, after all this, *Europe* must be once more embroiled, rather than her second son, don *Philip*, should miss being made an independent prince. To influence *France* in his favour, she had married him to a *French* princess; and to bring the king of *Sardinia* into her scheme, she promised him any thing; but to no effect. She endeavoured likewise to cajole the court of *Great Britain*, but to no purpose. She then caused the king to turn a deaf ear to the complaints that were continually made of depredations committed in the *West-Indies*, which produced at last a war between the two nations, extremely prejudicial to their mutual interests, and not less to her own, had she considered them in a true light; but ambition is usually blind, and the desire of acquiring conceals the power of discovering the means of acquisition.

UNDER the misfortunes of this war, and worn out with age and infirmities, *Philip V.* departed this life on the 14th of July, 1746, in the 63d year of his age, and was succeeded by the only surviving son of his first marriage, don *Ferdinand*. By his second queen, *Elizabeth of Farnese*, who is still living, *Philip* left three sons, don *Carlos*, then king of the *Two Sicilies*; don *Philip*, at present duke of *Parma* and *Placentia*; and don *Lewis*, who has not long since obtained leave to quit the church. Three daughters by the same queen likewise survived him, *Maria-Anna-Victoria*, at present queen of *Portugal*; *Maria-Theresa*, married the year before to the dauphin, and *Maria-Antonietta*. *Maria-Theresa* died in child-bed; a few days after her father.

FERDINAND VI. was about thirty-three years of age, when he ascended the throne. He began his reign with several acts of popularity, and among others, he assigned two days in the week to receive in person the petitions and remonstrances of his subjects. It was generally believed upon his accession, that things would have taken intirely a new turn in the court of *Spain*, and his Catholic majesty, or at least his ministers, took some pains to keep up this opinion, from whence they reaped very considerable advantages. The war, however, was carried on with vigour, because, as the new king published in his manifestoes, it was very earnestly recommended to him by his father; and, at the same time it was given out, that his Catholic majesty looked upon it as a point of policy, as well as of duty, to procure his brother an establishment in *Italy*; so that it was very quickly discerned that a peace was not to be had without it.

IN the negotiations that were carried on for peace, the court of *Madrid* relied implicitly upon that of *Verfailles*. The marquis *de Soto Major* acted as the *Spanish* plenipotentiary at *Aix-la-Chapelle*, where the seventh article, regarding the cessions made to the infant don *Philip*, was indeed the most important, and by much the most disputed in the whole treaty; and though it was not adjusted intirely to the satisfaction of the *Spanish* court, which pressed for a general settlement of the duchies of *Parma*, *Placentia*, and *Guasfalla*, upon the royal infant, and his issue, yet the terms were as good as could be reasonably expected, being confirmed by the most authentic acts of the empress-queen and the king of *Sardinia*. Honorable provisions were besides made for the allies of *Spain*, the duke of *Modena*, and the republic of *Genoa*. The disputed points between the *British* and *Spanish* commissaries were at length finally settled by a treaty

Treaty concluded at *Madrid*, on the 5th of *October*, 1750. By this treaty, the king of *Great-Britain* gave up his claim to the four remaining years of the *Assiento*-contract, and to all debts the king of *Spain* owed to the *English* company on that account, for an equivalent of 100,000 l. sterling. His Catholic majesty engaged to require from *British* subjects trading in his ports, no higher duties than they paid in the time of *Charles II.* of *Spain*, and to allow the same subjects to take salt on the island of *Tortuga*. All former treaties were confirmed, and the two princes promised to abolish all innovations that appeared to have been introduced into the reciprocal commerce of both nations. These innovations, however, not being specified, it was the same thing as if no mention had been made of them at all; and thus the most material differences being suffered to remain undecided, most unhappily gave rise to another war.

THE remaining years of *Ferdinand's* reign, after the signing of the treaty of *Madrid*, were very barren of events. The *English* court were jealous of his attempts to introduce the woollen manufacture in *Spain*, and reclaimed their workmen in that branch who had passed over thither. New disputes likewise arose between them, on account of the *English* trafficking with the *Indians* of the *Meskito*-shore, who had never submitted to *Spain*, and claimed to act as a free nation. *Ferdinand*, at the same time, had the mortification to find it impossible to introduce a spirit of industry among his subjects, the favours and encouragements of the court being like rain falling upon a sandy desert, where there was not a seed or plant to be enlivened by it.

IN the year 1756, a war breaking out between *Great Britain*, and *France*, *Ferdinand* declared, on that occasion, that he would adhere to the strictest neutrality; but he was far from observing the neutrality he professed, and partially favoured *France* in a great number of instances. His queen, the infanta *Mary-Magdalena* of *Portugal*, dying about the end of the year 1758, he was so affected with grief, that he intirely abandoned himself to gloom and melancholy; and neglecting both exercise and food, threw himself into a dangerous distemper, which, after preying upon him for several months, put a period to his life the year following, on the 10th of *August*.

As *Ferdinand* left no issue, he was succeeded by his brother don *Carlos*, king of the *Two Sicilies*, who resigned that kingdom, and disjoined it from the monarchy of *Spain* by a solemn deed, in favour of his third son, don *Ferdinand*; setting aside his eldest son on account of his weakness of mind,

mind, or idiocy, and reserving his second son for the succession of *Spain*. Don Carlos, or Charles III. arrived in *Spain* in the month of *November*, and soon after entered *Madrid* in great pomp and ceremony. The transactions of the present reign, those particularly relating to *Great Britain*, are recent in every one's memory; so that, it need only be observed, that whoever will peruse the letters laid before our parliament, relating to *Spain*, will plainly perceive the candour of the court of *Great Britain*, and the ability of her ministers; and that the *Spaniards* artfully, and with the greatest injustice, sought a rupture, for which they since paid very dear, by their losses at the *Havanna*; and by being obliged to desist from their pretensions to a fishery at *Newfoundland*, and likewise to cede to us all *Florida*, and to allow us to cut logwood in the bay of *Campeachy*.

If *Spain* had been absolutely detached from, and no way dependent upon *France*, with which she seems now rivetted more than ever by the *Bourbon* family-compact, her power would not have been the object of envy to the rest of *Europe*; and the establishment of the younger princes of her family in *Italy* might have been promoted, instead of being so vigorously opposed by certain potentates, who do not act either from ambition or caprice, but are influenced purely by motives of self-preservation, and a just regard for the maintenance of that commerce, which is, and must be, the basis of their power.

THE face of affairs in *Spain* has been greatly changed by the accession of the present family to the throne, who, without doubt, reaped vast advantages from the prodigious efforts made in their favour by the *French*, who yet made those efforts in favour of a younger branch of their royal family, and not as the natural, or even political allies of the *Spanish* nation; and it is certain, that they have been well paid for it since. But the condition to which *Spain* was reduced both in *Europe* and *America*, at the time of the death of *Charles II.* is a proof that there cannot be a greater misfortune to any people, than for their princes ever to entertain thoughts of universal monarchy, whether by actually subduing, or by maintaining a general influence over other nations; for the former method will infallibly leave them without men, as the latter must necessarily leave them without money.

Govern-
ment of
Spain.

THE government of *Spain* was, by its antient constitution, a limited monarchy, of hereditary succession, both in males and females. It was limited by its Cortes, or parliament, composed of representatives sent from the cities and

and towns, each of which, according to the old Gothic plan, sent procurators, or deputies, chosen by and out of the aldermen of their respective cities. The eldest member for *Burgos* always acted as speaker for the house; though *Toledo* was a rival to *Burgos* for that privilege. In order to adjust amicably their claims, the king used to say on opening the session of the Cortes, "I will speak for *Toledo*, which will do what I order: but let *Burgos* speak first;" because *Burgos* was anciently the capital of *Castille*. No act could pass in this parliament by majority of voices; it required the unanimous consent of all the members. All its acts were afterwards carried to the king to be confirmed. The members of this parliament were always assembled in a Cortes, by letters convocatory from the king and privy-council; and it was dissolved by a notification from the president of that council. But notwithstanding its dissolution, a committee of eight members still remained at court. This Cortes has rarely been called since the year 1647, when they gave *Philip IV.* the millones, or general excise. Their last meeting was in *May*, 1713, when they assembled to receive the renunciation of *Philip V.* to his rights upon the crown of *France*. This assembly was anciently the keeper of the revenues of the crown; but *Charles V.* and his ministers, first laid them aside, because they could get no money from them: and having obtained a grant of the sale of the bull of the crusado from the pope, they found they could get money without the help of a Cortes, and so took their leave of an assembly which few princes or ministers are fond of seeing, as their power was great, and they could call ministers so severely to an account.

THIS antient *Spanish* Cortes undoubtedly resembled our *British* parliament; for all the northern nations had originally a like form of government, which was a limited monarchy, and the legislative authority was to consist in the king and the estates, that no laws could be made, repealed, or suspended, nor any money raised upon the subject, but with their common consent. But now this Cortes is laid aside, *Spain* is no longer a mixt monarchy, but intirely absolute; the whole government being sole in the hands of the king and his ministers, and the councils, which are altogether at their devotion. This change from mixt to absolute monarchy was occasioned by the timidity of the commons of *Castille*, who having in their late struggle for expiring freedom, supported for some time a war against the crown, on a single defeat deserted the noble cause of liberty in the most abject manner. This war began in the year 1520, and

and lasted only two years; at which time *Charles V.* carried his point with a high hand, and told the Cortes, he would always have the supplies granted first, and then he would pass the bills they petitioned for, and not before, to which they timidly submitted, and voted him four millions of ducats, about 480,000 l. sterling, to be paid in three years.

THE writ anciently sent to each city, as a summons to parliament, convened all the prelates, masters of the military orders of knighthood, earls, rich men, nobles, and procurators of the cities and towns throughout the realm.

THE *Spanish* kings, according to the laws of *Spain*, are declared of age, or out of their minority, on the completion of their fourteenth year. In regulating the succession, after the death of *Charles II.* a medium was observed between the *Salic* law, and the usage of *Castille*; namely, that any male heir, however distant, should inherit before a female, who was to have no right but after the extinction of every male branch.

Laws of
Spain.

THE laws of *Spain* are compounded chiefly of the *Roman* civil law, the royal edicts, and probably, certain provincial customs, much in the nature of our common law in *England*. Much of the feudal and *Gothic* constitutions still remain, the *grandees* having still their vassals, and very extensive powers over their persons.

Council of
the inquisition.

BESIDES their tribunals and courts of justice, there is the council of the inquisition. or, as they call it, the supreme office of the Holy Tribunal, consisting of an inquisitor-general, five counsellors, whereof one must be a Dominican-friar, a procurator, two secretaries of the chamber, two secretaries of the council, an *Alguazil* mayor, a receiver, two reporters, two qualificators and consultants, and a legion of familiars, or spies. This tribunal is established at *Madrid*, but there are also other inferior ones in the great cities almost all over *Spain*. These are the great state-curbs that hold the people in such an implicit religious obedience, and preserve their boasted uniformity of the *Roman* Catholic faith. This court was erected in the thirteenth century, about the year 1251. Pope *Innocent IV.* authorized the Dominicans as perpetual inquisitors. *Clement IV.* confirmed these powers, and enlarged their privileges and tributaries in the year 1265. It was established in *Castille* under *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, and in *Portugal* by *John III.* in the year 1557. In 1483, *Ferdinand* obtained a bull to constitute the inquisition in *Aragon* and *Valencia* from *Sixtus IV.* who afterwards extended it all over the Catholic dominions. This holy office used anciently to acknowledge only the power

power of the pope above it, and bade defiance to all other controul. It raised itself far above the authority of their kings, who were often bridled, humbled, and even punished by it. It then was truly formidable, when supported by the united force of papal and royal authority. Their *Auto de Fé*, or solemn acts of faith, used to be exhibited commonly when their princes came of age, or at their accession. But now these sanguinary acts seem to be growing out of vogue in *Spain*. There has not been an *Auto de Fé* at *Madrid* for these thirteen or fourteen years; which was owing to this circumstance. A Jew and his wife, and a daughter of about thirteen years of age, being condemned to be burnt, while the father and mother were burning they set the child loose from its fetters, and the priests got round it with a view of converting it by the united force of their rhetoric, and the terror of immediately undergoing the same cruel death. The child, after seeming to listen awhile to their oratory, gave a sudden spring, and vaulted into the midst of the fire; giving a shining example of the force of filial piety and heroic fortitude, equal to that of the most resolute *Roman*, or the most unshaken martyr. The power of this tribunal is now declining very visibly, and seems hastening to its fall; for the present king of *Spain* has taken a bolder step to humble the inquisition, than any of the *Philip's* or *Charles's* who went before him. The inquisitor-general having thought proper in the year 1762, to prohibit a liturgy which the king had licensed, without consulting his majesty about it; the king, with a very proper spirit, put the inquisitor under an arrest, and immediately sent him, guarded with a file of grenadiers, into exile, in a convent at a great distance from *Madrid*. So determined and resolute a measure as this alarmed the whole body of the clergy; they moved heaven and earth to obtain the inquisitor's recall; but for some time their endeavours had no effect: the king was inflexible. The common people were taught by their priests to say, that his Catholic majesty was no good Catholic in his heart. At length, however, the king restored the inquisitor to his liberty; but, in such a manner, that the prelate had no reason to triumph; for his majesty, at the time of releasing him, published at *Madrid* an edict, as a curb upon the proceedings of the inquisition.

It is said, that our trade with *Old and New Spain* is now full one third less than it was about forty years ago; and that the balance and exchange between *Spain* and *Great Britain*, are every day more and more turning against the latter.

*State of
the com-
merce and
manufac-
The*

tures of
Spain, so
far as they
relate to
Great
Britain.

The causes of this decrease are indeed not at all difficult to be discovered or accounted for. Part of it is owing to the extreme avarice and extortion of our own merchants, who, not contented with moderate profits, have kept up the prices of their goods beyond their just proportion, and thereby opened a door for the *French* and *Dutch* to under-
sell us at the *Spanish* markets. Another reason is, that the price of labour in those two countries is considerably lower than our own, which enables them likewise to afford their goods to the *Spaniards* at a much cheaper rate than we can do. A third reason is, the alteration introduced during the *Spanish* war in queen *Anne's* time, when the *French* crept into that trade, and deprived us of a greater share of it than we shall probably be ever able to recover. A fourth reason may be, the progress which the *Spaniards* themselves have made in some branches of manufacture; for the encouragement which the kings of the house of *Bourbon* have given to manufactures and arts, has excited some few *Spaniards* to apply themselves to industry and trade. To second this view, the reigning family and the ministry also in *Spain* have endeavoured, by means of foreign workmen, to set on foot various manufactures; and the great attention they have given to that object, has not been altogether without effect. Notwithstanding these unfavourable circumstances, our traffic with *Spain* is still very considerable, and chiefly in the following articles. We export to that country large quantities of dried and salted fish, called by them *bacalas*; likewise broad cloths, and woollen stuffs of various kinds to a great amount: silk stuffs, cutlery ware, warlike and naval stores, particularly cables and anchors; also watches, wrought bras, and prince's metal, toys, mathematical instruments, cabinet-work, particularly of mahogany, wrought and unwrought tin, leather, lead, corn, dry and salted meat, cattle, butter, cheese, beer, hats, linen, vitriol, pepper, rice, and other products of our *American* colonies; and, if we attended to it, we might supply them with great quantities of timber from those colonies, as the *Spaniards*, though they have, in some parts, fine woods of excellent oak, yet, from their inexpertness in felling trees, and want of roads, are in a manner intirely deprived of the use of them. From *Spain* we receive the following articles: wines, oil, vinegar, fruits of various kinds, as olives, raisins of the sun, raisins dried with ashes, called by them *passas de lexia*; raisins fresh in *Almunegar*, a city on the coast of *Andalusia*, famous for this produce; chestnuts, almonds, figs, citrons, lemons, oranges, cacao-nuts, *Spanish* pepper,
per.

pomegranates, fine oil, indigo, cochineal, materials for dying, kali, or barilla, and sofa, for the making of soap and glass, chiefly from *Alicant*; quicksilver, some wrought silks, particularly from *Valentia*; and of late raw silk, balsam of *Peru*, vanillas, cake-chocolate of *Guajaca*, salsaparilla, salted sea-brizzle, saltpetre, salt from *Cadiz*, salt from *Port St. Mary's*, woollen counterpanes, and a remarkable fine sort of blankets from *Segovia*, iron from *Biscay*, sword blades, particularly from *Toledo*, gun and pistol barrels from *Guipuscoa* and *Barcelona*, vermillion, borax, hams, snuff from *Seville* and the *Havanna*, soap, formerly a considerable article, but as we now make it ourselves, only a trifle; several roots and drugs of the growth of *Spain* and *America*, employed in medicine. Logwood is not specified as an article of importation from *Spain*; for however it may have been such formerly, we may now hope to supply ourselves with it, as it appears by the sixteenth article of the preliminaries of the late peace, that we have at length happily obtained the free and unmolested liberty of cutting it in the *Bay of Honduras*, on condition of demolishing all our fortifications erected there, and in other parts of *Spanish America*. But it were to be wished, that the liberty of cutting it had also been extended in express terms to the *Bay of Campeachy*. Those who know the value of this article, will receive great pleasure on seeing it now well settled; for whatever our pretensions were, we certainly had but a very disputable title to this important branch of trade; and this will even appear from the perusal of the memorial of the board of trade, laid before his majesty king *George I.* and drawn up expressly to prove that claim. We shall have occasion to make some further observations on the trade and commerce of *Spain* when we come to treat of *Spanish America*.

THE soil of *Spain* is naturally dry, and is rendered still more so, by reason of the great heats, which parch up the springs and brooks, and by the want of rain to refresh the earth at proper seasons. Notwithstanding this inconvenience, arising from the dryness of the soil, and the want of rain, yet, if the inhabitants were industrious, and applied themselves with assiduity to the cultivation of their lands, a general abundance might prevail, which is far from being the case at present, for in many places there is often great scarcity of bread. The genius of the people is doubtless naturally averse to toil and labour. Give a Spaniard but his cloak, hat, and sword, his wine and his bread, and he cares not how little he works. Another great obstruction to agriculture is the immense number of lazy ecclesiastics in these

kingdoms, and the perpetual succession of holidays allowed by the church, which deprive the state of one third of the labour that it ought to receive from its subjects. To these may be added the thinness of its population: *Spain* in general, and *Granada* in particular, have never recovered that fatal blow of the expulsion of the *Moors*; the effects of which are felt still more by the addition of civil and religious celibacy. When *Philip*, on one hand, banished to the amount of 100,000 industrious infidels, from a principle of religion, he ought, on the other hand, from a principle of policy, to have set open the gates to every nunneiy and convent in his dominions. The number of these useless, sequestered males and females, these dead limbs of the body politic, are computed by some at no less than 200,000; but probably this calculation is much exaggerated. Besides the bad consequences of religious celibacy, their thin population is in part owing to the sterility of their females; and above all, to the vast emigrations of their people to *America*. To remedy these defects, the ministry, in *Philip III's* and *Philip IV's* time, offered vast premiums to promote marriage and agriculture. But their imprudent schemes of policy in other instances, have rendered those patriot laws almost ineffectual. Another unfavourable circumstance to agriculture is, there being no exportation of corn allowed in *Spain* from one province to another, except for the king's use, the exigencies of the fleet, army, and such occasions. In consequence of this bad policy, they are obliged to send to *Barbary* and other parts of *Africa*, or to *England* for corn; for it is morally impossible but the harvest must fail annually in some one province or other, and then that province must be supplied from abroad. Indeed, the transportation of it to any great distance is almost impracticable; for their large rivers, being left in their natural state, are not navigable. But the military spirit of these people, which has always prevailed, has no doubt given them a contempt for agriculture. Whoever travels over *Spain*, will be grieved to see such vast tracts of fine land turned to so little advantage; great part of it not tilled, and that which is, done in so careless and slovenly a manner, as to produce a starved crop of corn, even in parts where they might command the most abundant harvest. Their corn is usually choiced up with stones, filth, and weeds of every kind. There cannot be a stronger proof given of the fertility of the soil in *Spain*, than its producing so much as it does, when it is considered how little labour they bestow upon it. When they plow, they scarce do more than just scratch the surface of the ground with a slight furrow;

after the first plowing, they let the earth lie for a few days, and then they sow the wheat in September, and the barley in February: when this is done, they seldom use the harrow, but plow it over again, in order to cover the seed. Thus it stands till June or July, at which time they cut it down.

The barley is rarely bound in sheafs, and the wheat not always. Neither, however, are carried into barns; but they lay them down on some clean dry hillock, and then their mules come with a drag, and tread or beat out the corn; it is a shorter method than our threshing. The winnowing there is done still easier, by only throwing the corn up into the air. Yet such is the general indolence of the inhabitants of this country, that many of them will neither reap nor gather in their own corn. We should except, however, the industrious *Gallicians*, who, with great numbers out of *France* from *Auvergne* and *Languedoc*, annually travel over all *Spain* to be their husbandmen.

THE *Spaniards* have in general an olive complexion, are *Persons*, of a middle stature, rather lean, but well made; have fine *genius*, eyes, glossy black hair, and a small well shaped head. Their *character*, clothes are usually of a very dark colour, and their cloaks *manners*, almost black. This shews the natural gravity of the people. *humours*, This is the general dress of the common sort; for the court and persons of fashion have most of them adopted the *French* dress and modes. As their natural air is gravity, so *Spaniards*, they have consequently great coldness and reserve in their deportment; they are therefore very uncommunicative to all, and particularly to strangers. But when once you are become acquainted with them, and have contracted an intimacy, there are not more social, more friendly, or more conversible beings in the world. They are a people of the highest notions of honour, even to excess, which is a still visible effect of their ancient love of chivalry, and was the animating spirit of that enthusiasm. They have great probity and integrity of principle. As they persevere with much fidelity and zeal in their friendships, you will naturally expect to find them warm, resentless, and implacable in their resentments. They are generous, liberal, magnificent, and charitable; religious without dispute, but detest to the greatest excesses of superstition. If they have any predominant fault, it is, perhaps, that of being rather too high-minded; hence they have entertained, at different periods, the most extravagant conceits; such as, that the sun only rose and set in their dominions; that their language was the only tongue fit to address the Almighty with; and that they were the peculiar favourites of heaven. They

formerly thought, that wisdom, glory, power, riches, and dominion, were their sole monopoly; but the experience of two or three centuries past has contributed to shew the fondness of all these delusions. The open and avowed attempts of *Spain's Austrian* princes grasping at universal monarchy; the secret and more concealed ambition of the *Bourbon* line, with all their plans of refined policy, have been, as *Shakespeare* calls it, like the baseless fabric of a vision. It has been owing to these lofty conceits, that they are still possessed with the highest notions of nobility, family, and blood. The mountaineer of *Asturias*, though a peasant, will plume himself as much upon his genealogy and descent, as the first grandee; and the *Castilian*, with his coat armour, looks upon the *Gallician* with sovereign contempt. The profession of arms is their chief delight; to this darling passion, commerce, manufactures, and agriculture, have been always sacrificed. They bear all hardships with the most unremitting patience, and can endure heat, cold, and even hunger, with some degree of cheerfulness. They have courage and constancy sufficient for the most hazardous undertakings; and though naturally slow, yet when once put in action, pursue their object with great warmth and perseverance. Bigotry has been very prejudicial to the *Spaniards*, and not only in religion, but in the arts and sciences, and has greatly retarded their advancement in learning. It is impossible that those who are too blindly attached to the opinions of the ancients, should make any great figure among the moderns. To politics the *Spaniards* have a natural inclination; they study and understand the political interests of their country thoroughly; even the common peasants will sometimes make reflections on public affairs, that would be not unworthy of a senator in the Cortes.

THE taste for gallantry and dancing prevails in *Spain* universally; they are the two ruling passions of the country. Jealousy, ever since the accession of the house of *Bourbon*, has slept in peace. It is observable, that in proportion as manners become more civilized, that furious passion always loses its force. Dancing is so much their favourite entertainment, that their gravest matrons never think themselves excluded by age from this diversion. You see the grandmother, mother, and daughter, all in the same country dance: the *English*, on the contrary, give dancing to youth, and leave eld to age. Most of the *Spaniards* take their *siesta*, or sleep after dinner; mass in the morning, dinner at noon, and the evening's airing, generally finish the round of their day. Though it is the custom of the coun-

try for the men and women to wear in the street and at mas all the same dress, yet the ladies in private visits wear as much variety of dress, and of a much richer sort than those in *England*; but to a people of gallantry, the advantage of all wearing the same uniform in public, is easy to be conceived. The married ladies in *Spain* have each their professed lover, just as the *Italian* ladies have their *cicisbeo*. Their evening's airing is insipid to the last degree; you see nothing but a string of coaches following one another, filled with people of fashion: here a duke and his confessor; there a couple of smart young *advers tête à tête*; here a whole family grouped together, just like a *Dutch* picture, husband and wife, children and servants, wet nurses and dry all together. When they take their airing on *gala*, or court days, all their footmen are then dressed in laced liveries, with plumes of feathers in their hats. The number of servants kept by the grandees and people of the first fashion is immoderate. Some of the *Spanish* grandees retain to the number of 3 and 400, and the *English* ambassador, in compliance with the taste of country, keeps near 100.

C H A P. III.

Of Portugal.

THE kingdom of *Portugal* borders northwards on *Bounda-Gallicia* in *Spain*, and is divided from it by the *Minho*, *ries* and next the sea, and by some small rivers and hills farther up extent of land towards the east. The west and south sides are washed Portugal by the ocean, including the little kingdom of *Algarve* on the south, and on the west the *Guadiana* parts the said little kingdom from *Andalusia*, from whence drawing a line northwards, *Portugal* borders on *Andalusia*, *Estramadura*, and *Leon*. The whole extent of it from north to south is 300 miles, that is, from 37 to 42 degrees of latitude. From east to west, where broadest, which is about the middle, it is about 120 miles, that is, from 7 to 9 degrees west longitude, and where narrowest next *Algarve*, about 60.

THE soil of *Portugal* is, perhaps, the very worst in all *Spain*, yet not universally so. Upon the whole, it never produces corn enough to maintain its inhabitants, but must be supplied either from *Spain* or from *England*, and other northern countries. Pasture is no less scarce, if we except some of the northern parts, as the province called *Entre-duero e Minho*, and along the banks of some of their great rivers, where

The Conclusion of

where the best and largest cattle are fed; but on the southern side the cattle are very scarce, small, and lean, though the flesh is generally good. To make amends for this want of corn and pasture, vast quantities of wine are made, which is indeed the best commodity of this kingdom, and so well known at present to all *England*, that we need not say the less about it. Oil is here likewise in great abundance, but far inferior to that we have from other countries, being commonly so strong and fetid, that none can use it who have been ever accustomed to the *Spanish* and *Italian*. Lemons and oranges also grow here, and are exported in great quantities, though the acidity of the latter is nothing near so pleasant as that of those which come from *Seville*; nor are indeed any of their fruits so large or well tasted as those of *Spain*. Herbs and flowers of all sorts are here commonly very good, and great quantities of perfumed waters are distilled from the odorous kinds, which are in great request, being in some shape or other, used in almost every thing that is eaten, drank, or worn. This country produces likewise great quantities of alum, white marble, alabaster, and especially salt, of which immense loads are continually exported from the port of *Setuval*, for most of the northern nations. Here also are several mineral and medicinal springs, of great virtue, and much resorted to, some of a hot, and others of a cold nature. The woollen manufactures of *Portugal* are of so indifferent and coarse a nature, that they are only worn by the meaner sort, being scarce fit for any other. Their silks are, in some places, much better, but far inferior not only in beauty and goodness, but in quantity, to those which are made in *Spain*. The country in general is well peopled, and filled with goodly cities, towns, and villages, though not every where alike.

*Divided
into six
provinces.*

PORTUGAL is divided into six provinces, including the little kingdom of *Algarve*. These provinces, beginning at the north, and descending to the south, are 1. *Entre Duero e Minho*. 2. *Tra los Montes*. 3. *Beira*. 4. *Estramadura*. 5. *Aientejo*. And 6. *Algarve*.

*Province
of Entre
Duero e
Minho.*

THE province of *Entre Duero e Minho*, has the *Minho* on the north, to divide it from *Gallicia*, and the *Duero* on the south, which parts it from *Beira*; on the west it is bounded by the ocean, and on the east, by a ridge of mountains, which separates it from the province of *Tra los Montes*. Its utmost length does not exceed thirty-six miles, greatest breadth thirty, and where narrowest twelve or fourteen; but though small, it is the best inhabited, and has the greatest number

of cities, towns, and villages, of all the rest, in proportion; besides that, it is one of the pleasantest and most fertile, though mountainous, having many other rivers besides the two that inclose it, and a vast number of rivulets and sweet springs to water it; which, as above hinted, make it abound in good pasture more than any other parts of *Portugal*, though inferior in this respect to many of the provinces of *Spain*. Together with the pastures, the plains are every where covered with vines, fruit, and other trees of all sorts, and the country well supplied with every necessary of life, except, as before observed, it has not a sufficient quantity of corn for its inhabitants.

BRAGA, and *Porto* or *Oporto*, are its chief cities. The latter is a famous sea-port on the north side of the *Duero*, about three miles from the sea, and pleasantly situated on a rocky ground, that river washing its walls. The port, a very commodious one, is so well known and frequented by our nation, that we need say the less of it. The harbour is safe against all winds, but when the floods come down, no anchor can hold the ships; at which time they are forced to squeeze and fasten them to each other along the walls, to avoid the fury of the torrent. The city stands in 41. 10. north latitude, and 8. 30. west longitude. Its distance is 120 miles north from *Lisbon*. Oporto.

THE province *Tra los Montes* is so called, because seated on the other side of that chain of hills which parts it on the west from that of *Entre Duero e Minho*, just described; on the north it borders on *Gallicia*, and eastward on the kingdom of *Leon*; and on the south the *Duero* parts it from *Beira*. Its length from east to west, is at most about 74 miles, and breadth near 60. This country is but dry and barren, having but few rivers to water it, and none of them of any considerable length or breadth. For this reason the territory has but few corn fields, except rye and some barley, but yields plenty of wine, fruits of several sorts, and abundance of game. The cities of this province are *Braganza* and *Miranda*. Province of Tra los Montes.

THE province of *Beira* is divided on the north from the province *Entre Duero e Minho* by the former of those rivers; it is bounded by the ocean on the west, and by some part of *Estramadura*; on the south by another part of that province, and by the *Tagus*; and on the east it runs contiguous to the *Spanish Estramadura*, and the kingdom of *Leon*. The country, though not so rich and fertile as some in this kingdom, is yet capable of producing good corn, wine, and other useful commodities, if rightly cultivated. Province of Beira.

Coimbra
and Aveiro.

COIMBRA, once the metropolis of *Portugal*, is still one of the finest cities in this kingdom, and no less celebrated for its famed university. It is pleasantly seated on the north side of the river *Mondego*, about ninety miles north from *Lisbon*. *Aveiro* is a considerable market-town, commodiously seated in a plain, upon a bay at the mouth of a creek, on the western coast, and made by a small river, which divides the town into two parts, joined by a stately bridge. In this creek, which is pretty large, and forms a kind of haven, is made a vast quantity of salt, which is exported, some into other parts of the kingdom, and the rest into foreign parts. It stands about 101 miles from *Lisbon*.

Province
of Estramadura.

THE province of *Estramadura* is a long narrow slip, running along the sea-coast, and reaching from the mouth of the river *Mondego* northwardly down, and southwardly quite below the town of *Setuval*; so that it extends from the latter to the former, that is, from south-west to north-east, about 110 miles. In breadth it is scarce fifty, and in some places much narrower; and its utmost verge westward, which is the *Cape la Roca*, or, as our seamen term it, the rock of *Lisbon*, lies under nine degrees forty-five minutes west longitude. It is bounded on the north by the *Mondego* above-mentioned, which parts it from *Beira* and the province of *Alentejo*; and it has again *Beira* on the east, and the ocean on the west. The land is here for the most part the very best in *Portugal*, and the climate very pleasant and mild, by being so near the western ocean. It produces wheat and other grain in greater plenty than the other provinces, abundance of wine, oil, fruits of all sorts, especially citrons, lemons, oranges, pomegranates, figs, dates, almonds, &c. upon which account the people here live much better, and are above want. Here are also greater variety of manufactures carried on, and a much larger share of trade and commerce; all which is owing partly to its commodious situation and sea-port, to its proximity to the city of *Lisbon*, the metropolis of this province and kingdom, and to the noble river *Tagus*, which is navigable a considerable number of leagues inland, and is therefore the means of a very considerable commerce from that metropolis.

Lisbon.

LISBON, the head city of this kingdom, the residence of its monarchs, the great seat of all the courts of justice, the metropolitan see of *Portugal*, the most noble and celebrated university of it, an emporium of the world, the receptacle of all the richest merchandizes of the *East* and *West-Indies*, and the best sea-port in the whole kingdom, is situate in 38 degree 46 minutes of latitude, and about 9 of west longitude, in an excellent air; and though the climate is rather inclined

to heat, yet it is refreshed by the delightful breezes of the sea, and of the river *Tagus*, on the banks of which it is pleasantly and strongly seated, and which conveys to it a very great share of the wealth of *Asia* and *America*, as well as the chief commodities of *Europe* and *Africa*. The harbour is one of the best commodious in *Europe*, lying upon the western ocean, and capacious enough of itself to contain 10,000 ships, all riding in safety, and without incumbering each other; and it carries water enough for the largest vessels to anchor before the windows of the royal palace. The entrance of it is defended by two handsome forts, the first seated on the shore, the other standing opposite to it, on a shelf, in the midst of the water. Besides these, nature has provided it with another defence, which is the bar, very dangerous to pass without pilots belonging to the place. Within this appears a vast capacious bay, which contracts itself as it draws near the city.

THE city of *Lisbon*, built, like old *Rome*, on several little hills, is one of the finest views from the water that can possibly be imagined. As you approach nearer to it, the tragical effects, the havock of that dreadful earthquake which happened on the first of *November* 1755, cannot but touch every beholder with sentiments of pain. After landing, you pass through some streets, near a mile in length, where the houses all fell on each side, and still lie for the most part in that undistinguished heap of ruin, into which they sunk at the first convulsive shocks. Not that it is to be imagined, that the greatest part of that fine city fell on that fatal morning; so far from this, that not above one-fourth part of it was destroyed; for it prevailed more in one particular quarter than the rest; and there the desolation was almost universal, scarce an house or building remaining that was not thrown down. In the other parts of the city, some single ill-conditioned or ruinous buildings fell, but the rest stood; and there is scarce a street but shores and props may be seen fixed to the buildings on each side, to prevent their falling even now, having suffered so much from the shocks they had received. *St. Ubes*, not far from *Lisbon*, was also destroyed. The shocks continued for several days after, and were felt in most parts of *Europe*; and the waters were agitated in many places in a most surprising manner. The cities of *Perz* and *Morocco* received likewise considerable damage from the several shocks they had in those parts, where numbers of the inhabitants were destroyed. Considering how much time has elapsed since this earthquake, very little of the city of *Lisbon* has been rebuilt in proportion. They have built a custom-

custom-house, an arsenal, a theatre, and some few other buildings. All agree, that the fire occasioned infinitely more havoc than the earthquake. Thousands of the inhabitants, unhappily, in the first confusion of their fear, taking the ill-judged step of thronging into the churches, the doors of which being sometimes shut by the violence of the crowd, and sometimes locked by mistake, when the fire seized the roofs of these buildings, these unhappy sufferers were most of them destroyed; some by sheets of lead, that poured like a molten deluge upon their heads, others mangled by the fall of the roofs, and the rest burnt alive. One's imagination can scarce form a scene of confusion, horror, and death, more dreadful than this. After the shocks were over, the fire continued burning for many weeks; and it is thought was one principal cause of their escaping the plague, as the putrefaction of the bodies was by that means much lessened. The calculation of the number that perished, as they kept no registers, must be in a great measure conjectural; but that thousands and ten thousands were destroyed, there is no doubt. The morning on which it happened was most remarkably serene and pleasant, particularly about ten o'clock, and in one quarter more, all was involved in this dreadful scene of terror and destruction. As this event produced many changes, those among the commercial parts of the city were not the least remarkable. One, who yesterday was at the eve of a bankruptcy, found himself to-day with his books cleared; and hundreds, who lived in ease and affluence, as soon as they had recovered from their first panic and dismay, saw want and poverty stare them in the face.

SOME of the churches, the arsenals, the theatre, and above all, the aqueduct at *Lisbon*, deserve the attention of every traveller; the center arch for its height, being one of the noblest perhaps in *Europe*. One thing is remarkable, that during the earthquake this building stood the attack, though so much affected by the shock, that many of the key-stones fell several inches, and hang now only because a small part of the base of the key-stone was caught by the center's closing again. The streets of *Lisbon* are cleaner than those of *Madrid*, but disagreeable, from the continual ascents and descents one is obliged to make. Most of the houses have the *jalousie*, or lattice. The women, though more beautiful, are not so much seen in public as the *Spanish*, and their head-dress is much prettier. There are few fires in chimneys in the rooms at *Lisbon*; the want of them is supplied by wearing a cloak constantly in the house, or perhaps by a brazier; though the cold is sometimes very piercing. The view of the

the *Tagus*, from those windows of the town which command it, is remarkably pleasing: the bean-cods, or small boats, which sail with any wind or tide, and are continually passing; the river crouded with shipping of all nations; the coming in of a *Bahia* or *Brasil* fleet; the opening of the river towards the sea, with the castle of *Bell. m* on the right, the king's palace, and the castle of *St. Julian's* on the left; all together form a very fine and agreeable view.

THE other places of note in this province, are; 1. *Setuval*, a considerable sea-port on this coast, a little below *Lisbon*, being much resorted to by most northern nations, especially for the vast quantities of salt that are made here every year. 2. *Santarem*, forty-two miles north-east from *Lisbon*, situate on a high hill, close to the *Tagus*. It has on the south side a deep valley, with a steep winding ascent to the town, and on the north is a craggy solid rock, altogether inaccessible; but on the west it faces a delightful plain, covered with gardens, orchards, and fertile fields, producing a vast quantity of corn, oil, and variety of fruits. The *Tagus*, which is here very broad and navigable, enriches the adjacent country by the channels that are cut from it; insomuch that we are told by some *Spanish* authors, that it yields a prodigious increase of wheat and other grain, which are often sown, cut down, and threshed, within the space of two months. 3. *Sintra*, seated near the sea, at the foot of a ridge of mountains, and by the cape that bears its name, almost on the utmost western verge of *Portugal*. The town is justly esteemed the most delightful spot in the whole kingdom, both for the beauty of its situation and prospect, and for the fruitfulness of its territory. The rock on which it stands, has a noble quarry of black and white marble, in great request. 4. *Alcagar Do Sal*, situate thirty-five miles south-west from *Lisbon*, on the river *Zadao*. It is so called, from the great quantities of salt produced in its environs.

THE province of *Alentejo* borders on the north on part of *Præmune* *Esframadura*, and of the river *Tagus*; eastward, on the *Spanish* province of *Andalusia* and *Esframadura*; on the west it is bounded by the ocean, and part of the *Portuguese* *Esframadura*; and on the south, by the little kingdom of *Algarve*. It lies between 37 degrees 30 minutes latitude, and about 39 degrees west longitude; but so irregular, and runs so much into the adjacent provinces, that its extent cannot be precisely stated. In the whole it runs, where widest, between 90 and 100 miles; and in some places beyond, and in others much less than 80. This country is reckoned the finest and most fertile in all *Portugal*, and its inhabitants the wealthiest

thieft and beft bred. The far greater part are farmers, and the land is fo rich, and fo well watered by a number of rivers, which fall either into the *Tagus* or *Guadiana*, which two laft great ones run quite acrofs the province, that they are all wealthy and induftrious, and have few poor people among them. Its cities and towns of chief note are *Evora*, *Elvas*, and *Estremoz*. Near the laft, remarkable for its curious manufacture of red earthen-ware, is a noble fpring, which throws up fo much water in fummer, as ferves to water feveral mills; and, contrary to all others, is dried up all the winter.

Kingdom
of Al-
garve.

THE little kingdom of *Algarve* is that part of *Portugal* called, by fome ancient authors, *Cuncus*, or *Wedge*, being really wedged in by the ocean on the weft and fouth; on the eaft by the *Guadiana*, which parts it from *Andalufia*; on the north, by the mountains called *Serra de Algarve*, and *Serra de Monchique*, which divide it from *Alentejo*; fo that it is but ninety miles in length, where longeft, and but twenty-eight in breadth, where broadeft. The country, though mountainous in moft parts of it, produces moft forts of fruits in abundance, but little corn. It is the leaft populous and wealthy part of *Portugal*, and has no remarkable towns or cities.

History of
Portugal.

THE hiftory of *Portugal* is blended with that of *Spain*, until it was recovered from the *Moors*. *Alphonfo*, fixth king of *Leon*, having made a conqueft of the northern provinces of *Portugal*, conftituted *Henry* of *Burgundy*, a noble volunteer in thefe wars, earl of *Portugal*, in the year 1093. *Alphonfo*, fon of *Henry*, affumed the title of king in 1139, having recovered feveral other provinces from the *Moors*; and his fucceffors continued the wars with the Infidels, till they had reduced all *Portugal*. The crown continued in this line till the reign of *Ferdinand*, upon whose death *John* his baftard brother ufurped the throne, in 1385. This prince invaded *Africa*, and took the port-town of *Ceuta* from the *Moors*. The *Madeira* iflands, and the *Azores* or western iflands, were alfo difcovered in this reign, and added to the kingdom of *Portugal*, with the coaft of *Guinea*; and, after a glorious reign of near fifty years, *John* left the crown to his fon *Edward*. His grandfon *Alphonfo* invaded *Morocco*, and took the towns of *Tangier*, *Arzilla*, *Alcafzar*, and feveral others on the coaft of *Africa*, from the *Moors*. *John* II. was the firft prince who endeavoured to trace out a way to the *East-Indies* round the coaft of *Africa*: leaving no children, he was fucceeded by his coufin *Emanuel*, who banifhed many of the *Jews* and *Moors* out of *Portugal*, and compelled thofe that remained there to profefs Chriftianity, on pain of being made flaves. It was in this reign that *Portugal* arrived at the higheft pitch of glory.

glory, for their fleets passed the *Cape of Good Hope*, the most southern promontory of *Africa*, and planted colonies in the *East-Indies*, whereby they became sole masters of the traffic between *India* and *Europe*; which was before carried on through *Egypt* and the *Turkish* dominions, from whence the *Venetians*, *Genoese*, and other maritime powers in the *Mediterranean*, used to transport the *Indian* merchandize to *Europe*, and grew immensely rich and powerful by that traffic; but have been in a declining way ever since the *Portuguese* bought the riches of *India* to *Europe* by the route of the *Cape*. The *Portuguese* also possessed themselves of the rich country of *Brazil* in *South America*. *John III.* the son of *Emanuel*, sent out a multitude of missionaries to convert the eastern nations, and among them was the famous *Francis Xavier*, who planted the Christian religion in *India*, *Persia*, *China*, and *Japan*, as well as on the coast of *Africa*, where the *Portuguese* have still numerous plantations and settlements; and he sent other missionaries to *Brazil* in *America*. His grandson *don Sebastian* transported a powerful army into *Africa*, at the instance of *Muley Hamet* King of *Morocco*, who had been deposed by *Muley Malucco*; and joining *Muley Hamet*, they attacked the usurper with their united forces, but were defeated; and *don Sebastian*, with most of the *Portuguese* nobility, and *Muley Hamet*, the deposed prince, were killed in the field of battle. *Muley Malucco* the usurper died of a fever the same day. *Don Sebastian*, leaving no issue, was succeeded by cardinal *Henry* his uncle, the only surviving male of the royal family; and he dying after a short reign of two years, *Philip II.* of *Spain* possessed himself of the kingdom of *Portugal*, in the year 1580, which he claimed in right of his mother, though the *Braganza* family were deemed to have a better title to the crown.

PORTUGAL remained under the dominion of *Spain* sixty years; and it was this that gave occasion to the *Dutch*, who had taken off the *Spanish* yoke, to deprive the *Portuguese* of their settlements in the *Indies*, on the coast of *Africa*, and, in a great measure, of the *Brazils*; for the *Spaniards* looking upon *Portugal* as a conquered kingdom, took but little care of its concerns; and the *Portuguese* nobility, who had formerly shewn so much courage and constancy in the service of their native princes, were far from exerting themselves in the same manner for the support of strangers, who they plainly saw did not either use or wish them well. At last, tired out with the bad behaviour of those who were sent to govern them by the court of *Madrid*, they resolved to throw off the *Spanish* yoke at all events. *John* duke of *Braganza*, grandson to that

that duke who was competitor with king *Philip* for the kingdom, was raised to the throne of *Portugal* by the title of *John IV.* His subjects were no less steady and constant in supporting him upon the throne, than they had been universally willing and ready to raise him to it, though the *Spaniards* maintained, a long war in hopes of recovering this kingdom; and though the *Dutch*, notwithstanding they were then fighting for their own liberties against the same crown, prosecuted their designs in the *Indies*, and in *Brazil*, against the *Portuguese*. It is true that they lost several of their remaining settlements in *Asia*, and that it was with great difficulty they preserved *Goa*, *Bombay*, *Diu*, and a few inconsiderable places on the continent; but in the *Brazils* they had better fortune; the people preferred their government to that of the *Dutch*, and in a short time they recovered all they had lost in that quarter of the world.

WE must observe that, while the *Spaniards* were masters of *Portugal*, their maxims of making the most of the kingdom, while in their hands, ruined the trade, sunk the naval power, and brought the *Portuguese* plantations almost to nothing. An equal and just government is necessary, not only to raise, but to preserve these advantages to any nation, since, whenever that is wanting, they droop, dwindle, and decay, like plants that remain unwatered, or children trusted to a mercenary nurse, that soon lose their flesh and colour, plain indications of the pains taken with them by an affectionate mother. To judge from effects may be a bad maxim in morality, but in politics it seldom fails.

JOHN IV. died in 1651, without seeing an end of that war which his accession had occasioned. He left his dominions to his son *Alphonso VI.* then a child, under the tutelage of the queen dowager his mother. By the peace of the *Pyrenees*, the *French*, who had hitherto been the warm, and almost the sole allies of *Portugal*, engaged to give that crown no farther assistance; but their great regard to their own interest inouced them, in direct violation of that article, to send the *Portuguese* greater assistance than they had ever done, under the command of marshal *Schomberg*, an officer of such capacity, that it might be truly said his single person was equivalent to a small army. He reformed many abuses, and introduced a new discipline among the *Portuguese* troops; so that, notwithstanding they had the whole *Spanish* force to deal with; yet they bravely defended their liberties, and gained two such signal victories at *Espremos* and *Villa Viciosa*, as convinced their enemies, that the desire of freedom may overbalance superiority of numbers. At last, in 1668, the *French* king
Lewis

Lewis XIV. falling, contrary to the faith of treaties, with a great army upon the *Low Countries*, the *Spaniards* found themselves under a necessity of making peace with *Portugal*, which was done under the mediation of king *Charles II.* of *Great-Britain*, who had married the infanta *Catherine*, daughter to king *John*, and sister to king *Alphonso*: by this treaty the *town of Spain* renounced all her claims and pretensions to that of *Portugal*, and solemnly acknowledged the rights of the house of *Braganza*, which put an end to a disputed title, and restored peace to this country, after a war, or at least the interruption of peace, for the space of twenty-eight years.

ALPHONSO VI. having attained the years, though not the discretion of a man, resolved to take the government of his dominions into his own hands, though his mother had ruled with great prudence, and himself could not but be satisfied of his own incapacity, which is said to have been owing to a long indisposition, that so much weakened his abilities, both in body and mind, as to render him equally unfit for the duties of a king and of a husband. Those who had pushed him upon these designs, and had no other view than that of governing the kingdom at their own will under his name, began next to infuse jealousies of his brother don *Pedro*, the presumptive heir of the crown; and are also said to have engaged him in such other low and shameful intrigues, as obliged the queen, a princess of *Savoy Nemours*, after she had cohabited with him for six months, to retire to a convent for the preservation, as she affirmed, of her honour and her life.

THE infant don *Pedro*, considering the incapacity of his brother, the confused state of public affairs, and his own great peril, determined by the advice, and with the assistance and consent of the principal nobility, to secure the person of the king, and to take upon himself the administration of the government. This was accordingly done, and not long after the queen left her convent, and a dispensation having been obtained from the court of *Rome* for that purpose, espoused the prince don *Pedro*, who removed *Alphonso* to the island of *Tercera*, where he kept him confined under a strong guard; but caused him to be treated with the tenderness which he owed his brother, and the respect that was due to a king. However, some malicious tongues, in a few years, reporting the contrary, the prince caused him to be brought back to the castle of *Cintra*, within a day's journey of *Lisbon*, and there, under an easy custody, he was served and respected as a king. The prince was persuaded by many to assume the title himself, but inflexibly declined it, contenting himself

self with that of regent till his brother died, which was in 1683.

KING *Pedro* had by his first queen, who had been his brother's wife, only one daughter, and by his second the princess *Maria Sophia*, daughter to the elector palatine, *John* prince of *Brazil*, and the infants *don Francis*, *don* ~~Alonso~~ *Alonso*, and *don Emanuel*. *Don Pedro* continued for many years to govern his subjects with great justice and moderation. A little before the peace of *Ryswick*, he offered his mediation to *Louis XIV.* but received such an answer, as shewed plainly enough that *France* was resolved to reject it with a kind of disdain. The *Portuguese* monarch thought fit to pass by the affront for the present; but it afterwards cost *France* dear. When *Philip V.* mounted the throne of *Spain*, the friendship of *Portugal* became not only expedient but necessary. Upon this occasion, *Louis XIV.* was as obliging and civil as he had formerly shewn himself haughty and proud; and though *don Pedro* had already resolved on the part he was to take, yet considering how soon, and how easily he might be crushed by the forces of the two crowns, he entered into an alliance with king *Philip*, and this for various reasons. In the first place, it gained time, and delivered him from present danger; in the next, it gave an opportunity of gaining good terms, which might be of use to him on another occasion; and, lastly, he obtained by it some present advantages, which were very beneficial to his subjects. But as soon as the general confederacy was formed against *France*, and it clearly appeared that the allies meant to set up another king of *Spain*, the *Portuguese* monarch demanded of the *French* king, pursuant to a late alliance, a fleet of thirty sail of the line, and a large sum of money. He knew well enough, that as things then stood, those demands could not be complied with; but he wanted a pretence for breaking that treaty, without breaking faith, and this did his business very effectually; for as soon as the fleet of the allies appeared upon his coast, he thought fit to declare himself neuter, and not long after made a treaty with *Charles III.* but before any steps could be taken for prosecuting the war, he was removed by death, December 9, 1706, when he had lived fifty-eight, and from the death of his brother, had reigned twenty-three years.

JOHN V. succeeded his father, and pursued his steps very exactly, notwithstanding the *Spaniards* surprised the town of *Alcantara*, and made the garrison prisoners of war, almost before he was settled in the throne. The assistance he gave the allies brought the *Spanish* monarchy twice to the brink of ruin; and though most of our accounts say, that the *Portuguese*

Portuguese soldiers behaved but indifferently in that war, yet this ought not to be understood as a national reflection, farther than as long peace, great wealth, and much luxury, are capable of corrupting any people. While the war continued, the commerce of the *Brazils* began to grow much more considerable than in former times, by the working of the gold mines; and, as there was at that time a great intercourse between the two nations, the *British* traders obtained a large share of that gold for the commodities and manufactures with which they supplied the *Portuguese*. King *John* could not help seeing this with concern; he thought it hard they should have but a sight of the vast wealth derived from their own settlements, and that it should immediately vanish, as it were, out of *Portugal* into another country. His ministers were exactly of their master's opinion, and many consultations were held about finding a speedy and effectual remedy for what they considered as the greatest grievance. At length it was concluded, that the only method that could be taken was to prohibit the wear of foreign manufactures; and this had certainly been put in execution, if lord *Galway*, the commander of our forces in that country, though a *Frenchman* by birth, had not prevented it. He was a great favourite with his *Portuguese* majesty, and esteemed to be, as he certainly was, a very honest man. To him, therefore, as to a friend, and under the strictest injunction of secrecy, the king communicated this affair, and asked his advice about it. His lordship told him fairly, that the remedy would be worse than the disease; that the same providence which had given his subjects gold, had bestowed commodities and manufactures upon the *English*; that the exchange therefore was not so injurious as he imagined; and that, by prohibiting commerce, he might force those that were now his best friends, to become his enemies, and employ their naval power, which he knew to be so much superior to his own, in taking that by force for which they now gave a proper equivalent. He farther represented that, whatever turn the war might take, *Portugal* must always stand in need of the friendship of *England*, to prevent becoming dependent on the house of *Austria* or the house of *Bourbon*; and therefore it was much better that his subjects should trade with those from whom he had so much to hope, than with other nations from whom he had all things to fear. The king, who was both a reasonable and a just prince, and who in this business acted solely from a laudable affection for his subjects, comprehended the force of these arguments, and immediately laid aside a project, which how plausible soever in its first appearance, was certainly, at the

bottom neither equitable nor practicable. Happy for the world if all kings meant as well, deliberated as coolly, and were as ready to receive and follow good advice.

THE two crowns of *Spain* and *Portugal* were not reconciled thoroughly till the year 1737; and from this period they became every day more united, which gave much satisfaction to some courts, and no umbrage to any. In this situation of things, a treaty was made in 1750, with the court of *Madrid*, by which *Nova Colonia*, on the river of *Plate*, was yielded to his Catholic majesty, to the great regret of the *Portuguese*, as well on account of the value of that settlement, as because they apprehended their possession of the *Brazils* would by this action be rendered precarious. On the last of *July* the same year, this monarch, worn out by infirmities, deceased in the 61st year of his age, and in the 44th of his reign.

DON *Joseph*, prince of *Brazil*, succeeded him, to the universal satisfaction of his subjects; and with as great expectations as ever any monarch that mounted the throne. It was generally believed that he would make considerable alterations, in which he did not disappoint the hopes of the public; and yet they were done so slowly, with such moderation, and with so many circumstances of prudence, as hindered all grounds of complaint. Amongst other new regulations, the power of the *Inquisition* suffered some restriction; the king directing, that none of their sentences should be put in execution till reviewed and approved by his privy-council. But as in the reign of his father he had consented to the treaty with *Spain*, he ratified it after his accession, and has since actually carried it into execution upon this noble principle, that no considerations of interest ought ever to induce a monarch to break his word.

HOWEVER, within the space of the few years of this king's reign, the calamities of *Portugal* in general, and those of the city of *Lisbon* in particular, cannot, in a great degree, be paralleled in all history.—A earthquake, a fire, a famine, an assassination-plot against their prince, executions upon executions, the scaffolds and wheels for torture reeking with the noblest blood; imprisonment after imprisonment of the greatest and most distinguished personages; the expulsion of a chief order of ecclesiastics, the invasion of their kingdom by a powerful, stronger, and exasperated nation; the numerous troops of the enemy laying waste their territory, bringing fire and sword with them, and rolling, like distant thunder, towards the gates of their capital; their prince ready almost to save himself by flight!—The *Spanish* ministry had al-

already decreed the doom of *Portugal*, and nothing was to be heard at the *Escorial*, but *Delenda est Carthago*. *Carthaginian*, perhaps, or *Jewish* story, may possibly afford a scene something like this, but, for the shortness of the period, not so big with events, though in their final destruction superior. From that, indeed, under the hand of Providence, the national humanity and generosity of *Great Britain* has preserved the *Portuguese*; and it remains now to be seen, in future treaties, how that people will express their gratitude. Those who are able to search deeper into human affairs, may assign the causes of such a wonderful chain of events; but no wise man will ascribe all this to so singular a cause as that which a *Spaniard* has done, in a famous pamphlet, printed in the year 1762, at *Madrid*. It is entitled a *Spanish* Prophecy, and endeavours to shew, that all these calamities have befallen the *Portuguese*, solely on account of their connection with the heretic *English*. The great ruler and governor of the world undoubtedly acts by universal laws, regarding the whole system, and cannot, without blasphemy, be considered in the light of a partizan. The rest of the pamphlet tends to shew, that his Catholic majesty carried his arms into *Portugal*, solely to give them liberty, and set them free from *English* tyranny.

As for the interests of *Portugal*, they may be divided into political, with regard to their possessions in *Europe*; and commercial, with respect to their dominions in *Asia*, *Africa*, and *America*. As to the first, there is no doubt that it consists in maintaining peace; a point, to which his late majesty remained always well inclined, and thereby preserved quiet to his subjects in the midst of all the broils of *Europe*. But, as the family-compact of the house of *Bourbon* towards the close of the late war, threatened the destruction of *Portugal*, and may hereafter do the same, that kingdom is under a necessity of living upon good terms with the maritime powers, and more especially with *Great Britain*. It is, indeed, saying no more than truth, that there is scarce any instance in history of a more lasting and sincere friendship, than has subsisted, for near a century past, between the two crowns; and, indeed, it is their mutual interest that it should subsist; so that while it continues, and while *Great Britain* maintains her superiority, *Portugal* can hardly ever be in danger. The safety, independency, and prosperity of *Portugal*, must depend either upon her maintaining a strict conjunction with her natural allies, or upon her acquiring a strength sufficient to maintain herself, without having recourse to any foreign assistance; but, as the latter is a thing very difficult to do, so

Interests,
political
and commercial of
Portugal.

beyond all question, till it can be brought about, it will never be good policy in this crown to run any hazard as to the former. Till *Portugal* therefore acquires a naval force superior to that of her neighbours, she must, in some measure, depend upon that of *Great Britain*, and consequently, it is directly contrary to her true interest to take any step, whatever that may be either prejudicial to that force upon which her own safety depends, or which may weaken those ties experience has shewn to have been hitherto strong enough upon any emergency to intitle her to that assistance.

"As to the commercial interest of the *Portuguese*, it lies now chiefly in the *West*, as it did formerly in the *East-Indies*; and, in respect to *Brazil*, their strength is so great, that they have no reason to apprehend any thing from their neighbours: the only danger to which they are exposed is from an insurrection of their own negroes, which might indeed have very bad consequences. In the present state of things, this colony is the most profitable in the world, since, considering the proportion between the two kingdoms, *Portugal* draws more profit from her *Brazils* than *Spain* from both *Mexico* and *Peru*. It is otherwise in regard of *Asia*, where, from an empire of almost incredible extent, the *Portuguese* dominion is in a manner shrunk within the narrow bounds of the little peninsula, at the point of which stands the city of *Goa*. Their traffic on the south-coast of *Africa* is still very considerable.

In the whole, it may be said, that whatever affects the commerce between *Great Britain* and *Portugal*, operates to the disadvantage of both, as well by lessening naval force, which depends upon trade, as by weakening the connections that unite the two nations, of equal consequence to both. We ought to support *Portugal*, because it is our interest to preserve her independent. But still it is not our interest to do it more than other *European* nations; for they are all as much interested as we are in the preservation of the balance of power in the south, as well as in the north; and they have besides all advantages in common with us, in the commerce of that country. *Hamburg* enjoys almost as great a trade with *Portugal* as *England* does: *Holland* a very great one; and so do *Sweden* and *Denmark*; and yet all of them sat as indifferent spectators during the late scene of the troubles of *Portugal*. Hence may be seen the insignificance of the plea urged by interested people with regard to *Portugal* that was before urged with regard to *Hanover*; which is, that it was an invasion in consequence of her connections with us. But the cases are not parallel, nor are the pleas in either

either sufficient; for *France* did not enter *Germany* in the late war as the foe of *Hanover*, having not declared war against that state; nor had *Spain* any right to force *Portugal* from her desired neutrality. It is well known, that the present Catholic king considers himself as lineal heir, in right of his mother, to the crown of *Portugal*; and it was long ago foreseen, and foretold, that he would seize the favourable opportunity that offered for asserting that claim. This opportunity offered from the then embroiled state of *Europe*, the distressed condition of *France*, which constrained her for her own safety, to be an assistant in a project that she otherwise would have opposed with all her might; our own too much exhausted condition; the mercenary disposition of the *Dutch*, which influences their inattention to every thing but the security of present gain; and, above all, the weakness of *Portugal*, from her preceding great calamity. These were the motives that induced *Spain* to attack *Portugal*. It was no war with her upon our account. *Spain* rather forced a war with us, in order to form a pretence for attacking and seizing *Portugal*.

THE king of *Portugal* may be now considered, as well Govern- as the king of *Spain*, as an absolute prince. The Cortes have men and long since sold their part in the legislature to the crown, and laws of only serve to confirm or record such acts of state as the court of *Portugal*; resolves upon; to declare the next heir to the crown when and genius, the king is pleased to nominate him, or to ratify treaties with &c. of the foreign princes who may still deem their consent of any inhabitants. weight. The laws of *Portugal* are all contained in three small volumes; and are founded on the civil law, and their particular customs. As to the genius, customs, manners, &c. of the *Portuguese*, they resemble those of *Spain*, of which they were a province. Their religion is the same, and there are a proportionable number of convents. A patriarchate has lately been erected at *Lisbon*, which is the only difference between the ecclesiastical government of *Spain* and *Portugal*. It is not long since the present king, having no male issue, has married his eldest daughter, the princess of *Beira*, with the pope's dispensation, to his brother don *Pedro*.

C H A P. IV.

Of France.

Situation, extent, and boundaries of France. **T**HE Kingdom of *France* is most advantageously situated in the middle of the temperate zone, and extends from the 42d degree and $\frac{1}{2}$ of latitude to the 51st; containing in breadth, according to the observations and calculations of some of the members of their Royal Academy of Sciences, about 23 degrees of longitude; namely, from the extremity of *Brittany*, near the island of *Ushant*, that is, from *Conquet*, which lies 5 degrees west of *London*, to *Strasbourg* in *Alsace*, which is about 8 degrees east of *London*. *France* therefore contains in length, from the *Pyrenean* mountains in the south, to *Dunkirk* in the north, 8 degrees and $\frac{1}{2}$, that is, 170 leagues, or 510 miles, reckoning twenty leagues, or sixty miles to a degree of longitude; and in breadth, from the uttermost point in *Brittany*, to *Strasbourg* in *Alsace*, about 165 leagues, or 495 miles; but its breadth decreases considerably, going from *Brest* to the south, and to the north. On the north, it is separated from *England* by the *British* channel; on the north-east it is contiguous to the *Netherlands*; on the east it borders on *Germany*, *Switzerland*, *Savoy*, and *Piedmont*, from the last of which it is separated by the *Alps*; on the south it is bounded by the *Mediterranean-Sea*, and by the *Pyrenean* mountains, which divide it from *Spain*; and on the west it is surrounded by the ocean.

Air, fertility, and produce. **T**HE air is very temperate and wholesome, and not subject to the great cold of *Germany*, *Sweden*, and *Muscovy*, nor to the excessive heats of *Spain* and *Italy*; but it is more or less hot or cold, according to the different situation of the several provinces. In the southern parts, as in *Duchiné*, *Provence*, and *Languedoc*, the winters are generally very sharp, but do not continue long; and the seasons in *France* are much more regular than they are in *England*. There is no country in *Europe*, says *La Martiniere*, more beautiful, nor more pleasant to live in than *France*. There you may behold high mountains, the *Pyrenees*, the *Alps*, the mountains of the *Sevannes*, of *Auvergne*, and some others, together with several fine rivers which run through it, and render it very fruitful. It abounds with corn, fruit, wine, oil, herds of cattle, tame, and wild fowl, hemp, and flax: the sea-coast furnishes the inhabitants with abundance of fish, and with a quantity of salt sufficient for them and their neighbours.

There

There are also mines of lead, iron, and copper; and some gold and silver; but these are not suffered to be worked, because the profit would not answer the expence. The salt is chiefly made in the isle of *Rhee*, about *Rochfort*, and on the coast of *Saintonge*.

THE kingdom of *France* was generally divided by geographers into twelve governments; but, as the number is much larger, we shall follow for greater accuracy rather *Buffier's* account, who reckons thirty distinct governments, each of which has a particular governor independent of all other persons but the king. Of these thirty governments, there are eighteen in the circuit of the kingdom, and twelve in the middle. Those in the circuit may be divided into four parts according to the four cardinal points of east, south, west, and north.

ON the east, are five governments, namely, 1. *Alsace*, 2. *Franche-Comte*, 3. *Burgundy*, 4. *Lyonnais*, and 5. *Dauphiné*.

ON the south, are also five governments, as 1. *Provence*, 2. *Languedoc*, 3. *Roussillon*, 4. The county, or earldom of *Foix*, and 5. *Bearn*.

ON the west, are the same number of governments, which are, 1. *Guienne*, 2. *Saintonge*, annexed to *Angoumois*, 3. The county of *Aunis*, 4. *Poitou*, and 5. *Brittany*.

ON the north there are but three governments, but equal, at least, in extent to five of the others; these are, 1. *Normandy*, 2. *Picardy*, and 3. *French Flanders*.

THE twelve governments in the middle of *France* may be considered as placed on the three sides of a triangle, the point of which is towards the south, on the borders of *Auvergne* and *Limousin*; and thus we find four governments on each side of the triangle, viz.

ON the east, 1. *Champagne*, 2. *Nivernois*, 3. *Bourbonnois*, and 4. *Auvergne*.

ON the west, reckoning from *Auvergne*, 1. *Limousin*, 2. *La Marche*, 3. *Berry*, and 4. *Touraine*.

TOWARDS the north, 1. *Anjou*, 2. *Maine*, 3. *Orleannois*, and 4. *The Isle of France*.

IT would lead us beyond the bounds we have prescribed for ourselves, to describe the particular provinces, counties, districts, or ~~parishes~~ contained in each of these governments; so that we shall content ourselves in regard to *France*, which is an extensive country, with taking a cursory view of its principal sea-port towns, and some other places of note, first, giving a general idea of its particular subjects and articles of trade and commerce.

Productions
ous and
manufac-
tures of
France, as
subjects of
trade.

THE productions of *France*, as subjects of trade, are 1. Wines of *Champagne*, *Burgundy*, *Bordeaux*, *Rochelle*, *Nantes*, and other places on the *Loire*. 2. The produce of the wines, as brandy of *Bordeaux*, *Nantes* and *Rochelle* vinegar, and lees of wine. 3. Fruit, such as prunes and prunelloes, dried grapes, pears and apples in *Normandy*, oranges and olives in *Languedoc* and *Provence*. 4. Corn, salt, hemp, flax, silk, rosin, oil, cork. 5. Kid-skins in abundance, perfumes, extracted oils, drugs, and chemical preparations. 6. They have also minerals and metals of divers kinds, and are daily discovering others; and they are become great artists in the smelting and refining them, and perform these operations to as great perfection as any other country.

THE manufactures of *France* are, 1. Silks, as lustrings, alamaodes, sarcenets, broad, flowered, and brocaded silks, velvets. 2. Woollen manufactures, in imitation of those of *England*, which are chiefly carried on in *Normandy*, *Poitou*, *Languedoc*, *Provence*, *Guienne*, and some other parts. 3. Linen, such as *Normandy* canvas, sail-cloth, at *Vitry* and other places; doulassés at *Morlax*, and fine linens and lacc in the inland provinces. 4. Paper of all sorts. 5. Tapestry, which they make very rich and fine in *Picardy*, and near *Paris*. 6. Soap, which they chiefly make in *Provence*, and which is so considerable an article, that when their crop of oil fails, they fetch a prodigious quantity from the *Levant* to supply the soapmakers. The *French* have, for some years past, obtained the secret from *Spain* of making *Castille* soap, as it is called, and have set up very large manufactures thereof both at *Marseilles* and *Toulon*, and have thereby beat the *Spaniards* out of that valuable branch of trade. Nor is this the only benefit which *France* receives by this manufacture; for, as one of the chief ingredients of making this soap, is *Levantine* olive-oil, together with the ingredients of sosa and barilla, their large vent for their soap gives them the advantage of constant back-freights from the *Levant*, with these oils; which, it seems, has proved one great, if not the only means of the *French* advancing their *Turkey* trade upon the ruins of our's; for, we having no such manufacture of *Castille* soap, that will consume such quantities of *Levant* oil as the *French*, we can neither trade with the *Turks* so much to their advantage as the *French* do, nor so much to our own, as if our *Turkey* traders had the like benefit by constant back-freights.

Inland
trade of
France.

As *France* is certainly the most populous and extensive kingdom in *Europe*, so its inland traffic is proportionate, and, in many particulars, far beyond any country in *Europe*; be-

ing

ing carried on with great ease and little expence, by means of many large navigable rivers. Five rivers empty themselves into the *Seine*, and this so near to *Paris*, that goods are brought thither from some of the remotest parts by these rivers. These are the *Marn*, *Aisne*, *Logn*, *Oyse*, *Yonne*; besides the canals of *Orleans* and *Briere*, and by them from the *Loire*; also up the *Seine* by *Rouen* from the sea: so that, by these rivers, the traders of *Paris* can receive heavy goods from most of the northern parts of *France*, also from *Lorrain*, *Burgundy*, *Picardy*, *Normandy*, and *Brittany*, at very easy rates. The *Loire*, without comparison, the largest river in *France*, and the farthest navigable, and on which stand the largest and most capital cities of the kingdom, *Paris* excepted; conveys their wines down from all the wine-making provinces to *Nantes*, and, in return, furnishes those countries with all necessary goods for the merchants and traders of those parts. The *Rhone*, an inland river of a long course, takes in the *Scem* and the *Doux* from *Burgundy*, and the *Durance* from *Dauphiné*, and supplies all the province of *Languedoc*, as well as *Burgundy*, and the *Swiss* cantons, with merchandize from all parts of the world. The *Garonne* does the same in *Guienne*, *Gascoigne*, *Poitou*, and *French Navarre*. But the home-trade of *France*, which well deserves our regard, is their coasting trade by sea, in order to bring the product of the south parts of *France* to those of the north, for the supply of the great city of *Paris*, and of all the northern provinces; and this, indeed, is a very considerable, as well as material part of their trade; and, next to the coal trade of *England*, is, perhaps, the greatest article of its kind in *Europe*, and employs more ships and more people. The principal ports for this commerce are the cities of *Bordeaux* and *Rouen*; but many other places share in the trade by the way, both in the out-loading, and in the return. The first ships are loaded at *Bordeaux* with wines and fruits of all sorts, and all other products of the southern provinces; and there setting out in a fleet, and under convoy, in time of war, stop at *St. Martin's*, and the *Isle of Rhé*. Here they are joined by the ships from *Rochelle*, laden also with wines and fruits of all kinds, as well as with corn, which the adjacent country supplies. Hence they proceed to the coast of *Brittany*, and anchoring at *Belleisle*, are joined by another fleet from *Nantes*, *Sherram*, and *St. Malo*, laden with white wines, brandy, and corn; though generally the ships from *Nantes*, &c. take care to be ready for the convoy, and to be at *Belleisle* before them. The fleet thus gathered, and sometimes even during a war, make up from 150 to

200 sail, and they proceed to the mouth of the *Seine*. The ships designed for the trade of *Paris* put in at *Havre*, and, taking the opportunity of winds and tides, make the best of their way up to *Rouen*, while the rest separate for their respective ports, as *Caen*, *Dieppe*, *St. Valery*, *Bologne*, *Calais*, *Dunkirk*, &c. these are the chief ports where they unload. The goods of their loading is delivered in this manner; and from these places the wines are dispersed over all the northern provinces of *France* and the *Netherlands*; for *Dunkirk* being a free port, all the merchandizes destined for *Flanders*, on board these coasting-vessels, are dispersed from *Dunkirk* by the canals and rivers with which that country abounds. Nor is this coasting-trade only thus considerable in one fleet, but it is passing and repassing all the year, especially in the autumn after the vintage.

It would be endless to enumerate the cities and towns which supply *Paris*, with their manufactures; but though the commerce of this royal city is mighty considerable, yet being no sea-port, it is not the center of the trade of the whole country, as is the case of *London*, *Amsterdam*, and some others of the principal cities in *Europe*; nor is it possible to be so, the extent of the country being so exceeding great. However, *Paris* being the most populous city in *France*, there being, as computed, near a million of people, and near half as many more in the adjacent towns, for ten or twelve miles round it; this great confluence of people must necessarily cause a proportionable accumulation of provisions and merchandizes, brought as well by the *Seine*, as by other rivers, from the remotest countries in *France*. And though there is no trade of malt in *France*, which makes so great an article in the corn trade of *England*, the *French*, drinking little malt liquor throughout the kingdom; yet, as the *French* usually eat more than double, if not treble the quantity of bread, in their ordinary way of diet than the *English* do, so the quantity of wheat and barley may rise for a thing in proportion, and, perhaps, near equal to that of both wheat and malt in *England*, considering the number of people in both countries. The quantity of corn produced therefore in *France*, in a plentiful year, must be extremely great; and then they supply *Germany*, *Switzerland*, *Geneva*, and several other parts with corn: yet, whether an extraordinary hot or wet summer happens, their crop is injured, and a scarcity ensues; and they are less able to support the want of corn than other countries, and are much more oppressed on such occasions than the *English* would be, who, having so plentiful a supply of flesh, roots, and malt liquor, are able

to live with the least bread of any nation in *Europe*. In these times of scarcity in *France*, the greatest quantity of corn brought to *Paris* comes up the *Seine*, being imported at *Rouen*, and other ports not far from that river, from *England* or *Holland*; or else at *Nantes*, and brought up the *Loire* by the canals beforementioned.

THERE is another centre of inland commerce in *France*, which has not an immediate communication with *Paris* by water, except by a very long circuit, and that is in the south, and south-east parts of *France*, and the centre of this trade may be placed at *Lyons*: for *Lyons*, is seated, in some respects, in regard to commerce, like *Paris*; it is nearly at the same distance from the sea, and upon as great, or rather a greater river, though not so happily navigable as that part next the sea, by reason of the violence of the current, and the weakness of the tides. As the navigation, however, respects inland commerce chiefly, it is happily supplied by the canal of *Martigues*, so that there is no want of larger shipping; and, for goods of foreign importation, they are conveyed by the ports of *Marseilles* in *Provence*, and that of *Cette* in *Languedoc*, sufficient for that part of the trade. The confluence of the *Soane* and the *Rhosne*, which meet at *Lyons*, gives an advantage of inland navigation to that city, from a very great extent of the country round. The first receiving the river *Doux* from *Burgundy*, and even from the frontiers of *Alsace*, commands all the trade of that part of *France*, till they come so near the *Loire* and the *Seine*, that a small voiture by land makes a communication that way; and the manufactures of this part of *France* are conveyed, by either of these rivers, into the north parts of *France*, and to *Paris* itself. Nor on the west-side is it above eight leagues, till meeting with the waters of the *Loz*, a navigable stream in the *Gevandan*, which runs into the *Garonne*, their goods are likewise conveyed to *Bordeaux* by water, and from thence by sea, not only to *Paris* but to *England*; also to *Holland*, and most other parts of the world. Next to the *Soane* and the *Doux*, which particularly maintain a trade with that part of *Burgundy* called the *Franche-Compté*, the navigation of the *Rhosne* itself brings to *Lyons* all the commerce of the city and lake of *Geneva*, and all the adjacent cantons, from whence there is a great and constant return of trade, especially from the city of *Geneva*, which particularly manages the rest of the trade from all the *Swiss* cantons, and brings to *Lyons* abundance of manufactures, as well from *Switzerland* as from the *Rhine*, by the navigation of the *Aar* and other rivers; whereby *Geneva* has

a communication with the *Upper-Alsace*, *Suabia*, and other parts of *Germany*. Also, by the *Durance*, a large river, and though very rapid, yet made useful for part of its channel, the trade is supplied into *Dauphiné* and *Provence*, even to the mountains of *Pignerol*, and thence to the *Po*; and by that river, into *Piedmont* and *Italy*. It may be here observed, in regard to *Lyons*, that the distance from the rivers *Soane* and *Rhofne* to the *Loire*, the *Seine* and the *Garonne*, by which the communication is maintained with *Bordeaux*, *Nantes*, *Paris*, and other parts of the kingdom of *France*, make the trade of that city not so difficult as it would otherwise be; and so again, for *Lyons* receiving the *Turkey* raw silk, and *Italian* thrown silk, &c. is likewise easy from *Marseilles* to *Avignon*, where it is embarked on the *Rhofne*, or from *Marseilles* to *Martiques*. This commodiousness for inland commerce is exceeding beneficial to *Lyons*, and renders it a city of very great consequence to the Kingdom; for, as *Paris* is to the north of *France*, so is *Lyons* to all the southern provinces, as *Dauphiné*, *Provence*, all the *Upper-Languedoc*, *Burgundy*, or the *Franch-Comté*, *Neufchatel*, and also *Geneva*, *Savoy*, and the *Swiss-Cantons*. By the same inland navigation, the city of *Lyons* drives a very considerable trade in the woollen manufactures made in *Languedoc*, about *Nismes*, *Beaucuire*, and other places; and which are brought up the *Rhofne* at the proper seasons, and sold at the fair at *Lyons*. In like manner, the wines of *Burgundy*, and of *Champagne* also, are brought down the *Soane* and the *Doux* to *Lyons*, and sent from thence to all the principal cities of *Languedoc* and *Guienne*.

Foreign
trade of
France.

We shall now consider how the kingdom of *France* is situated in regard to its coasts for foreign trade; and how extensively she carries the same on in *Europe*, *Asia*, *Africa*, and *America*. The *French* coast in the *Mediterranean* sea begins opposite to *Perignan*, which is the first city on that side, under the *French* government; and the first port in *France*, on this side, tho' of no consequence, is port *Vend. e.* *Perignan* is a frontier of *Roussillon* by land, and of importance in case of a war against *Spain*; on which account the *French* have made it very strong. The sea, on the coast of *Roussillon*, and onward to *Mont-her*, is called the gulph of *Narbonne*. The city of *Narbonne* is particularly famous for the finishing that great work of a navigation between the two seas, that is, the joining the *Cantabrian* and the *Mediterranean* sea together, by a canal. This work was set on foot by *Lewis XIV.* a prince born for great undertakings. It was fifteen years in completing, from 1666 to 1681, and cost

Nar-
bonne.

cost an immense sum. All difficulties were surmounted; valleys were filled up, mountains and hills levelled, and the boats continue to pass and repass with great ease, for the benefit of commerce. Between the river *Aude*, and the mouth of the *Rhofne*, there lies, parallel with the sea, a lake thirty miles long, and from three to five broad, extending from the river *Erant*, and the city of *Agde* west, almost to the mouth of the *Rhofne* east. *Agde* is a small city on the river *Erant*. The port is small; yet they have some ships, and they export wine and oil; and, within these thirty years, their trade has increased. In the middle of this lake, there is an opening into the sea, which makes a very good port called *Cette*. Here ships of burden may come in; and, the royal canal being carried on from *Narbonne* to *Agde*, the merchandize, which is brought from *Italy* to be sent by the canal to *Bordeaux*, is generally landed at *Cette*; and thence carried, by the lake to *Agde*, and put on board barges for the canal.

BETWEEN *Cette* and *Marfeilles*, the great river *Rhofne* empties itself into the sea. The same of the city of *Marfeilles* for commerce is well known all over the world. It is, indeed, the only trading city and port of note in the south of *France*. It lies about 50 leagues east of *Narbonne*. The harbour is spacious and good, and receives the largest ships, though sometimes the biggest are obliged to lighten their loading a little before they come in. The city is fine, large, populous, and rich, and is rendered so particularly by its commerce; the whole *Italian* and *Turkey* trade of *France* being carried on here. *Lewis XIV.* as he well knew the importance of this city, so he took it into his particular favour, and gave such directions for beautifying it, and for encouraging men of trade and business to resort to it, that *Marfeilles* became quite a new city to what it had been. The key is said to be one of the finest in the world, except that of *Seville* in *Spain*. The fortifications are so prodigiously strong, that no others scarce equal them: by sea, nothing can hurt the city, and by land, it would require 800,000 men to attack it in form. But, after it was visited with a plague in 1723, this city suffered a great eclipse, and its commerce decayed for near a twelve-month unspeakably, not a ship being suffered to pass or repass, nor would any nation admit them to come into their ports; so that the poor were left to starve, and the sailors perished miserably at sea; but it has since surprisingly recovered itself, and now daily advances in commerce. The *French* trade to *Turkey* and *Egypt*, as also to the coast of *Africa*, and to all the islands

islands of the *Archels*, centers at *Marseilles*. They have also a considerable trade to *Venice*, *Genoa*, *Leghorn*, *Naples*, and *Sicily*; and they have consuls at almost all the islands and ports in the *Mediterranean*, *Marseilles* being the only city of *France* for trading in those seas; but above all for the *Turkey* trade in general, wherein, at present, they exceed all other nations, and have surprisingly supplanted the *English*.

Toulon.

TOULON, a port town of *Provence*, is situate on a bay of the *Mediterranean* sea, twenty-five miles south-east of *Marseilles*. It has the most secure and capacious harbour of any port in *France*. Here the largest ships of the royal navy of *France* are built and stationed, and here vast magazines of all manner of naval stores and timber for shipping are repositied. Here likewise are the finest docks and yards, for the fitting out and furnishing ships of war, in the whole world perhaps. In *Toulon*, there are academies for the marine guards, where they are taught navigation; and there is a royal foundery for cannon and mortars, and all manner of utensils for cannoneers and bombardiers. They had in the harbour of *Toulon*, when the confederates laid siege to it in 1707, sixteen first rate men of war, eight second rates, twenty-four third rates, and six fourth rates; all which the *English* had very probably taken, if the *Germans* had not detached 15,000 men to *Naples*, which were intended to constitute part of the army to form that siege. From hence to the coast of *Nice*, and the frontiers of the dominions of the duke of *Savoy*, *France* affords nothing considerable.

Isles of
Hieres.

THE isles of *Hieres* lie off the coast, under the west part of which there is a good road for the largest ships; and where the *English* fleet lay many months in 1744, and blocked up the *French* and *Spanish* fleets in the harbour of *Toulon*; and, on their quitting that harbour, the combined fleets were engaged by admiral *Matthews*, before whom they fled to the coast of *Spain*, and would have been destroyed, if he had not been deserted by one of the *English* admirals, and several of his captains: but, on the shore, no towns of note, or ports of trade, are found, till we come to the cape of *Antibes*, on the east-side of which lies the city of *Antibes*, the last in *France*. It lies at the bottom of a small gulph; but the harbour is not very good, nor is the trade considerable.

On the coast of *France*, from *Dunkirk* to *St. Malo's*, and from thence to *St. Sebastien*, are

Dunkirk.

DUNKIRK, once a very formidable place for strength, and terrible to all *Europe*; but its fortifications were destroyed by the treaty of *Utrecht*, and being since in a great measure reinstated, were again to undergo the same fate by the late treaty

treaty of *Paris*. Nothing supports this town at present, but its being a free port, and the neighbourhood of the city of *Lisle*; which being a rich and great city, and for its wealth and number of people, called *Little Paris*, has no other port but that of *Dunkirk* to carry on its trade at.

CALAIS is the easternmost town of the antient kingdom of *Calais* of *France*, and was once a very considerable place; being long contended for between the crowns of *England* and *France*; but the port, not being capable of receiving ships of burden, has very little use, unless in the smuggling way by small craft.

BOULOGNE is a large town, and stands on the sea-shore; but the river is small, is no port of any consequence. It is a large bay bearing its own name. The channel is here thirty miles over, reckoning from about *Romney* in *Kent* to the bottom of the bay of *Boulogne*. There are some merchants here, and it is particularly eminent for the manufacturing trade, but highly injurious to *Great Britain* for one article of it, the bringing of *English* wool over from *Romney-Marsh*, in *Kent*; a trade, which the *French* find so much their account in, that they have long experienced it to be their interest to give great encouragement to the *English* smugglers; and all the vigilance of the government, which has been remarkably severe upon this occasion, has not been able to put an effectual stop to it, though it is certainly of late very greatly checked. As *Romney-Marsh* is the place where it is ordinarily shipped off, so this town of *Boulogne*, and the coast all along the bay, from *Boulogne* to the mouth of the *Soane*, the principal river of *Picardy*, is the usual place where it is brought on shore. Nor have the *French* the advantage of the *English* wool only, but it is observable, that they have constantly many *English* workmen among them, especially such as we call in *England* master-manufacturers; and these being brought over from *England* by the influence of extraordinary rewards and encouragements, and having the *English* wool to work on, have brought the *French* to a proficiency in the woollen manufactory, that may in time prove the ruin of the like trade of this kingdom.

DIEPPE is a fine town, and the best for trade next to *Dieppe*. *Dunkirk* on this part of the *French* coast. Before the late war, they had in particular a considerable trade to *Newfoundland*, and to the *French* settlements in *North-America*. Their ships often unlade at *Havre*, in the *Seine*, for the convenience of sending their cargoes up the river to *Rouen* and *Paris*. However, when they are unladed, they come with more

more ease into the haven of *Dieppe* to lay up, where they have water enough when they are in, and are laid safe. The seamen of *Dieppe* are accounted the best sailors in *France*.

Rouen. *ROUEN*, being the sea-port to *Paris*, becomes of course a great, rich, and flourishing city. Its trade is extraordinary, and consists of divers branches, in respect both to its foreign as well as home parts, especially in the linen and woollen manufactures, and in the latter more eminently. It has a great trade with *Ireland*, particularly for leather, butter, and wool, and other products of that country. Its coasting-trade has been already mentioned.

Havre-de-Grace. *HAVRE-DE-GRAVE* stands at the mouth of the *Seine*, and is said to be the port to the city of *Rouen*, as *Rouen* is to the city of *Paris*, the merchants here laying up their ships, which are too large to go up so far in the river. It has the most considerable share in the fishing-trade of any port in *France*, principally to *Newfoundland*, the *North-seas*, and for the herring-fishery, not only in the channel, but on the back of the sands off *Yarmouth*; and since the *French* king laid high duties on the *Yarmouth* fish, they have wonderfully improved in curing them in the *Yarmouth* way, to our no little detriment.

Caen. *CAEN* is the first port beyond the mouth of the *Seine* west. It is a small port, but a pretty large city, and, having a communication with the *English* channel, does not want commerce, though not to the advantage of *England*. The navigation of this coast, as far as the island of *Alderney*, is safe and easy; afterwards there is need of good pilots.

St. Malo. *ST. MALO* is a city of commerce, and inferior to none that *France* has in the ocean. The road for shipping and the harbour, are safe and convenient, which, with the commodious situation, open to the *British* channel, make it a place of the best trade to *France* on this coast; the merchants here, particularly in the wars of queen *Anne*, were some of the richest in all *France*, being deeply embarked in the *South-sea* trade at that time. In our late wars with *France*, their privateers have proved a great grievance to us by frequent captures of our merchant-ships. It was before the last war a flourishing place of trade, especially for the *Newfoundland* fishery, also to *Martinico*, to *Quebec*, and, indeed, to most of the *French* colonies in *America*. It is situate in the bottom of a large bay, extending from cape *La Hogue* to the *Seven-Isles*, after which the land falls away to cape *Ushant*. Between these lies the town of

Morlaix. *MORLAIX*, at the mouth of a river of the same name. It is large and beautiful, full of people and trade, the port good,

good, the channel deep, and ships of above 100 tons come up to the key. The best printing and writing paper in *France* is said to be made here. In fine, the increase of commerce has greatly increased the wealth, the splendor, the happiness of the place, which are ever the invariable effects of it.

BREST is a place of consequence upon this coast, being the largest and most capacious road and harbour that *France* is possessed of on the ocean. It is also the best defended, and latest harbour in *France*. Here the *French* fleets are oftentimes laid up, though the greatest of their men of war generally go to *Toulon*. Here are warehouses and magazines to lay up naval stores for 100 sail of ships of war of the line, and some of eighty and ninety guns have been built here. *France*, in the year 1690, had a royal navy at *Brest*, equal, if not superior, to all the naval power of *England* and *Holland* united. It offered them battle, which they declined. The inlet of the sea, which forms the harbour of *Brest*, is very large, the waters every way deep, and the anchorage good.

THE next place of consequence on this coast is the mouth of the river *Loire*. The towns of note on or near the *Loire*, below the canal of *Orleans*, and before it comes to *Nantes*, are *Orleans*, *Blois*, *Amboise*, *Tours*, *Saumur*, and *Angers*, all of them large trading cities. No country, except the *Netherlands*, can shew seven such cities, on the banks of one river, under one sovereign, and in so small a compass of territory.

ROCHELLE, on this coast of the ocean, is a considerable port of trade, though unfortified, for reasons too well known. This city was once the strongest in the whole kingdom, and, on account of its opulence and splendor, for years the bulwark of the *French* Protestants. It supported their interest in the civil wars in *France*, during five kings reigns, and at length defended itself with almost incredible bravery and resolution, against the whole power of *France*, the *French* king, *Louis XIII* besieging it in person: nor would the *Rochellers* have been reduced at last, if we may credit history, had not the *Dutch*, though Protestants, and some *English* ships too, been hired by the *French* to master their fleet, and deprive them of assistance by sea; whereas they were before masters of the sea, and all the naval power of *France* was not able to match them. But their fleet being beaten, and the promised succours of the *English* failing, cardinal *Richelieu* contrived a sea-wall to be made, and carried it on with invincible industry, to block up their harbour. Thus being deprived of all relief, they were obliged to submit, by the extremity of famine, 10,000 people having

ing perished here, in the year 1628, for want of bread. Though *Rockelle* on this occasion lost all its privileges, the Protestant religion being banished the place, and its fortifications demolished, it continued afterwards, and still does; to be a place of considerable trade, full of wealthy merchants, commerce extends to most parts of the world, but especially to the *West-Indies*, *Martinico*, *St. Domingo*, and *Quebec* before the late war: from hence also was a very great part of the *Newfoundland* trade carried on, and likewise that of their *Mississipi*. The *French East-India company* too made use of *Rockelle* as a port, though not always, for the return of their ships from *India*, and for disposing of their cargoes.

Port-
Lewis.

PORT LEWIS is a harbour deserving our notice, and, if it had stood on the north part of *France*, in *Normandy*, or *Picardy*, would have been worth a kingdom itself; but as it stands on the coast of *Brittany*, to the south of *Cape Ushant*, where *France* has many good harbours and safe roads for shipping, as well for war as commerce; such as the harbours of *Brest*, *Rockelle*, *Nantes*, *Bordeaux*, &c. and the roads of *Conque*, *Belleisle*, *St. Martin*, and others; this makes *Port Lewis* the less regarded. It is, however, populous and rich, and has many wealthy merchants, especially such who trade pretty largely to the *West-Indies*; and being a good harbour, is likewise a station for part of the royal navy, and for the ships of the *French East-India company*.

Nantes.

• **NANTES** stands thirty miles within the land, upon the north bank of the *Loire*, which is here a very spacious and noble river, has a deep and safe channel, and makes a fine harbour. It has a flourishing trade, both domestic and foreign, few towns in *France* outdoing it. The great exportation of wines and brandies from hence are the capital constant articles upon which *Nantes* chiefly depends. It is scarce credible to conceive how considerable the trade is, both of brandies and wines together; insomuch that it is an usual thing to see 2 or 300 sail of ships in the *Loire* at a time, taking in wines and brandies.

THERE is no port of any consequence between *Rockelle* and the river *Garonne*, nor upon the *Garonne*, except

Bour-
deaux.

BOURDEAUX, which is forty miles up that river. This is an exceeding large and populous city, and is so spread by vineyards, as to be accounted not less than twenty miles long. The tide flows quite up to the city of *Bordeaux*, and brings ships of good burden to the very key. It stands on the south of the river *Garonne*. The trade here is chiefly for wine, and that in such prodigious quantities, that when our trade with *France* was open, it had been ordinary to see

4 or 500 ships in the river at a time, loading wines for *England* only, and for other nations many more. Hence came the clarets and strong wines of *France*, as those of *Pontac*, *Graves*, *Frontinac*, *Caveac*, &c. being the names of the vineyards, or of the towns where the vineyards are, the wines taking their names from the towns, or from the persons who own them. They have also a considerable traffic ~~here to~~ the *West-Indies*, as particularly to the *French* sugar colonies in *America*, and they have many sugar-bakers, which has brought them a great trade for refined sugars, both at home and abroad.

BAYONNE is the last considerable town in the *French* Bayonne dominions. It is an ancient, spacious, opulent, and populous city, having a great trade both in *France* and with *Spain*, and with many other parts in *Europe*. Its fine harbour in the mouth of the river *Adour* reaches into the very heart of the city, and is so deep and safe, that the largest ships come up to the very merchants doors; and the entrance into it is secured by a strong castle, regularly fortified, *Bayonne* being a frontier both by land and sea, for it is within fifteen miles of the frontiers of *Spain*.

THUS we have seen how *France*, by its situation, has the *Rise and* advantage for commerce of all the nations on this side the *progress of* globe, *Britain* excepted. To the prodigious number of the trade of their people must be joined the temper and genius of the *France*, nation: they are vigorous, active, industrious, and even in *and to* trade as well as war, an enterprising people. So greatly *what* have they increased their trade since the treaty of *Utrecht*, *owing*. that they now carry their wines and brandies into the *Baltic*, where formerly the *Dutch* sent them in *Holland* bottoms; and the *French* bring their naval stores from *Livonia*, *Prussia*, and *Petersburg*, in *French* ships, where before that treaty no *French* ships had scarce ever been seen. The *Hans Towns* now have little or no share in furnishing *France* with iron and copper, with timber, pitch or tar. The *French* also now trade with *Sweden*, as other nations do, and to *Dantzic*, and have greatly increased their commerce in *Russia*, as well as their neighbours. With all these advantages of situation, extent of land, and numbers of people, *France* has laboured, from the beginning of its commerce, under two difficulties, which rendered it next to impossible to produce any considerable *staple* manufactures, unless these difficulties could be effectually surmounted. These were the want of a competency of wool, and of silk, the two fundamental articles in the general manufactures of *Europe*, and such too, which the *French*, from the activity and industry of their people, were well disposed to fall into; but wanting these fundamental

The Conclusion of

natural productions in ample quantities, suffered the discouragement many years, with no little affliction; for they fell into the silk manufacture to a very great degree, encouraged by the *Italians*, when the *French* were masters of the *Milanese*, in the reign of *Francis I.* and though they bought their silk in *Italy* and *Turkey*, as they still do in some quantities; yet all the southern parts of *France*, esp the *Upper Languedoc*, the *Lyonnois*, and part of *Dauphine* were employed in the manufacture of silk, and greatly improved in it, spreading it into *Champagne*, and even to *Paris* itself. This was from about the year 1520. But at length, the *French* conquered this difficulty. By the means of some *Piedmontese*, who became subjects to *France* after the seizure of *Pignerol*, in the reign of *XIII.* they first began to plant the white mulberries in *Languedoc*, and part of *Provence*; and, nourishing the silk-worms with unspeakable industry, and being greatly encouraged by the court in the reign of the late *Louis XIV.* they, after many years spent in the first experiments, at length brought the same to perfection, and produced the silk itself in good quantities, which is now become a natural produce of *France*, as it was before of *Piedmont*, and other parts of *Italy*, who originally borrowed it from the *Asiatics* of *Armenia* and *Georgia*, as the *French* did from them, and as the *English* most certainly might from them both, and effectually establish the same in our colonies on the continent of *America*. But it has not proved the same in *France* with regard to the produce of wool, which as to quantity and quality is far from being equal to that of *England* and *Ireland* in general. The *French*, a vigilant and improving people, being sensible how deficient they were in the article of wool, obtained sheep from *England* and *Ireland*, as they had wool, in order to try the possibility of raising wool, by the means of our sheep, as good in quality, and as large in quantity in general, as our wool is; but hitherto they have been disappointed, though it is said there is at present in *Normandy* another grand attempt on foot to accomplish this design. We are apt to flatter ourselves with the impossibility hereof, yet we may one day find ourselves mistaken. The examples brought from our bull-dogs, hounds, and mastiffs, all which are said to alter their nature upon change of climate, supposing these things to be matter of fact, do not, perhaps, afford any thing conclusive with respect to the article of sheep. We shall not, however, enter into the philosophy of this matter; nor would it become *Britons*, to be instrumental to let such rivals into a secret of that kind, was it in their power. Certain

tain it is, that *France* still labours under the want of this essential production, to the degree that we have it. They have wool, indeed, of their own growth in great quantities, since the success of their woollen manufactories; and in some places, as with us, it is better than in others, as in the *Upper Languedoc, Poitou, Guienne*, and those provinces lying towards *Burgundy*; but the best has been said not to be qualified for near so estimable a manufacture as ours is in general, neither will it mix or work with the foreign wools so well, the staple being too short, and the wool itself weak, and not sufficiently strong to bear the several needful operations of combing, carding, spinning, and weaving, to that perfection which ours does; so that the manufactures, when made of the best of it, are thin, slight, and not of that substance, duration, and beauty, as those made of the *English* and *Irish* wool. Yet this disadvantage by nature has not discouraged this nation from attempting the woollen manufacture in every branch; for, since they have not wool so good in general as ours, they have been long determined to have our *English* and *Irish* wool, which being properly mixed with their own, or properly worked by itself, they have had art enough to impose their woollen manufactures upon several other parts of *Europe*, even for *English* fabrication. This supplying *France* with *English* and *Irish* wool was first brought about by the indefatigable endeavours and profound policy of their great minister *Colbert*, to whom we owe that pernicious trade of owling, as it is called, or the running of wool from this kingdom into *France*. He first set the poor to work all over *France*, in combing, spinning, weaving, and dyeing of wool and woollen goods. And what was soon the consequence of this? the *French* king saw all his subjects clothed, however indifferently, with the manufactures of their own country, who, but a few years before, bought their cloaths from *England*, or, which was worse, at second hand from *Flanders* and the *Dutch*. This commercial minister also decoyed, by rewards and encouragements, *English* artists into every part of *France* where it was found most proper to establish these manufactures; and there they taught the people so well all the several parts of the manufacture, and the *French* were so apt to learn, and so dextrous and cheerful in teaching each other, that, in a few years, they could do without *English* instructors. Being thus able to furnish their own people, to clothe the nobility and gentry, nay even the king himself, for he would wear nothing that was not the manufacture of his own subjects; they, not only in a few years, excluded the *English* woollen manufactures

tures from their country by a law, but began to turn their eyes abroad, and prepare to rival the *English* in all the foreign markets of *Europe*, as in *Spain*, *Portugal*, and *Italy*, as also in *Asia* and *Africa*, but especially in *Turkey* and *Barbary*. To effect this, the great *Colbert* took these measures: he first informed himself of the several sorts of the *British* manufactures sold in every foreign market, of which he had pieces and patterns brought him; and he erected particular works for making these very goods; and, what was another master-stroke of politics, he wisely encouraged the merchants to export them, by causing credit to be given them out of the public stock, that is, by the king, even till the return for these goods came home. This was particularly done with the *Turkey* merchants at *Marseilles*, who had credit out of the royal treasury till the returns of their ships from *Smyrna* and *Scanderoon*; by which politic encouragement the *Marseillians* first supplanted the *English* in the *Levant* trade, wherein we are too sensible they have surprizingly increased ever since.

HAVING thus far given a pretty ample account of the *French* commercial concerns, we shall now consider the inhabitants as to their history, and some other interesting particulars.

*Origin of
the French*

THE want of literature, in the earlier ages of the world, has made it extremely difficult to discover the origin of nations. The best that can be learnt of that of *France* is that it was peopled after the flood by the posterity of *Gomer*, the eldest son of *Japhet*. These growing numerous composed many nations, to whom the *Greeks* and *Romans* gave the general name of *Galli* or *Celtæ*. Under that name they were known in the time of *Tarquinius Priscus*, the fifth king of *Rome*, and possessed a country of very large extent, comprehending not only all present *France*, but part of *Italy* also, as far as the river *Rubicon*, which falls into the *Adriatic* sea between *Ravenna* and *Rimini*, and all that part of *Germany* and *Belgium*, that lies within the river *Rhine*. The *Gauls* remained subject to the *Roman* empire from the time of *Julius Cæsar* till the *Franks* or *French* entered it. These were a warlike people of *Germany*, who possessed all the country that lies between the *Rhine* and the *Weser*, and from the *German* ocean in the north, to the river *Maine* in the south. They consisted of the nations of the *Sicambri*, *Bructeri*, *Saxii*, and *Cheruscii*, who conquered the country beyond the *Maine*, and making the banks of the river their chief seat, gave the name of *Franciæ* to the country now called so. The first notice of them in history is under the denomination of *Franks*,

is in the reigns of *Valerian* and *Galenus*, about the year of Christ 260; after which they are frequently mentioned on account of their plunders and pillage in *Gaul*. *Constantine the Great* took their kings *Ascaric* and *Rogaise* prisoners, and exposed them to wild beasts, for having violated their faith in making war against the *Romans*.

ABOUT the year 412, the *Armorici*, who inhabited the maritime provinces of *Gaul*, as *Flanders*, *Picardy*, *Normandy*, and *Brittany*, revolted from the *Romans*; they were joined by the *Franks*, who by that means possessed themselves of the *German* and *Belgic* provinces of *Gaul*, which the *Romans* were forced to grant them. Soon after this they chose *Pharamond* for their king. He reigned ten years, and had his seat in *Gaul*; but about the time of his death, the *Romans* beat the *Franks* out of *Gaul* again, and took from them the lands they had given them; which *Clodion* the son and successor of *Pharamond* endeavoured to regain; but he was beaten back by *Aetius* the *Roman* general. *Clodion* was some years without undertaking any thing, having chosen for the place of his residence the castle of *Disprez* on the other side of the *Rhine*; but hearing by his spies, that there were no garrisons in the towns of the *Belgica Secunda*, now the territory of *Rheims*, he set out immediately with his army, and keeping his march secret, made himself master of *Bayay*, *Cambray*, and some other neighbouring places.

MEROVEE succeeded *Clodion*. In his time *Attila* king of the *Huns* invaded *Gaul* with a numerous army; for the relief of which *Merovee* joined his forces with those of *Aetius* the *Roman* general, and of *Theodoric* king of the *Visigoths*, who all together fell upon *Attila*, and in battle killed 200,000 of his men, as historians report, and drove him out of *Gaul*. *Aetius*, who was the great support of the *Roman* power in *Gaul*, was soon after massacred by *Valentinian*, who himself was killed by *Maximus*. This put the *Roman* affairs into such disorder, that *Merovee* had time to extend his conquests, which he did over all *Picardy*, *Normandy*, and part of the *Isle of France*. His son *Chilueric* took *Paris*, *Orleans*, and several other cities, and established the *French* monarchy. *Clovis* his successor freed the *French* wholly from the *Roman* power, and gave the name of *France* to all the country that reaches from the *Rhine* to the *Loire*.

AFTER the death of *Clovis* the dominion of the *Franks* was divided into two parts, viz. *Osterrick*, or the Eastern Kingdom, called by corruption *Austrig* and *Austrasia*; and *Westerick*, or the western part of kingdom, called *Neustria*. The former contained all *Old France*, and the country beyond

the *Maine*, which they had conquered, together with *Rheims*, *Chalons*, *Cambray*, and *Laon*, which was from that time a separate kingdom, the seat of which was *Metz* in *Lorraine*. *Aquitaine* was not comprized under the name of *France*, nor *Burgundy*, even after it had been conquered, nor *Britannia Armorica*, at least the lower, as being an independent state. *Neustria* contained all the country that lies between the *Meuse* and the *Loire*, which was again divided into three kingdoms. 1. Of *France*, the capital of which was *Paris*. 2. Of *Oxleas*; and 3. Of *Soissons*. When the French had afterwards subdued the *Visigoths* and *Burgundians*, the kingdoms of *Aquitaine* and *Burgundy* were erected. All these kingdoms were several times united and divided, as the royal family happened to be more or less numerous. But the title of kings of *France*, historians have given to those only who ruled at *Paris*.

THERE are reckoned three races of these monarchs. The first is called the *Merovingian* from *Merovee*, who, putting aside the children of *Clodion*, caused himself to be chosen king, and fixed his regal seat in *Gaul*. This race continued during the reigns of nineteen kings, and ended in *Childeric III.* who being a very weak man, was degraded by the assembly of the states, and *Pepin*, the son of *Charles Martel*, maire of the palace, was elected in his stead. With him begins the second race, called the *Carlian*, or *Carlovingian*.

THE maire of the palace was an officer of great dignity and power. He was at first chosen by the nobility, and confirmed by the king, and was intrusted with the management of all affairs of state. The power of the maires became in time almost absolute; for by reason of the weakness and supineness of the kings, they increased it as they pleased, so that at last it became hereditary. *Pepin* and his son *Charles*, surnamed *Martel*, both successively maires of the palace, were in a manner kings themselves, during the reigns of *Dagobert II.* *Chilperic*, *Clotaire*, and *Thierry*; and after the death of *Thierry*, *Charles* made himself chief governor, with the title of maire and duke of the *French*; in which posts he was succeeded by his sons *Carloman* and *Pepin*, during an inter-regnum of six or seven years; and after the deprivation of *Childeric*, *Pepin* obtained the royal dignity.

PEPIN was succeeded by his son *Charlemagne*, or *Charles the Great*, an epithet the noble actions he performed very justly deserved, for it was he that conquered the barbarous inhabitants of the most northern parts of *Germany*, and established Christianity and civil government among them; after he

he had overcome *Witiking*, the last king of the *Saxons*. He also conquered the *Boii*, or *Bavarians*, became king of *Germany*, and in the pope's quarrel carried his arms into *Italy* against *Desiderius* king of *Lombardy*, who attempted to diminish the papal power, and make himself king of *Italy*. *Charles* defeated him, seized his kingdom, and was crowned king of *Lombardy*. He also conquered the *Saracens* in *Spain*, and the *Huns*, *Danes*, and *Normans*, who infested his own countries, and was finally chosen emperor by the *Romans*, being crowned as such on *Christmas-day*, in the year 800. Thus he erected a new western empire, and made himself the greatest prince in the world. But this mighty monarchy was in a little time reduced to its former limits; for his son *Lewis the Debonnair*, or *Meek*, divided the kingdom of *France* among his three sons, the kingdom of *Italy* having been given during the life of *Charles the Great*, to *Barnard* the natural son of *Pepin*, one of that emperor's children, but who died before him. After the death of *Barnard*, *Lewis the Debonnair*, having taken his son *Lotharius* into partnership of the empire, gave him also the kingdom of *Italy*; his son *Pepin* he made king of *Aquitaine*, *Lewis* king of *Bavaria*, and *Charles* king of *Rhætia*. Though some of *Charles the Great's* posterity succeeded in the empire, yet his family degenerating, they not only lost that title, but *Charles*, surnamed *the Simple*, the great grandson of *Lewis the Debonnair*, was for some time kept out of the throne of *France* also, by *Lewis* and *Carloman*, his bastard-brothers; and after them by the emperor *Charles the Fat*, and by *Eudes* earl of *Anjou*; and though he obtained it at last, he could not enjoy it quietly, being forced to resign it to *Rodolph of Burgundy*, who kept it two years, and after his death the son of *Charles the Simple* was restored. But his son and grandson were disturbed by *Hugh Capet*, earl of *Paris* and *Anjou*, and maire of the palace, descended from *Eudes* abovementioned, who after the death of *Lewis the Faineant*, or *Lazy*, was chosen king by the assembly of the states held at *Noyon* in the month of *May* 988, and began the third, or *Capetine* race of the kings of *France*, which is still upon the throne.

LEWIS IX. a direct descendant from *Hugh Capet*, and who, on account of his various expeditions against the Infidels, obtained the surname of *St. Lewis*, died in 1270, and left two sons, *Philip* and *Robert*. The latter espoused *Agnes*, daughter of *John III.* son to *Hugh* duke of *Burgundy*, by the heiress of *Archambault, seigneur de Bourbon*. This lordship coming thus to *Robert count of Clermont*, son to *St. Lewis*, in right of his wife's mother, he thereupon assumed the name of *Bourbon*.

He succeeded to the crown about 300 years afterwards,
on

The Conclusion of

on the murder of *Henry III.* the last monarch of the house of *Valois*, by *James Clement*, a Dominican friar, in the person of *Henry* king of *Navarre*, who was the ninth in descent from *Robert* count of *Clermont*, and whose claim to the crown was clear, as next heir male, all the other branches from the other stock being extinct, and none remaining but women, or princes descended from the women, who by the *Salic* law cannot inherit the crown. This prince, by the style of *Henry IV.* and *the Great*, annexed to the crown of *France*, *Bearne*, *Bigorre*, and the counties of *Foix* and *Brissac*, which were his private patrimony. Being assassinated by *Raivillac*, on the twenty-fourth of *May* 1610, he was succeeded by his eldest son *Lewis XIII.* whose son *Lewis XIV.* born *September* 5, 1638, succeeded him in the throne *May* 14, 1643, and was crowned at *Rheims* *June* 7, 1655. He died *September* 1, 1715, and was succeeded by *Lewis XV.* his great grandson, born *February* 15, 1710; for the dauphin, son to *Lewis XIV.* died of the small pox, *April* 14, 1711, and the duke of *Burgundy*, son to the dauphin, died *February* 18, 1712, six days after his duchess. They left two sons, the eldest of whom died the 8th of *March* following; so that when the present king of *France* was born, there were three heads between him and the crown, who all died within less than a year.

Character
and go-
vernment
of the
princes of
the house
of Bour-
bon.

THE *French* history since the accession of the house of *Bourbon*, which contains but four reigns, may be said to include almost all that need be known of the general history of *Europe*. *Henry IV.* in respect to public affairs, was a great and good prince; he loved his subjects as his children, promoted trade, and maintained justice throughout his territories. He was not inclined to disturb or injure his neighbours; but, rather contented with his own dominions, he was so far persuaded, that a steady and unalterable balance of power was for the common benefit of *Christendom*, that in the latter end of his reign and life, he formed a design to establish it, and to cut off pretences for wars in succeeding times, by means of a perpetual congress. In order to this, he thought it requisite to lessen the power of the house of *Austria*, by depriving it of those dominions acquired without any just title in *Italy*, which he proposed to have erected into separate principalities, as most conducive to a general peace, and the common benefit of the inhabitants. But while he meditated these great and glorious projects for the good of mankind, and had assembled in *Champagne* a numerous army, which was on the very point of marching to the execution, a period was put to his days and schemes by an infamous as-

passin, in the fifty-seventh year of his age and twenty-second of his reign.

LEWIS XIII. his son, enlarged the royal authority far beyond its ancient and legal bounds. This was the great, the distinguished character of his reign. Before his time, the nobility were potent, and even the meanest of the people were in some measure free; but at his decease the royal authority had almost swallowed up all, and men's safeties and fortunes, as well as power and preferment, depended on the will of the king and his ministers. Yet such was the abject flattery, or rather ridiculous folly of those times, that his subjects bestowed on him the surname of *Just*; as if he had been more careful in observing the laws, and maintaining the ancient and legal constitution of *France*, than any of his predecessors; whereas in fact, he did more towards destroying it, than all the kings that had reigned before him. It is true, this did not proceed so much from himself as from his minister cardinal *Richelieu*; but that minister could have done nothing without the assistance of his authority; and if he had preferred the welfare of his subjects to the possession of boundless power, he would never have given into his schemes. Cardinal *Mazarin*, the creature and disciple of *Richelieu*, pursued his master's instructions, if not with equal genius, yet with much greater cunning; so that in the space of thirty-seven years, for so long the ministry of these two cardinals lasted, the design of rendering the government of *France*, which in former times resembled the other governments of *Europe*, an absolute monarchy, was brought to bear, not more to the oppression and misfortune of those, who from being subjects only, were made slaves thereby, than to the terror and confusion of all Christendom ever since. It may hence appear, that the personal characters of princes are not of any great consequence in altering of governments. *Lewis XIII.* was, in parts, very far inferior to *Henry the Great*, and yet he acquired much more power by listening to the suggestions of a minister, who governed him, whereas his father governed his ministers as well as his subjects. There are very great qualities requisite in a prince who aims himself at overturning a constitution; but passive obstinacy is a quality not hard to be met with, and this conducted by a designing minister will do the work full as well.

THE cares of his succession, *Lewis XIV.* after the conclusion of the peace of *Utrecht*, were such as ought to have been the cares of a monarch; they were bent to secure the succession of the royal family, and to restore the trade and welfare of his subjects, to both which he appeared now very solicitous;

citious; nor did he make any scruple of confessing, that experience had convinced him of the error of his former conduct, and the follies of which he had been guilty, in preferring his own grandeur to the good of his people, and the lustre of his reign to the safety of the state. Before this period, as a king, he was ambitious with respect to his neighbours, arbitrary towards his subjects, and boundless in both. With regard to the former, he had no tie but interest; and to the latter, no law but his will. He intirely subverted the constitution of his country. He left the princes of his blood without power, and his parliaments without authority. The force of his kingdom he reduced to a standing-army; the property of his subjects he rendered precarious, and every rank of them intirely dependent upon the will of his successor, under whom the same maxims have been invariably pursued, though with the shew of greater lenity and moderation, the prince being naturally good, but weak.

*Antient
constitution of
France.*

THE greatest lawyers, and best historians of *France* agree, that the power of their kings was anciently restrained, not only within narrower bounds than at present, but, in reality, they were as much limited as any monarchs could be. That in all governments, supreme and absolute power is, and must be lodged somewhere, we find generally agreed; that, according to the old constitution in *France*, this did not reside in their princes, but in the general assembly of the states of the kingdom, as in all other *Gothic* constitutions, is certain. But, as it was found inconvenient to hold these general assemblies very frequently, so, to hinder the encroachments of their kings while they were not sitting, part of their powers were transferred to certain committees, which gave rise to the parliaments of *France*, and particularly to that of *Paris*, which was at first ambulatory, that is, attended the person of the king; but, in process of time, was fixed to that city for the convenience both of prince and people.

*Rise of the
parliaments
of France.*

The antient prerogatives of this assembly plainly prove, that as representatives of the states, the sovereignty was really in them, for amongst others they had these three. First, they judged the peers and great men of the kingdom, over whom the king in this respect had no power; for in case they were suspected of failing in their duty to the constitution, they were to be tried by their equals, according to the known law of the kingdom. Secondly, all the great officers of state took their oaths in parliament; from which it is manifest, that they were bound not to the person of the king, but swore to him in his political capacity, and for the general benefit of the state. Thirdly, they had the right of registering and improving,

ing, and promulgating the king's edicts, without which they had not the sanction or force of laws. These instances unquestionably demonstrate, that according to the *Gallic* constitution, their kings were not absolute; but all these checks are now taken away. The assembly of the states is a thing no longer heard of; and as for parliaments, they are but shadows of what they were, or rather, are now become the instruments of that power they were instituted to restrain.

THE liberty of the subject is entirely at the mercy of the *Absolute* king; he imprisons whom he pleases, without giving any *power of* account; and, whenever he finds it requisite, appoints such *the king* judges for the trial of offenders as he thinks fit. The great officers of state take their oaths to and from him; so that they now belong intirely to the king, who appoints, removes, extends, or retrenches their authority as he pleases. The registering of edicts is become a mere matter of form; the parliaments do, indeed, sometimes remonstrate, but in the end the king's will and pleasure always prevail. Thus it is, that the whole government of this great nation has been, by the arts of cardinal *Richieu*, drawn intirely into the hands of the crown and its ministers, the utmost pains having been since taken to reduce it into such a system, that this power might influence the whole, and keep every branch thereof in a strict and constant dependence.

WE have heard much of the *Gallican* church, and of its freedom; but from the time of cardinal *Richelieu*, this *State of* freedom is become a mere engine of state, by the help of which *the Galli-* the king has sometimes made use of the power of the clergy, *cane church* and at other times of that of the pope, to extend his own. It was with a view to this, that the protestants of *France* were in general expelled, by revoking the edict of *Nantz*. *Lewis XIV.* was resolved to make himself supreme in church as well as state, the true reason why he would admit of no dissenters; and he and his successor have carried this into execution, notwithstanding the nominal authority of the pope, which was often made use of by them, and cannot now be turned against the king. The clergy of *France*, are, however, a very great and considerable body. They consist at present of 18 archbishops, and 113 bishops, all named and appointed by the king; who has likewise the nomination of 770 abbies, and of the superiors of 319 convents of nuns. This must give the crown great influence over that part of its subjects, which were formerly the least attached to it. The ordinary ~~contribution~~ ^{tax} arising from the tenths of the clergy, amounts to 1,200,000 *livres per Annum*; besides which, in the general assemblies of the clergy, free gifts are so constantly

stantly expected even in times of peace, that this additional revenue is computed annually at two millions; but in time of war the extraordinary free gifts render it much more.

*Civil and
political
govern-
ments.*

As to the civil government, the king has a great council of state, and twelve parliaments, besides other courts, such as Generalities and Intendancies, for the management of the revenue; of the former there are twenty-six, and of the latter more. As for the political government, it is managed by several great councils, or rather committees of council, of which there are at present four, which are styled the council of state, the council of dispatches, the royal council of finances, and the royal council of commerce. The first civil officer in *France* is the chancellor, and the only officer that is not removeable at the king's pleasure; that is, he cannot be removed without being brought to a trial; but the king may, and frequently does, take the seals from him, and put them into the hands of another, with the title of keeper and power of chancellor. There is generally a person at the head of the ministry, either with or without the title of prime-minister, and with more or less authority, as the king pleases. For the management of public affairs, there are four principal secretaries of state, for the separate departments of foreign affairs, domestic concerns, war, and the marine. The principal officer of the revenue is the comptroller-general of the finances, who has under him a multitude of intendants and other officers, subject to the direction of the council of finances. The ordinary revenue of the crown is generally computed at six millions sterling; but in time of war a much larger sum is levied.

*Military
establish-
ment.*

As the ecclesiastical and civil government was moulded in the compass of two reigns, into such a form as made the *French* wholly subservient to the purposes of the crown; so the military establishment, as it now stands, was intirely the work of *Levis XIV.* for, before his time, a few companies of guards, and four old corps, as they are still called, were all the standing troops of *France*. It was by the help of his standing army, that he gained so many and great advantages over his neighbours, and annexed several conquered provinces to his dominions; which, at the same time, afforded him an opportunity of increasing the number of these regular troops, and of covering his frontiers on every side with abundance of strong fortresses.

*Reflections
on the pre-
mises.*

THE grandeur of the crown, which with some impropriety is in that country styled the *glory of France*, appears to be the ultimate aim of the *French* ministers; not but by the wise regulations that have been made since the accession of the

the house of *Bourbon*, *France* may vie with, and even surpass in the perfection of its police, all the other states of *Europe*: but to speak impartially, it is, indeed, on keeping up this spirit, that the peace and safety of the government, as it is now administered, depends; and it is impossible for the *French* court to drop her influence abroad, without manifestly hazarding her quiet at home; so that to expect a *French* monarch should adhere strictly to treaties, and relinquish all views upon his neighbours, is to expect a golden age; a thing that may be wished even by the wise, but which fools themselves can never hope to see. The *French* power was at its greatest height at the time *Lewis XIV.* made the peace of *Nimeguen*, or a very little after. All the succeeding wars exhausted that nation prodigiously, though its views, in some measure, might have been served by them; and if we consider the distresses of *France* before the last definitive treaty of peace, we cannot help saying, that her glory or grandeur, which occupies so much her cares and attention, was scarce ever eclipsed to the degree it had been in the late war: her armies were beaten in every quarter of the globe; her fleets sunk, shattered, and made captive, and her public credit was almost expiring: so that whatever her resources may still be, it is certain, the advantages she enjoyed before the war will hardly be recovered in a course of years.

CHAP. V.

Of Italy, and Switzerland.

ITALY is bounded on the west by the *Alps*, which separate it from the adjacent provinces of *France*; on the north it is likewise bounded by the *Alps*, and on the east by the dominions of the house of *Austria*; on the one side it is washed by the *Mediterranean*, from the county of *Nice* to the coasts of the kingdom of *Naples*; and on the other by the *Adriatic*, and the gulph of *Venice*; a narrow streight divides it from the fruitful island of *Sicily*, which, however, has been in all times reckoned a part of it. From the frontiers of *Switzerland* to the extremity of the kingdom of *Naples*, it is about 750 miles in length; and from the frontiers of the duchy of *Savoy*, to those of the dominions of the state of *Venice*, which is its greatest breadth, about 400, though in some parts it is scarce a fourth part so long.

Boundaries and extent of Italy.

THE soil and climate, in different parts, are as opposite as can well be imagined. In *Switzerland*, and the county of the

Soil, climate, arts, the

Commerce,
&c.

the *Grifons*, the mountains are as high as in any part of *Europe*; the earth barren, and the air bleak and sharp; the plains of *Lombardy* again are justly stiled the garden of *Europe*, as well on account of their fertility, as the serenity and pleasantness of the climate; in the dominions of the church, and in the kingdom of *Naples*, the heat in summer is excessive, to which, however, they are indebted for the richest fruits, and the most odoniferous flowers, as well as oil, wine, silk, and other valuable commodities. There are few countries in the world better watered than this, in respect to springs, rivulets, small and great lakes, as well as large rivers. Thus bountifully dealt with by nature, it has also, from the ingenuity and application of its inhabitants, been esteemed the mother of arts and commerce, in respect to the rest of *Europe*; its reputation is still so high, with regard to the first, that the tour of *Italy* is considered as the necessary conclusion of a polite education; and, in reference to the latter, though the trade of *Italy* is now nothing to what it was, yet the ports of *Genoa*, *Leghorn*, *Naples*, and *Venice*, to say nothing of those in *Sicily*, make still a very great figure; and derive vast advantages to the sovereigns in whose dominions they are situated. Besides all this, the several countries of *Italy* have such funds of natural riches, and the people are so happy at improving, as well as inventing manufactures, that they stand in need only of some favourable juncture to revive their antient spirit, and to make as great a figure as their ancestors did in comparison with other nations.

General
History.

THIS great and fruitful country of *Italy* has been, as high as history records, either the seat of empire, or the theatre of war. It was then in the same situation that it now is, cantoned out into various little states and republics, all living in distrust, at least, if not in war with each other. The *Roman* commonwealth changed the face of things by swallowing up all, and making herself the head and mistress of *Italy*. The division of her empire proved the ruin of it, and the provinces adjacent to *Italy* being lost, the barbarous nations that conquered them very soon became masters even of the imperial city of *Rome*, and divided *Italy* once more into separate principalities, all of which have been extremely subject to revolutions, sometimes from the superior power of foreign invaders, and as often from the effects of intestine commotions; so that no history is fuller of events, and consequently more capable of gratifying curiosity, and fixing attention, than that of this country.

THERE is no kind of government subsisting in any part of *Europe*, of which something of the like kind is not to be found in *Italy*. As to the sovereignty of the pope, it is peculiar to this country, being vested in a spiritual person, and yet altogether a temporal power, exercised as absolutely, and, as is generally supposed, with more policy, than in any other monarchy. The dominions of those two crowned heads (for as yet there are no more) that lie within its limits, are those of his *Sardinian* majesty at one end, and of the king of the *Two Sicilies* at the other. The duchy of *Milan*, once the largest and richest in this part of the world, together with the duchy of *Mantua*, and its dependencies, belong to the house of *Austria*. His imperial majesty is considered as one of the *Italian* powers, not only in that capacity by which he claims a title, paramount to the greatest part, if not the whole, but particularly also as grand duke of *Tuscany*. The infant duke of *Parma* is in possession of a settlement, composed not only of that duchy, and of *Placentia*, which was the patrimony of his ancestors by the mother's side, but likewise of *Guastalla*. His serene highness the duke of *Modena* holds that duchy and *Reggio*, together with the duchy of *Mirandola*; and besides these, there are some other lesser princes who would take it ill if they were not styled sovereigns. The republic of *Venice* is an unmixed aristocracy, still venerable for the wisdom of its government, as heretofore formidable by the extent of its dominions, as well as a great naval force. The republic of *Genoa* is an aristocracy also, but not quite so pure as that of *Venice*. The *Swiss* cantons, the *Grisons* their allies, and the city of *Geneva*, are so many different republics, each having its particular form of government, but owing their strength to their confederacy, which renders them truly great and formidable. There are, besides these two free states, the dominions of which are surrounded by those of sovereign princes, to whom notwithstanding they owe no obedience, or even homage; the first of which is the commonwealth of *Lucca*, in the neighbourhood of *Tuscany*, and the latter the republic of *St. Marino*, in the midst of the pope's territories. Such is the distribution of power in *Italy*; and in supporting this distribution, and maintaining each of these princes and states in their respective rights, so as to prevent their encroaching upon each other, and being overborne by a foreign force, consists the preservation of the balance in *Italy*. We shall now consider all these states separately, according to their different governments, beginning first with the dominions of the King of *Sardinia*.

*Dominions
of the king
of Sardi-
nia.*

THE dominions of his *Sardinian* majesty, considered as duke of *Savoy*, and prince of *Piedmont*, have been always regarded as the key of *Italy*, on the side of *France*; and in latter times this prince has been justly looked upon as the natural master of the balance in *Italy*. Not that his dominions even now, when by various acquisitions they are become much superior to what they were under any of his ancestors, qualify him to give law to his neighbours, or even to secure himself from the bad effects of a general alliance against him; but upon the score of its being his interest to affect peace rather than war; and because while he remains firm to his own interest, reason and experience shew, that he will never want allies willing to give him all the assistance he needs for the preservation of his own territories, and maintaining that system upon which their security and his own grandeur must always depend. His dominions in *Italy*, and contiguous to it, consist principally of *Piedmont*; some districts acquired by conquest or treaty; *Savoy*, and the island of *Sardinia*; of the last we shall speak in our account of the *European* islands.

Piedmont.

PIEDMONT is bounded on the east by the duchies of *Milan* and *Montferrat*; by the territories of *Genoa*, and the country of *Nice*, on the south; by *High-Dauphiné*, and part of *Savoy*, on the west; and by the duchy of *Aoste*, and part of the *Milanese*, on the north. The river *Po* divides it into two parts. Its length, from north to south, is about 130 miles, and breadth from east to west, where broadest, about 94 miles. It reaches from 43 deg. 25 min. to 45 deg. 50 min. of latitude, and from 7 deg. to 8 deg. 30 min. east longitude. It is a very rich and fertile country, and one of the most pleasant and plentiful in all *Italy*. It produces great abundance of corn of all sorts, wines, and fruits in great variety; also hemp, flax, saffron, mulberries, to feed great quantities of silkworms; silk here being a great manufacture; and affords besides good store of cattle, some metals, and, in a word, plenty of every thing fit for man's use and delight; and it is so well peopled, that the *Italians* are wont to say, that the duke of *Savoy* has but one city in *Italy*, 300 miles in compass.

Savoy.

THE duchy of *Savoy* is situated between *France* and *Italy*, on the west side of the *Alps*, bounded by the lake and territories of *Geneva* on the north; by *Switzerland* and *Piedmont* on the east; by another part of *Piedmont* and *Dauphiné* on the south; and by *Franche Comté* and *Dauphiné* on the west. It is a barren country, being for the most part incumbered with the high cold mountains of the *Alps*; however, there

are

are some pleasant fruitful vallies, producing corn, wine, and fruit; and they have large herds of cattle, and abundance of game, venison, and wild fowl, in their mountains, and plenty of fish in their lakes and rivers. Their greatest misfortune is, that they lie open to the incursions of the *French*; and whenever their prince is at war with that kingdom, *Savoy* is first made sensible of the ravages of the *French* troops, and used as a conquered country, though, upon every treaty of peace, it has hitherto been restored.

THE commerce of the dominions of his *Sardinian* majesty was heretofore so very inconsiderable, as to be scarce worthy of notice; but by degrees, and under the two last reigns more especially, things have been much changed. The staple commodity of *Piedmont* is a kind of silk indispensably necessary in many manufactures, and his *Sardinian* majesty has put this under such regulations as to make it rise to the highest amount possible. The *English* alone have taken off the value of 200,000*l.* of their raw silk annually, for several years; but their crops of silk-worms are sometimes destroyed by storms of hail, called the plague of *Piedmont*. The navigation of the *Po* enables the inhabitants of *Turin*, and the adjacent country, to carry on a considerable trade to *Venice*. There is a little, and but a little traffic stirring at *Alexandria* and *Villa-Franca*. Besides all these, his *Sardinian* majesty has gradually and silently possessed himself of all the passages by which the inland trade is carried on between *France* and *Italy*, and having it by this means in his power to lay what duties he thinks proper, derives from thence an additional revenue; which is not only of great consequence in itself, but the more so by keeping the neighbouring states in a kind of dependance, through fear of the injuries he might otherwise do the commerce of their subjects. Nothing can be of greater importance to the trade of the *British* nation, than preserving the balance in *Italy*; which, if lost, must necessarily throw all that valuable branch of commerce, in which we have at present so large a share, and from which we derive annually a considerable profit, into other hands, and, which is worst of all, into the hands of the *French*; a thing against which we have as much reason to guard as a trading nation, as the king of *Sardinia* himself has cause to oppose, as far as possible, the growth of the *French*, out of regard to his own safety. This sufficiently shews, that our interests are really mutual, and that there is nothing of political art in the expediency of supporting this monarch against all his enemies, though at a large expence to ourselves.

History of the dukes of Savoy, now kings of Sardinia. **THEODORIC**, king of the *Goths*, gave the country of *Piedmont* to the *Heruli*, after he had conquered the famous *Odoacer*, and stripped him of his dominions in *Italy*. The *Heruli* being afterwards subdued by the *Lombards*, *Aripert* their 17th king, made a present of it to the see of *Rome*;

but as it lay too far from that metropolis, and the grant was not confirmed by any of that monarch's successors, it fell into the hands of the kings of *Italy*, of the house of *Charles the Great*. *Thomas*, the son of *Humbert III.* and after him *Peter*, surnamed *Little Charlemagne*, the former the seventh, and the latter the tenth earl of *Savoy*, made themselves masters of the greatest part of this country by force of arms; the one in the year 1210, and the other in 1259; since which time the eldest son of the house of *Savoy* is styled prince of *Piedmont*. The marquisate of *Saluzzo* was afterwards annexed to it by the marriage of a daughter of that family with *Charles I.* duke of *Savoy*, in the year 1481.

THIS family is, according to the generality of genealogists, descended from the famed *Figuardo*, king of *Saxony*, in the year 636; which if true, it must have preserved itself ever since, that is, upwards of 1100 years, in a continued series of heroic princes, without ever vitiating or interrupting their pedigree. They are accordingly ranked among the greatest princes of *Italy*, and their family has given birth to no less than five emperors, and four kings. But we need not, for our purpose, ascend any higher than *Victor Amadeus II.* the father of his present *Sardinian* majesty, and who, in his lifetime, was esteemed one of the greatest captains, as well as one of the ablest politicians in *Europe*. His whole study was the balance of *Italy*, which he perfectly understood and steadily pursued. His situation made this requisite, his penetration brought this very early to his notice, and having once conceived its importance, it became his rule of action to his life's end. He succeeded his father duke *Charles-Emanuel*, in the year 1675, and that by a very surprising accident. He was then a boy, and had just began his exercises; his father, who had a true foresight of his great qualities, was extremely fond of him, and coming one day to see him ride, the young prince had the misfortune to be thrown from his horse with such violence, that those about him cried out he was killed, when affected duke *Charles-Emanuel* to such a degree, that he fainted upon the spot, and died in a few days of the fright. His mother, the duchess-dowager of *Savoy*, governed his dominions during the minority of *Victor Amadeus*; and when he had attained to an age fit for marriage, she negotiated a match for him with the Infanta, who

was

was then esteemed heirs of the kingdom of *Portugal*, which was carried so far, that the duke *de Cadaval* came with a *Portuguese* Squadron to *Nice*, in order to have carried his highness to *Lisbon*. But the young prince, suspecting that he might lose his hereditary countries, and possibly miss of the foreign crown he was seeking, changed his mind suddenly, and broke off the marriage. Some time after, he espoused *Anna-Maria* of *Orleans*, the eldest daughter of *Philip* of *Orleans*, only brother to the late *Lewis* XIV. by *Henrietta-Maria*, daughter of our king *Charles* I. so that he became nearly allied to our royal family; and his son, the present king of *Sardinia*, is the first prince of the *Roman Catholic* line, after the heirs male of the house of *Stuart*, but excluded from this succession by the Act of Settlement.

It was in virtue of this marriage, that in the beginning of his reign the duke of *Savoy* went into the measures of *France*, and, at the instigation of *Louis* XIV. began a violent persecution against his Protestant subjects in the vallies, about the year 1685, which threw his whole country into blood and confusion. But it was not long before he perceived his error, and that nothing could be so fatal to a prince, as depriving himself of a great part of his subjects. He was also convinced, that the *French* monarch meant him no better than the rest of his neighbours; and therefore, when the first grand alliance was formed at the *Hague*, in 1690, he took care to be included in it, and ventured so far as to stake his dominions to preserve his independency.

His dominions suffered greatly in the course of the war, but at length he happily extricated himself from all the difficulties he had laboured under. In 1706, assisted by the allies under prince *Eugene*, he attacked the *French* in their lines before *Turin*, beat them, and, by a single victory, recovered *Piedmont*, and saved *Italy*. The very next year he invaded *France* in his turn, forced the passage of the *Var*, marched directly through *Provence*, and formed the siege of *Toulon*, which, though it miscarried, he continued the war with his own forces, and obliged the *French* to keep an army on that side constantly to prevent his irruptions, which weakened their forces elsewhere, and convinced them he was no contemptible enemy.

At the conclusion of the treaty of *Utrecht*, the late queen *Anne* insisted upon the cession to him of the kingdom of *Sicily*, and took care that the crown of *Spain*, the heirs of *Philip* V. failing, should be entailed upon this prince. *France* restored to him the duchy of *Savoy*, and the county of *Nice*, and yielded to him likewise in perpetuity, the valley of *Pra-*

golas, with the forts of *Estilles* and *Penestrelles*, the valleys of *Oux*, *Bardonache*, and *Chateau-Dauphine*; but, on the other hand, he yielded the valley of *Barcelonetta* to the crown of *France*. His most Christian majesty likewise confirmed the cessions that were made by the emperor, of a part of *Montferrat*, the provinces of *Alexandria* and *Valentia*, the countries between the *Po* and the *Tenaro*, the *Lomelin*, the valley of *Sessio*, and the equivalent that was to be given for *Vigevano*.

ALL this contributed to make the king of *Sicily*, as he was now styled, a very considerable prince; and he would have soon become much more considerable, if he had remained longer in possession of *Sicily*, where he began to make himself very agreeable to the people. But the *Spaniards*, on the one hand, could not endure that he should keep that island, and the late emperor, *Charles VI.* on the other, kept up his claim to it, and resolved to take the first opportunity that should offer of re-uniting it to his kingdom of *Naples*. In this dilemma, his best measure, he judged, was striking in with his old allies, who about this time concluded the quadruple alliance. All he could obtain was the exchange of *Sicily* for *Sardinia*, which, though a very great loss, was better than nothing; but in a little time it seemed very doubtful whether he would be able to obtain even this, the *Spaniards* making themselves intirely masters of that island, at the same time that they attacked and conquered a great part of *Sicily*. These events passed in the year 1718, when the affairs of this monarch wore but an indifferent aspect, till *Sir George Byng*, having entirely destroyed the *Spanish* fleet, put it in the power of the Imperialists to make themselves masters of *Sicily*; and so far checked the ambition, and humbled the power of the Catholic king, that he was once more content to abandon *Sardinia*, which, in consequence of the alliance beforementioned, was delivered up to *Victor Amadeus*, who bore ever after the title of his *Sardinian* majesty, and continued also in possession of that island, situated very near his own dominions. It was very far from being an inconsiderable acquisition, though certainly much inferior to the noble kingdom of *Sicily*, which, for the present, fell under the dominion of the emperor *Charles VI.* and continued so many years after, till, in consequence of the resentment of his present *Sardinian* majesty, it was once again recovered by the *Bourbon* family, remains still, and is like to remain in their possession.

As soon as the king found himself in some measure extricated from those troubles and disputes with which his reign

reign had hitherto been embarrassed, he set about the execution of a project he had long before conceived, in causing to be compiled under his direction, a complete code, or body of laws, for the use of his subjects, which he ordered to be published in 1723, and by which, in a great measure, he freed his people from trivial and vexatious suits, and from running into a tedious length of such as were more necessary. He had also projected other regulations, and seemed wholly bent upon such measures as might tend to the improvement of his country, and to better the condition of his people, when he found himself under a necessity of taking a very extraordinary step, which was the resignation of his crown in favour of his son the prince of *Piedmont*. He was moved thereto from various considerations, but chiefly from finding himself so extraordinarily pressed by the emperor on one side, and by *France* and her allies on the other, that he could scarce determine with himself what side to take, and therefore inclined to make a chasm in the government, rather than take either, in hopes of gaining time for his successor. Add to this, that being much worn with the continual fatigues of a long and active reign, he was desirous of passing a few years in repose with the countess *St. Sebastian*, whom he married when a private man, and retired with her to *Chambery* in *Savoy*.

THIS resignation took place with great solemnity in September 1730, in presence not only of the great ministers of his court, but also of almost all the nobility and persons of distinction in his dominions. *Charles Emanuel II.* his son, successor, and present king of *Sardinia*, mounted the throne in the 30th year of his age: but it was not long before the old king, at the instigation of the lady he had made his wife, but not his queen, grew dissatisfied with his private condition, and began to form designs of resuming his dignity. The young king acted a very wise and discreet part; for there is nothing more certain, than that it was with the utmost reluctance and concern he took, by the advice of the great officers of state and the nobility, the only measure that was left for him to take, that of confining the old king to his palace at *Montcalier*, where he remained to the day of his death, which was the last day of *October*, 1732, in the 67th year of his age. His present majesty has since fulfilled the great hopes he had given from his most tender years of making a mild and gracious, as well as gallant and wise prince. At his entrance into the government he met with many and unexpected crosses, but he has happily exorcised himself from them without blemish to his character, and

without prejudice to his administration. In 1733, the death of *Augustus*, king of *Poland*, occasioning a rupture between the houses of *Austria* and *Bourbon*, he entered into an offensive and defensive alliance with *France*, to which *Spain* afterwards acceded, for restoring the balance of power in *Italy*, where he thought the house of *Austria* had acquired too great an ascendancy. During the course of this war, he shewed a reach in politics much superior to his age; but his behaviour in the battle of *Gustalla* obscured all that he had hitherto performed; and the splendor of that victory, which was entirely owing to his personal courage and conduct, threw all his former great actions into shade, since all *Europe* rung now with his praises as a hero. However, while this war was drawing to an end, he had a convincing proof of the bad faith and sinister intentions of the court of *France* to him; for the *British* ministry having concerted with the court of *Vienna* a plan of peace, by which *Tortona* and the *Tortonese*, *Novara* and the *Novarese*, together with the *Vigevanasco*, were to be detached from the duchy of *Milan*, and annexed for ever to *Piedmont*; the *French* court, by a clandestine negotiation, deprived him absolutely of one of those districts, and only left him his choice of the other two, in which situation he preferred the former. These preliminaries were signed *October* 3, 1735, and were in every respect favourable to *France*, injurious to her allies, fatal to the house of *Austria*, and destructive of the balance of *Europe*.

FROM this time forth, his *Sardinian* majesty pursued with the greatest steadiness his proper and original system, of restoring and preserving to the utmost of his power, the balance of *Italy*, by preventing the incroachments of either of the two great families, whose quarrels have so long disturbed the peace of that country, and, indeed, of all *Europe*. After the death of the late emperor *Charles VI.* when *Spain* was determined to push her pretensions in *Italy* by force, and had also secured the assistance of *France* for that purpose; both threats and promises, with all the address of the ablest ministers, were employed to bring his *Sardinian* majesty into their measures. But though his affairs, at this time, were in a very embarrassed situation, the queen of *Hungary* being pushed to the utmost in *Germany*, and her forces weak in *Italy*, he resolved to act in her favour. He defended the duchy of *Milan* against a *Spanish* invasion, reduced *Modena* and *Mirandola* by force, obliged the *Spanish* army, under the duke de *Montemar*, to retire towards the frontiers of *Naples*, and defeated all the attempts of the *French* and *Spaniards* to penetrate into *Piedmont*. These exploits were performed in

1742 and 1743, though, towards the close of the former year, his enemies, by the dint of superior force, made themselves masters of his duchy of *Savoy*, out of which he had driven them some time before.

In *October* 1743, as the strongest proof of his constant and unalterable resolution to support the common cause, and preserve the *Austrian* dominions in *Italy*, he concluded with the queen of *Hungary*, and his *Britannic* majesty, the famous treaty of *Worms*, the only clear and explicit alliance entered into during the war; by the eighth article of which he obtained certain concessions in return for what he had already done, and in consideration of what by that treaty he undertook to do, and which he afterwards most punctually and faithfully performed.

In the campaigns of 1744 and 1745, he afforded new proofs of his abilities, and of the significance of his friendship; and when the circumstances of the queen of *Hungary* allowed her to reinforce her armies in *Italy* in the spring of the year 1746, his majesty very early exerted himself, and, by a most surprising stroke of military courage and conduct, drove the *French* out of most of the places they had taken in his territories, and afterwards joining the *Austrian* army, shut them up in the city of *Placentia*. This brought on the famous battle of *Rottosfreddo*, in which they opened a passage for a flight out of *Italy*, abandoning *Genoa* to the resentment of her enemies, and retiring with precipitation into *France*, whither they were soon after followed by the allies. His *Sardinian* majesty took this opportunity, and availing himself of his good fortune, reduced *Savona* and *Final*, which remained in his possession to the end of the war. These glorious and incontestible proofs of his wisdom, valour, and probity, received the next year a noble addition by the almost incredible victory gained at *Exilles*, by which the best-laid plan the *French* and *Spanish* generals ever formed, was intirely disconcerted, and the flames of war hindered from spreading again into the heart of *Italy*.

By the 6th article of the treaty concluded at *Aix-la-Chapelle*, he was obliged to restore to the republic of *Genoa*, and to the duke of *Modena*, whatever had been taken from them; so that by this means he lost both *Savona* and *Final*, and consequently, all that had been stipulated in his favour by the treaty of *Worms*, as to the last mentioned place; but, by the same article, the duchy of *Savoy*, and the county of *Nice*, were restored to him by the house of *Bourbon*. By the seventh article, he made a solemn resignation of that part of the duchy of *Placentia* which had been yielded to him by the

the empress-queen, by the treaty before-mentioned. But, by the 12th article, the possession of all his former acquisitions, as well as those that were left to him in consequence of the treaty of *Worms*, were recognized and secured, and he likewise obtained the general guarantee established by that treaty for those provinces, as well as for all the rest of his dominions wherever situated, or in what manner soever acquired.

THE territories of the king of *Sardinia* are now the same as they stood at the conclusion of the peace of *Aix-la-Chapelle*; for he bore no part in the late war; yet by the peace, he obtained a confirmation and guarantee of that part of the treaty of *Aix-la-Chapelle*, which establishes his reversionary title, to *Placentia*, on failure of the male line of the infant don *Philip*; or in case that prince or his issue should succeed to the crowns of his family. In the mean time, the king of *France* has engaged to pay him an annuity equivalent to the revenues of the territory in question, and has stipulated to remit immediately the capital sum of those revenues, on condition of repayment whenever the king of *Sardinia* enters into possession of them. In this manner, a subject of dispute, which might otherwise embroil *Italy*, is happily settled. His father, as we have seen, was obliged to accept the island of *Sardinia* instead of *Sicily*: the duchy of *Savoy*, principality of *Piedmont*, and county of *Nice*, are the ancient patrimony of his majesty's family: the duchy of *Monferrat* was formerly annexed to that of *Mantua*, but the house of *Savoy* had an old claim to it, which was revived when the last duke of *Mantua* was put under the ban of the empire, in 1708, when the present king of *Sardinia*'s father obtained the investiture of it from the emperor, which was confirmed to him by the peace of *Utrecht*. Besides these, the districts which from time to time have been acquired at the expence of the duchy of *Milan*, have augmented very considerably both the power and revenue of his *Sardinian* majesty, and have also extended his influence in such a manner, as to make his friendship very essential to the safety of his neighbours; so that he is justly esteemed one of the most considerable potentates in *Italy*, exclusive of his expectancies, which, if any of his family should come to enjoy, would render them one of the most considerable powers in *Europe*.

THE king of *Sardinia* is an absolute prince, and the crown hereditary; but the administration of the government, in the several territories he possesses, is committed to as many councils, and they are governed by their respective laws, where the king does not interpose.

TURIN, situate on the rivers *Po* and *Doria*, is the capital of his dominions. It is of a square form, three miles round, and admired for its spacious squares, piazzas, and streets, and particularly the king's palace, which, for the beauty of the apartments, the richness of the furniture, the elegant paintings, cabinets of curiosities, and library, is scarce to be paralleled. The chapel of the *Holy Handkerchief*, built of black marble, is much admired: this handkerchief, tradition says, was presented to our Saviour by a compassionate virgin, as he was going to his crucifixion, and our Saviour having wiped his face with it, returned it, with his portrait impressed on the handkerchief in the most lively colours. We thought it necessary to be thus far explicit in regard to the dominions of his *Sardinian* majesty, because we consider him in the light of our faithful ally, and as a prince of the greatest consequence in *Italy*. We shall now take a view of the *Austrian* dominions in this country.

THE dominions of the house of *Austria* in *Italy* are now ^{Dominions} confined to the duchies of *Milan* and *Mantua*. The former of ^{the} is one of the most fertile provinces in *Italy*: it is bounded on the west by *Piedmont*, *Savoy*, and *Montferrat*; on the south ^{house of} *Austria*, by the *Appennine-Mountains*, and the territory of *Genoa*; on the east by the states of *Venice*, *Parma*, and *Mantua*; and on the north by the territory of *Valais*, the *Grisons*, and *Switzerland*. It is above 240 miles in length, and 80 in breadth; and is generally divided, together with the countries annexed to it, into thirteen districts, viz. the *Milanesse-Proper*, the *Paveise*, the *Lodesan*, the *Cremonese*, the *Comasco*, the county of *Anghiera*, the vallies of *Sessia*, the *Novarese*, the *Vigevanois*, the *Lomeline*, the *Alexandrin*, the *Tortonese*, and the territory of *Bobbio*: but of these several have been ceded to the king of *Sardinia*, some by the emperor *Charles VII.* and others by the empress-queen now reigning; yet what remains to the house of *Austria*, may be still considered as one of the fairest and finest countries in her possession. It lies in a most excellent climate, and is blessed with as fruitful a soil as any in *Europe*, watered by the noble rivers *Po*, *Tessin*, *Adda*, and *Sessia*, besides the famous lakes of *Maggiore*, *Lucano*, and *Como*. But to come to the most material point, the revenues that are drawn from it amount to at least 300,000 l. sterling a year, besides its furnishing subsistence for 30,000 men, and enabling the court of *Vienna* to provide with governments and preferments, ecclesiastical, military, and civil, numbers of her dependents, and that too, which is no very easy matter, even to the extent of their hopes and wishes. *Milan*, the capital, is not well peopled, but

but is one of the most trading cities in *Italy*. Its principal manufactures are those of the silken and woollen, steel and iron work, prodigiously neat, especially sword-hilts, snuff and tobacco-boxes, buckles, and the like. They likewise work very neat on a sort of rock-crystal, which is brought hither from the *Alps*, some pieces of which are large enough to be worked into fine looking-glasses of about twelve inches by thirteen; but this work is very difficult. The citizens here are very rich, and greatly numerous. *New Lodi*, in the *Lodigian*, is a rich and populous town on the river *Adige*. They breed a vast quantity of cattle in the territory about it, and it is famed for making excellent cheeses, and of a monstrous bigness, some of which weigh above 500 pounds, and far exceed the *Parmesan* in taste; as also for dried neats tongues, and a fine sort of earthenware, not inferior to the *Dutch* delft.

THE duchy of *Milan* formerly constituted the north part of the ancient *Liguria*, and was inhabited by the *Insubres* when the *Romans* reduced it under their dominion. The *Goths* made a conquest of it in the fifth century, and were dispossessed by the *Lombards* in 572. *Milan* then composing the best part of the kingdom of *Lombardy*, was subdued by *Charlemagne* the emperor, about the year 800; but in the wars between the emperors and the pope, *Milan* withdrew her allegiance, and assumed an independency, sometimes in the form of a republic, and sometimes governed by dukes. It was long contended for between the emperor and the *French*, till *Charles V.* expelled the *French* about the year 1525, and gave it with *Spain* to his son *Philip II.* to which crown it remained subject till the death of *Charles II.* the last heir male of the eldest branch of the house of *Austria*. In the war occasioned by the contending powers for his succession, the Imperialists, with the assistance of their allies, drove the *French* out of *Italy* in 1706. The *Spaniards* and *French* recovered it from the Imperialists in 1734; but by a subsequent peace it was restored to the emperor, on his ceding *Naples* and *Sicily* to *don Carlos*, the king of *Spain's* son; and the *Austrians* remain possessed of the duchy of *Milan* to this day, the empress queen governing it by her viceroy or vicar.

THE duchy of *Mantua* is about fifty miles in length, but is unequal in breadth, so that there is no saying any thing of it with certainty. The capital is very large, and one of the best fortresses in *Italy*, both by art and nature. The country, which is very fine, abounds in corn; fruit, flax, silk, and cattle, and the revenue is usually computed at about

bout a fourth part of that of *Milan*. This duchy was also part of the kingdom of *Lombardy*, and was conquered by *Charlemagne* in the year 800. In the wars between the pope and the emperor, it assumed an independency, sometimes as a republic, and sometimes governed by dukes. These dukes were of the family of *Ganzaga*, who held it till the year 1703, when *Ferdinand Charles*, the last duke, adhering to the *French* against the house of *Austria*, the emperor seized on this duchy as a fee of the empire; and the duke dying without issue in 1708, the *Austrians* still keep possession of the whole except *Gualtalla*, a part of it, which by the peace of *Aix-la-Chapelle*, concluded in 1748, was allotted to don *Philip* of *Spain*, together with the duchy of *Parma*.

THE duchies of *Parma* and *Placentia* form together a very considerable sovereignty; in length, from west to east, they are about sixty *English* miles, and their breadth from south to north is about forty. On the west they are bounded by the dominions of the empress-queen and the king of *Sardinia*; on the south, by the territories of the republic of *Genoa*; on the east by the duchies of *Modena* and *Reggio*; and on the north they are divided by the river *Po* from the duchies of *Mantua* and *Milan*. The climate is equally healthy and pleasant, and the soil wonderfully fruitful; the vallies abound with all kinds of fruit, with rich pastures and excellent vineyards; and in the mountains are both copper and silver mines. The inhabitants have prodigious herds of horned cattle, and numerous flocks of sheep; the first enable them to make the best cheese in *Italy*, and, in the opinion of many, in *Europe*; and the latter furnish them with vast quantities of very fine wool. The cities of *Parma* and *Placentia* are the only places of any consequence in the royal infant's dominions: the former is an old irregular place and not very large, meanly fortified, but commanded by a castle of some strength; the latter is larger, better situated, more beautiful, and more populous, within a very small distance of the *Po*, which is a great convenience.

PARMA underwent the fate of the rest of *Italy*, till it became subject to the *German* emperor; it afterwards became subject to the pope, the *Venetians*, the *Austrians*, and the *French* successively. Pope *Julius II.* in 1545, reduced it under the obedience of the see of *Rome*; and pope *Paul III.* created his natural son, *Peter Lewis Farnese*, duke of *Parma*; but the male line failing, the late emperor *Charles VI.* granted it as a fee of the empire to don *Carlos*, son of the queen of *Spain*, and heir of the house of *Parma*, against which the pope protested, esteeming it a fee of the holy see.

see. *Parma* was afterwards relinquished by *don Carlos*, on his being advanced to the throne of *Sicily*; but by the treaty of *Aix-la-Chapelle*, *Parma* was allotted to the infant *don Philip* his brother, together with the duchy of *Guastalla* in *Mantua*, which, indeed, is nothing more than a district of the duchy of *Mantua*, having been given as a provision for a younger branch of the ducal house of *Gonzaga*. It is separated from the rest of the royal infant's dominions by a part of the duke of *Modena's* country, but the communication by the *Po* is, notwithstanding, always open. *Guastalla* is a neat and flourishing place, and the country about it both fruitful and pleasant. Its revenue is computed at 50 or 60,000 crowns; and that of *Parma* and *Placentia* formerly at 600,000 crowns, but it may be doubted, whether the people can raise above two thirds of that sum. It is, however, supposed that these duchies may maintain a regular force of about 6000 men, without any great detriment to either prince or people. These are all the territories that the royal infant possesses in *Italy*; and though in themselves they may be justly reckoned very considerable, yet when we reflect on the royal birth, the high pretensions, and illustrious marriage of his royal highness with the daughter of *France*, we cannot help admiring at the strange profusion of men and money with which this inconsiderable settlement was purchased. The daughter of *France*, *Louisa Elizabeth*, with whom he was married, died *December 4, 1759*, and her daughter by him, married to *Joseph* of *Austria*, at present king of the *Romans*, died the 27th of *November 1763*. *Don Philip* has still living by his late duchess, a son, by name *Ferdinand*, born the 20th of *January, 1750*.

Dominions
of the duke
of Mo-
dena.

THE estates of the duke of *Modena* have the duchies of *Mantua* and *Guastalla* on the north; the grand duchy of *Tuscany* on the south, with the territories of the republic of *Lucca*; the *Bolognese*, and the duchy of *Ferrara* on the east; and the duchy of *Parma* on the west. The extent of them from south to north, is about fifty-six *English* miles, and they are about fifty miles in breadth from west to east. The duchy of *Modena*, properly so called, comprehends one of the fairest and most fruitful countries in *Italy*, abounding with corn, wine, oil, and fruits, very populous, and inhabited by an ingenious and industrious people. The small country of *Frignano* bordering on the *Bolognese*, is annexed to it on one side, and part of the country of *Carfagnano* on the other, the rest belonging to the republic of *Lucca*. It is very mountainous, but far from being despicable on that account, as in these mountains there are mines of great value,

and the inhabitants are a race of people as robust, hardy, and brave, as any in *Italy*. The duchy of *Reggio* lies west from that of *Modena*, and is by some accounted the more considerable duchy of the two; and indeed so it is, if we consider its dependencies, such as the principalities of *Correggio* and *Carpi*, the former heretofore possessed by the princes of the same name, and the latter belonging to the family of *Pio*. In the north-west corner of this duchy stands *Bercello* upon the *Po*, formerly a place of great strength, yielded by the late duke of *Modena* in 1701 to the Imperialists, to facilitate their military operations in *Italy*; and for that reason, besieged, taken, and intirely demolished by the *French* in 1705.

THE duchy of *Mirandola*, including that of *Concordia*, is about twenty miles in length, and five in breadth. It is a very beautiful and a very plentiful territory, full of villages, and the country round about them thoroughly cultivated. *Mirandola* is strong by situation, and has been formerly well fortified. The city of *Concordia* stands on the *Secchia*, at the distance of six miles from *Mirandola*, between which cities there is a fine canal called the *Navilio*, which facilitates the commerce of both. These duchies were very great acquisitions to the family of *Este*, their revenues at a moderate computation amounting to 100,000 crowns a year; and in the whole, the duke of *Modena*, in time of peace, may be supposed to enjoy a revenue of about 100,000 *l.* a year at least, with which he maintains a very splendid court, and when his circumstances render it requisite, can keep up a body of 8000 regular troops. The greatest inconveniency in the situation of his country is, that it has no communication with the sea, which might easily be removed, if he could recover either by treaty or force the duchy of *Ferrara*, which lies upon the gulph of *Venice*. It is to be observed also, that the western part of the duchy of *Reggio* intervenes intirely between the duchy of *Parma* and that of *Guastalla*, so that they can have no communication but by the river *Po*. As this is very inconvenient for the infant duke, it has been surmized that he would restore to the empress queen a part of the duchy of *Guastalla*, in order to engage her to grant the duke of *Modena* an equivalent for this part of his country; and if this negociation is ever brought to bear, that equivalent will be easily found, since the country of *Novellara*, which is likewise a part of the *Modenian*, lies in the midst of the estates of the duke of *Modena*, and would be very convenient for him. On the other hand, it has not been long since rumoured as if his serene highness was desirous

sirous of exchanging for it the countries that he holds in *Hungary*, which to him, no doubt, would be very acceptable, but will hardly appear in the same light to the house of *Austria*.

THE duchy of *Modena* underwent the same revolutions with the adjacent countries, till it was annexed to the marquisate of *Ferrara*. It was possessed alternately by the pope and the family of *Este* till the year 1597, when the pope and the duke agreed to divide the country between them. The pope accepted of *Ferrara*, and the family of *Este*, the duchies of *Modena*, *Reggio*, and *Mirandola*. This family is not only esteemed by the best historians to be without controversy one of the most ancient and illustrious in *Italy*, but also in *Europe*. It derives its descent from *Azon*, lord of *Este*, (which is a small but pleasant town in *Lombardy*, not far from *Padua*,) who flourished in the tenth century. His descendants became very considerable princes, and so continued down to *Alphonso I.* who was duke of *Ferrara*, *Modena*, and *Reggio*. *Mary Beatrix Eleanora*, daughter of *Alphonso IV.* married *James* duke of *York*, afterwards king of *Great Britain*, in 1673, by whom she had issue *James Francis Edward*, born the tenth of *June* 1688, and *Louisa Maria Theresa*, born the 18th of *June* 1692, who died the eighteenth of *April* 1712, and several other children that died in their infancy. *Francis Maria d'Este*, the present duke of *Modena*, was married *June* 21, 1720, to *Charlotte Aglae*, daughter of *Philip II.* duke of *Orleans*. By adhering to the *French* and *Spaniards* against the *Austrians*, in the war that preceded the last, he was expelled his dominions, but restored by the treaty of *Aix la Chapelle*. He has been since appointed administrator for the government of the *Milanese*, during the minority of the archduke *Peter Leopold*, governor general thereof. The prospect with respect to this ducal house is much altered by the death of the cadet prince of *Este*. The present duke is old, and the duchess also, who resides in *France*. The hereditary prince, *Hercules Renault d'Este*, born the 22d of *November* 1727, upon whom the continuance of this illustrious family depends, is not on the best terms with the prince of *Massa-Carrara*, by whom as yet he has only a daughter: so that considering the nature of fiefs in *Italy*, the fate of so considerable a succession may excite much political confusion.

THE territories of the republic of *Genoa* lie in the gulf of *Genoa*, on the *Mediterranean* sea, for 150 miles from the town of *Ventimiglia* on the west, almost to the territory of the republic of *Lucca* on the east; and are called the *Rivieras* of *Genoa*, an *Italian* word signifying a strand; and indeed, the

the country is little better, no where extending twenty miles from the sea, and in some parts not ten. The *Appennine* mountains in a manner cover it on the land side, and separate it from the countries of *Milan*, *Piedmont*, the *Morferrat*, the *Milanese*, and *Parmesan*. The tops of these mountains are perfectly bare, having neither trees nor herbage upon them; but towards the bottom, they are well planted with vines, olives, and other fruit; but the soil yields scarce any corn, and the sea not many fish. The capital of this republic, of the same name, is situate in nine degrees thirty minutes east longitude, and in forty-four degrees thirty minutes north latitude, part of it on a level near the sea, but rises gradually to the top of the hill. The harbour is large and deep, but exposed to the south-west wind, only there is a mole for the security of their galleys and small vessels, and the city lies pretty much exposed to a bombardment; as they experienced in 1684, when *Lewis XIV.* ordered the town to be beat about their ears. There are here large quantities of silk manufactured, also velvets, tabbies, sattins, silver and gold brocades, fine point, gloves, and sweetmeats, which are in great request, as well as their soap.

THE trade in wrought silks which was carried on at *Genoa*, when all the silks made in the *Milanese* and *Mantuan* were formerly bought up here by commission from *England* and *Holland*, is at present extremely decayed, both those countries being grown wise enough to employ their own people in the silk manufacture. But there is another trade carried on here, in which the *Genoese* have so great a share, and have managed so well, that it is thought they have gained more by it than they did by all the commerce of the *Milanese*: this is, their making most of the silks, which they bought before, in their own little dominion, and employing their own subjects; and as the trade they carry on in these goods to *Lisbon* and *Cadix* is prodigiously increased, it is said they flourish more in these branches of it, than they did before with all the rest, not forgetting that they have still a considerable commerce with *Holland*, and some with *England*. They have likewise a very considerable trade in paper, large quantities of which are brought to *England*, besides what they send to *Portugal* and *Spain*, as well for their trade to *America* respectively, as for their own consumption.

THIS republic, for near three centuries, rivalled *Venice* in the dominion of the *Mediterranean*, and the commerce to the *Levant*; but, after the memorable victory of *Chiozza*,

the *Venetians* bore away the maritime empire; yet *Genoa* still maintains no inconsiderable share in the commerce of the *Levant*, and by its medium foreigners carry on the trade of *Lombardy*. What figure the *Genoese* fleets have formerly made, by means of their commerce, may be easily conceived; by the many victories they gained over the *Saracens*, *Pisans*, *Venetians*, *Turks*, and *Spaniards*; as well as from their many large conquests; such as those of the islands of *Crete*, *Sardinia*, *Majorca*, *Minorca*, *Negropont*, *Lefbos*, *Malta*, and their possessions in *Scio*, *Smyrna*, *Achaia*, *Theodofia*, and other towns in the eastern confines of *Europe*; but, at present, their whole navy is reduced to a small number of galleys, which serve only to fetch them some corn, wine, and other provisions: inasmuch that when, in the late queen *Anne's* war, they had but six of these galleys in all, and had resolved to build more, the *French* king sent expressly to forbid it, telling them, that he knew better than they how many they had occasion for.

THE great inducement to the traffic of *Genoa* is a kind of free, as well as a fine port; for, on the arrival of foreign ships, the merchandizes are deposited in a grand free warehouse, no duties of import or export being paid, except in proportion to the sales that are made; and what remains unsold is re-embarked without duty. The *Genoese*, *Venetians*, and *Florentines*, are said to have been the first trading countries who fell into the way of negotiating money by bills of exchange, and first discovered the profits and advantages to be occasionally made thereby. It was they also that discovered the admirable art of accountantship by charge and discharge, according to the method of double entry.

GENOA, as part of the ancient *Liguria*, continued under the dominion of the *Romans*, till the ruin of that empire by the *Goths* and other northern people; after which it made a part of the kingdom of *Lombardy*, and then of the *German* empire, and at length set up for a sovereign state. It was afterwards successively subject to the archbishop of *Milan*, to the *French*, to the marquis of *Montferrat*, and the duke of *Milan*. Its present form of government it owes in great measure to the virtue of *Andrew Doria*, who, in 1527, rescued it out of the hands of the *French*, and refusing the sovereignty offered him, fixed its condition as a free state. Its constitution is of a mixed nature, but seems from experience to be but ill contrived, as having so much of an aristocracy as to make the people uneasy, and yet so much of a democracy as to keep up a continual ferment. The doge, or duke, is elected every two years, during which time he re-

rides in the palace, is maintained at the public expence, has guards and other insignia of princely dignity, and twelve counsellors continually about him, styled the seignory, in whom the majesty of the republic resides; but the legislative power is vested in the great council, which consists of 400. However, the most considerable body in power in the republic, is that which is called *St. George's Bank*, constituted of such branches of the public revenue as have been set apart by the government for the payment of such sums as are borrowed during the exigencies of the commonwealth, and which have never been violated under its latest troubles and perplexities of the state. The administration of this bank being for life, and partly in the hands of the citizens, gives this body, a great authority in the state, and a powerful influence over the people. This bank is generally thought a great load to the state, and as a kind of inferior senate, which breaks the uniformity of their aristocratic government. The people, however, receive no small benefit from it, both as it is a check to their aristocracy, and distributes the power among more private members of the republic; and while the republic kept out of the broils of *Europe*, the bank maintained a circulation for the support of the public credit and their commerce. But this state having unhappily taken part in the war that broke out in 1744, they exhausted their public treasure, on which foundation the bank was constituted, and its credit received so violent a shock, as not easily to admit of a flourishing revival.

THE revenues of the republic are very far from being considerable, nor is its trade near so great as it was; both, however, are still capable of being recovered. The private persons in the city of *Genoa*, of great families, are commonly rich, and have large estates, some in *Naples* and *Sicily*, others in *Spain*, and not a few in the *Italian* dominions belonging to the house of *Austria*; which is attended with great inconveniencies, as throwing them into interests inconsistent with, or directly opposite to those of their country. The island of *Corfica*, which belongs to this republic, we shall consider in our account of the *European* islands.

WE must cross over the countries we have described to the Republic come from *Genoa* to *Venice*. This ancient republic may be divided into three parts: the dominions in *Italy*, called *Terra Firma*; those in *Dalmatia*, and those in the *Ionian* and *Egean* seas, called the *Levant*. The *Terra Firma* dominions are again subdivided into the following territories, *vis.* the *Daggo* of *Venice*, the *Paduano*, *Vicentino*, *Veronese*, *Bresciano*, *Ber-*

The Conclusion of

Bergamasco, Friuli and Aquilgio, Istria, Cremasce, Polstia de Rovigo, Marcus Trevigiana. The coasts of *Dalmatia* contain the towns of *Zara, Nona, Spalatro, Sebenico, Trau, Clissa,* and *Cattara*; and the isles of *Charto, Otero, Vegtia* or *Vegia, Arbe, Pago, Isola, Longa, La Barga, Lessina, Curzola,* and some few more of small note. In the *Levant*, the isles of *Cephalonia, Corfu, Zant, La Praxa, Millo, Gerigo, Tine, Kinolo,* or *Argentaria,* and the *Morea.*

THE *Venetians* have little produce of the country, or manufacture of the people, except the silk, and the silken manufactures; the former respects the land part, the latter the city, wherein many of the silk manufactures are made; but yet the state is very opulent, as abounding with universal merchants; and this is owing to an universal correspondence, by which, as the *Dutch* are to these northern parts, so are the *Venetians* to all the shores of the *Adriatic Gulph*, the isles of the *Archels*, and the sea-coasts of the *Turkish* dominions; for to all these places they send their ships, freighted with the growth and manufactures of other countries, as of *England, Hylland, France, Spain, &c.* in return for which they bring but few goods, except from *Turkey*, whence they import large quantities of silk, which they sell again, among their own manufacturers in the city, as also in their *Terra Firma* dominions, and likewise to the duchies of *Milan* and *Mantua*, and all the countries between the gulph and the river *Danube*, through all which the *Venetians* have a great and flourishing commerce, partly by the help of canals, and partly by small navigable rivers. The trade which may be called their own, and which is more considerable, is by the navigation of those great rivers the *Po*, the *Adige*, the *Adda*, the *Mincio*, and others, by which they carry all the heavy goods they import from foreign parts into the rich and populous provinces of *Lombardy*, and have a communication even with *Turin*. By these rivers also they have a correspondence with the country of *Trent* and *Tirol*, and even with *Bavaria* itself; and by the lower branches of the *Po*, and the canal of *Ferrara*, with all the southern provinces of the papal dominions; as *Ferrara, Bologna, Urbino,* and *Parma*, &c. as far into the country westward as *Modena*.

As they have the sole commerce of most of these countries, and in such a manner as not to be interrupted by any rival nations, it is not to be wondered that the *Venetians* have a very thriving and gainful trade, and that they can advantageously disperse the large importations they make from almost all parts of *Europe*, as from *Spain, Persia, England,* and *Holland*. Nor do they bring any valuable returns back

from the inland countries, for they have few productions in those provinces, except corn: neither have they metals or minerals, iron excepted; nor wool, cotton, or hair, or any considerable manufacture for employing their people: so that the *Venetians* are said to drive the most ready-money trade of any of the *Mediterranean* countries, because they export such great quantities of goods to countries which have no returns to make them but money. However, they receive large quantities of other merchandize from the *Turkish* dominions, and more perhaps than any one nation besides.

We must not forget that there is a trade almost peculiar to the *Venetians*, which consists in naval stores; for the provinces of the *Vicentino*, the *Trevigiana*, and part of *Friuli*, are full of firs, and those so well grown and large, that they cut masts there even for their biggest ships of war: they have likewise good oak for building. In consequence of their fir woods, they have pitch and tar; and the same countries produce great quantities of hemp and flax; so that they have deals, timber, masts, sails, hemp, flax, pitch, and tar, all of their own, which none of the princes or states in the *Mediterranean* can boast of in the same manner. Nor is this solely beneficial to them in regard to their own navy, and to fill their own magazines, but they furnish all those materials, in great quantities, to the other ports of *Italy*, as *Genoa*, *Naples*, *Messina*, and *Palemo*, or to any other places where they build ships, especially those of force; and the knights of *Malta* fetch most of their naval stores from hence. Were the countries this way furnished for trade, and with wealth sufficient to carry it on, they would send hither for ships, and *Venice* would be the arsenal of the *Mediterranean*, as *Holland* has been of other parts of *Europe*.

On the large coast of the other side of the *Adriatic Gulph*, called *Dalmatia*, they have some good ports, though no city of any considerable commerce; neither does the country produce any thing extraordinary for merchandize: it supplies the city of *Venice* with corn and mutton, in great quantities; and, in return, the *Venetians* supply the people with their foreign merchandize. Yet the *Venetians* want many things which their own territories cannot supply them with, and which, since the *Turks* have possessed themselves of so much of their dominions, they are obliged to purchase from them, and from the *Greeks* under the *Turkish* government; and these are as well necessaries as merchandize. They carry the *Greeks* proper manufactures, such as wrought silks, fine linen, bone-lace, and all sorts of haberdashery for the women,

women, who love to go fine, especially in the isles. What they carry back in return is difficult to enquire, but is from all parts according to the production of the place, such as currants, raisins, figs, drugs, rice, corn, oil, wine, cotton, silk, &c. and this is the reason why *Venice* is the magazine for the scarcest drugs, and from whence they are sent over the whole Christian world. As for money, they take little in the islands, the balance in that respect being rather against them.

It may be observed here, that the cities of *Venice* and of *Rome* are, of all the cities of *Europe* for their bigness, the most noted for pomp and shew, the confluence of strangers to both being scarce conceivable. At *Venice*, the diversions of the carnival, the magnificence of the buildings, among which are 400 noblemen's palaces, with the splendid appearance of ladies richly attired, cause a prodigious trade in things otherwise of no great moment, as equipages, coaches, gondaloes, liveries, habits of ceremony, furniture, paintings, and other extraordinaries of that kind. Hence there are more tailors, upholsterers, gold and silver lace-makers, embroiderers, and, to sum up all, footmen and pages, with fidlers and strumpets, than in any other city in the world, *Paris* and *London* excepted. At *Venice* also the numerous throng of gentry, and persons of the first quality, to the carnival is such, that they frequently number twenty or thirty sovereign princes there at a time, besides others of lower rank, without number. Thus, nothing may be said to conduce more to the promoting of commerce than the gay and sumptuous dress of the people, especially where the humour once becomes national, as it is at *Venice* and *Rome*.

THE islands on which the city of *Venice* stands, were formerly subject to *Padua*, when the *Goths* and other northern nations invaded *Italy* in the fifth century. The inhabitants of *Padua*, *Aquileia*, and other cities on the continent, fled to these islands for shelter, and formed a republic. They elected a duke, or doge, vesting him with absolute power; but within a few years the principal citizens abridged his power to that degree, that they left him only the name of sovereign, reserving the supreme authority in the principal families, and their male issue, who are now stiled noble *Venetians*, and amount to about 1500; but do not suffer the nobility in their territories on the continent to have any share in the government. The doge consists of the duke and six other members, chosen by the grand council of the nobility, and of the three chief judges of the principal courts of judicature; these are called the council of ten, in whom

the executive power seems to be lodged; and this council elect three of their own number every three months, who are a kind of state inquisitors, or secret committee, receiving all accusations and informations against persons suspected of conspiring against the government; and may imprison, and proceed capitally against them without calling them to make a defence, if they all agree; otherwise the matter is brought before the council of ten. They have boards or councils also for raising and collecting the public revenues, and every other branch of business.

THE *Venetians* no sooner became powerful at sea, but they extended their conquests on every part of the *Terra Firma* in their neighbourhood, and afterwards to the most distant coasts and islands on the *Mediterranean* and *Euxine* seas. They reduced *Dalmatia*, and the islands on that coast, under their dominion about the year 978. They took from the eastern emperors the islands of *Rhodes*, *Scio*, *Samos*, *Mytilene*, and *Andros*, in the year 1117; and in confederacy with the *French*, they even took the city of *Constantinople* in 1194, and remained in possession of part of that empire for some time. They reduced *Candia*, and the rest of the *Ionian* and *Egean* seas, as well as the *Morea*, and the city of *Gallipoli* on the *Hellepont*; and at length made a conquest of their mother city of *Padua*, and many other great cities on that side, extending their dominions upwards of 100 miles in the north of *Italy*. They disputed the dominion of *Sclavonia*, *Croatia*, *Morlachia*, and *Dalmatia*, with the king of *Hungary*; and contended with the *Genoese* for the empire of the sea with various success; but the *Turks* breaking into *Europe*, took from them *Thessalonica* in 1453, and demolished the wall on the isthmus of *Corinth*, which defended the *Morea*. The pope, *France*, and *Spain* joining in a confederacy against the *Venetians*, took from them their dominions on the continent in 1509; but the pope and *Spain* changing hands, they again recovered their territories on the continent. Their greatest loss was that of the *India* trade, which was ruined by the *Portuguese* discovering a passage to *India* round the *Cape of Good Hope*. Before this discovery, the *Venetians* purchased the merchandize of the East at *Alexandria* and the ports of *Turkey* in the *Levant*, and dispersed them all over *Europe*. The *Turks* took *Cyprus*, *Candia*, and all the islands in the *Archipelago* from them; and at length they lost the *Morea*, in 1715. They are still, however, the greatest naval power in *Italy*, and have seldom less than 20,000 men in their pay in the time of peace, most of them foreigners, both officers and soldiers. The in-

ture revenue of the republic is computed at about eight millions of ducats, but the annual expence does not commonly extend to half that sum. Before the fatal war of *Candia* they had in their treasury fifty millions of ducats in ready money, exclusive of the famous gold chain, to which they annually added some links, which forty porters could hardly carry, and which on certain festivals was extended cross the square of *St. Mark*, for the entertainment of the people.

THE doge annually, every Ascension day, formally espouses the sea, or gulph of *Venice*, by throwing a ring into it; being attended by 3 or 400 of the nobility in their galleys, with a vast number of barges and gondaloes richly adorned.

IT is highly to the honour of this state, that for upwards of twelve centuries she has preserved her freedom, and for a great part of that time has lived under the same government, without suffering any of those dreadful revolutions by which many of her powerful neighbours have been involved in blood and confusion. This has justly given a high reputation to the wisdom of her senators, who, by their great policy and wonderful secrecy, have been able, through so long a space of time, to guard with equal diligence and success against foreign confederacies, many of which they have defeated, when laid with the deepest cunning, and supported with no inconsiderable strength. Her very losses are so far from reflecting discredit on the republic, that on the contrary they do her the greatest honour in the sentiments of those who are capable of forming a right judgment of history, and know how to distinguish properly in respect to causes and events. The common opinion that she continues to decline, and that the very being of the republic is in danger from a slow consumption, has been perhaps taken up without a due attention, and for want of having just notions of the wise and solid maxims by which her government is conducted: for though it be true, that she is in no condition to maintain such a war as that of *Candia*, yet it is no less true, that as things are now circumstanced, she has very little reason to fear it, especially being now better secured against the *Turks* by her perpetual alliance with the *Austrians*. Since the peace of *Passarowitz*, which was concluded on the tenth of July 1718, the *Venetians* have remained very quiet, and have very wisely avoided taking any share in those disputes that have since perplexed *Europe*; being mindful of their great and favourite maxim, To manage the government with the utmost frugality, encourage trade as much as possible, and to preserve peace as long as they are able.

THE grand duchy of *Tuscany* is composed of the territories *Grand* that formerly belonged to the three small but potent republics of *Florence*, *Sienna*, and *Pisa*. The bounds that are *duchy of* generally ascribed to it are the river *Tiber*, the *Apennine* mountains, and the river *Magra*. The whole extent of this country from south to north, is about 130 miles, and about 120 from east to west. It is washed on the south and on the west by the *Mediterranean*, and with respect to strength and convenience, has all the advantages from situation that can be wished. As to the soil of this country, it is in some parts mountainous, where there are mines of copper, iron, silver, and allum, and countries of fine marble, alabaster, and porphyry. In other parts it abounds with pleasant hills, which are covered with vines, oranges, lemons, olives, and other fruits, and in some places there are vallies which produce abundance of corn and grass. It has many little rivers, but the chief of them is the *Arno*. The other commodities besides those already mentioned, are wool, flax, saffron, serges, woollen cloths, silks, tapestries, gilt leather, earthen ware, perfumes, &c. There is no country in the world where the people are, generally speaking, better adapted to mercantile affairs, or where they know better how to make this disposition of theirs turn to account. The country round about *Florence* is excellently cultivated, and the city itself so rich and beautiful, that it is styled at home and abroad *Florence the Fair*, according to the *Italian* humour of bestowing epithets upon all their great cities. The other two parts of the grand duke's dominions, the *Pisan* and the *Siennois*, though the country is not inferior to the *Florentine*, are far from being so well peopled, and consequently from being so much improved. On the contrary, in some places they lie almost waste for want of inhabitants, which has been owing chiefly to the jealousy of their princes. As this humour is now pretty well worn out, there is good reason to hope that these countries may recover, at least, to a tolerable degree, though not to their ancient splendour in the times when *Pisa* and *Sienna* were republics, and either of them very capable of making head against *Florence*. This shews the different effects of government, and that places may derive from liberty almost as great blessings as from nature.

TUSCANY, known anciently by the names of *Ombria*, *Tyrrhenia*, and *Heururia*, fell under the dominion of the *Romans* about 455 years before Christ. The *Ostrogoths* possessed it in the fifth century, and then the *Lombards*, who were expelled by *Charlemagne* in the year 800; after which

The Conclusion of

which it became subject to the German emperors, who appointed the governor, till the pope encouraged these governors to render themselves independent, and accept of his protection against the emperor. There were two potent factions in *Tuscany* at this time, 1240, which divided the whole empire, and occasioned a very long civil war both in *Italy* and *Germany*; these factions went by the names of the *Guelphs* and *Gibellines*; the first appearing in the interest of the pope, and the other in that of the emperor. During these contentions, the cities of *Florence*, *Pisa*, *Sienna*, and several others, withdrew themselves from the dominion of both, and erected such governments as they saw fit. It was about the middle of the fifteenth century that *Cosmo de Medicis*, who had the glorious surname of The Father of his country, assumed the supreme power. *Alexander de Medicis*, his descendant, was made duke of *Florence* by the emperor *Charles V.* in 1531. He was succeeded by his cousin *Cosmo*, who had the title of grand duke bestowed upon him by pope *Pius V.* in order to raise him to a rank superior to the princes of *Italy*, though he had the style only of serene highness, whereas that of royal highness was given to the duke of *Savoy*. About the beginning of the present century the grand duke *Cosmo III.* finding the title of royal highness given by the emperor *Leopold* to the duke of *Lorraine*, applied himself likewise to his imperial majesty in order to obtain the same favour, which was accordingly granted. This prince, after a long and happy reign, deceased *October 31, 1723*, and was succeeded in his dominions by his son *John Gaston de Medicis*, the last heir male of his family. The infant *don Carlos*, at present king of *Spain*, was declared his heir; and soon after his arrival in *Italy* assumed, with the consent of the grand duke, the title of hereditary grand prince of *Tuscany*. But upon the conclusion of that war, by which he acquired the kingdoms of *Naples* and *Sicily*, it was stipulated by the treaty of *Vienna*, that the grand duchy of *Tuscany* should be given to *Francis* duke of *Lorraine* in exchange for that duchy, which was to be yielded to his most christian majesty after the demise of king *Stanislaus* of *Poland*, who was to be possessed of it during his life.

ALL the princes of the house of *Medicis* were merchants, and by their example commerce was always thought in *Tuscany* what it ought to be thought elsewhere, a thing not at all incompatible with nobility. They were always remarkable for their prudent oeconomy, which rendered them without comparison the richest princes in *Italy*; they were great patrons of industry and arts, very attentive to what might

might promote the welfare of their subjects, and omitted nothing that might engage strangers of merit to settle amongst them.

BUT the great glory of *Tuscany*, and the true source of her power and wealth, at least in modern times, has been her famous port of *Leghorn*, or, as the *Italians* call it, *Livorno*, obtained in exchange for *Sarzana* from the *Genoise*. The country about it was formerly a vile morass, or rather quagmire, the noxious steams of which rendered the air unwholesome; but by the skill and pains of an *Englishman*, Sir *Robert Dudley*, son to queen *Elizabeth*'s potent favourite, the earl of *Leicester*, and himself created duke of *Northumberland*, the soil was rendered habitable, the air much less unwholesome, and the port improved so, as to become the best in *Italy*. By his advice also it was made a free port, that is, the duties inward are very easy, and there are none upon exportation. This has rendered it for about a century past the great magazine of the *Levant* trade, and drawn thither merchants from all parts, more especially *Jews* and *Armenians*, of whom many reside there, and have great privileges allowed them. But after all, the greatest part of the commerce was and is carried on by the subjects of the maritime powers, who for that reason have their consuls resident there, and interest themselves upon all occasions in its favour. On this account care has been taken to stipulate in all the treaties since the *Quadruple Alliance*, that the port of *Leghorn* should remain in its present situation, in whose hands soever it was left; which, however, to some may appear almost a needless precaution, since it is of such very high importance to the sovereign of *Tuscany* that it should so remain. It is, in truth, the great wheel which gives motion to the trade of that country, and attracts thither the richest commodities and the most valuable manufactures of *Italy*, from whence vast advantages arise, not only to the subjects of the grand duke, but also to the prince himself; whence one would be tempted to suppose, that respect to his own interests might supersede the necessity of any such interposition: besides, the friendship of the maritime powers is a thing of so great consequence to whatever prince is in possession of *Tuscany*, that the bare consideration of that seems to be a motive more than sufficient to secure all the immunities granted to the port of *Leghorn* from the smallest violation. However, in matters of so tender a nature nothing ought to be neglected; and therefore we have the greater reason to persuade ourselves, that a thing so perfectly agreeable to the interests of all parties will never become the subject of any kind of dispute.

It was never thought an extravagant computation, when the revenues of this grand duchy were estimated at between three and four millions of crowns yearly; one half of which, at least in times of peace, remained safe in the coffers of the grand duke; or if it found its way out, was employed in trade, or lent to his subjects at a good interest. Whether the savings are altogether as great now as in former times, may possibly admit of some doubt; but there is none with regard to the income, which is as great as ever. The grand duke had also commonly 30,000 men in pay, or rather in-rolled; but as they were seldom called out to service, some have suspected, that instead of costing him any thing, his troops might probably contribute to the increase of his revenue. In the situation that things are now, there is a small regular force maintained by the grand duke; and for the sea-service, against the insults of the *Barbary* corsairs, four men of war, which have been not long since built by him, and are kept stationed on the coast of *Tuscany*.

*Republic
of Lucca.*

THE republic of *Lucca* followed the fortune of the neighbouring cities in *Tuscany*, till they purchased their independency of the emperor *Rodolph* for 10,000 crowns, in 1279, since which time they have continued a free state. The circumference of this republic does not exceed thirty *Italian* miles; yet the fertility of the soil, and clemency of the government have proved such prevalent motives to settling here, that the inhabitants of the city, together with those of the hundred and fifty villages, of which the republic consists, are said to amount to 120,000, 30,000 of which are capable of bearing arms. The territories of the grand duke intirely encompass those of *Lucca*; so that a foreign force only can prevent this republic from falling under the yoke of the grand duke of *Tuscany*: nor have those princes failed often to shew their desire of uniting this delightful spot with their own dominions, and reducing *Lucca* to the same circumstances with *Florence*, *Sienna*, and *Pisa*. The situation of *Lucca* being such, an universal harmony among the members of that republic is absolutely necessary, if they are desirous of transmitting to their posterity the blessings of liberty, their darling idol, with whose image they decorate their coins, their city-gates, and public buildings. The republic is governed by a council of state, and a great council: the former is composed of the gonfaloniere, or doge, and nine senators, who are all members of the latter, or great council. These senators are termed *Azziani*, or elders, have the title of *Excellentissimi*, and, during their office, which continues only two months, have apartments in the palace of the republic, and

and are maintained at the public expence. A doge cannot be re-elected till seven years after the expiration of his office. The great council consists of 130 nobles and 10 burghers, who enjoy their office two years. A corps of seventy-six *Switzers* form the doge's guard; the other forces belonging to the republic amount to about 500 men, and its annual revenue to about 400,000 scudi, or 80,000 l. sterling.

THE city of *Lucca* is about three *Italian* miles in circumference, and is defended by eleven bastions, on which 280 pieces of cannon are mounted. Several rows of trees are planted round the walls, which render the walks on them very pleasant. The city is situated in the middle of a delightful plain, which is every where terminated by a chain of mountains; and from the diligence of its inhabitants in their silk and other manufactures, has acquired the honourable epithet of *Industriosa*, the Industrious. They extract from a small, but excellent sort of olives, the finest oil of any in *Italy*; and from this commodity the republic derives considerable advantages. It would be unjust not to commend the inhabitants, of whom there are near 4000 in the city, for their justice, candour, and polite behaviour. Their police is very attentive in suppressing luxury and superfluous expences, too often the destruction of useful families.

THE dominions of the pope, composing what the *Italians* *Dominions* call *Stato della Chiesa*, or, the States of the Holy See, are of the bounded on the north by the territories of the state of *Venice* & *Rome*. and the *Adriatic-Sea*; on the east by the kingdom of *Naples*; on the south by the *Mediterranean*; and on the west by the dominions of the great duke and, the duchies of *Modena*, *Mirandola*, and *Mantua*. The greatest length of this country, computed from *Francolino*, in the duchy of *Ferrara*, to *Terracina*, in *Campagna di Roma*, which is a line from north-east to south-west, may be about 240 *Italian* miles; as to the breadth, from *Civita Vecchia*, in the Patrimony of *St. Peter*, to *Ancona*, it is about 130 miles; but in many other places it is not near so broad.

THE situation of the papal dominions, thus lying in the very middle of *Italy*, and going quite across from the gulph of *Venice* to the *Mediterranean*, is an advantage that, (except the king of the *Two Sicilies*) no other prince in that country enjoys but the pope himself. We will speak of the several territories of which these dominions are composed, in their natural order, beginning with the country that lies farthest to the north-west, which is the duchy of *Ferrara*. This, which was formerly one of the finest principalities in *Italy*, lies stretched upon the gulph of *Venice*, the river *Po* running through

through it, and falling there into the sea. The climate was formerly good, and the soil fruitful, producing corn, flax, hemp, and other valuable commodities, which made the duke rich and the people happy; but now things are quite altered, for the country lying low, and being thinly inhabited, the inundations of the *Po* have rendered a great part of it a morass; and *Ferrara*, from being one of the finest in *Italy*, now scarce deserves the name of a city. The town and county of *Comachio* is no better than a fishing-village, surrounded by unwholesome marshes. The *Bolognese* is still a very fine country, and retains something of its ancient freedom; the capital is stiled *Bologna*, or *Bononia the Fat*, from the fertility of its territory in corn, wine, and flax. *For Urban*, which stands ten miles from *Bologna*, is a fortress built to cover the pope's frontier on this side. The *Bolognese* is an inland country, but as it lies between *Tuscany* and the duchy of *Mantua*, the road through it creates some little trade. The country of *Romagne* is next, lying upon the gulph of *Venice*, and very pleasant and fruitful, being watered by several fine rivers, and enriched by its salt mines: the capital is *Ravenna the Old*, as the *Italians* call it, and, indeed, its appearance speaks it so, for it is now fallen very much to decay. The duchy of *Urbino* lies also upon the *Venetian* gulph, and though it was formerly reckoned a fine country when under princes of its own, there is nothing more certain than that the air is very unwholesome; and the soil extremely barren; the best place now is *Pesaro*, on the coast of the *Adriatic*, from whence it enjoys some trade, and is tolerably well built. The marquisate of *Ancona* lies on the same gulph; the city from whence it receives its name was formerly famous for its port, now in a very low and poor condition; but *Loretto*, which stands about ten miles from it, is famous for its riches acquired by the concourse of pilgrims to the *Santa Casa*. The territory of *Citta de Castello* is small, and derives its name from that place, which stands on the river *Tiber*, and is pleasant and well built. The *Perugian* lies next, and abounds with excellent wine and very good corn. The capital is *Perusa*, enriched by its famous lake well stored with excellent fish. The *Orvietano* lies next, so called from its capital *Orvieto*, a small but beautiful country, rich in corn and wine, and enjoying the best air in the pope's dominions. Adjoining to this province lies the duchy of *Castro*, belonging formerly to the dukes of *Parma* and *Placentia*, but re-joined to the Holy See, partly by usury, and partly by violence; the pope's possession was quieted by a treaty with the emperor *Charles VI.* in 1724; but it is possible the old title

to it derived from the dukes of *Parma*, on a favourable occasion may yet be revived. The Patrimony of *St. Peter* lies on the *Mediterranean*, and is fruitful in corn and wine, and famous also for its allum-mines: the capital of it is *Viterbo*, anciently a fine place, now little better than a heap of ruins. *Porto*, formerly, as its name signifies, a noble haven, is now capable only of receiving barks; but *Civita Vecchia* has still a fine port, and would be a very considerable place, if the unwholsomeness of its air did not render it thinly peopled, and the laziness of those people who dwell in it did not contribute to the unwholsomeness of the air, by leaving their country uncultivated. *Umbria*, or the duchy of *Spoletto*, is a country well watered, and much diversified in its appearance, in some parts mountainous, in others marshy, but intermixed with plains fruitful in corn, wine, oil, and fruits: the capital is *Spoletto*, and there are some other good towns in this country, which is owing to a little trade stirring there. The province of *Sabina*, which takes its name from the *Sabines*, is small, but very fruitful and pleasant. The country about *Rome*, called *Campagna di Roma*, would be wholesome and fruitful if well cultivated; but at present it is neither, especially in some seasons of the year, when the capital becomes a kind of desert, being alike abandoned by strangers and its best inhabitants, for the sake of enjoying a purer climate. A project is said to be now on foot for draining the *Pontine* marshes, which will be a means of preventing their noxious effluvia, and withal acquire a considerable tract of land for the purposes of agriculture.

BESIDES these, the pope has other dominions, as well in *Italy* as elsewhere. The kingdom of *Naples* is held from him by an annual tribute. The duchies of *Parma* and *Placentia* were part of the patrimony of the church; but by the famous Quadruple Alliance, they are declared to be fiefs of the empire, and are like to be considered in that light for the future. The principality of *Masseran*, belonging formerly to the family of *Fiesque*, and at present to the king of *Sardinia*, is held in like manner from the pope. Other dominions he has in possession, which are held from other princes, such as the territory of *Benevento*, in the kingdom of *Naples*, the archbishop of which is the second ecclesiastical dignity in that kingdom; and the county of *Avignon*, in the south of *France*, in which, while they were deprived of *Rome*, the popes themselves resided, who still govern it by a vice-legat; and this, in every respect, is a very considerable acquisition, of which the popes are particularly tender, and which is the only part of their possessions obtained in the way of a fair purchase.

HAVING

The Conclusion of

HAVING thus fairly and clearly stated the just extent of the pope's dominions, we might think, that, after the two crowned heads, he is the most considerable power in *Italy*; and yet, though his government is truly despotic, and his subjects the hardest used of any in *Italy*, his revenue is below that of any other prince; for it has never been computed at above two millions of *Roman* crowns; whereas *Tuscany*, that has not half the extent of territory produces twice as much to the grand duke. His regular troops are now only fit for shew, hardly any of his fortresses fit a state of defence; and though we sometimes hear of the pope's galleys, his naval power is very inconsiderable. We must, however, in justice to some of the last popes, allow, that they have endeavoured to correct the errors of their predecessors, and that their subjects have lived much easier under them; but then these amendments have extended no farther than to keep things from growing worse, and much more must be done before they can be expected to grow better.

HITHERTO we have considered only the state of the temporal monarchy of the pope, but if we take a view of his spiritual monarchy, we shall find, that though, like some of the leaning towers which have made so much noise in *Italy*, it seems since the Reformation to carry evident marks of weakness; yet, in fact, it is still a structure very strong in itself, contrived with great skill, and supported with much art. If in other monarchies princes have pretended to a Divine right, the pope goes still farther, and claims a kind of Divine power, by which he is raised as much above other princes, as those princes are above their people. This claim, together with the title of Holiness, having the recommendation of a long prescription, cannot but excite an high veneration in the minds of such as believe it. The papal character being given with the greatest ceremony by those who are presumed to be the best judges of religion and religious interests, seems, in the opinion of the multitude, to alter the very name of him who is adorned therewith, and to transform him from a man of like passions with themselves into a sacred person. It is true, that in Protestant countries, as nothing of this is believed, so it is very hard to be understood. Yet the fact is beyond dispute, and whatever wiser persons in popish kingdoms may conceive, the bulk of the people have the highest reverence for the Holy Father.

THE close connection between the clergy in all popish countries and the court of *Rome*, joined to the occasional benefits that monarchs themselves may receive by bulls from the Holy See, makes them unwilling to interpose, or break

off that commerce which their subjects have with *Rome*, that upon certain occasions they may derive favours from thence, which may easily procure what otherwise might with difficulty be forced by their own authority. We may add to this another reason, which is, that the popish princes cherish the spiritual power of the pope, as the means of preserving unity in religion, and thereby preventing religious disputes, which very seldom disturb the church, without disturbing the state also. Thus it appears, that, independent of enthusiasm and superstition, political principles have no small share in promoting that adherence to the see of *Rome*, which, at first sight, seems so irreconcilable to the absolute authority of sovereign princes, and which, notwithstanding by their dextrous management, is often made to co-operate therewith.

In these points of view, one may with great truth and impartiality venture to assert, that the whole scheme of the *Romish* religion is admirably well adjusted to maintain, in every respect, the power of the supreme head. He is reputed by many doctors of the church of *Rome* infallible, that his decisions may have the greater weight; the traditions of the church, which with the members of it pass for a rule of faith, are subject to his controul; all religious doctrines are liable to his censure; the power of absolution, even in the highest cases, is attributed to him; he dispenses the spiritual treasures of the church, such as pardons and indulgences; he grants dispensations of all kinds; he regulates fasts and feasts at his pleasure: in a word, being reputed the successor of *St. Peter*, and the visible head of the Christian church, he has prerogatives without bounds, and without number; so that it is not in the least surprising, that so much power, directed by the great policy of its spiritual forces, should be able to perform such mighty things, and to preserve itself for so many ages. These spiritual forces are the several ranks and orders of men, subject in an especial manner to the Holy See. In the first class of these stand the cardinals, who are acknowledged princes of the church, and pretend to be next in dignity to crowned heads. They were originally no more than the parish priests of *Rome*, and their number sometimes greater, sometimes less; but now fixed to seventy-two, in allusion to Christ's disciples. Heretofore a cardinal was content to be stiled His Excellency; but now they assume the title of Eminence, which was formerly given to Princes, and thereupon the latter took the title of Highness. The cardinals are of all nations, that the influence arising from the hopes of the dignity may be the more extensive. The

The Conclusion of

nomination to hats by crowned heads is a new stroke of *Roman* policy, which heightens the dependence upon the Holy See, while it seems to lessen the Papal authority. The majority, however, are always *Italians*, to prevent the throne from being filled by a stranger; and it is provided, that in all elections the person chosen shall have the voices of two thirds of those who enter the conclave, that there may never be a strong faction against the pope among the cardinals, which might be attended with ill consequences. All the subordinate dignities of the church may be considered as the nobility in the pope's spiritual empire, but in all others, so in this, the strength of the monarchy consists in the number of its subjects, and if we take into our view the secular and regular clergy in the church of *Rome*, the former bound by the most sacred ties, and the latter not by vows only, but by their interests, to the obedience of the Holy See, we cannot but entertain a high idea of its power, since not long ago it was the calculation of a certain sovereign pontiff, that in *Europe* he had 300,000 parishes, and 50,000 convents subject to his jurisdiction. The constant resort of all these to *Rome* upon different occasions, must carry thither annually an immense treasure. The present pope, late cardinal *Charles Rezzonico*, and bishop of *Padua*, is styled *Clement XIII*. He was born at *Venice*, the 7th of *March*, 1693, and was elected pope the 6th of *July*, 1758.

• *ROME*, the capital of the pope's dominions and of *Italy*, stands on the river *Tiber*, about sixteen miles north-east of the *Tuscan-Sea*. The walls are about twelve miles in circumference, as they were in the time of the *Romans*; but not a third part of the ground within the walls is now built upon; the rest is taken up with vineyards and gardens; and the inhabitants are computed to amount to 120,000 souls. There are five bridges over the river, twenty gates, and 300 antique towers still remaining. The castle of *S. Angelo* is a modern fortification, but of no great strength, and serves rather to keep the inhabitants in awe, than to demand them against foreign enemies. Modern *Rome* stands fourteen or fifteen feet higher than the old city, being built on the ruins of the former, and is much more upon a level than the old city was, great part of the hills being washed down into the vallies, insomuch, that the *Tarpeian* rock, which was once a terrible precipice from whence malefactors were thrown, is not now more than twenty feet high. The city is generally magnificently built; the streets spacious, and adorned with 200 fine churches, and a vast number of palaces and convents; and the triumphal arches, pillars, obelisks, statues, and

and fountains, are no small addition to its beauty; but there are other streets as meanly built as in any town whatever. The greatest curiosities in *Rome* are the ancient theatres and amphitheatres, Pagan temples; triumphal arches, baths, aqueducts, fountains, catacombs, obelisks, cirques, sepulchres, bridges, churches, palaces, statues, paintings, piazzas, colleges, and hospitals. 'Tis said that the people of this city are more obliging than in any town of *Europe*, and that an universal civility reigns here. They are not in the least possessed with a spirit of bigotry or persecution against strangers of any country or religion whatever. The city is extremely well supplied with water by their noble aqueducts and fountains, and there is great plenty of all manner of provisions, as corn, flesh, fish, fowl, and fruits; and the greatest variety of wines that are to be met with any where: in the midst of all this variety, the people are extremely sober; never sitting down purely to drink, and very seldom drinking wine without water.

NAPLES is by far the largest state in *Italy*. It is bounded Kingdom on the north-side by the *Adriatick-Sea*, on the south by the of *Naples*, *Tuscan*, on the west by the Ecclesiastical state, and on the east by the mouth of the *Adriatic* and the *Mediterranean*. The air and soil are extremely delightful and excellent in most places; and the country in general is very rich, fertile, and well-watered, with rivers and springs, which flow through it from both sides of the *Appennines*; these rivers are, indeed, commonly so rapid, that they may be rather called torrents. The land produces excellent wines, especially that emphatically called *Lachrymæ Christi*. They have, in several parts, plenty of corn, but not sufficient for the consumption of the country, and the harvest in *Sicily* failing in 1763, occasioned the year following, a plague and a famine in *Naples*. They have likewise oil, rice, and pretty good pasture; and the *Neapolitan* horses are in no small request. Their almonds, olives, figs, citrons, oranges, pomegranates, grapes, and other fruits, are very good and in great plenty; and so are their flax, hemp, pulse, anise, coriander, and other seeds. The air is, indeed, in some places excessively hot, especially on the south-side of the *Appennines*, where the mountains reflect the sun's heat with such vehemence, that it is hardly to be borne in the three or four hot months of the year; but the north side of them is quite temperate, healthy, and delightful. They are sometimes annoyed with the locust.

THE far greater part of the provinces into which this kingdom is divided, have advantages peculiar to themselves. For instance, the air of the Hither Principality is so serene and

The Conclusion of

and healthy, that people live in it to a prodigious age; and the Farther Principality abounds in cattle more than any other, and all its fruits are excellent. The *Basilicate* is famed for its fine saffron, honey, and wax; *Calabria* for its plenty of good manna; the *Hither* for corn, wines, and mulberries, and the *Farther* for its fine honey and beautiful horses. *Otranto* is said to produce as much oil as would supply all *Italy*. *Molise* abounds with such a quantity of venison, that it sells cheaper there than beef or mutton. The territories of *Lucera*, *Campania*, and some others, are blessed with so rich a soil, and excellent a temperate, that they produce the same flowers twice a year. The *Bruzzi*, especially the *Hither*, besides being the coolest part of the kingdom, produces great quantity of corn, wines, &c., and saffron. The other three provinces not only come short of all those conveniences mentioned in the rest, but have, moreover, some grievous disadvantages peculiar to them; as, in the *Capitate*, the soil is dry, sandy, and in many places barren, and the climate unhealky. In *Apulia*, the heat is so excessive, and the people and cattle plagued with such swarms of venomous flies, that it is scarce habitable. In the province of *Bari* the air is pretty temperate; but the people are generally infested with scorpions, vipers, and serpents, especially the tarantula, which renders their territory as uncomfortable as that of *Apulia*.

• THE capital, of the same name with the kingdom, is situated 140 miles south-east of *Rome*. It is seven miles in circumference within the walls, and as much more, if the suburbs are included, and contains about 300,000 inhabitants. It stands on an eminence, rising gradually from the sea to a moderate height, on a fine bay of the sea of thirty miles diameter; and the islands which lie before it form a secure and commodious harbour. On the east is a large plain, on the farther side of which is mount *Vesuvius*, and on the west a large hill, on which stand the castle of *St. Elmo*, and a *Carthusian* monastery, from whence there is the finest prospect in the world. Here it is seldom cold in winter; and in summer the cool breezes from the mountains and the sea make the hottest part of it tolerable; nor is the sea subject to storms; and the shore is so bold, that large ships may lie close to the quays. The buildings are magnificent and elegant, and inhabited by people of distinction; nor can there be in all respects a more desirable situation, did not the eruptions of *Vesuvius*, and earthquakes, sometimes disturb their quiet. This mount, within a mile and a half of the top, is covered so thick with the ashes of the burnt earth, and grows so steep,

that it is very difficult to ascend it, and sometimes it continues on fire for the better part of a month, throwing out burning matter with such force, that some of it falls at thirty miles distance; and a vast quantity of melted minerals, mixed with other matter, runs down like a river for three miles, carrying every thing before it which lies in its way; and sometimes such quantities of cinders and ashes are thrown out, that it is dark at *Naples* at noon day.

M. DE LA CONDMINE observes in his Journal of a Tour to *Italy*, that we meet every step we take, on the road from *Naples* to *Rome*, and from *Rome* to *Viterbo*, *Loretto*, and other parts, productions like the lava of *Vesuvius*, whence he presumes it follows, that all this part of *Italy* has been overturned by volcanoes. These plains, which at present appear smiling and fertile, covered with olive-trees, mulberry-trees, and vineyards, as are also to this very day even the sides of *Vesuvius*, have formerly been, like them, overrun with burning waves, and like them bear not only in their bowels, but even on their surface, the vestiges of those torrents of fire, the billows of which are at present grown cold again and condensed. It is well known, adds he, that *Naples* is paved with this lava; but it is surprising, that no body has yet remarked that the pavement of *Rome* is also composed of the same materials. As much may be said of the pavement of the greater part of the ancient *Roman* highways, and perhaps of all those of which any vestiges are remaining from *Rome* to *Naples*, as well as on the road from *Naples* to *Pizzuoli* and *Cumea*. In short, it is the same with the *Appian* way, which still subsists, and makes a part of the high road from *Rome* to *Naples*. This antique pavement is intirely composed of lava. We shall be less surpris'd at this, when we come to know that the foundations of the houses in the subterranean city of *Herculaneum*, built now 2000 years ago, are pure lava. This proves evidently, that the great eruptions of *Vesuvius* are not all of them posterior to that which swallowed up the city of *Herculaneum*, and that vast conflagrations have happened anterior to all historical monuments. But though the city of *Herculaneum* is, in fact, buried under several strata of lava, properly so called, yet we must not imagine, that its streets, squares, and buildings are covered with lava: were this the case, neither the pick-axe nor chisel would be able to penetrate there. The matter with which the interior parts of the city are filled has never been either fused or liquid. It is only one immense mass of cinders, earth, gravel, sand, coal, pumice-stones, and other materials, launched forth through the mouth of the volcano

The Conclusion of

at the time of its explosion, and fallen again in heaps in all the circumjacent parts. These at first buried all the houses; by degrees they penetrated into the interior parts, as well by their own proper weight, as by the assistance of wind and rains, and lastly, by the roofs and timbers giving way. The mixture being united by the infiltration of the waters, has condensed in process of time, and formed a kind of sand-stone, more or less hard, but everywhere easy to be dug through.

- THE kingdom of Naples was, probably, first peopled from Greece, which lies but a little to the eastward of it: certain it is, that the Greeks sent several colonies thither afterwards, and gave it the name of *Magna Græcia*.

Italy, was subdued by the *Romans*; and, on the decline of that empire, in the fifth century, the eastern emperor possessed himself of one part of *Naples*, and the *Goths* of the other. The *Lombards* dispossessed the *Goths* of their part, and remained masters of it, until they were expelled by *Charlemagne*, about the year 800. In the ninth and tenth centuries, the *Saracens* subdued a great part of *Naples*; but the pope, with the assistance of other Christian powers, drove out the *Saracens* again: in which service, *Tancred* the *Norman*, and his twelve sons, having had a great share, part of *Naples* was given them by the pope. *Robert*, the son of *Tancred*, was created duke of *Apulia* and *Calabria* by the *German* emperor; and *Roger*, the son of *Robert*, was made king of the *Two Sicilies*, viz. *Naples* and *Sicily*. The heirs of *Tancred* enjoyed this crown till the year 1166, when, happening to disoblige the pope, he introduced the earl of *Anjou* and the *French*, and his posterity were kings of *Naples* and *Sicily*, till the *Spaniards* dispossessed them about the year 1504. The kings of *Spain* continued sovereigns of *Naples* till 1707, when the *Spaniards* were driven from thence by the Imperialists, and *Naples* was confirmed to the emperor *Charles VI.* by the treaty of *Utrecht*, in 1713. The *French*, *Spaniards*, and *Sardinians*, entering into a war with the emperor, in 1734, reduced *Naples*, and made don *Charles*, the king of *Spain*'s son, king of *Naples*; and he was confirmed in that throne by the emperor, at a subsequent treaty. He continued in possession of that kingdom till his late accession to the crown of *Spain*, having procured his third son *Ferdinand*, born the 12th of *January*, 1751, to be made king in his room. A regency composed of the most illustrious persons in the kingdom is appointed to conduct affairs during the minority of this prince.

THE dignified clergy and nobility of this kingdom are very numerous. These are, it is said, 25 archbishops, 125 bishops, and 300 princes, dukes, marquisses, and earls. The clergy possess one third of the kingdom; the crown, nobility, and gentry, the rest; the peasants have scarce any thing they can call their own; they are subjects and vassals to their respective lords, manure their lands, plant their vineyards and olive-yards, and are allowed only a subsistence sufficient to enable them to perform their daily drudgery, and receive justice in their lords courts in cities that are not capital, inasmuch that every lord or gentleman, who is proprietor of the soil, is sovereign of the people who live upon his estate. The *Neapolitans* have a numerous militia, the nobility and gentry holding their lands by military tenures; but these are little depended on, and when called out, the king usually maintaining 15,000 regular troops in time of peace, and being able to raise twice that number in time of war. The revenues of the crown are computed to amount to one million sterling.

THE goodness of the port of *Naples* draws thither a great number of foreign shipping. They were daily, under the late reign of *don Carlos*, endeavouring to render the same more grand and magnificent: its principal trade consists in divers sorts of silk stuffs, raw silk, knit silk stockings and waistcoats; oils of various sorts, sulphur after the *Calabrian* manner, rosemary flowers, anise and coriander seed, dried raisins, raisins of *Corinth*, figs and olives, tartar, soap, dried orange and citron peels, essences and quintessences of all kinds.

WE must now return from the south of *Italy* to the north, Switzerland. We take a view of *Switzerland*, a country which, though surrounded with rocks, and in a manner inaccessible, yet is very considerable and of great consequence from its situation.

THE dominions of the *Switzers* are bounded on the north by part of *Alsace*, the *Black Forest*, and the circle of *Silabia*; on the east by the country of *Tyrol*; on the south by the duchies of *Savoy* and *Milan*, by the territories of *Bergamo* and *Brescia*; and on the west by the *Franche Comte*, or county of *Burgundy*. It appears from hence that they have for neighbours the subjects of the house of *Austria*, those of the crown of *France*, the king of *Sardinia*, and the state of *Venice*. We need nothing more to give us very high notions of the force and bravery of this nation, than the bare observation, that they have not only preserved their freedom in spite, but have been also always formidable to the most potent of their neighbours: yet their country is very far from

The Conclusion of

being large ; in length somewhat less than 300, and in breadth very little more than 100 miles.

The inhabitants of *Switzerland* may be divided into three parts : first, the *Swiss*, properly so called, or the thirteen cantons, which stand in the following order. 1. *Zurich*. 2. *Bern*. 3. *Lucern*. 4. *Vic*. 5. *Switz*. 6. *Underwald*. 7. *Zug*. 8. *Glaris*. 9. *Bazil*, or *Ussle*. 10. *Friburg*. 11. *Soluthurn*. 12. *Schaffhausen*. And 13. *Appenzel*. Of which the Protestant cantons are *Zurich*, *Bern*, *Bazil*, and *Schaffhausen*, which above two thirds of the canton of *Glaris*, and more than half of *Appenzel*; the people are Roman Catholics.

SECONDLY, the subjects of the *Swissers*, which are either such towns and bailliages as belong to them all, or to several in common, or that depend upon several cantons. Of the former they reckon nine ; viz. the county of *Baden*, the *Free Villages*, the counties of *Turgövy*, *Sargantz*, and *Rhental*, and the four *Italian* bailliages of *Lugano*, *Locarno*, *Mendrisco*, and *Valmodia*, to which we must add the three cities without territory of *Boemgarten*, *Mellingen*, and *Rapperswil*. The four *Italian* bailliages were dismembered from the duchy of *Milan*, and belong to all the cantons except *Appenzel*, which at that time was not admitted into the alliance. Three other bailliages in *Italy*, viz. *Pellinzona*, *Valbrima*, and *Riviera*, were conquered by the cantons of *Zurich*, *Switz*, and *Underwald*, from the dukes of *Milan*. The little territory of *Alfex*, and the county of *Wirdenberg*, both seated on the *Rhine*, belong, the former to the canton of *Zurich*, and the latter to that of *Glaris*. The bailliage of *Gasteren* belongs to the cantons of *Switz* and *Glaris*; and the cantons of *Bern* and *Friburg* possess the four bailliages of *Morat*, *Gremton*, *Echelens*, *Swartzenburg*, which they conquered from the dukes of *Savoy*.

THIRDLY, the allies of the *Swissers* are the *Grisons*, who are divided into three leagues, that of the *Grisons*, of the house of God, and of the ten jurisdictions: they are partly Protestants, and partly Roman Catholics, and have also a considerable conquered country that belongs to them : the town and county of *Neufchatel*, of which the king of *Prussia* is sovereign ; the abbot and city of *St. Gall* ; the little republic of *Wallis* ; the city and republic of *Geneva* ; the town of *Bienne* or *Biel*, allied to the canton of *Bern* ; and the town of *Mulhausen*, not far from *Bazil*, to which it is allied.

THE *Swissers*, formerly called the *Helvetians*, were brought under the dominion of the *Romans* by *Julius Cæsar*, who added their country to his province of *Gaul*. They were afterwards part of the kingdom of *Burgundy*, then subject to *France*.

France, and then to the *German* empire: but being oppressed, they threw off their allegiance, and erected several independent states; and at the treaty of *Westphalia*, in 1648, they were acknowledged free and independent. There is hardly one of the cantons, states, or cities abovementioned, that agrees with another in point of government; and indeed every kind of government that ever was invented is to be found amongst them; yet they are all maintained under their respective forms, and in their respective rights, from that common love of freedom and justice, which prevails generally among the whole nation.

THE greatest part of their country is the most rugged in its appearance, and naturally the most barren in its soil of any in *Europe*; and yet by dint of labour and cultivation they render it tolerably fruitful. All their cities are well built, populous, and many of their inhabitants live pretty much at their ease, which is owing partly to their industry, and partly to their frugality. The gentry of *Switzerland*, notwithstanding what is generally reported of them, are, generally speaking, tolerably educated, and from their seeing foreign countries, commonly well bred. Their traders have great privileges, and some of them are in wealthy circumstances; and as for their peasants, they are very hardy and laborious. As their women are justly reputed very honest as well as very good housewives, so they are generally speaking very prolific, and their country being but narrow, this lays them under an absolute necessity of sending out numbers every year to seek their bread in foreign countries. Being naturally of a martial disposition, and accustomed to arms from their youth, they usually seek some foreign service or other; those of the Roman Catholic cantons go into the *French* and *Spanish* pay; those of the Protestants, and not a few others likewise, into that of the States General; but wherever they are, they have the honour to be accounted as good troops as any in the world. After some years service more or less, according to their contracts, the private men return home, though their corps remain still in foreign service, and are from time to time filled up with fresh recruits. It is owing to these people who have served abroad, both officers and soldiers, that the *Swiss* are never at a loss for as large and well-disciplined an army as any government in *Europe* can raise, which are at the same time the guardians of their own liberty, and the protectors of their neighbours freedom. Neither is their power grounded only on opinion, for they have defended themselves at different times against most of the great powers in *Europe*; and though they have been sometimes outwitted, yet they were

The Conclusion of

were never beaten or reduced to demand peace, by any power whatever; so that they may be justly considered, taking in their situation and their militia, as the most unconquerable people in *Europe*.

It is very difficult to make a just computation of the force of the *Swiss*. Things are much changed with them from what they were formerly. They have now several good fortresses, though heretofore they had none. Several of the cantons are now very rich, and besides vast sums locked up at home, they have a great wealth in foreign banks, and particularly in our funds. Every great city is well furnished with artillery, and at *Bern* and *Zurich* they have field and battering trains of brass cannon, than which there are few better in *Europe*. Yet with all this force they are not in the least formidable to those that live near them, since they are without doubt the very best neighbours in the world; so void of ambition that they have no idea of conquest, such lovers of justice that the very report of oppression will bring them to the relief of the distressed. By this means the city of *Geneva* has been often, and will probably be always, protected against two very formidable powers, one the most enterprising and the other the most ambitious in *Europe*.

It is in this country, and its confines, that the *Alps*, the highest mountains in *Europe*, excite the attention of travellers. The melting of the snows in summer, being suspended every night in their gorges, and renewed again every day during the hours in which the sun is hottest, gives occasion to very fantastical appearances. A valley, in whose depth the eye is lost, covered with rough pieces of ice resembling waves, and the whole surface of this sea again congealed, and intersected here and there with deep crevices; the noise of a subterraneous torrent which sustains this enormous mass, and changes the appearance as well as level of it from day to day; all these effects wrought by changes that are almost sudden, and variously combined of heat and cold, can scarce be seen anywhere else in so astonishing a degree: they form together a very singular spectacle, worthy the curiosity of naturalists, and calculated to furnish a variety of observations.

C H A P. VI.

Of the Austrian, French, and United Netherlands.

THIS country was anciently called *Gallia Belgica*, and the inhabitants *Belgæ*, but was of a much larger extent than the present *Netherlands*; of which the boundaries now, are the *German* ocean, or north sea, on the north; the *British* sea, with part of *Picardy*, on the west; the rest of *Picardy*, with *Champagne* or *Lorraine*, on the south; and the archbishopric of *Trier*; and *Treves*, the duchies of *Juliers* and *Cleves*, the bishopric of *Munster*, and the county of *Enden* or *East-Friesland*, on the east. It is situated between the 49th degree and 25 minutes to the 53 degree and 25 minutes of latitude; and between the 2d degree and 5 minutes to the 6th degree and 50 minutes of longitude east from *London*.

THE greatest part of the *Netherlands* was conquered by the *Romans*; and that part which lies towards *Gaul* continued in their subjection till the decline of that empire; after which the *Franks* became masters of it; and under the *French* monarchy, it was part of the kingdom of *Metz* or *Austrasia*.

THE division of the *Netherlands* into so many states is derived from the earls or counts of *Ardenne*. Their origin was from the sons of *Clodion*, king of *France*, who, being kept out of that succession by *Merovee*, were forced for their security, to betake themselves to the most defensible places of the forest of *Ardenne*, and the countries on the banks of the *Moselle*, where they founded the two great earldoms of the *Moselle*, and the *Ardenne*. The former belongs to *Germany*; the latter comprehended part of *Flanders* and *Brabant*, all *Hainault*, *Namur*, *Limburg*, and *Luxemburg*, together with the duchy of *Bouillon*. These large estates continued peaceably under the earls of *Ardenne* for some time, who, growing powerful and great, became the envy of their neighbours, and were attacked by *Dagobert*, king of *Metz*, and son to *Gisbairius II.* king of *France*, who in battle overcame and slew *Brunulph*, earl of *Ardenne*, and seized his country, giving only *Hainault* as an earldom to *Albert*, his son. *Dagobert* succeeded his father in the kingdom of *Neustria*, in 629, whereby he became king of almost all *France*, being before king of *Metz* or *Austrasia*, and of *Burgundy*: he gave away several parts of the country or earldom of *Ardenne*; but the rest still bore the title of an earldom, and continued for a long time a very considerable state.

The Conclusion of

TOWARDS the year 940, *Luxemburg* and *Limburg* were given to two of the younger sons of *Ricuine*, earl of *Ardenne*, and about the same time, *Namur* was erected into an earldom: the rest came afterwards by marriage to the house of *Lorrain*, which continued in possession of it a long time. Such is the origin of the earldoms of *Luxemburg*, *Limburg*, and *Namur*.

PART of *Brabant*, as above observed, was included in the earldom of *Ardenne*; the other part, which lies towards the sea, was very much infested, and even almost depopulated by the depredations of the *Danes* and *Normans*; wherefore to guard the coast, and protect the inhabitants, a certain officer was appointed, called lord warden of the marches, which title was continued till *Utile*, nephew of *Aldiagerius*, king of the *Baioians*, (the people of *Bavaria*), having shewn great courage against these pirates, was honoured with the title of lord marquis of *Antwerp*: one of his descendants, named *Ansegisus* was mayor of the palace in *France*, and made duke of *Brabant*; and his great grandson, *Pepin*, obtaining the crown of *France*, that duchy became a province of that kingdom, and was afterwards part of the kingdom of *Lorrain*. About the year 980, the cities and territories of *Brussels*, *Louvain*, *Antwerp*, and *Nivelle*, were separated from the duchy of *Brabant*, and made a new state, with the title of the marquissate of the holy empire, by the emperor *Otho II.* and given to his aunt, whose grand-daughter *Gerborg*, succeeding her, conveyed it by marriage to *Lambert*, son of *Reyner*, earl of *Hainault*, who had the title of earl of *Louvain*: he was succeeded in it by his descendants, one of whom, named *Godefrey VII.* earl of *Louvain* conquered the rest of the country, and was created duke of *Brabant*.

FLANDERS was a wild and waste country, the sea-coasts being infested by the *Danish* pirates, and the other parts but meanly cultivated, till it was conquered by the *French* kings, who soon after the establishment of their monarchy appointed a certain officer, with the title of forester of *Flanders*, to suppress the robbers who infested the woods and the sea-coasts, and by government and protection to civilize the people, and encourage them to industry. This office continued in the same family for several descents, and was at length changed into the title of a count or earl, about the year 864, by *Charles the Bald*, emperor and king of *France*, in favour of *Baldwin*, the seventh forester, who had married his sister.

ARTOIS was included in the earldom of *Flanders*, till the year 1234, when *Robert*, grandson of *Philip Augustus*, king

of *France*, and husband to *Isabella*, daughter of *Baldwin VIII.* earl of *Flanders*, was made earl of *Artois*.

GUELDERLAND was part of the *French* kingdom of *Austrasia*, and with it became part of the empire of *Germany*; and as such was governed by certain guardians, or protectors, first instituted in the reign of *Charles the Bald*, of whom *Otho* of *Nassau* was the first free prince, created earl by the emperor *Henry V.* in the year 1079; and his descendant *Raynold*, was made duke of *Guelderland* in 1339.

ZUTPHEN was a separate earldom for many years, till it became united with *Guelderland*, by the marriage of *Otho* of *Nassau*, just now mentioned, with *Sophia* the daughter of *Wickham*, the last earl of *Zutphen*.

HOLLAND and *Zealand*, a rude unpeopled country, being much infested by the *Norman* piracies, were first made an earldom by the emperor *Lewis II.* about the year 863, and given to *Thierry*, in whose line the succession continued till the death of *John*, about the year 1300, who leaving no issue, was succeeded by *John* of *Avesnes*, earl of *Hainault*, son of *Alcide*, the daughter of *Florence IV.* earl of *Holland*.

FRISELAND was but a part of the country of the ancient *Frisii*, some part of *Utrecht* and *Overysse*, as well as *East-Friseland* in *Germany*, being inhabited by those people, who were governed by their own kings, till they were conquered by *Charlemagne*; and this part, now one of the seventeen provinces, was annexed to the duchy of *Guelderland*, and was afterwards a distinct barony.

OVERYSSEL and *Groningen* were part of the episcopal see of *Utrecht*, first founded about the year 600, by *Dagobert*, king of *France*, in favour of *Willibald*, an *Englishman*, the first converter of these countries to Christianity, whose successors were temporal as well as spiritual lords of their diocese, for 200 years, and were very powerful princes.

It being thought necessary thus briefly to mention the origin of these dukedoms, earldoms, and lordships, we shall now relate how they came to be all subject to the house of *Austria*.

PHILIP, surnamed the *Hardy* or *Bold*, duke of *Burgundy*, *How the* and son of *John*, king of *France*, married *Margaret* the only daughter of *Lewis de Male*, or *Malain*, earl of *Flanders* and *Artois*, and succeeded to those two earldoms after the death of *became Lewis*, who died in the year 1383. *Antony* of *Burgundy*, the subject to second son of *Philip*, got the duchies of *Brabant* and *Limburg*, the house the marquissate of the holy empire, and the lordship of *Mechlin* of *Austria*, or *Malines*, in the year 1406, &c. heir to *Jane*, his aunt, by the father's side, the daughter of *John III.* duke of *Brabant*, and

and sister to *Margaret*, the wife of *Lewis de Male*. He left two sons, *John IV.* who died *April* the 17th, 1426, and *Philip*, who died *August* the 4th 1430. As they both died childless, *Philip the Good*, duke of *Burgundy*, their first cousin, succeeded to those duchies, to the marquisate, and to the lordship of *Mechlin*: he had bought in the year 1429 the county of *Namur* of *Thierry*, the last earl, leaving him, however, the title and profits of it till his death. *John*, the son of *Philip the Good*, had married *Margaret*, the daughter of *Albert*, of *Bavaria*, earl of *Holland*, and sister to *William*, the father of *John* of *Bavaria*, counts of *Hainault*, *Holland*, and *Zealand*, and lady of *Friseland*. This countess had four husbands, but no children by any of them; so that *Philip the Good*, who was her first cousin, inherited all her estates, the administration and government of which she had been obliged to give up to him some years before she died. The same *Philip* did, in the year 1443, seize upon the duchy of *Luxemburg*, having driven out of it *William*, duke of *Brunswick*, who had usurped it from *Elizabeth*, the widow of *Antony*, duke of *Brabant*, and daughter of *John* of *Luxemburg*, duke of *Gorlitz*, who was brother to the emperors *Wenceslaus* and *Sigismund*. *Charles*, the son of *Philip the Good*, bought, in the year 1472, the duchy of *Guelderland*, and the county of *Zutphen*, of *Arnold* of *Egmond*, the father of *Adolphus*, who was a prisoner at *Courtray*; but *Charles* being killed in the year 1476, *Catherine*, the sister of *Adolphus*, retook *Guelderland* for her nephew, *Charles* of *Egmond*. *Mary*, the only daughter and heiress of *Charles*, duke of *Burgundy*, just now mentioned, married *Maximilian* of *Austria*, son of the emperor *Ferdinand III.* and brought him in marriage, the duchies of *Brabant*, *Limburg*, and *Luxemburg*, the counties of *Flanders*, *Burgundy*, *Hainault*, *Holland*, *Zealand*, and *Namur*; and the lordships of *Friseland*. *Philip* of *Austria*, son to *Maximilian* and *Mary*, married *Jane*, the daughter of *Ferdinand*, king of *Spain*, and of *Isabella*, queen of *Castile*, by which means, their son *Charles* inherited not only almost all *Spain*, and the vast countries then lately discovered in *America*, but also those noble provinces of the *Netherlands*; and was chosen emperor, under the name of *Charles V.* Towards the latter end of the year 1527, he added to his dominions the temporalities of the bishoprick of *Utrecht*, on both sides of the *Yssel*; and *Henry* of *Bavaria*, being distressed, through war with the duke of *Guelderland*, and tired with the continual rebellion of his own subjects, surrendered to the emperor the temporalities of his diocese, which was confirmed by the pope, and the states of the country. In 1536, *Charles V.* bought of *Charles* of *Egmond*

mond the reversion of the duchy of *Guelderland*, and of the county of *Zutphen*, in case that prince should die without issue. The same year the city of *Groningen* took the oath of allegiance, and submitted to *Charles V.* and in 1543, he put a garrison in the city of *Cambray*, and built a citadel there. Having thus united the seventeen provinces, as it were, in one body, he ordered that they should continue for ever under the same prince, without being ever separated or dismembered; for which purpose, he published in *November* 1549, with the consent, and at the request of the states of all the provinces, a perpetual and irrevocable edict, or law, by which it was enacted, that in order to keep all those provinces together under one and the same prince, the right of representation, with regard to the succession of a prince, or princes, should take place for ever, both in a direct and collateral line, notwithstanding the common laws of some provinces to the contrary. *Charles* had even a mind to incorporate these provinces with the *Germanic* body, and to make of them a circle of the empire, under the title of the circle of *Burgundy*, in order thereby to engage princes of the empire to concern themselves for the preservation of those provinces. But the *Netherlanders*, always jealous of their liberty, did not seem to like that incorporation; and, when they were demanded to pay their share towards the expences of the empire, they refused it; whereupon the princes of *Germany* refused in their turn to take any part in the wars in *Flanders*, and looked upon those provinces as by no means belonging to the *Germanic* body.

PHILIP of *Austria*, and his son *Charles*, who were born in the *Netherlands*, had for these provinces that natural affection which men use to have for their native country; and knowing how jealous the inhabitants were of their liberty, and of the privileges granted to them by their former princes, they took great care to preserve them, and suffered willingly, that the states, who were the guardians of the people's liberty and privileges, should, in a manner, share the supreme authority with them. *Philip II.* son to the emperor *Charles V.* had not the same affection for the *Netherlands*, nor those generous sentiments which his father had endeavoured to inspire him with. Being born in *Spain* of a *Portuguese* woman, he had no regard but for his native country; and, when he removed out of the *Netherlands*, he left them to the weak government of a woman, to the proud and haughty spirit of cardinal *de Granville*, and to the wild ambition of some lords of these provinces, who, availing themselves of the imprudent conduct and continual blunders of the council of *Spain*, and their private interest in the disturbances they could not fail to pro-

produce. *Philip II.* also instead of the mild and moderate measures which his predecessors had successfully employed, on many occasions, as best suiting the genius and temper of the people, had recourse to the most violent and cruel proceedings, which, far from curing the evil, served only to exasperate it the more; and render it incurable. The *Spaniards*, whom he sent thither; being born and educated in an absolute monarchy, jealous of the liberties, and envious of the riches of the people, broke through all their privileges, and used them almost after the same manner as they had done the inhabitants of their new and ill-gotten dominions in *America*. This treatment occasioned a general insurrection. The counts *Hoorn*, *Egmont*, and the prince of *Orange*, appearing at the head of it, and *Luther's* reformation gaining ground about the same time in the *Netherlands*, his disciples joined the malecontents: whereupon king *Philip* introduced a kind of inquisition, in order to suppress them, and many thousands were put to death by that court, besides those that perished by the sword; for these persecutions and incroachments had occasioned a civil war, in which several battles were fought. The counts *Hoorn* and *Egmont* were taken and beheaded; but the prince of *Orange*, retiring into *Holland*, did, by the assistance of *England* and *France*, preserve *Holland* and some of the adjacent provinces, which entered into a treaty for their mutual defence at *Utrecht* in 1579, and they have ever since been styled the *United Provinces*; but the other provinces were reduced to the obedience of *Spain* by the duke of *Alva*, and other *Spanish* generals: however, their ancient privileges were in a great measure restored; every province was allowed its great council or parliament, whose concurrence was required to the making of laws, and raising money for the government, though these assemblies were too often obliged to follow the dictates of the court; and, as for those which have been reduced under the government of *France*, they are now under the same arbitrary dominion, as the rest of the subjects of that...

THE *Spaniards* continued possessed of almost eight of these provinces, until the duke of *Marlborough*, general of the allies, gained the memorable victory of *Ramillies*. After which *Brussels*, the capital, and great part of these provinces, acknowledged *Charles VI.* (afterwards emperor,) their sovereign; and his daughter, the present empress queen, remained possessed of them till the war that preceded the last, when the *French* made an intire conquest of them, except part of the province of *Luxemburg*; but they were restored by the peace of *Aix-la-Chapelle*, in the year 1748, and the *French* retain only *Artois*, the *Cambresis*, part of *Flanders*, part of *Hainault*, and

and part of *Luxemburg*, which
 nion now upwards of eighty years.

THE soil is generally fruitful, but differs in the several parts. *Soil, cli-*
 The climate also differs in the several provinces, in some to-mate, and
 wards the south it does not differ much from that of *England*, *face of the*
 though the seasons are more regular. In the northern provinces *country,*
 the winter is generally very sharp, and the summer sultry hot;
 but the extreme cold, and excessive heat, seldom continue
 above five or six weeks. The air is reckoned very wholesome,
 but is subject to thick fogs in winter, through the moistness
 of the country, which would be very poisonous, were it not
 for the dry easterly winds, which blowing off a long continent
 for two or three months in the year, clear the air, and cause
 very sharp frosts in *January* and *February*; during which, the
 ports, rivers, and canals, are commonly shut up. The face
 of the country is low and flat, so that very little can be said
 of its mountains; for, except some small hills, and a few rising
 grounds in the provinces of *Utrecht* and *Guelderland*, and in
 the parts lying towards *Germany*, there is no hill to be seen in
 the whole seventeen provinces. This is the reason that they
 have been called the *Low Countries*. The provinces towards
 the sea lie so very low, that large parts of them have been
 many times overflowed by the eruptions of the sea, notwith-
 standing the strong banks, which the inhabitants keep up at
 a vast expence, almost all along the coast of *Groningen*, *Frise-*
land, *North Holland*, *Zealand*, &c. These banks and dykes
 are commonly seventeen ells thick, and yet have not been found
 sufficient to resist the violence of the sea and land floods.
 They may, however, be reckoned among their curiosities,
 with some *Roman*-ruined highways still intire. But their great-
 est curiosities are their manufactures of lawn, cambric, lace,
 and tapestry, in which they exceed all the world.

THE *Netherlands* were once the center of the woollen ma- *Commere-*
 nufactures, which we have now the satisfaction to call the *cial con-*
English manufactures, but originally derived from the *Flemings*, *cerns of*
 whose country was thereby immensely populous and enriched; the *Ne-*
 The materials for these manufactures, particularly the wool *therland;*
 and the fullest earth, they had from *England*. The *English*
 did not see their error till about the year 1450, when they
 began to think that these manufactures might as well be car-
 ried on in *England* as in *Flanders*, and their own people em-
 ployed in this prodigious scene of traffic, to the enriching of
 themselves rather than their neighbours. On these motives
 they wisely put a stop to the exportation of wool, and the
 clothing was gradually encouraged in *England*, by the means
 of manufacturers obtained from the *Netherlands*, to instruct

The Conclusion of

our people. The *Flemings*, being thus deprived of their fund of wool, were obliged to turn their hands to other things ; which brought them to the making of lace and linen, to silk-weaving, and to other business of various kinds ; so that the manufactures carried on in these provinces at present, are, 1. Lace, known by the name of bone-lace, of which the finest and best of the kind in *Europe* is said to be made at *Brussels*. 2. Fine thread. 3. Linen, consisting chiefly of cambricks and lawns. 4. Woollen, which includes the tapestry made at *Tras* and the adjacent country. 5. Silk, of which at present they make not only sufficient for their own use, but for exportation. Their domestic trade necessarily creates a great foreign one, where the situation will admit of it ; and so considerable are the exports of these manufactures, that very good judges have estimated them at no less, in fine thread, bone-lace, and linen, including their lawns and cambricks, than to the value of two millions sterling a year.

IN regard to industry, the *Netherlands* are an example to the whole world. Nothing can live where they starve, and nothing is idle among them that can sustain any degree of labour. The universal navigation of the rivers and canals passing through innumerable cities and populous towns, implies, that there must be a great inland traffic ; and this, indeed, in proportion to the extent of territory, is a prodigious business. The trade of the *French* and *Dutch Netherlands* is much the same with that of the *Austrian* ; and, in regard to the *Dutch* particularly, it may be said, that there is not a manufacture in *Europe* but is managed to advantage among them, nor a place in the world but they visit with their fleets. They have also some advantages in their traffic, which the rest of the world cannot rival them in, particularly in the sale of the fine spices, which they have monopolized these hundred years, and in the herring and whale fisheries, by which they acquire immense wealth.

Causes contributing to the great trade of the Dutch.

THE vast trade of *Holland* arose chiefly from the destruction of *Antwerp*, which, when the civil wars in the *Netherlands* broke out, was, and had been long the center of traffic in *Europe*. The troubles in *France*, the wars in *Germany*, and the religious persecutions set on foot in other parts of *Europe*, contributed to fill the *United Provinces* with people, merely because here they might enjoy their consciences, and the fruits of their industry, in peace. Those who resorted thither were such as had wherewithal to live upon, or were acquainted with some manufacture or mystery, by which a living might be obtained. Both were welcome, and both sorts of people were very soon at their ease ; new manufac-
tures

tures were every day set on foot, and trades too big even for a wealthy purse were managed with facility, and to great advantage, by joint stocks; the fisheries were annually improved, new branches of commerce were continually opened, and, in the compass of twenty years, their villages swelled into fair towns, and those that were good towns before rose into rich cities. At first, the inhabitants of those provinces carried on a large trade to *Portugal*, from whence they received great quantities of *Indian goods*; but when *Philip II.* became master of *Portugal*, he put an end to that trade, which, instead of proving a misfortune, was, in reality, of high advantage to the *Dutch*, by forcing them to attempt opening a trade to the *East-Indies*, which, in the compass of a few years, they did with success beyond their hopes; and this commerce being managed by a company with great prudence, frugality, and industry, soon produced prodigious advantages. This encouraged them to set up a *West-Indian* company, and that too became not less flourishing in a very short space of time. The subjects of the state likewise, by the recommendation, and under the protection of *Henry IV.* of *France*, obtained leave to trade in all the ports within the dominions of the Grand Signior; so that their commerce in the *Levant* became also very considerable. Taking therefore their fisheries, manufactures, and foreign trade together, we may easily account for the growth of their naval power, the increase of their wealth, and the possibility of their sustaining that infinite variety of taxes, customs, and excises, which were necessary to support so long and so expensive a war, as that by which their liberties were established and secured.

WE ought likewise to observe, that the situation of affairs in *Europe* through this whole period, was remarkably favourable to the growth of this new republic. The overgrown power of *Spain* was equally dreadful and dangerous to most of the potentates in *Europe*, which induced them openly or secretly to give all the assistance possible to the inhabitants of these provinces upon their revolt; and the intestine disturbances in several countries, but more especially in *Germany* and *France*, prevented their meeting with any rivals; and though it be true that *England* began at that time to extend her commerce, and increase her naval power, yet this was so far from being any detriment, that it was in reality of very great service to the *Dutch*, with whom they acted conjointly in warlike expeditions, and from whom, by the temptation of high wages, they drew numbers of experienced pilots, and able seamen, who were extremely useful to them in their early voyages both to the *East* and *West-Indies*. The quar-

rel between *England* and the *Hanse Towns* turned also very much to their advantage; and in short, before any spirit of envy or emulation arose, the republic was not only beyond the reach of danger, but infinitely superior in every respect to any that could through envy aim at lessening her grandeur, the progress of her prosperity being not barely quicker than either expectation or experience could suggest, but beyond any thing which either ancient or modern history records, and which posterity will be very hardly believed.

stadtholder-
ship and
govern-
ment of
Holland.

WILLIAM of *Nassau*, prince of *Orange*, turnamed the Great, was the first stadtholder, and may be properly called the founder of the Dutch Republic, by engaging the provinces of *Guelders*, *Holland*, *Zeeland*, *Friesland*, and *Utrecht*, to associate for their mutual safety in 1579. He spent his life in the study of war and politics, in which he was a great proficient, and not less distinguished for his private virtues. At length he was assassinated, in consequence of the resentments of the *Spaniards*, and sealed the glorious actions of his life with his blood. His son *Maurice*, the second stadtholder, adhering to the virtuous principles of his father, supported the independency of the republic. *Henry Frederic*, the next brother, succeeding to the stadtholdership, distinguished himself as a warrior and a patriot. The fourth stadtholder was *William II.* who married the eldest daughter of our king *Charles I.* This prince dying at the age of twenty-four, left a posthumous son, who was our *William III.* In his infancy the dignity of stadtholdership was annulled; but the terror of *French* armies obliged the states to recur to that expedient to which they owed their very being, as a republic. King *William* fought their battles, and saved them. After his decease, though the dignity of stadtholder was not abolished, it was suffered to expire, nor did the states revive it till the sixth and late stadtholder, *William-Charles-Henry-Frison*, a collateral branch of the illustrious house of *Orange*, who by the salutary mediation of a strong party of his friends, and the spirit of a mob, when a *French* army was already at their doors, had this dignity conferred on him in 1745. The stadtholdership, which is now made hereditary in the house of *Orange*, was, from its original nature, elective; but the high and indelible obligation which the Dutch owe to *William the Great*, and the renowned patriotism and fidelity of the illustrious house of *Orange*, through every generation, have ever thrown the choice on this family as a kind of necessary consequence. The present hereditary stadtholder is *William V.* prince of *Orange* and *Nassau*, born March the 8th, 1748; he is son of the late stadtholder by the princess *Anne*,

Anne, eldest daughter of our king *George II.* The authority of a stadtholder is very confined, unless when he appears at the head of an army, and then, perhaps, he is not only the object of jealousy, but his power is too much circumscribed. The stadtholder sometimes signs public treaties in conjunction with the states, but such treaties do not derive from hence the greater weight & authenticity; for though he is supposed to represent the dignity of the republic, yet while the states possess the sovereignty, he cannot be considered but as a subject. He has indeed the power to pardon condemned malefactors; but he has not even a seat & vote in the assemblies of the states. There are certain prerogatives annexed to the office, which vary in the different provinces, and are alterable by the power from whence they are derived, that is, by the states-general. The appointment of the stadtholdership from the states is 100,000 gilders, or 9,500 l. sterling; but the prince's paternal inheritance is far more considerable.

THE states-general consist of deputies from every province, and are usually about thirty in number; some provinces send two, others more; but every province has no more than one voice; and whatever resolution the states-general take, must be confirmed by every province, and by every city and republic in that province, before it has the force of a law. The deputies of eighteen cities, and one representative of the nobility, constitute the states of the province of *Friesland*; *Amsterdam*, and every one of those eighteen cities, are separate and independent republics. In *Amsterdam* the legislative power is lodged in thirty-six senators, who continue members of the senate for life, and when one dies his place is filled up by the survivors; the senate also elect the deputies to represent the cities in the province of *Holland*. There is a council of state, consisting of deputies from the several provinces; to which *Holland* sends twelve, *Guelderland*, *Zealand*, and *Utrecht* two a-piece; and the provinces of *Friesland* and *Groningen*, each of them one. In this council they do not vote by provinces, as in the states-general, but by personal voices; and every deputy presides by turns, and the stadtholder has a decisive voice in this council, where the votes happen to be equal. This council calculates what taxes or forces will be necessary for the current year, and prepares other matters for the determination of the states-general. In an assembly of the states of a particular province, one dissenting voice prevents their coming to any resolution.

Chief places of trade in the United Provinces.

THE *Texel* and the *Maes* are the two chief ports of the country, in which the head places of trade are *Amsterdam* and *Rotterdam*.

THE city of *Amsterdam* has infinitely the superior part; here all the fleets of ships arrive, as the herring-fleet, the *Greenland*, the *East* country, the *Turkey*, and the *East-India* fleets, with the fleet of men of war, or the national fleet. Among these, particular ships belong to the chambers of *Rotterdam* and *Zeeland*, and to the merchants there; but the grand arterial, both for war and trade, is at *Amsterdam*, the ships, stores, furniture of the men of war, and *East-India* ships, being all laid up there; and, indeed, *Amsterdam* seems to be a general mart for navigation, more ships for sale being built in it than in any place in the world; and not only ships, but fleets may be bought, if there is an occasion, together with naval stores of all kinds, ammunition, and arms, having a sufficiency for all the nations of *Europe*.

As the navigation is managed here, so is the merchandize they bring. Here the *India*-house and warehouses are kept, and the goods sold; here are the admiralty-offices, and the building-yards and docks, not for their own shipping only, but for all nations that please to employ them; here is the bank, the only one in the country; the Exchange, the greatest in *Europe*, that of *London* only excepted. In short, there is not a city in the world so rich, so populous, or that carries on so great a trade in so narrow a compass of ground. It is frequently surrounded with water, that threatens to swallow it up, and yet seldom or ever receives any considerable damage; and the number of ships and vessels of all sorts, which are always lying before it, is so great, that it is thought, should any general inundation of the sea drive them to that dreadful necessity, all the people in the city might at once embark, and be saved from drowning.

THE city lies almost in the form of a crescent. The port is of difficult access, it being scarce possible for a loaded ship, or man of war, to enter the harbour; and indeed, the *Zuyder-Sea* is so shallow, and full of sands, that scarce any but their own flat-bottomed vessels can cross it; but then this is their great security against foreign enemies, whose men of war scarce ever venture to pursue them beyond the *Texel*, and other entrances into this sea. The foundations are laid upon vast piles of timber drove into the morass on which the town stands, at a prodigious expence; the stadthouder alone has upward of 13000 piles of wood to bear up the foundation. The mention of this town in history is about the year 1300, when it was a poor fishing town. In 1585, it appears to have been

been the chief town of trade in those provinces, when they began to fortify it; and great additions were made to the fortifications in 1672, when *Lewis XIV.* invaded the country. The houses are built with brick or stone, the streets spacious and well paved, and through most of them run canals planted with trees. The town is computed to be half as big as *London*, including the fortifications, and in it are people of almost every nation, and every religion in *Europe*, who are tolerated in their respective persuasions, but none admitted to any share in the government but the Calvinists.

ROTTERDAM is a flourishing city, but not to be compared with *Amsterdam*, to which it is, as *Bristol* is to *London*, though rather with a larger share in the proportion. It is populous, and much more conveniently situated for trade than *Amsterdam*; the canals which run through it bringing ships up to the doors; and the *Maes* is much sooner free from ice than the *Wye* at *Amsterdam*; on which account the *British* merchants resort to this port more than to the other. There are several other towns of trade and note in the United Provinces; but we need only mention

THE Hague, which is situated in the province of *Holland*, two miles east of the sea. It is encompassed with fine meadows and groves, but no walls, and therefore esteemed a village, but one of the largest and most elegant in *Europe*, and enjoys all the privileges of a city of *Holland*, except that of sending representatives to the states. But here the states of the province of *Holland*, and the states-general assemble, as well as the council of state, and their supreme courts of justice; and here foreign ministers are admitted to audience, and all public affairs transacted; and here is a palace, in which there are apartments for the princes of *Orange* when stadtholders; the chambers of the states-general, and provincial, and of the council of state. On the west of the palace is a large area, surrounded by good houses, and planted with fine walks of trees, which makes it sometimes to be compared to *St. James's-park*; and here every city of the United Provinces has a house for their respective deputies. On the north side of the *Hague* is a walk planted with lime-trees, two miles long, extending to the village of *Scheveling*, on the sea-side.

As to the naval strength of the *Dutch*, which we sometimes hear much boasted of, it may be said, that in this particular at present they are forty years behind the *English*. Whether this wondrous change is an effect of unavoidable Dutch calamities, or of voluntary national defection from their ancient maxims of government, is not so easy to judge, though

The Conclusion of

the latter cause may seem the more probable. It is now much above an hundred years since the *Dutch* were able to vie with *England*; and, towards the close of the last century, even in time of peace, they thought it their interest to employ between thirty-five and forty ships of war. Upon an emergency, they were able to send an hundred sail to sea: it was computed, that the support of thirty capital ships then cost them annually only six millions of guilders. But if this power is departed from, which seems to be the case, and *Great Britain* left to take care of herself, the larger portion of commerce must fall to her share, in order to the support of a greater naval force. This consideration seems to put us in mind of the present situation of *Great Britain*, and the necessity of application to our marine; not only as a counterbalance to the accumulating strength of *France* and *Spain*, but as an easy and natural expedient to compensate for the insufficiency of the *Dutch*.

*Genius,
manners,
&c. of the
Dutch.*

TRAVELLERS, either in pursuit of learning or pleasure, seldom consider this country in the same light as *Italy*, *France*, and consequently there is not much said of it. Sir *William Temple's* general idea of the *Dutch* in his time is contained in these words: " *Holland* is a country where the earth is better than the air, and profit more in request than honour, where there is more sense than wit; more good nature than good humour; and more wealth than pleasure; where a man would chuse rather to travel than to live; that find more things to be satisfied than desire; and more persons to esteem than to love." As a kind of contrast to what is remarked by this polite author, a burlesque historian says, " In *Holland* the four elements are good for nothing; it is a country where they worship a golden idol, seated on a throne of cheese, and crowned with tobacco; where art surpasses nature, and industry alone makes the state flourish; where rusticity of speech is preferred to the persuasive softness of gentle words, and a coarseness of manners makes a show of liberty; where the wives are mistresses, and the husbands servants; where the houses, by dint of frequent washings, appear as cabinets; and an excess of cleanliness is inconspicuous: in a word, where butter and cheese is the harvest and reward of the people's toils."

THE *Dutch* are most certainly devoted to commerce, and, though in the midst of *Europe*, detached as it were from other nations, they are bred up in an abhorrence of power, and consequently have a distaste of the manner of the polite nations who are subject to this form of government. Under these circumstances they can hardly be supposed

posed to raise many men of genius, or to cultivate the more refined arts of contemplative life and liberal science. Hence the ease, the gentleness, the sweetness of manners, which we find in polite nations, are seldom possessed, even amongst the higher ranks of the people in *Holland*, though we often meet with an excess of complaisance; nor is this at all surprising, if we consider, that men devoted to arts of gain from their earliest life can with difficulty be formed to a true taste of society. The amusement in which the *Dutch* have the greatest pretence to delicacy, is, that of gardening, for which some of them contract so great a passion, that there is a law for restraining the price of tulip-blossoms. They are so well convinced that much diversion not only creates expence, but calls off the mind from business and domestic duties, that in *Amsterdam* no public shews are permitted within the walls. After seven in the evening every person that passes the gates pays one stiver, and a coach five stivers; so that diversions are taxed with this impost. It is not, however, very considerable, for the people have not a great passion for theatrical entertainments. In the winter-time skating is their greatest amusement. Their retired manner of living is often the occasion that the men when they affect a cheerful, polite, and delicate turn of manners, are awkward; and when gay, wicked: the same remark holds with the women also, when they depart from a reserved habit of life. Their notions of religion, which must ever influence the manners of a people, are not very liberal; and though the practice of it is strictly enjoined as a duty, it does not appear to be rendered delightful.

It is not difficult to conceive, that constant application to business, and indefatigable industry not diverted by any of the warmer passions, nor by the habit or temptation of pleasure, should produce that degree of wealth, power, and influence, at which the *Dutch* once arrived, and of which, with respect to individuals, they may yet boast. But there is nothing which lowers the reputation of the *Dutch*, or reflects greater dishonour on them than their cruelty. This does not so much arise from fiery particles in their blood, or warm passions, as the love of money; and they seem to have followed the example of their old masters, by taking the same steps to support themselves in the *East* as the others did in the *West-Indies*. In this *Great Britain* is distinguished, no part of her greatness being owing to unwarrantable slaughter.

C H A P. VII.

Of Germany.

Germany, what aspects de- serving of our atten- tion. **GERMANY** ought, with good reason, to challenge a special attention from the curious, as being the seat of a great people, and of many sovereignties of different denominations, and under various forms of government; a country of large extent, and the scene of many and great actions; a country, whose affairs and transactions are interwoven with those of every nation in *Europe*, of which it may be termed both the head and center; a country, whose princes are every day forming alliances of marriage, which pave a way for them to the principal thrones of *Europe*, several of which, as those of *Great Britain*, *Poland* lately, *Sweden* and *Prussia*, we see filled at this day by some of its princes; a country, which, for the good sense, considerable learning, and the many useful and ingenious inventions of the natives, highly deserves of all her neighbours: to all this it may be added, that it is our original country; that from thence came our ancestors, whose language, customs, laws, we, in a good measure, still retain, together with their form of government, the chief glory and happiness of the *British* isles. Upon these accounts, no *Englishman* can call this country foreign, nor its natives foreigners to him. Indeed, most nations in *Europe* have been either peopled from hence, or subdued by its armies; as happened to this island by the *Saxons*; to *Gaul*, by the *Franks*; to *Italy*, *Spain*, and *Africa*, by the *Goths* and *Vandals*: to those glorious people almost all *Europe*, and part of *Asia* and *Africa*, owed their freedom from those chains which the *Roman* power had so long bound them; and, wherever any of their colonies settled, they established a just and mild government on the ruins of tyranny.

Extent, bounda- ries, and situation of Germany. **GERMANY**, as set out by *Ptolemy*, and other ancient writers, extended northward as far as the ocean, whereby *Denmark*, *Norway*, and *Sweden*, were included; and southward it was bounded by the *Danube*; so that *Austria*, *Bavaria*, &c. now reckoned part of it, were then excluded, as well as *Alsace*, part of the *Palatinate*, and the *Spiritual Electorates*; the *Rhine* being reckoned the western boundary. The *Germans* afterwards possessed the latter, and the adjacent countries, and being conquered by the *Romans*, were then named *Germania Prima* and *Secunda*. *Germany*, as it

is at present bounded by *France* and the *Netherlands* on the west, *Poland* and *Hungary* on the east, *Denmark* and the *Baltic* sea on the north, and *Switzerland*, with the dominions of the state of *Venice* and the *Alps*, on the south; is situated between 45 degrees, 12 minutes, and 55 degrees of latitude, and between 6 degrees, and 19 degrees, 45 minutes of longitude; extending from north to south, that is, from *Stralsund*, in *Pomerania*, to the frontiers of *Carniola* and *Istria*, 150 German leagues, or 600 English miles in breadth, from the town of *Spa*, in the west, to the east of *Poland*, in the east, about 500 English miles.

THE soil is exceeding fruitful, especially on the banks of the *Rhine* and the *Danube*, where also the air is very temperate; but in the northern parts it is cold, and the ground less fruitful. In general, this country and *Poland* are so like to *Great Britain*, both in climate and soil, that no countries in *Europe* agree better with English constitutions. Besides great plenty of corn, cattle, sheep, wool, cloth, horses, &c. the earth also affords mines of divers sorts of metals and minerals, as iron, bitumen, nitre, ocre, copper, tin, lead, and even silver in some parts; alum, vitriol, quicksilver, salt, coal, terra sigillata, diamonds, agates, crystals, jaspers of several colours, fine alabaster, turquoise-stones, rubies, &c. In general the surface is even, and, though in some parts hilly, is no where mountainous except towards the south, and south-west, where the *Alps*, and a few mountains in *Alsace*, serve as boundaries and bulwarks against *Italy* and *France*. The forests and wastes yield plenty of wood for fuel and building, and abound with great variety of wild-fowl, and all sorts of good venison; they also feed vast numbers of hogs; and some of them, as the forest of *Ardennes*, feed good mutton. The orchards are full of our common fruit-trees; and in the southern provinces there is plenty of the more delicate sort, as peaches, apricots, figs, olives, grapes, &c. in good perfection. There are rich wines, of which the *Rhenish* and *Moselle*, in particular, are exported in vast quantities to foreign nations; and are not only equal, but preferable to some of the wines in *Italy*. The very mountains of the *Alps*, on the *German* side, are in many places, cultivated to the top, and the vallies abound with pastures and vines. In short, no country, perhaps, in the world abounds with such variety of every thing conducive to the comfort of life; and, though others may exceed it in the goodness of some particular articles, yet even of these they have a sufficiency, and might still have them in greater perfection, were the inhabitants industrious; or, rather, did the landed men give encouragement to husbandry and industry.

No country in *Europe*, if in the whole world, has so many great and noble rivers as *Germany*. The chief are the *Danube*, the *Rhine*, the *Elbe*, the *Oder*, the *Weser*, the *Mein*, and the *Inn*. The whole course of the *Danube*, from its fountain in *Swabia* on the borders of *Alsace*, to the *Black Sea*, is about twenty-seven degrees; which, reckoning sixty miles to a degree, is 1620 miles, without including its turnings and windings, which must make it at least one third more, so that it may well be affirmed to be longer than the *Nile* in *Egypt*, which has many particulars it resembles.

Trade of
Germany.

As to the trade of *Germany*, that of the cities on the *Rhine* and *Moselle* consists chiefly of wood, corn, wine, and oil, but the traffic of many of them has failed since the settlement of the *Dutch* republic. The chief commodities we have from *Germany* are linen, diaper, and damask, of which many thousand ells are constantly imported by the way of *Hamburg*. We have likewise large quantities of their mineral waters, and their *Rhenish* wine, which last is reckoned the staple of *Germany*. In return, they have from us some lead and brass, much pewter; some of our woollen manufactures, as flannel, stuff, &c. to the value of about 100,000 *l* a year, all by the way of *Hamburg*. They have also from us considerable quantities of buttons, buckles, scissars, and such trinkets, with which the towns of *Nuremberg* and *Augsburgh* formerly supplied not only *Germany*, but *England*, and most other countries. The same may be said of watches, which the *Germans*, so famous for clock-work, were at first wholly in possession of; but now they prefer *English* watches to their own. Both the inland and foreign commerce of the country might be very much improved, were the inhabitants duly encouraged, or more attentive to their particular interest. By the *Rhine*, the *Elbe*, and the *Weser*, it has a communication with the ocean; by the *Oder*, and the city of *Lubeck*, it may at least share, if not engross, the *Faltic* trade; by the *Moselle* and the *Meuse*, it is capable of trafficking to *France*; by the *Danube*, which falls into the *Euxine Sea*, it might send goods into the heart of *Turkey*, and supply both the *European* and *Asiatic* provinces of that empire; and, by means of the *Adriatic* gulph, it might have part of the trade of the *Mediterranean* and the *Levant*.

Germany,
how peo-
pled.

WHETHER *Germany* was peopled, as *Cluverius* says, in the 136th year after the flood, by *Jenae*, the grand-child of *Japhet*; or whether *Thiseo*, who, some say, was the son of *Asienas*, and others the son of *Noah*, the son of *Noah*, the first colony hither, as *Verstegan* affirms, is however that be, *Germany* was peopled very early.

cient *Germans* had two deities, called *Tuto*, or *Tuisco*, and *Mannus* his son, under which names, by their songs and festivals, they honoured God, the maker of the world, and *Adam* the propagator of mankind: and from the name of the former of these two deities, *Germany* was called the *Teutsche* nation, which by the change of *T* for *D*, is now made *Duytsche*, and the country *Duytschland*.

THE temper of the inhabitants of *Germany* was always ^{Temper,} reputed martial; but it is observable, that though they ^{are generally,} generally of large bodies, much flesh, and strong sinews; they ^{of 100} want spirit to actuate their large bulk, and heat to concoct ^{Germans.} their phlegmatic humour, and, therefore, are better at guarding a post than gaining a pass. It is true, that they formerly opposed the *Romans* for 210 years, and not long since the *Turks*; having fought many battles, and acquired great honour by the glorious victories they obtained, not only over those infidels, but the *French*, *Italians*, *Spaniards*, and others. They are generally good-natured, free from malice and subtlety, much addicted to both drunkenness and gluttony, but not over much to venery. The peasants are laborious, sincere, honest, and hospitable; as are likewise the merchants and tradesmen, who are withal very complaisant. The nobility are men of great honour, and commonly scholars. All the sons of a nobleman inherit their father's title, which exceedingly increases the number of their nobility; and the more because the *German* ladies are generally good breeders; and by that means the estates of the princes are so divided, for the sake of the younger children, that the principalities and sovereign lordships have increased to a vast number. All the nobility scorn marriage with a commoner; wherefore the younger brothers are often obliged to take to arms, or enter into orders, whereby they are enabled to keep up the grandeur of the family; especially by the latter, because the ecclesiastical preferments here are both numerous and rich. The women are of good complexions, corpulent, and more obsequious to their husbands than our women, many not sitting at table with them, and none having the upper place: they are well educated and fond of music, but more addicted to gaming than becomes their sex; but they are observed not to be very talkative. The genius of the *Germans* has appeared in the invention and improvement of many mechanical arts, especially clock-work. They also claim the invention of the art of printing, and of guns; and to these we may add their improvement of the art of chemistry.

History of
the consti-
tution of
the Ger-
man em-

THE greatest monarchy that has been in *Germany* was that of *Charles the Great*, otherwise called *Charlemagne*, king of *France*; for he was not only lord of the parts upon the *Lower Rhine*, and the *Main*, but by his arms subdued *Saxony* and *Bavaria*; and acquiring in the year 800, the honour of emperor of the *Romans*, resided with it here, and *Germany* has ever since been called the sacred *Roman* empire; which dignity, though but a shadow of the ancient *Roman*, has ever since borne. But for the sake of greater accuracy, it will be necessary to observe, that under the race of *Charlemagne*, the founder or restorer of this new empire of the West, the constitution or government was hereditary and absolute, and the title of emperor and empire rather regarded *Rome* and *Italy*, than *France* and *Germany*. After the death of *Charlemagne*, and his successor *Lewis le Debonnaire*, their vast states were parcelled out and divided. The titles of emperor and of *Italy* were conferred in 840, on *Lothaire* the eldest son of *Lewis*, and he was succeeded by his eldest son *Lewis II.* in 855. The others had different states: *Lothaire* got the kingdom of *Lorraine*, to which he gave his name, *Lotharingia*. *Charles III.* son of *Lewis II.* was king of *Provence* in 875. *Charles le Chauve*, or the *Bald*, the fourth son of *Lewis le Debonnaire*, who was already king of *France*, was declared emperor, as the nearest in blood, being uncle of *Lewis II.* In 877, *Charles* had for successor his son *Lewis le Bague* or the *Stammerer*, who died in 879. The imperial crown passed afterwards to *Charles le Gros*, or the *Fat*, from the year 880 to the end of 887, when that prince fell into so strange a weakness of mind, that the grandees of *Germany* acknowledged for their sovereign *Arnoul*, natural son of *Carloman*, who was eldest son of *Lewis I.* king of *Germany*. The title of emperor then began to make itself known in *Germany*; for they had there kings of *Italy*, as *Berenger*, *Guy*, *Lambert*, and *Lewis III.* but none of them were generally received as emperor. Towards the end of the month of *March* 896, *Arnoul* received the imperial crown at *Rome*, and his son *Lewis* succeeded him both in quality of king of *Germany* and emperor. With this prince, who died in *January* 912, ended in *Germany* the posterity in the male line of *Charlemagne*, which was here given an account of, chiefly with the design to shew, that the empire was then successive, and that it passed to the nearest in blood from the last emperor. His will had the force of law: yet they were careful to consult men that were wise, prudent, and intelligent in business; which still makes us admire the laws that remain to us under the title of *Capitularies*.

CON-

CONRAD, count of *Franconia*, was elected king of *Germany* in 912, without assuming the quality of emperor, which was disputed till the year 964, as well as the sovereignty of *Italy*, by five different princes, namely, *Berenger I. Rodolph, Hugh I. Lothaire, and Berenger II.*

HENRY, duke of *Saxony*, surnamed the *Fowler*, possessed himself notwithstanding of the throne of *Germany*, but without the quality of emperor, which he never assumed in any of his letters patent or diploma's: he is qualified in the title of king of *Germany*, and sometimes by that of eastern *France*; and he is even stiled *Advocatus Romanorum*, signifying protector and defender of the *Romans*. Henry dying the second of *July* in 936, *Otho I.* his eldest son, was chosen king in his place; but he was not crowned emperor till the beginning of the year 962. From this time forth the *Germans* were always possessed of the title and the imperial crown.

To begin by the constitution or state of the empire, such as it has been since *Otho I.* it is proper to observe that the election of the emperor was performed by all the grandees of *Germany*. These grandees were no other than the chief officers of the last emperors, and the governors of provinces, who acted in *Germany* as the governors of provinces had done in *France*, appropriating their governments to themselves and their posterity; but always acknowledging either the king of *Germany* or emperor lord paramount, and making no difficulty to call themselves his first vassals.

THE emperor *Otho I.* held the imperial sceptre with dignity, which procured for him the surname of *Great*: he added to the title of *Cæsar* that of *Romanorum imperator Augustus*, as *Frederic Barbarossa*, elected in 1152, had himself stiled *Semper Augustus*. After *Otho the Great*, the empire languished during some time: his son *Otho II.* lived despised, and his grandson *Otho III.* converted the love of justice into cruelty. There was a revolution in 1105; and after the death of *Henry IV.* which happened the year following, a constitution was made, whereby it was regulated, that the children of kings, though worthy and capable of governing, were not for the future to pretend to the empire by right of succession, but only by the way of a free and voluntary election: these are the terms the constitution is conceived in, and the succession began then to be inferribly abolished.

ALTHOUGH the grandees, consisting of the bishops, the prime nobility, or the great vassals, had the principal authority in the election of the emperor; yet the people, that is, the great cities, had also some share therein, not so much by

by their vote as approbation, which lasted till the middle of the thirteenth century. Then the principal princes, who about this time assumed to themselves the title of electors, appropriated to themselves also the election of the head of the empire.

ACCORDING to the *Bulla Aurea*, or Golden Bull, this election must be at *Frankfort* on the *Main*; but there have been emperors elected at *Ratisbon*. The emperor *Joseph* was elected king of the *Romans* in 1690 at *Augsburg*, because the empire was then at war with *France*, and the armies were too near *Frankfort* to hazard the solemnizing there of so important and august a ceremony.

*States of
the empire
and college
of the
electors*

THE emperor being declared chief, there must be a corporation or body of states at the head of which he is to be. This body is divided into three classes or colleges; viz. that of the electors, that of the princes of the empire, and lastly, the college of the imperial cities. This distinction was established at the diet of *Frankfort* in 1580.

THE elector of *Mentz* is the director of the electoral college, which consists of nine electors. At what time, or by what means, these princes first obtained the electoral power, is not certainly known, though it is very probable, as above hinted, they insensibly assumed it themselves. The common opinion is, that the emperor *Otho III.* and pope *Gregory V.* instituted them; but this is disputed, and many learned men are of opinion, that though it be true, that from the time of *Otho*, the empire was elective, yet the elections were not made by these princes only, but by the great officers of the empire in general; of whom, these being the chief, and most considerable by their estates, took the advantage to overtop the rest, and assume that power wholly to themselves. This is dated from the time of *Frederic II.* and *Conrad IV.* at the death of the last of which, several elections were made at the same time, and the affairs of *Germany* put thereby into great disorders. At length this kind of usurpation received a fixed and permanent state, having been passed into a law by the emperor *Charles IV.* who made the famous golden bull, which contains the form of the election and power of the electors, and answers to our *Magna Charta*. The number of these electors was then but seven, to whom an eighth was added in the last age on the following occasion: *Frederic V.* count *Palatine*, falling into difference with the emperor, and accepting of the crown of *Bohemia*, in opposition to the pretensions of *Ferdinand II.* was by him proscribed; and being defeated at the battle of *Prague*, in the year 1620, was deprived of his country

country and honours, which the emperor bestowed upon the duke of *Bavaria*: but great contests and wars ensuing thereupon, it was at last agreed, in the *Westphalian* treaty of 1648, that the count palatine should be restored to his electoral dignity; but because the duke of *Bavaria* could not be brought to part with his, an eighth electorate was erected for him; and the *Lower Palatinate*, part of his country, being restored; he has since had the title of elector palatine of the *Rhine*, and the eighth seat in the electoral college.

TOWARDS the end of the last century, the emperor *Leopold* created a ninth electorate, in favour of the house of *Brunswic Hanover*, which was greatly attached to him. This house is undoubtedly one of the most ancient and illustrious of the empire of *Germany*; and *Leopold*, to acknowledge by this dignity the affection of the branch of *Hanover*; created in favour of the duke *Ernestus-Augustus* a ninth electorate on the nineteenth *December* 1692. This was notwithstanding with the extra-collegial consent of the electors of *Mentz*, *Bavaria*, *Saxony*, and *Brandenburg*; but as this affair had neither been discussed nor concluded collegially by the electors, the new elector became involved in many difficulties, even after the electoral investiture which his imperial majesty had conferred on him at *Vienna*. These difficulties were not got over till the house of *Austria* and the friends of that of *Hanover* had found means to obtain the collegial consent of the electors of *Triers*, *Cologne*, and *Palatine*. Thus, after a long opposition, they at last agreed that the duke of *Hanover* should enjoy the title of elector; and though they reserved to themselves the definitive discussion of the conditions whereby the new elector was to be put into the total possession and exercise of the title, all was terminated to the advantage of the house of *Hanover*. But it will not be amiss to have a competent idea of what concerns every elector in particular.

IN the decline of the house of *Charlemagne*, the great officers of those emperors had governments, which they made successive and hereditary in their posterity: the same was done by the *French* lords, who from being only beneficiary dukes or counts of the great fiefs of the crown, made them their property. The ecclesiastical princes did not attempt any of the like usurpations: their great demesnes were from the liberality of *Charlemagne*, his successors, and even from the first kings of *Germany*, and the ancient *German* emperors.

THE three ecclesiastical electors are styled arch-chancellors, which is a dignity of the state, and not considered as

Electors of
Mentz;

domestic. The elector of *Mentz* is arch-chancellor of the empire for *Germany*. This dignity is purely elective, and depends on the chapter composed of twenty-four canons, called capitularies, as forming particularly the high chapter. The other canons, to the amount of eighteen, are called domiciliaries; and as admitted, having produced proofs of sixteen descents, they are aggregated in their turn to the number of the capitularies. The revenue and extent of the states of this prince are but inconsiderable. He usually nominates a vice-chancellor, who resides at *Vienna*, to take care of the affairs of the *Germanic* body, which are laid before the imperial court. The city of *Mentz*, capital of this electorate, was formerly an imperial city; but was deprived of this advantage in punishment for the assassination of *Arnoul* of *Zellenoven*, its archbishop, which was committed by the burghers of that city in 1160. *Henry II.* of *Wimburg* is the first archbishop of *Mentz*, who was declared elector at the time of publishing the golden bull, and who died in 1353. The elector of *Mentz* accepts for his temporalities the emperor's investiture as one of the great vassals of the empire, upon account of the fiefs he has received from his predecessors. He is the keeper of the archives and matricula of the empire; the inspector of the aulic council and imperial chamber, and arbiter of the greater part of the public affairs of the empire. It is to him, as prime minister, that foreign princes apply concerning any proposals to be made to them to the *Germanic* body; and to him also the princes of the empire bring their complaints. His usual residence is at *Aschaffenburg* on the *Main*, above *Frankfort*, but rarely at *Mentz*. He sits on the emperor's right-hand in the diet, and had formerly the right of crowning the king of *Bohemia*.

Electors of
Triers.

THE elector of *Triers* is arch-chancellor of the empire for *Gaul*. The pretensions of the emperors formerly, to the kingdom of *Arles* gave room to the creation of this office; but it is now without any exercise annexed to it. This elector, the second of the electoral college, occupies the most ancient see in all *Germany*. The chapter of *Triers* observes the same customs as that of *Mentz*. In the assemblies or diet of the empire, the elector of *Triers* is the first that gives his opinion or vote; and he is seated in the middle opposite the emperor. All the fiefs arising from his archbishopric revert to him, in case of the death of the feudatories without male issue. Besides *Triers*, he has also *Coblentz* and *Hermanstein*; the first, on the western bank of the *Rhine*, where the *Moselle* empties itself into that great river; and the second, op-

posite the first, on the eastern bank of the same river. These two places serve for the usual residence of the elector, who in the wars the emperor sometimes has with *France*, endeavours, as much as possible, to preserve a neutrality. *Baudouin*, count of *Luxemburg*, and brother to the emperor *Henry VII.* appears to be the first of the archbishops of *Triers*, who was made an elector of the empire. He was appointed to that see in 1308, and died in *January* 1354.

THE archbishop of *Cologne*, though the third and last of the ecclesiastical electors, is notwithstanding one of the most powerful among them. He bears the title of elector of *Cologne*, an imperial city, situate on the *Rhine*, but independent of its archbishop. His usual residence is at *Bonn*, a place of some strength, a few leagues above *Cologne*, and on the same river. His chapter, composed of princes and counts, none of the degree of barons, or gentlemen being received into it, consists of sixty canons, whereof the twenty-four first are capitularies, and are alone intitled to a vote for the election of their archbishop. This elector is arch-chancellor of the empire for the states of *Italy*; but, as the empire now possesses nothing on that continent, his office of arch-chancellor is but titular, as that of *Triers*. The ecclesiastical princes of the house of *Bavaria* have been for some time in possession of this electorate, to which are often annexed several other bishopricks of consequence, as those of *Osnabrug*, *Hildesheim*, *Munster*, *Paderborn*; because those prelacies being much sought after by Protestant princes, the Catholics find themselves obliged to nominate to them a prince of a powerful family, and in a condition of being supported, either by himself or the princes of his name. The elector of *Cologne* claims the first vote in chusing the king of the *Romans*, and the prerogative of setting the crown on his head: he sits next the emperor, on his left hand. The first archbishop of this city, honoured with the electoral title, was probably *Wabramus*, count of *Juliers*, who died in 1349.

THE first of the secular electors is the king of *Bohemia*. *King of Bohemia.* His kingdom formerly had only the title of duchy, and the first duke, it is said, was *Czechus*, who lived in the year 325. Others, with more probability make *Primislaus* the first duke in 722; it was he who built the city of *Prague*, and died in 745. *Ulcislaus*, who died in 1092, was the first that was acknowledged by the title of king of this state in the year 1086. After many revolutions, this kingdom came into the house of *Austria* by the marriage of *Ferdinand I.* brother of *Charles V.* with the princess *Anne*, sister

of king *Lewis*, who was slain at the battle of *Mohatz* in 1526. By this alliance, the *German* branch of the house of *Austria* obtained an electorate; and this kingdom subsists in it to this day. The duchy of *Silesia*, which made the most considerable and richest part of *Bohemia*, is now separated from it, and in possession of the king of *Prussia*, elector of *Brandenburg*. The county of *Lusatia*, a fief of *Bohemia*, belongs almost all of it to the elector of *Saxony*, except some districts the king of *Prussia* is possessed of; so that the greatest fief of this kingdom is now confined to the marquisate of *Moravia*, which has remained to the heirs of the house of *Austria*. Formerly the king of *Bohemia* only voted and sat among the electors in the business of choosing an emperor; but in 1708, a decree or imperial constitution was made, whereby this king has a right to sit and vote in the electoral college. This act of the diet is called *Readmission*, and in consequence of it, his ambassador has a right to assist at all the deliberations of the empire. The king of *Bohemia* also is chief cup-bearer to the emperor, and in public processions walks next to him, or to the king of the *Romans*.

Electors of
Saxony.

THE electoral house of *Saxony* is undoubtedly one of the most ancient and illustrious in *Germany*, where it has been known even before the tenth century. It was not, however, invested with the electoral duchy of *Saxony* till the year 1423, in the person of *Frederic*, surnamed *the Warlike*, who enjoyed only during five years this great dignity, and died in the month of *June* 1428. In 1547, there was a considerable revolution: *John Frederic*, surnamed *the Magnanimous*, having declared himself for *Luther's* opinion, was attacked, defeated, and made prisoner by the emperor *Charles V.* who put him under the ban of the empire, and divested him, both of the electoral dignity and the duchy of *Saxony*. Prince *Maurice* of *Saxony*, *John Frederic's* cousin, was invested with them the same year, and dying without issue in 1553, left his states to the prince *Augustus*, his brother. It is from the latter the house of *Saxony* descends, having ever since subsisted with great dignity in the empire, and consideration in *Europe*. The prevailing religion in this electorate is the Protestant or Lutheran. The elector *Frederic Augustus* having been elected king of *Poland* in 1697, embraced the Catholic religion, and his son and successor the late king of *Poland*, abjured the protestant communion at *Rome* in the course of his travels, and declared it publicly in 1717. He was not long survived by his eldest son, *Frederic*, who died of the small pox, *December* 1763. The present elector is *Frederic Augustus*, born the 23d of *December*,

1750, and under the regency of his mother the electress, and prince *Xavier* of *Saxony*. The elector of *Saxony* has great privileges: besides being, during the vacancy of the imperial throne, one of the vicars of the empire, a dignity we shall speak of hereafter, justice is administered by him in a definitive manner, without an appeal to the emperor's aulic council, or the imperial chamber of *Wetzlar*. The states he possesses as elector, are *Upper Saxony*, *Misnia*, which he holds from his first progenitors, and the *Upper* and *Lower Lusatia*, which his ancestors have acquired from the princes of the house of *Austria*, as kings of *Bohemia*. The city of *Dresden*, situate on the *Elbe*, is the place of his usual residence. The elector of *Saxony* is styled grand-marshal of the empire, and carries the naked sword before the emperor.

THE younger branch of the *Palatine* house, or of *Bavaria*, Elector of called commonly in the empire *Guillemine*, has been only *Bavaria*. in possession of the electorate since the year 1623, after the elector palatine *Frederic* had accepted in 1619 of the crown of *Bohemia*. This house is incontestably one of the most ancient in the empire. The abbot *du Bos*, in the manifesto or public declaration made by him at the beginning of the *Spanish* war, in favour and under the name of *Maximilian Emanuel*, goes so far as to say, "That we might find in history that the house of *Bavaria* was already one of the most illustrious in *Germany*, when that of *Hapsburg* was not yet much celebrated." This illustrious house, a branch of the *Palatine*, was very well known towards the middle of the eleventh century, when *Otho*, count of *Schyren* and *Vitteffach*, was made count palatine of *Bavaria*. The *Lower Palatinate* afterwards came to him. It must not, however, be supposed that *Otho* of *Schyren* cannot be traced back to more remote times. The *Bavarian* historians have set forth the great dignity and eminency of this house in the genealogy they have published of it. We see therein that it has produced kings, as well as emperors. It is from *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, raised to the imperial dignity in 1314, and who died in 1347, that the branch of the dukes of *Bavaria* descends. Though its possession of the electoral dignity is dated from 1623, and the confirmation of it with the *Upper Palatinate*, from the treaty of *Westphalia* in 1648; it was notwithstanding, or ought to have been, electoral long before, that illustrious dignity belonging alternately to the *Rodolphine* branch, the elder, and to the *Guillemine*, the second. Such was the convention made at *Pavia* between the emperor *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, and *Adolphus* son of *Rodolphus*, and brother of *Lewis*. But *Charles IV.* a declared enemy of *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, whose

The Conclusion of

whose competitor he was for some years before, being his successor, deprived by the golden bull the branch of *Bavaria* of the electorate in order to appropriate it solely to the *Palatine* branch; and thereby he cut off the alternative. The treaty of *Westphalia* afterwards confirmed the house of *Bavaria* in the electorate; and though that dignity was also restored to the *Palatine* house, a difficulty still subsists, which has not been intirely decided. During the vacancy of the imperial throne, the elector palatine was vicar of the empire in the principalities included in the rights and privileges of *Swabia* and *Franconia*: the elector of *Bavaria* as surrogated to the rights of *Palatine*, pretended also to be vicar of the empire; but there has been not long since a sort of an agreement between the two electors, in expectation of a definitive resolution.

THOSE two branches have produced great men, either in several kings of *Sweden*, or in some electors of the *Rodolphine* branch, which was vested with the *Palatine* electorate; or in the *Guillelmine* branch, which produced the celebrated *Lewis* of *Bavaria*, who supported the imperial dignity with so much courage against all his enemies. We have had within this century that respectable prince, *Maximilian Emanuel*. The emperor *Leopold*, whose son-in-law he was, could not forget that he had expended in the wars of *Hungary* upwards of thirty millions of *German* florins, which the elector *Ferdinand* his father had amassed by the neutralities he preserved in all the wars of his time. *Leopold* to detach him from the interest of *Lewis XIV.* and *Philip V.* offered him the kingdom of the two *Sicilies*, but *Maximilian's* honour made him adhere inviolably to his engagements. *Leopold* was scarce dead, when his most inveterate enemy the emperor *Joseph*, put him under the ban of the empire in the aulic council, contrary to the tenour of all the imperial laws. The states general of *Holland*, who had a singular esteem for this great prince, gave him the strongest assurances that peace should never be made, till he was intirely reinstated; and this accordingly was effected in 1714. The late emperor was of this house: he was raised to this dignity in 1742. The elector of *Bavaria* is high-sewer, and in public processions and ceremonies carries the globe before the emperor, and at the election-feast serves the first dish on the new emperor's table.

Electors of
Brandenburg.

NOTWITHSTANDING the illustrious antiquity of the house of *Brandenburg*, which is dated from the ninth century, it did not arrive at its present grandeur, but by degrees and a small increase. Besides the electoral dignity that

that in 1417 it acquired with the marche, or marquissate of *Brandenburg*, it possesses greater demesnes than any other prince of the empire. These are *Prussia*, erected into a kingdom in 1701; the duchy of *Cleves*, the principalities of *Magdeburgh*, *Halberstadt*, and *Minden*, with the counties of *Ravensberg* and *la Marck*, and lately the county of *Embsen*, and the duchy of *Silesia*, except some small districts. The personal accomplishments of the present king of *Prussia*, his snare in the late wars, his conduct therein, his experience as a general, his wisdom as a legislator, are all too well known in *Europe* to require here any particular panegyric. Justice is administered in his states, according to the different customs of each province, from whence the parties may appeal to the elector's sovereign council; but there can be no appeal from it, either to the aulic council, or imperial chamber. This prince's states are situate, at such a distance from one another, that he is obliged to use great precautions in his alliances and treaties with the several powers. The elector is of the Calvinist persuasion, but there are numbers of Catholics in his states, who are more protected in them than in other Protestant states. The Lutherans also are tolerated by him. The branches of the electoral house of *Brandenburg* are those of *Bareith* and *Anspach*. *Berlin* is the usual residence of the elector, who, as great-chamberlain, presents water to the emperor, and in public ceremonies carries the Imperial sceptre.

THE electoral *Palatine* house, notwithstanding its re-establishment in 1648, lost its precedence, being since classed in the eighth rank. We have already shewn its consanguinity with the electoral house of *Bavaria*. All that now need be said is, that the present elector, one of the princes of *Sultzbach*, comes from a branch of the *Palatine* house, elder than that of *Bavaria*. It is well known, that after *Wenceslaus*, who was deposed, *Robert* count palatine, was placed on the Imperial throne in the year 1400; and that the branch of *Deux-Ponts*, the younger of that of *Sultzbach*, has given three kings and a queen to *Sweden*. The elector's country is the *Lower-Palatinate*; his religion is that of the church of *Rome*; but his subjects are for the most part Protestants. He is styled high-steward of the empire, and carries the crown.

WE have already shewn the difficulties the duke of *Hanover* met with, in becoming peaceable possessor of the electoral dignity, which was justly due to him, if we consider the antiquity of his illustrious house. If the emperor *Leopold* shewed his gratitude to the dukes of *Hanover*, by creating them

*Elector
Palatine.*

*Elector of
Hanover.*

them electors, it may be also said that they have not failed in making a suitable return to the house of *Austria*, whose pretensions, before the late war, they constantly supported and defended as their own.

THIS house, which retired from *Italy* into *Germany* in the tenth century, comes from the ancient house of *Est*; it soon distinguished itself in the empire, where it possessed the duchy of *Saxony*, and even the imperial throne, in the year 1208, in the person of *Otho IV.* The branch of *Brunswick-Hanover*, which is the younger, has been more fortunate than the elder branch, that of *Brunswick-Wolfenbutel*, which, notwithstanding, is at the head of the princes of the empire. In 1714, *George I.* the second elector of *Hanover*, ascended the throne of *England*, and greatly augmented his *German* dominions by the purchase of several principalities from the king of *Denmark*, who had conquered them from *Charles XII.* of *Sweden*. The elector may thus be now considered as one of the most powerful princes of the empire. He has the title of arch-treasurer, and carries the standard.

Substitutes
of the
electors.

WHEN these princes cannot assist themselves in person at the imperial ceremonies, they are replaced by a substitute who represents them; thus, the elector of *Mentz* nominates himself his vice-chancellor, whom he puts in place and changes at pleasure; but the rest are represented by lieutenants in right of their titles, as the king of *Bohemia* by the count of *Limburg*, the elector of *Bavaria* by the count of *Walburg*, *Saxony* by the count of *Pappenheim*, *Brandenburg* by the count of *Hohenzollern*, and the palatine, by the count of *Suitzendorf*.

Vicars of
the empire.

THE elector of *Saxony* and the count palatine were formerly the two sole vicars of the empire during an interregnum; but the latter having been put under the imperial ban, and stripped of his electoral dignity, the emperor *Ferdinand II.* conferred it on the duke of *Bavaria* in 1623; and in the treaty of *Munster*, in 1648, it was resolved, "That the electoral dignity, which heretofore had been possessed by the prince palatine, was to remain to the lord *Maximilian* count palatine, duke of *Bavaria*, and his children." Hereupon the elector of *Bavaria* pretended that the vicarship of the empire belonged to him, exclusively of the count palatine. On the other hand, the elector palatine, newly reinstated, maintained that the vicarship did not depend on the electoral dignity, but on that of count palatine of the *Rhine*, according to the ancient usage, and the *Golden Bull*, Chap. V, wherein it is specified expressly, that the count palatine of the *Rhine* is vicar of the empire on account of his principality.

pality, and the privilege of count palatine. This prince, in virtue of the vicarship, has a power of administering justice, nominating to ecclesiastical benefices, receiving the revenues of the empire, investing with fiefs, and of having allegiance and homage paid to him in behalf, and in the name of, the Holy Empire. This allegiance and homage are, notwithstanding, to be renewed to the king of the *Romans* as soon as he is elected; but the fiefs of the princes, and those usually given with the standard, are specially reserved to the emperor alone, or to the king of the *Romans*; and in case of a vacancy of fiefs, the count palatine, as vicar of the empire, cannot alienate them during the time of his administration. Such is the law of the empire regulated by the Golden Bull, and the duke of *Saxony* enjoys the same privilege in the extent of his vicarship; for their departments are quite separate. The jurisdiction of the *Palatine* is along the *Rhine*, and in the provinces aggregated to the circles of *Suabia* and *Franconia*; and the power of the duke of *Saxony* takes place in all the northern territories and principalities where the *Saxon* laws and privileges are in force.

HOWEVER, the *Palatine* vicarship has already been involved in several difficulties. After the death of the emperor *Ferdinand III.* in 1657, the elector of *Bavaria* first disputed the *Palatine's* right. He opposed his competitor's pretensions; and by the many writings published on both sides, the empire became divided in opinion. But in the election of the present emperor *Francis of Lorrain*, there was a kind of partition, and each of the two electors exercised his right in a certain extent of country, which may happen again, unless the diet of the empire should undertake to decide finally this matter.

AFTER the electors comes the college of the princes of the empire, more extensive as to number, but less powerful than the electoral college, which, with the emperor, is at the head of the *Germanic* body. They are divided, as well as the electors, into two classes, ecclesiastical and secular.

THE first are at present the archbishop of *Salzburg*, the most distinguished next to the three ecclesiastical electors. His revenue is very considerable. He has thirty-six chamberlains, who, as those of the electors, carry a gold key by their side. He is primate of *Germany*, and his chapter is composed of twenty-four capitulary canons, who have a right to elect their archbishop, as they have a right to be also elected. There are besides domiciliary canons, who become capitulary in rotation according to their seniority. The archbishop of *Salzburg* has the particular privilege, which no other archbishop in the empire enjoys, of having the sole

nomination to the bishopricks of *Lavautz*, in the *Lower-Carinthia*, and *Chiemsee*, a small town of the circle of *Bavaria*; but these two bishops are not princes of the empire.

Bishop of Bamberg. **BAMBERG** sits next on the bench of ecclesiastical princes, as first bishop of the empire; he is one of the most powerful, and acknowledges only the pope for superior in spirituals. His chapter is composed of twenty capitulary canons, who have a right to elect and to be elected. This prelate is sovereign in his states, which consist of some portions of the territories of the four electors of *Bohemia*, *Saxony*, *Bavaria*, and *Brandenburg*.

Bishop of Wirtzburg. The bishop of *Wirtzburg* assumes the title of duke of *Francopia*, though this province depends on several secular princes. When he celebrates mass pontifically, his grand-marshal assists at it with his sword on his shoulder; hence came the proverb in *Germany*, *Herbipolis sola pugnat ense & stola*. His chapter consists of twenty-four capitulary canons, who, in order to be admitted, must not only make proof of nobility, but also undergo a ridiculous ceremony, which is of passing between two rows of canons, and receiving the discipline of rods from them on the naked shoulders. It is pretended that this custom was introduced to hinder princes, counts, and barons, getting into the chapter.

Bishop of Worms and Spire. THE bishoprick of *Worms* is one of the least considerable in revenue; its situation on the *Rhine* does not therefore make it the more prized, no more than that of *Spire*, situate above it on the same river. On the least motion of war, these two states are commonly ruined or abandoned, not having strength enough in themselves to provide for their security.

Bishop of Ausburg and Constance. THE bishop of *Ausburg*, though in the midst of the empire, is not apprehensive of the like inconveniencies; but his power, both in spirituals and temporals, is extremely limited, being not permitted to remain in his episcopal city, but as long as his chapter admits him. *Ausburg* besides is a free and imperial city, holding only of the empire and emperor. The bishop of *Constance*, on a lake of the same name, is not more powerful, though the bishoprick was founded by the kings of *France* of the first race, and has a jurisdiction over 1800 parishes. The city of *Constance*, formerly imperial, having refused the *interim* in 1548, was put under the ban of the empire, and the house of *Austria*, having assumed the property of it, still enjoys the same.

Bishop of Paderborn. THE bishoprick of *Paderborn* was established by *Charlemagne*, who built its church in 777. This bishoprick is almost surrounded by Protestant princes, whose endeavours to make themselves masters of it, oblige its chapter to make always

ways choice of some powerful prince who might be in a condition to support and keep them independent of their enemies. The conditions for being received canon, are to have studied in an university of *France* or *Italy*, and to have resided there a year and six weeks, without lying out of the city. *Paderborn* was formerly free and imperial; but having made some motion in the sixteenth century in favour of the Protestants, it was laid under the ban of the empire, and subjected to its bishop.

HILDESHEIM, whose bishoprick is not less sought after by the Protestants than that of *Paderborn*, owes its foundation to *Lewis le Debonnair*, who transferred it to this city in 814; for *Charlemagne* had before established it in the borough of *Eltze*. Though the greater part of the inhabitants are Protestants, they acknowledge the bishop for their sovereign as well as the Catholics. † When a canon has resided three months, he may be absent six years, that is, two years for travelling, two out of devotion, and two on account of study. *Bishop of Hildesheim.*

RATISBON, situate on the *Danube*, is one of the most ancient cities in *Germany*. Its bishop, established about the year 740, is prince of the empire, and holds only of the see of *Rome* in spirituals; but he is not master of his city, which was made free and imperial about the close of the twelfth century. It is at present the place of assembly for the diets of the empire, and this is what makes it so considerable. The Catholics possess in it the cathedral, and upwards of twenty other churches; but their interest is otherwise so inconsiderable, that they are not only excluded the magistracy, but even the privileges of citizens. *Bishop of Ratisbon.*

THE bishoprick of *Osnabrug* was founded by *Charlemagne*, in 776. Its bishop is sovereign in an opulent and plentiful country, that extends into *Westphalia*. The Lutherans have four canons in the chapter, and the bishop is alternately Catholic and Protestant; but the latter must be chosen in the house of *Brunswick-Lunenburgh*. In this case, the archbishop of *Cologne*, as metropolitan, superintends all spiritual affairs, and the pope nominates thereto an apostolical vicar. The present bishop of *Osnabrug* is his royal highness *Frederrick*, second son of his majesty king *George III.* of *Great Britain*. *Bishop of Osnabrug.*

THE bishoprick and principality of *Munster* is one of the most considerable of the empire. Its bishop was established in 794, at the sollicitation of *Charlemagne*, who endowed him with great possessions; but as *Munster* was not yet built, the foundation was at *Mimingerode*; and in the beginning of the *Bishop of Munster.*

the ninth century, the second bishop *Herman*, had a monastery built, and it is from thence that the city then forming took its name. This bishop did not become a prince of the empire till 1246. The emperor *Frederic II.* made over his right of nominating to this bishoprick by a *Congé d'Elire*, which he granted the chapter. It was in this city that was concluded, in 1648, the famous treaty, whereby the king of *Spain* acknowledged the states-general of the United Provinces, as sovereign, free, and independent.

Bishop of Aichstet and Stralsburg. THE bishopricks of *Aichstet* and *Stralsburg* are less extensive, and contribute much less to the charges of the empire. The first, situate between the *Upper-Palatinate* and *Bavaria*, is indebted for its establishment to *St. Boniface*, archbishop of *Mentz*, who founded it in the year 748. The dignity of prince of the empire, with a seat in the diet, was preserved to the archbishop of *Strasbourg* by the emperor *Charles VI.* though the greater part of this prelate's territory is now under the dominion of *France*; but he is still possessed of a large tract beyond the *Rhine*, in the empire, where his jurisdiction takes place both in temporals and spirituals.

Bishop of Liege. THOUGH the bishoprick of *Liege* is aggregated to the *Netherlands*, its bishop is notwithstanding one of the most powerful princes of the circle of *Westphalia*. Its foundation was at *Tongres*, in the beginning of the fourth century, but was transferred to *Liege* in 709. The bishop is sovereign in the city, but there is something of a republican government in the state, which was formerly the cause of revolutions.

Bishops of Frisinghe, Passau, Basil, Coire, Trent, and Brixen. THE bishopricks of *Frisinghe* and *Passau*, in the circle of *Bavaria*, are inconsiderable; but they have always a rank and seat among the ecclesiastical princes, as well as *Basil* in *Switzerland*, and *Coire* in the *Grisons* country, *Trent* on the frontiers of *Italy*, and *Brixen* in the neighbourhood of *Carinthia* and *Friuli*, which give to their bishops the quality of princes of the empire, being sovereigns in their episcopal cities, and under the protection of the house of *Austria*, though acknowledging no dependance on it.

Bishop of Lubeck. THE bishop of *Lubeck*, though a Lutheran, has always retained his vote and seat in the diet, as an ecclesiastical prince. The house of *Holstein* may be said to have made this prelacy its property, and the election of the chapter is but a matter of mere ceremony. The city was declared free and imperial in 1181, which was renewed and confirmed in 1227. The bishop has no temporal authority over the city, though he has always preserved his spiritual jurisdiction. In the sessions of the diet, he is seated on a particular bench, separate from the other bishops.

BEFORE the revolutions occasioned in Germany in the beginning of the sixteenth century, by a difference in religious sentiments, there were several other ecclesiastical princes who had a vote and seat in the diets of the empire; but they are at present secularized, and converted into principalities, purely temporal, possessed by divers electors and other princes of the empire; as those of *Magdeburg*, formerly an archbishoprick and primacy in Germany; *Bremen* also an archbishoprick; the bishopricks of *Halberstadt*, *Verden*, *Mersburg*, *Nawmburg*, *Meissen*, *Havêlberg*, *Brandenburg*, *Lebus*, *Ratzeburg*, *Swrem*, and *Camin*. Secularized bishopricks.

BESANCON and *Cambrâi*, though qualifying their prelates with the title of princes of the empire, have now neither vote nor seat in the states: the same may be said of the archbishops and bishops of *Bohemia*, *Silesia*, *Moravia*, *Hungary*, and *Austria*; but these even in ancient times had no vote nor seat in the diet. other bishopricks.

WE must reckon among the ecclesiastical princes the grand master of the Teutonic order, who votes and sits before all the bishops. He was formerly settled in *Ducal Prussia*, which is now a kingdom. *Albert*, of the house of *Brandenburg*, seized that principality in the beginning of the sixteenth century, and established himself in it in 1525, with the title of duke, after introducing there the opinions of *Luther*, and having received the investiture of it from *Poland*. This grand masterdom underwent many revolutions in the empire; as well as the state of grand prior of *Malta*, who sits also as prince in the imperial diets. Grand master of the Teutonic Order, and Grand Prior of Malta.

Abbots come next in order, of whom the first is the abbot of *Fulda*, the primate and chief of the abbots, and prince and arch-chancellor to the empress. In the last quality, he formerly believed he could dispute the precedence with the secular electors, but his endeavours were to no purpose. Though his country, or rather his states, have been ruined during the long wars of the empire, he is still, notwithstanding, very rich, and enjoys great prerogatives: it may be also said, that he is the richest of all the abbots of *Europe*, and that he can maintain a good number of troops. His abbey owes its foundation to *St. Boniface*, bishop of *Mentz*, who established it in 744. The city is handsome and well built, and all parts of his principality are well cultivated. Abbot of Fulda.

THE other abbots are those of *Kempten* in *Swabia*, of *Elwangen* in the same circle, secularized in 1460; of *Murbach* in *Alsace*; of the grand prior of *Malta*; of *Bergstolzg.*, united with the diocese of *Salzburg*; of *Weissenburg*; of *Prum*, Other abbots.

Prum, united with the archbishoprick of *Triers*; of *Stavelo*, united with *Malmédy*, in the bishopric of *Liege*. *Corwey*, or the *New Corbie*, in the circle of *Westphalia*, was founded in the year 823, by *St. Afelard*, abbot of *Corbie*, in *France*. The other prelates that are immediate, have all together but one vote, as also the abbesses, who are represented by their deputies.

Secular
princes.

THE secular princes take their seats after the ecclesiastical. These are principally those of *Bavaria*, and palatines of different branches, and of *Saxony*, *Brandenburg*, *Brunswick*, without mentioning many other princes who vote alternately; of this number are *Mecklenburg*, *Wirtemberg*, *Hesse*, and *Baden*.

Counts of
the empire.

THE immediate counts of the empire are divided into four classes; namely, those of *Wetaria*, *Suabia*, *Franconia*, and *Westphalia*, and each of these classes has but one vote. The number of those counts is about an hundred and ten.

Imperial
cities.

THE imperial cities form a third college in the diets of the empire, and are divided into two benches; namely, the bench of the *Rhine*, which has twenty, and that of *Suabia*, which has thirty-six; but all of them are not of equal consequence, except *Cologne*, *Lubeck*, *Frankfort*, and *Hamburg*, in the bench of the *Rhine*; the greatest part of the rest enjoy but a shadow of liberty. *Ratisbon*, *Augsburg*, *Nuremberg*, *Ulm*, and some others, are cities of consequence in the bench of *Suabia*; but most of those that come next, are contented with enjoying their liberty. Those cities collectively were in former times so considerable in the empire, that it was sometimes apprehended they might occasion a general revolution; but the humbling of them, which was brought about by different wars, made this fear to vanish. They have but two votes in the diets, each bench one. It must, however, be observed in regard to their votes, that when the two colleges of electors and princes are agreed, the college of the cities is obliged to obey, and consent to their decisions, without any farther consultation among themselves.

Circles of
the empire.

BESIDES the diets, or general assemblies, particular ones are also held in the circles. Those circles are a sort of generalities, or great provinces, wherein the princes, prelates, counts, and imperial cities that compose them, assemble to regulate their common affairs. Their establishment is owing to the emperor *Maximilian I.* who first, in 1500, established six of them, as those of *Franconia*, *Bavaria*, *Suabia*, the *Rhine*, *Westphalia*, and *Lower-Saxony*. In 1512, he added thereto those of *Austria*, *Burgundy*, the *Lower-Rhine*, and *Upper-Saxony*. *Charles V.* his grandson, confirmed this di-

vision

vision at the diet of *Nuremberg* in 1522, and since this time it has always subsisted; but, pursuant to the treaty of *Munster*, in 1648, the circle of *Burgundy* being then deemed independent of the empire, has not since contributed to its charges. Each circle has its directors and a colonel. The first call together the assembly of the states of their circle, in order to regulate therein in concert the public affairs. The colonel commands the troops, and has the care of the artillery and the necessary ammunition. The states of each circle are to contribute to the wants of the empire, whereof they are members, by a tax imposed on them for maintaining the troops and defraying other expences, in proportion to the number of horse and foot, and other exigencies. ••

THE circle of *Austria*, which the dignity of the house of *Austria* usually places in the first rank, comprehends the hereditary countries of that house, with the duchies of *Stiria*, *Carinthia*, and *Carniola*; to which are joined the county of *Tirol*, and *Austrian Suvia*, though separated from those provinces. The ecclesiastical princes of this circle are the bishops of *Trent* and *Brixen*. The secular princes are the archduke of *Austria*, the sole director of them; the others are the counts of *Aversberg*, *Dietrichstein*, and *Piccolomini*; to which are added, the four forest-towns in *Switzerland* belonging to the house of *Austria*. *Circle of Austria.*

As to the original of this great and flourishing family, the disputes of various writers about it, incontestably prove its great antiquity; and the different sentiments that have been published of it, are pregnant evidences of a desire to entitle many ancient and illustrious houses to the honour of being allied to this. The most probable and best attested of these accounts, make *Rodolph*, count of *Hapsburg*, generally reputed the founder, because he was the first emperor of this family, in 1273. He was descended by his father's side from the counts of *Tierstein*, near *Basil*, in *Switzerland*; and by the mother's side from the ancient counts of *Hapsburg*. From the time that *Albert II.* of this family, was chosen emperor, in 1438, the Imperial dignity has continued in the house of *Austria*, in which the order of primogeniture has always determined the electors. Not long after *Albert's* demise, the whole monarchy of *Spain* fell to the same house, by the marriage of *Philip I.* *Maximilian's* son, to the infanta *Jane*, daughter of the Catholic king *Ferdinand*. This *Philip* being father to the emperors *Charles V.* and *Ferdinand I.* they formed two branches; the eldest of which reigned in *Spain* till 1700, when it came to be extinct by the death of *Charles II.* and the younger has had the good fortune ever since, by *Account of the house of Austria.*

consent of the electors, to keep the Imperial crown in their family. The said *Ferdinand* annexed the kingdoms of *Bohemia* and *Hungary* to the house of *Austria*, by his marriage with *Anne*, the heiress of those two kingdoms; and the late emperor *Charles VI.* after fourteen years war, begun by the emperor *Leopold* his father, and *Joseph* his brother, to regain the *Spanish* monarchy, made the peace of *Rastadt*, in 1714, with *France*; and that of *Vienna*, in 1725, with *Spain*; by which he renounced the *Spanish* monarchy, on condition of keeping the kingdoms of *Naples* and *Sicily*, and the ports and places on the coast of *Tuscany*, and that part of the *Netherlands* which formerly belonged to the crown of *Spain*. But by a subsequent treaty, concluded with *France* in *October* 1735, his Imperial majesty parted with *Naples* and *Sicily* to *Don Carlos*, the second son of the king of *Spain*, in lieu of which he had entailed upon him the succession to the duchies of *Tuscany*, *Parma*, and *Placentia*, on the demise of the late duke; and in consequence thereof, the duke of *Lorraine*, the present emperor of *Germany*, who married the queen of *Hungary*, daughter to the said emperor, is now great-duke of *Tuscany*.

Pragmatic Sanction.

THE Pragmatic Sanction is the name given to the disposition for intailing the *Austrian* estates upon the female issue, in case of failure in the male. *Charles VI.* made one in 1720, which was then sworn to by his own states, and in 1726, made a public law by the *German* diet. It was also guarantied by *Spain*, *Muscovy*, *Great Britain*, the States-General, *Denmark*, and at last by *France*. The tenor of this notable disposition was to this effect: all the hereditary countries were formed into one state, to remain for ever united and indivisible; and were granted, on the demise of his Imperial majesty, to the archduchess, his eldest daughter, and her heirs; and on failure thereof, to her sister and her heirs; and, in default of both, the succession passes to the electoral princesses of *Saxony*, the late queen of *Poland*, as eldest daughter of the emperor *Joseph*: thence to the electress of *Bavaria* her sister; then to the house of *Portugal*; and lastly, to that of *Lorraine*; or the nearest relations of the house of *Austria*, who should offer themselves.—But to return to the circles.

Circle of Bavaria.

THE circle of *Bavaria*, of which the duke of *Bavaria* and the archbishop of *Salzburg* are directors, is situated between *Bohemia*, *Franconia*, *Suabia*, *Tirol*, and *Austria*. Besides the archbishop of *Salzburg*, the other ecclesiastical princes are the bishops of *Frisinge*, *Ratisphen*, and *Passau*, with the provost of *Berchtoldsgrade*, the abbies of *Waldsachsen*, *Kayser*

Kyzerheim, St. Emmeran, Nides, and Obermunster. The secular princes are the dukes of *Bavaria* and *Neuburg*, the prince of *Sultzbach*; the counts of *Ortemburg, Sterstein, Eggenberg, and Lobkowitz.* *Ratisbon* is the only imperial city of this circle.

THE circle of *Suabia*, a fertile and plentiful country, *Circle of* comprehends for ecclesiastical princes the bishops of *Constance Suabia.* and *Augsburg*, with the abbies of *Kempten, Elwangen, Lindau, Buchaw,* and several other less considerable, to the amount of twenty-one, including the Teutonic commandery of *Altshausen.* The secular princes are the duke of *Wurtemberg*, the marquisses of *Baden-Baden* and *Baden-Durlach*, with the principalities and counties of *Hohenzollern* and *Furstenberg*, and twelve other countries of less consequence. The principal imperial cities of this circle are *Augsburg, Ulm, Heilbron*, and a number of others less considerable. Its directors are the bishop of *Constance* and the duke of *Wurtemberg.*

THE circle of *Franconia* extends not less than forty leagues either in length or breadth. It was antiently inhabited by the *Franks*, and was called *Eastern France* under the first and second race of the *French* kings. *Pepin* and *Charlemagne* gave their possessions in *Franconia* to the bishop of *Wurtzburg.* This country had dukes who were kings of *Germany* after the house of *Charlemagne* became extinct. The princes and states of this circle are, the bishops of *Bamberg, Wurtzburg, and Aichstet*, with the grand master of the Teutonic order. The secular states are the marquisses of *Culembach* and *Anspach*, with the counts of *Henneberg, Schwartzenberg*, and seven or eight others less considerable. The city of *Nuremberg* is the richest and most important of the imperial cities in this circle, the directors of which are the bishop of *Bamberg*, and the marquis of *Culembach*, of the house of *Brandenburg.* *Circle of Franconia.*

THE circle of *Upper-Saxony* has no imperial cities, and but one director, who is the elector of that name. Its princes are now all secular. These are the electors of *Saxony* and *Brandenburg*, with the princes possessed of the secularized bishopricks of *Mersburg* and *Nayumburg*, both at present united to the duchy of *Saxony.* There are also some titular abbots, but of the Lutheran communion. Almost all the princes of the house of *Saxony* have their estates in this circle, in which are also included the duchy of *Pomerania*, belonging to *Brandenburg*, and the principality of *Anhalt.* *Circle of Upper-Saxony.*

Circle of
Lower-
Saxony.

THE circle of *Lower-Saxony*, formerly occupied by the ancient *Saxons*, is one of the most extensive of the empire. Its ecclesiastical principalities are now reduced to those of *Hildesheim* and *Lubeck*. The secular princes are very powerful, as those of the duchy and electorate of *Hanover*, the duchies of *Brunswick*, *Lunenbourg*, *Mecklenbourg*, *Holftein*, *Magdeburg*, and *Saxe-Lawemburg*. The last is possessed by the elector of *Hanover*. Its imperial cities are *Lubeck*, *Bremen*, and *Hamburg*; the rest are inconsiderable. Its direction is alternately under the duke-elector of *Hanover*, as duke of *Bremen*, and under the elector of *Brandenburg* in quality of duke of *Magdeburg*, with the elder of the dukes of *Brunswick*.

Circle of
Westphalia.

THE circle of *Westphalia* is considerable enough, very fertile, and one of the most powerful in the empire. Its directors are the dukes of *Juliers* and *Cleves*, who are so alternately as well as the bishop of *Munster*. The ecclesiastical princes of this circle are the bishops of *Paderborn*, *Liege*, *Osnabrug*, and *Munster*; with the abbots of *Stablo*, *Corwey*, *St. Cornelis*, *Munster*, and two others less powerful. The secular princes are the dukes of *Juliers* and *Berg*, at present the elector-palatine. The duke of *Cleves* is the elector of *Brandenburg*, in quality of count of *la Marck*, and also prince of *East-Friesland*, and prince of *Minden*, a bishoprick secularized by the peace of *Westphalia*; but the principality of *Verden* belongs to the duke of *Hanover*, who purchased it in 1712 from the king of *Denmark*. Except the estates of the house of *Nassau*, and the county of *Ravensberg*, which belongs to the elector of *Brandenburg*, the others are much less considerable. The imperial cities are *Cologne*, *Aix-la-Chapelle*, and *Dormund*.

Circle of
the Lower-
Rhine.

THE electoral circle, or of the *Lower-Rhine*, has both these names; the first, as comprehending four electorates; the second, as being in the lower part of the *Rhine*. It is more considerable by its electors, than by the other princes or states that compose it. These electors are those of *Mentz*, *Triers*, *Cologne*, and *Palatine*. *Mentz* and *Palatine* are its directors; and in the other states, the counties of *Nassau-Beilstein*, *Lower-Isenburg*, and *Arenberg*, are the most distinguished.

Circle of
the Upper-
Rhine.

THE circle of the *Upper-Rhine* was antiently more extensive than at present. Its directors are the bishop of *Worms*, and the elector-palatine, as duke of *Simmeren*. The other ecclesiastical princes are the bishops of *Strassburg*, for the estates they possess beyond the *Rhine*, the bishop of *Spire* and *Basle*; with the abbots of *Bilda*, *Prum*, and the grand prior

of the order of *Malta* in *Germany*. The principal secular princes are the palatine of the *Rhine*, the duke of *Deux-Ponts*, the landgrave of *Hesse*, the prince of *Hirschfeld*, the counts of *Hanau*, *Nassau-Wisbaden*, and some others of distinguished birth, but not so powerful as those mentioned. The imperial cities are *Worms*, *Spire*, *Frankfort on the Main*, a place very considerable for its riches and commerce, *Wetzlar*, *Gelnhausen*, and *Friedberg*, which three last are much less considerable.

THE circle of *Burgundy* comprehends the *Franche-Comté* Circle of and the *Netherlands*; but at present all these states are independent of the empire, and not being concerned with the diets, they consequently form no circle.

THUS we see, that the diet, or parliament of *Germany*, Diet of is composed of the electors, the princes spiritual and temporal of the empire, and the deputies of the imperial cities. Germany. This general assembly of all the states of the empire is summoned by the emperor, by letters directed to every member, six months before the session, informing them of the time and place. When they are assembled, the emperor, or his commissioner, proposes the matters to be transacted, which are things that concern the empire in general; such as raising money for a foreign war, and making laws which oblige all the states. how assembled and held.

THE power of the emperor has been so restrained by several capitularies, or agreements between the emperor and the princes, that it is difficult to say what it is. The best account that can be given of it is, that he exercises regal authority over all *Germany*, except in such things as by grants of his predecessors he is restrained; the chief of which are; first, the emperor has not the legislative power. The general law throughout the empire is the civil, or *Roman*, mixed with the canon, and the old customs of the *Germans*; and, in the several states, the particular laws made by them, which firmly oblige in their respective dominions. To these are added, the statutes of the diets, by which alone any new laws can be introduced, or any law that will bind all the states; and such statutes of the diet oblige the emperor also. Next, the emperor cannot levy taxes out of his own dominions. If there be occasion for money to be raised for the service of the empire in general, it cannot be done without the consent of the diet. By the capitulary of the emperor *Leopold*, he was tied up from beginning a war, or making alliance with a foreigner, without the consent of the electors. By the same it is declared, that the emperor shall not deprive any prince, or state, of their dignity, or dominions, Power of the emperor, and laws and constitutions of the empire.

nor expel any man, though guilty of a great crime against the empire, without the diet: nor can he impose religion on any prince or state, or punish any man on that account. Except the states consent to a war, and promise their assistance, the emperor has no right to demand their help. He cannot assemble a diet without the consent of the electors, and when he grants investitures, it is in the name of the empire as well as his own. As to his own hereditary dominions, he may act as he pleases with respect to the particular laws there. In the empire also, he only can confer honours, create princes, enfranchise cities, institute universities, and give leave to build cities. He is served by the greatest princes of *Germany*; addressed to by the name of *Cæsar*, and *Semper Augustus*; and his ambassadors in foreign courts take place of all crowned heads in *Europe*. He can prohibit the overrating of the customs, to prevent the ruin of the trade of *Germany*; which is observed to be the only instance wherein he is left to exercise his power for the public good.

*King of the
Romans.*

THE king of the *Romans* is chosen to be the emperor's deputy, in case of his absence or sickness, and upon his death, to succeed him without other election. This was introduced in policy by the emperors, that they might in their life-time secure the succession to their family, and procure their successors better terms than they might be able to obtain in a vacancy. It is usual for the king of the *Romans* to be first made king of *Bohemia* and *Hungary*; for it is to the first of these kingdoms that the electoral dignity is annexed. The archduke *Joseph* of *Austria* was lately elected king of the *Romans*, and installed and crowned with great pomp at *Frankfort*.

*Coronation
of the em-
peror.*

THE emperors are seldom crowned the same time they are chosen. The elector of *Mentz*, or his vice-chancellor, directs the ceremony, which, among other particulars, is performed with *Charlemagne's* crown, and the ancient imperial robes.

*Matricu-
lation of
the empire.*

ACCORDING to a constitution of *Charles V.* every state of the empire is taxed in proportion to its ability; which tax, or quota, is entered into a public register, called the *Matricula* of the empire, and kept in the office of the elector of *Mentz*, the chancellor of the empire. There it is, that a prince, or other lord, and such city as the emperor makes a member of the empire, is obliged to be matriculated, with the consent of the college and circle to which they are to be aggregated. This constitution was established, not only for maintaining the forces of the empire, but for its other necessities. It was regulated at the rate of a certain number of horse and foot, or a sum of money to be paid monthly, by the

the name of the *Roman* months; because formerly the states of the empire were obliged to raise 20,000 foot and 4000 horse, which they kept in pay, to accompany the emperor to *Rome*, when he went to receive the crown; and such as were not able to furnish their quota in troops, did it in money. This contingent was settled at twelve florins for a trooper, and four for a foot-soldier; but as the price of provisions was raised, in time this tax was extended to sixty florins for the former, and twelve for the latter; so that the tax of the present *Roman* month is equal to five of the old *Roman* months; but the *matricula* not having been altered since *Charles V.* and every state being taxed according to the old footing, this deficiency was supplied, without derogating from the *matricula*, by augmenting the number of the months, in proportion to the levies required, and other necessary demands.

The total of the *matricula* is, in horse, 2528; in foot, 12,360; in florins, 77,407. The ecclesiastical electors, with the other ecclesiastical princes, are able to raise 74,500 men; and the emperor, secular electors, and other secular princes, 379,000. By the total therefore of the forces of the empire, which is 453,500 men, and by other particulars, it appears, that the emperor and the empire make the most potent government in *Europe*, when they have a good understanding with one another.

C H A P. VIII.

f Carniola, Croatia, Slavonia, Hungary, Transylvania, and the Turkish Dominions in Europe.

ADJOINING to the *Venetian* territories, and extending to *Turky* in *Europe*, are some of the dominions of the house of *Austria*, consisting of *Carniola*, *Croatia*, *Slavonia*, *Hungary*, and *Transylvania*. Some of the dominions of the house of

CARNIOLA is included in the circle of *Austria*; but the chief place of note, lying on the confines of *Carniola*, and on the coast, is *Trieste*, a port town of *Istria*, situate on the gulph of *Venice*. Great quantities of salt are made here, and exported; and the neighbouring country produces good wine, called by the *Germans* *Reinial*, which the *Venetians* buy cheap, and sell for exportation. The harbour is large, but is only frequented by small vessels, just to cross over to *Venice*; though the late emperor *Charles VI.* who had no other sea-port in all his hereditary dominions before the treaty out of Germany. Port of Trieste on the confines of Carniola.

The Conclusion of

of peace at *Rastadt*, which threw *Italy*, *Sicily*, and the *Spanish Netherlands* into his hands, made this a free port, and gave great encouragement to the ships and merchants of all nations to come to it, designing to make it the center of the *Austrian* commerce in these parts of the world. But the merchants of *Trieste* not having a stock, the *Venetians* themselves came among them, and carried on that trade for them, by which they were so sanguine at one time, as to think of supplanting even *Venice* itself: for from this port the *Venetian* merchants struck into a new commerce, by the river *Save* to *Belgrade*, and thence to *Sinope* in the *Black Sea*, and likewise to *Constantinople*. But the most that it appears the *Austrians* have done yet here, is to send some ships among the *Archipelago* islands, from whence they bring back wines, cotton yarn, fruits, some silk, program yarn, camel's hair, and such goods. The great misfortune they laboured under, for carrying on the great trade promised from this port was, that they had no fund of goods for exportation, either of their produce or manufacture; the chief they could export of any value being the wrought iron made in *Carinthia*, *Styria*, and the adjacent countries; which indeed is of great service to the *Venetians*, because they have no iron-works near them. Upon the whole, therefore, the trade of this new free port is not likely to answer the end proposed; yet the merchants keep up their expectations of trade, and some time ago talked of erecting manufactures of wool and silk, that they might have something more to export besides iron. However, the house of *Austria* have a noble revenue from the rich wine made and sold at *Proseg*, which is about seven miles north-west of *Trieste*.

Croatia.

CROATIA was once divided between the *Hungarians* and *Turks*, but is since subject for the most part to the house of *Austria*. The present boundaries of this province are the river *Save* on the north and north-east; which parts it from *Slavonia*; *Bosnia* on the east, *Carniola* on the west, and *Morlachia* on the south and south-west. It is above eighty miles in length either way. It pays above twice the sum *Slavonia* does to the empress queen's extraordinary subsidies. The soil is fruitful in wine and oil, as well as all necessities for life, where it is cultivated; but being a frontier province, like *Slavonia*, labours under the same inconveniencies. The people, called *Croats*, are of a good stature, valiant, hardy, and good soldiers, especially the horsemen, who are so famous, that they are entertained in most of the courts of *Germany*, as their horse-guards.

SCLA

SCLAVONIA, including *Ratzia*, is bounded by the rivers *Sclavonia Drave* and *Danube*, which separate it from *Hungary*; on the north-east by the river *Save*, which divides it from the *Turkish* provinces of *Servia* and *Bosnia* on the south-west; and by *Croatia* and the country of *Gille* on the west, being 200 miles long, and 60 broad. It is a fine level fruitful country, where cultivated; but having been for many years a frontier province against *Turky*, and subject to the ravages of the *Christian* as well as the *Turkish* armies, it has produced but little corn or wine. The chief town is *Posega*. The *Ratzians* inhabit the eastern division of the country; and the natives in general are of good stature, a brave hardy race, soldiers from their cradles, their country having been long the seat of war.

THE ancient *Sclavonia* contained many large countries. Some have extended it from the *Adriatic* to the *Euxine* sea. It is said to have taken its name from the *Slavi*, a *Scythian* nation which subdued *Greece*, as well as this country, in the reign of the emperor *Justinian*. The *Venetians* made a conquest of *Sclavonia*, and compelled the natives to submit to the vilest drudgeries, insomuch that some derive the word *Slave* from this people, thus oppressed and abused by their conquerors. The *Hungarians* and *Venetians* possessed this country alternately. The king of *Hungary* was sovereign of *Sclavonia*, when *Solyman the Magnificent* invaded and reduced it in 1540; and the *Turks* remained possessed of it till the year 1687, soon after which they lost this, and all the territories the *Austrians* possess north of the *Save* and *Danube*.

THE kingdom of *Hungary* is situate between 16 and 23 degrees of east longitude from *London*, and between 45 and 49 degrees of north latitude; bounded by the *Carpathian* mountains, which divide it from *Poland* on the north; by *Transylvania* and *Wallachia* on the east; by the river *Drave*, which separates it from *Sclavonia* on the south; and by *Austria* and *Moravia* on the west. The country abounds with mines of gold, silver, and other metals, as also pits of salt. No soil is scarce more fruitful in general. It produces good corn in such plenty, that it is six times as cheap as in *England*. Their grapes are large and luscious, and their wines, particularly those of *Tockay*, preferred to any in *Europe*. They have great plenty of *grasses* and cattle, of which latter they send incredible numbers to *Germany*, not less than 80,000 in a year. Among other medicinal plants they have *rhubarb*. Their breed of *buffaloes* is very good, which serve them in ploughing and husbandry. Their horses are

swift, but not large, and therefore more used for riding than draught. They have such numbers, that their kings have brought 50,000 into the field. Here is abundance of deer, wild-fowl, and other game, which every body has the privilege of taking, so that they are the common food of the very boors. They have no great foreign commerce, besides the exportation of their cattle and wines; and no other manufactures of consequence, besides those of copper and other hardwares, though the queen of *Hungary*, at present, is greatly encouraging divers capital manufactures, which are likely to prove very prosperous. No country produces so many metals as this, tin excepted; and in some parts are found even diamonds and other precious stones. The peasants, even as they till the ground, sometimes find grains of gold. They have likewise great plenty of white, red, and black marble, and some fine porphyry. This country abounds also with salubrious hot baths and fountains; and some of them are of vitriolic, petrifying, and other peculiar qualities. Its air is temperate, but in the summer the days are excessive hot, and the nights as cold. Its many marshes and lakes render it frequently unwholesome; and its waters, except those of the *Danube*, are stinking; but they are all well stocked with fish, especially the *Tibiscus*, where 1000 carp have been sold for a crown, and in some places they throw their fish to the hogs. This prolific quality of the rivers is ascribed to the hot exhalations that rise every where out of the sulphureous soil, especially in the south part.

THE *Huns*, a *Scythian* nation, possessed themselves of this country in the third century, and communicated their name to it, being then part of the ancient *Pannonia*. It was at first divided into many little principalities and states, which at length united under one head, who had the title of duke. The last of these dukes was *Geysa*, who, becoming a profelyte to Christianity, was baptized; after which he resigned the government to his son *Stephen*, who took the title of king in the year 1000. It was an elective kingdom many years, but generally in one family, and the constitution of the government was a limited monarchy. *Charles-Robert* ascended the throne in 1310, and subdued *Bulgaria*, *Servia*, *Croatia*, *Dalmatia*, *Sclavonia*, and many other provinces, which he annexed to his dominions, some whereof the *Venetians* recovered from him. The *Turks* invaded *Hungary* in the 15th century, in the reign of *Ladislaus*, an infant king; but were bravely repulsed by the celebrated *Hunniades*, who was regent of the kingdom during the minority of *Ladislaus*. On the

the death of *Ladislaus*, the *Hungarians*, in gratitude for the father's services, elected *Mathias Corvinus*, the son of *Hunniades*, their king, in 1458. *Lodowick*, king of *Hungary*, engaging *Solyman* emperor of the *Turks* with very unequal numbers, was defeated and killed in battle in 1526, and great part of *Hungary* lost. *John*, waywode of *Transylvania*, ascended the throne of *Hungary* the same year; but was deposed by *Ferdinand*, brother of the emperor *Charles V.* *Solyman* restored king *John*; and at this time began the wars between the *German* and *Turkish* emperors, for the dominion of *Hungary*, which lasted near 200 years. *Ferdinand*, archduke of *Austria*, was advanced to the throne of *Hungary* in 1527; and the *Austrians* have been able to influence the elections in such a manner, as to keep the crown in their family ever since; so that the kingdom, from being elective, is now become an absolute hereditary monarchy. The late emperor *Charles VI.* procuring it to be settled on his female issue, in default of males, his eldest daughter the empress queen enjoys it at this day. The *Hungarians* are a brave and warlike people, and their country has long stood as a barrier against the *Turks*. Their troopers are called hussars, and their foot heydukes; and the insurgents are a militia that are raised on the last necessity.

• *TRANSYLVANIA* is a principality bounded by the *Car-* *Transyl-*
pathian mountains, which divide it from *Poland* on the north; *vania*.
by the *Iron-gate* mountains, which divide it from *Turky* on the
south; and by *Hungary* on the west. The country is very
mountainous, and covered with woods, as the frontiers to-
wards *Turky* also are, from whence the *Latin* name of *Tran-*
sylvania was given it. The air is warm, but not so unhealthy
as that of *Hungary*. The soil is fruitful, abounding in corn,
wine, cattle, and rich pastures; and their mines and sands
of their rivers afford gold, silver, iron, and salt. Their
principal manufactures are copper and iron utensils; their
foreign trade is inconsiderable; and though the soil is rich,
it does not yield so much profit to the sovereign as might
be expected, it being a frontier province, and frequently
plundered by friends and foes; which is the reason also that
it is not populous.

TRANSYLVANIA was part of the ancient *Dacia*, which
is said to have been subdued by *Lyfimachus*, one of *Alexander's*
generals. *Julius Cæsar* repulsed the *Dacians*, when they
passed the *Danube* and invaded the *Roman* empire. *Augustus*
fortified the southern shore of the *Danube*, to prevent their
incursions. The emperor *Trajan* subdued them, and reduced
Dacia to the form of a province. It was over-run by the
Goths,

Goths, on the decline of the *Roman* empire, and the *Goths* were expelled by the *Huns*. *Stephen I.* king of *Hungary*, subdued *Transylvania*, and introduced the Christian religion there in the year 1000. From that time *Transylvania* was a province in *Hungary*, and governed by an *Hungarian* viceroy, called a *weywoode*, or *vaivod*, and their *vaivods* at length set up for themselves, and assumed an independency. In the year 1526, two rival princes contended for this principality; one of them was supported by the *German* emperor, and the other by the *Turk*; whereupon this country became the seat of war for many years. The princes of the house of *Ragotski* were at the head of the Protestant faction, and supported by the *Turks*; but being at length obliged to quit *Transylvania* by the *Austrians*, *Ragotski* fled for refuge into *Turky*, and at the treaty of *Carlowitz*, in 1699, this country was confirmed to the house of *Austria* by the *Turks*.

IT is at present inhabited by three different people, *Saxons*, *Huns*, and *Cingars*, that have little relation to each other. The *Saxons* have near two-thirds of the country; the posterity of the *Huns* are situate on the north-east; and the *Cingars*, who are gypsies, live in tents, and encamp all over the country.

Turky in
Europe.

THE *Turks* are possessed in *Europe* of *Romania*, *Bulgaria*, *Servia*, *Bosnia*, *Ragusa*, *Walachia*, *Moldavia*, *Bessarabia*, *Budziac*, and *Oczakow* *Tartary*, *Crim* and *Little Tartary*, *Albania*, *Epirus*, *Macedonia*, *Thessaly*, and all the ancient *Greece*, with its numerous islands in the *Archipelago*. Thus happily situated in the center of our continent, if we reckon in their *Asiatic* territories, which we have already given an account of, they could not fail of acquiring the trade as well as the empire of the whole world, if these glorious advantages were not lost by their indolence and inactivity, and the destructive maxims of their government. But though the *Turks* are no traders, being rather discouragers and destroyers of trade; yet as they possess so great a part of the world, and some of the most fruitful countries, and productive of the best and choicest merchandizes, it will always induce the *European* parts of the world to send their merchants among the *Turks*, to traffic with them; and the *Turks* themselves, by their haughtiness, despising manufacturing, and not improving the product which they enjoy in many places, must necessarily be obliged to purchase of other nations the things they stand in need of; which naturally encourages the merchants of the other nations to come among them.

THOSE

THOSE that settle among them from the eastern part of *State of* the world, are generally *Greeks, Jews, Armenians, and Geor. the Turkey* *gians*; those from the western parts are chiefly *Venetians, trade in* *French, and Dutch*, with some *Jews* also, chiefly *Italian. general.*

THE principal places of trade on this side the *Turkish* dominions, respecting *Europe*, where the said merchants reside, are *Constantinople, Smyrna, Aleppo, Alexandretta, or Scanderoon, Alexandria, Tripoli, Antioch*, and the islands on the coast. There are some Christian merchants in most of the islands belonging to the *Turks*, as at *Cyprus, Candia, Rhodes, Zant, Cephalonia*, and in most of the inhabited islands of the *Egean* sea, or *Archipelago*. These merchants are generally *French*, though there are some *Jews*. This commercial establishment, by way of factories, among the *Turks*, taking the same all together, is, in one general acceptation, called with us the *Turky* trade; the manner of which trade is this:

THE merchants of *England, France, and Holland* chiefly furnish the *Turks* with fine woollen cloths, dyed scarlet, crimson, purple, blue, and green; the first three in grain, and as rich in colour as possible, which raises their value. The *English*, besides their cloth, send block-tint, lead, clock-work and watch-work, both in gold and silver; and, all put together, the value was formerly for upwards of 300,000*l.* sterling, one year with another. The returns which the *Franks* (for so the *European* merchants are called in *Turky*) make from the *Turks*, and which are the product of the *Turkish* and *Persian* dominions, are as follow:

RAW silk: this, though the chief return of the whole trade, is not all the immediate produce of the grand seignior's dominions, but of the *Persians* also, is brought from the country where it is produced to *Aleppo*, and from thence to *Scanderoon*, where the merchants trade for it. The silk, thus brought raw in bales from *Persia*, is *sherbaff*, the *Persian* word for raw silk, or, perhaps, for silk in general. When this *sherbaff* silk is landed here, and comes into the hands of our manufacturers, it is called by a name of their own, *legee*. Besides this, the *Levant* or *Turky* merchants import another sort of raw silk, which they call white, and our workmen *belladine*: this is shipped either at *Cyprus* or *Scanderoon*, on board the same *Turky* ships that bring the other sort of raw silk, but is produced in several distant parts of the *Turkish* dominions, as at *Cyprus, Antioch, and Tripoli*; that is, in the country adjacent to the ancient *Syria*, and in several of the islands of the *Aegei*. The same sort of silk is also shipped off at *Smyrna*. This island silk is generally the product of the islands of *Andros, Naxos, Iea, Thermia,*

The Conclusion of

Thermia, Syra, Santorini, &c. The quantity of silk imported formerly from these places, and as comprehended under the denomination of the *Turky* trade, has been calculated at between 3 and 400,000 *lb.* weight, one year with another, except that, upon some occasions, the trade met with an interruption, as in the time of a plague and war.

THE other importations are, 1. Wool and yarn, as *Caramania* wool, and wool of the islands; program and mohair yarn, that is, goats hair, spun or twisted; cotton wool and yarn, from almost all the islands of the *Ægean* sea. 2. Gums, such as gum dragant, sandarac, senega, arabic, sarcocolla. 3. Manufactures, as *Persian* silks, carpets, burdets, callicoës, from the islands of *Siphanto, Paros, &c.* cordevans, shagreen skins. 4. Drugs, dye stuffs, earths, &c. as galls from *Syria*, coffee from *Mocha* by *Alexandria*, balm, natural balsam, rhubarb; from *Persia*, sal ammoniac, turmeric, incense, pumices; from *Santorini*, storax; from *Samos*, scammony, myrrh, manna, galbanum, senna, aloes hepatica, olibanum, zedoary, esquinethes, hypoastris, acetarice, oker, emery-stone, bolus an earth, adrachne, all at *Samos*; velani, from the island of *Zea*; coloquintida, euphorbium, mirabolans, frankincense, from *Persia* and *Egypt*; mastic, from *Scio* and *Naxos*, besides opium and some other articles. 5. Liquids, as arac, orange-flower-water, vermecelli, turpentine. 6. Seeds, as worm-seed, clover-seed, garden-seeds, rice. 7. Fruits, as figs, pistachas, raisins of *Smyrna*, pomegranates. 8. Woods, as box and cypress-wood, fustic, ebony, walnut-tree.

THESE are the principal productions with which the merchants of *Europe* trade among the *Turks*. The number of drugs may, perhaps, be greater than what are here mentioned, but these are the most considerable. The chief articles are the silk which comes from *Georgia* and *Persia*, the wool, the hair, and the galls. The cotton, as well in wool as yarn, and also most of the goat's hair, is the product of the islands on the *Asiatic* side of the *Archipelago*; and those also of the *European* side. These serve for the bulk of the trade; the others, perhaps, are equally useful in their kind, but not of equal value in general commerce.

As the *Turks* have little or no trade but what is, as it were, forced by the *Europeans* and others, so they have but few ships, compared to the extent of their naval dominions. The chiefest of their shipping is among the *Grecian* islands, and these are such as belong to the *Greeks*. Also in the *Africa* and in the *Black Sea* they have some shipping; but,

for the traffic between *Egypt* and the *Porte*, they generally hire *English*, *Dutch*, or *Venetian* ships upon freight.

THE produce of the islands is exceeding great, and assists the *Turks* in making returns for the goods they buy of the *European* merchants; for the *Turks* are either such strangers to correspondence, or such enemies to all the world but themselves, that they have no such thing as exchange; so that, to balance their trade, they are frequently at a great loss, if the balance runs against them. It is true, it may be in their favour in one place, and the contrary in another, whereby they may sometimes bring one part to make good another; but they cultivate no epistolary correspondence, no regular posts going from one place to another, to adjust these things; so that most trade and business are executed by messages and expresses; and as for money returned from place to place, it must be carried all in specie: much less have they any assurances for the risk of trade, or any of the usual conveniencies of commerce that other nations have.

FROM what has been here said, in relation to this branch of trade, a right judgment might be made of its importance; yet, important as it is, it has indeed languished to that degree, that our *Turky* merchants, who, some years since, figured it at the top of the commercial world, now bow their diminished heads. However, the trade is not intirely sunk; on the contrary, we import annually from *Aleppo* above 600 bales of raw silk. This alone is a great national object; for if those 600 bales of raw silk contain 180,000 small pounds, what a benefit do we not receive by the manufacturing of this silk, in the article of labour?

CONSTANTINOPLE, situate in east longitude 30. 15. Constantinople. latitude, 41. 3. is the place where all the *Turkish* wealth and power may be said to centre, as being the metropolis of their empire. It was anciently called *Byzantium*, and by the *Turks* at this day, *Stamboul*; but frequently, by *European* nations, the *Porte*; being one of the securest and most commodious harbours in *Europe*. It lies on the western shore of the *Bosphorus*, or strait of *Constantinople*, in the province of *Romania*. The city is built in the form of a triangle, and the ground rising gradually from the shore, the whole town appears at one view from the sea. The seraglio or palace is built upon a point of the triangle, which runs out between the *Propontis* and the harbour, and underneath the palace are the gardens, which extend to the water-side. It is surrounded by a wall of no great strength, about twelve miles in circumference, exclusive of *Galata*, and the other suburbs. The streets are narrow, and the private houses

houses mean, built chiefly of wood; so that when a fire happens, thousands of them are sometimes destroyed; but the public buildings, palaces, mosques or temples, bagnios, and caravanseras for the entertainment of strangers, are many of them very magnificent. The chief mosque, particularly that which was formerly the metropolitan church of *St. Sophia*, is said to be the finest temple in the world, covered with five extensive domes or cupolas.

It would be an endless, if not an unnecessary task to enter into a particular detail of all the countries and provinces of *European Turkey*; so that it may be sufficient to observe, that they are either inhabited by *Turks*, of whom we have given an account under *Asia*, or by Christians, chiefly *Greeks*, or by *Tartars*.

Greeks.

THE Greeks, the ancient inhabitants of the better part of these countries, were eminent for their wit and learning; for their great actions, and for the numerous heroes that appeared amongst them; but since they have been subject to the barbarous *Turk*, most of their fine cities have been destroyed, and a deluge of ignorance introduced into those admired seats of learning and politeness. The *Athenians* retain, perhaps, to this day more vivacity, more genius, and a politer address, than any other people in the *Turkish* dominions. Oppressed as they are at present, they notwithstanding oppose, with great courage and wonderful sagacity, every addition to their burden, which an avaricious or cruel governor may attempt to lay on them. They want not for artful speakers and busy politicians, so far as relates to the affairs of their own city. Some of their priests have the reputation of being learned men, and excellent preachers. There is great sprightliness and expression in the countenances of both sexes, and their persons are well-proportioned. The men have a due mixture of strength and agility, without the least appearance of heaviness; and the women have a peculiar elegance of form and of manner. Some of the most curious remains of antiquity are to be found in *Greece*, and particularly at *Athens*; and these monuments of antiquity may be truly said to be capable, not only of illustrating history, but regulating taste, as they afford the most essential helps for the improvement of architecture, painting, sculpture, and all the arts which embellish life.

Tartars.

THE Tartars of *European Turkey* are those that lie next to *Poland*. By their incursions into that kingdom they have made themselves well known, and are called *Little Tartars*, to distinguish them from those of *Asia*. Like these they are di-

divided into several hords, each forming a different nation: the *Kubans*, the *Tartars* of the *Crimea*, or *Peretop*; the hord of *Oekzakow*, and that of *Budziack*.

BESIDES these four species of *Little Tartars*, there is another very singular one, of which it may not be improper to take notice. They are situated in the heart of *Lithuania*. Some tribes of this people formerly threatened that duchy! *Vitoldus*, uncle of *Jagellon*, a bold and haughty prince, marched against them and succeeded. He led captive into *Lithuania* many thousands of those *Tartars* of both sexes. He treated them mildly, and assigned them lands near *Vilna* to cultivate, which their posterity possess at this day. They have retained *Mohammedanism*, and all their ancient customs; but they are less barbarous than those of the *Crimea*, and its neighbourhood. They love work, are very sober, and of inviolable fidelity. The grandees of *Poland* are fond of having them in their service.

ALL these *Tartars* in general, originally one and the same people, come into the world with their eye-lids closed together so fast, that for some days they cannot open them. They are thickset, with broad shoulders, and extremely strong and vigorous. They have a short neck and large head, a flat face almost round, a large forehead well shaped, bright eyes, a short nose, a little mouth, white teeth, an olive complexion, rough black hair, and scarce any beard. They clip the hind part of their head, leaving only a tuft before. They never till the ground, and are strangers to all the arts of luxury and effeminacy. They know nothing of the sciences. Their laws are simple, and are derived from plain good sense, as much as from custom. Gentle and affable among themselves, they are so likewise to those whom trade brings into their country. They have no law-suits nor quarrels among them. If any one has a claim upon another, he goes to one of the principal men, called *murzas*, who determines it without long discussion, and without formality. Prejudiced in favour of *Mohammed's* law, which they profess, they abhor all Christians; and in their invasions, covering their avarice with a religious motive, they make a merit of causing Christians to feel all the ferocity of their character.

THEY are brought up very hardy. Destined to a life of toil, they are inured to it from their infancy. Mothers often wash their children in cold water, mixed with salt to harden their skins: hence, in the depth of winter they swim across rivers without suffering any inconvenience. To teach
them

The Conclusion of

them to be marksmen, they receive no food after they are seven years old, but what they kill with their arrows.

THEIR cloathing is sheep's-skins. In winter, they wear the wool next to them; but in summer, or when it rains, the other side. The kag, and all his family, are cloathed in silk, which they usually receive in presents from the neighbouring nations, particularly *Poland*; and the officers wear cloth. They wear no turban, but bonnets of the *Polish* fashion.

THEIR arms are a crooked sabre, a lance, and a bow. They are afraid of fire-arms. They fight at a distance, and even in their flight, let fly their arrows; but if they cannot avoid a close fight, they use their sabres with such dexterity, that it is not easy to ward off the blows. In their flight, they are very swift, and their pursuers run a great risque, not so much from their arrows, as from their unexpected return. They all carry a knife and an awl, to make leather straps to bind their prisoners. They often poison the points of their arrows.

THEIR horses are extremely brisk and nimble runners, and as indefatigable as their riders; but they make no shew: the *Tartars* often make them travel fifty or sixty miles without halting. They cut the cartilage which separates their nostrils, that, breathing more easily, they may be less apt to give out, however violently they may be rode. They always lead several in their hands, and when one is tired, they spring on the back of another without stopping a moment.

THE usual food of these *Tartars*, and that of which they are most fond, is horse-flesh. Bread and mutton are reserved for the rich, and for those that live in towns without ever taking the field. The poorer sort bake under ashes cakes made of millet, barley, or other corn, which grow spontaneously. The *Poles* call this bread tatarka. Though some become servants to others, yet most of them choose rather to seek their food by rapine, than to earn it by an ignominious subjection. It is scarce conceivable, considering their indefatigability in war, how lazy and slothful they are in their families, where they spend their days in the most contemptible ignorance. When they kill a horse, they first thrust a knife into his throat, and carefully saving the blood, mix it with flour of millet, and make a kind of pudding, which they hold to be delicious. They afterwards cut the horse into four quarters; the master reserves one only for himself, and sends the other three as presents to his friends or neighbours, who make returns in kind.

THEIR

THEIR usual drink is water. In some parts of their country there is none, and they either have not the sense to dig pits, or they neglect it through indolence. Snow, however, in the winter, supplies the defect. Those who live more comfortably than the rest, make a kind of drink of boiled millet. It is of the consistence and colour of milk, and drank to excess will intoxicate. However, they esteem nothing comparable to mare's milk, which they chiefly use when they cross deserts to make war. Being *Mohammedans*, they abstain from wine, or drink it only by stealth; but they think the frequent use of brandy no breach of their laws.

WHEN they find themselves indisposed, they open a vein of a horse, drink the blood hot, and fatigue themselves as much as possible by galloping. If any one is so weak that he cannot use this exercise, two of them get on horseback, and holding him each by an arm, make him ride at full speed. There are few ailments which they do not actually cure, or believe they cure, by this remedy. Without any other occasion than to appease their hunger or thirst, when they have nothing else, they bleed their horses, and drink the blood: this likewise was the custom of the antient *Scythians*. They all carry millet-meal with them when they go to war. They mix it with water; and this supports them in their painful marches, and extremely refreshes them in the great heats.

EVER ready to make incursions among their neighbours, because they have no other way of supplying themselves with what they want, they are not apprehensive of being attacked in their turn. They trust to the power of the *Turks* for their protection.

WHEN they are preparing for an expedition, they send their horses for some time to graze in the fields to fatten; their kan holds council with the galga, or general of the army; they assemble their chief murzas; they draw up the plan of operations, or rather of the ravages to be committed. If the kan commands in person, all must march with him; none must stay even to guard their country; nor are the infirmities of old age admitted as an excuse. On these occasions, the army amounts to 100,000 men, and 2 or 300,000 horses; for each *Tartar* has two or three.

THEY cross rivers in a very extraordinary manner. Every one gathers rushes or reeds, which he fastens to two long poles, and makes a kind of raft, on which he places his cloaths and arms. He ties these poles to the tail of one of his horses, whose mane he holds with one hand, and holding a rod in the other to guide the horse, he swims with his

feet, and passes the river quite naked. These rafts, though thus made in haste, are so compact and well joined, that they carry safely such of their leaves as cannot swim.

If they have effects which water might damage, they kill four horses that are nearly of a size, and preserving the skins whole, after taking out the flesh and bones, they blow them up like bladders, and place them on sledges, or waggon, of which they take off the wheels. Several *Tartars* swim at the sides to secure this floating machine, which is drawn by two horses, each of which has a conductor to guide him to shore.

THEY are more eager to make incursions in winter than in summer, because in that season they find in the houses of the peasants, all the provisions, which in summer they must collect in the fields, and the rivers and marshes being frozen, they can go any where without hindrance; the snow too renders the roads more convenient for their horses, which they never shoe. The feeding of their horses gives them no more trouble than the feeding of themselves; they require neither provisions nor magazines. Moss, bark of trees, and poor herbs, are to them as good, and support them as well as the choicest forage; and in winter they seek their food under snow, which they remove with their feet.

THE *Tatars* in their expeditions never follow the usual beaten paths. They always choose the least known and most difficult roads; and to cover their march still more, they make fires in their camp. By these means, they surprise even those who are most upon their guard against these incursions. When they arrive within three or four leagues of the country into which they intend to penetrate, they halt for some days to rest. They then divide into three bodies; two of which compose the main body of the army: the third is subdivided, and forms a large detachment at each side. In this order they enter the country; the center advances in a parallel line with the right and left; but the whole marches night and day, without halting above an hour at most.

AFTER marching sixty or eighty leagues into the country, (which tract they spare at present, passing through it only as travellers) the two wings are ordered to disperse six leagues round, divided again into ten or twelve brigades, of above 5 or 600 men each, and these into several others. As they advance, they make what haste they can to pillage the country; and joining again by degrees, and in the same order in which they separated, they carry the booty to the main body of the army, which, during this time, kept together to
repel

repel the inhabitants who might assemble to attack them. Two new corps are detached to fill the parts where the former had been; and in the instant these return, a third detachment is sent out to gather the gleanings the others may have left. These barbarians spare none; they cut the throats of infants and old people; but men and women, boys and girls, they compel to follow them. The number of their captives has sometimes exceeded 50,000. They generally burn the houses they have plundered, and turn the most pleasant and fruitful countries into a frightful desert.

THE same havock which they make round the places they fix for the limits of their incursions, they make also in their return in those parts which they spared at first, provided they are not pursued. When they pass the frontiers, and get to a place of safety, they repose themselves and divide the booty, of which one-tenth is always reserved for the kan. They cruelly separate all the members of one family; the husband from the wife, the children from the parents, allotting them to different persons, and selling them into different countries. They sell many of them to the *Turks*, who employ them on board their galleys; but they reserve the young women to be the unfortunate victims of their brutality. Though they arrive in a country all together, yet, in going back, they march in several divisions, that those who follow them, seeing several tracks, may not know precisely which road they have taken. On these occasions, the *Cossacks*, who have almost as much ferocity, and no less love of plunder, generally lay ambuscades for them. They wait for them in dells, or even in the midst of plains, where they march in *tabort*; that is the name they give to their manner of travelling between two rows of waggons, which enclose them; and from thence they fire on the *Tartars* with small-arms. It seldom happens but that the whole army is put into disorder. They fly in such confusion that one runs over another, without respect even to their leaders. Each runs whither his fears carry him; and if they are pursued, they gradually throw away all they carry. They strew effects in the way, to amuse the enemy. They throw away even their arms, and often, without ceasing to run, they cut the girths of their saddles, and let them fall off, in order to relieve their horses, that they may run the more swiftly.

C H A P. IX.

Of Poland.

*Present
state of
Poland.*

POLAND, in its present state, presents us with several striking contrasts: the regal dignity existing with the name of a republic, civil laws with feudal anarchy, a rude resemblance of the *Roman* commonwealth with *Gothic* barbarism, and abundance united with poverty.

NATURE has furnished the inhabitants of this country with all the materials of opulence, such as corn, pasture, cattle, wool, hides, leather, salt, metals, and minerals; and yet they are the poorest nation in *Europe*. The chief source of the wealth of *Poland* is the sale of the crown. Both land and water concur to invite commerce, and yet it has never appeared among them. The number of fine rivers, the *Duna*, the *Bog*, the *Niefter*, the *Vistula*, the *Niemen*, the *Borysbenes*, serve only to make a figure in geographical maps. It has been often observed, that it would be an easy matter to join the *Northern-Ocean* and the *Black-Sea* by canals, and by this means take in the commerce both of the East and West. But the *Poles* are so far from building merchant-ships, that they have never thought of forming a naval force to protect them from the fleets of their enemies, by which their country has often been insulted. Their dominions are larger than *France*, and yet do not contain more than six millions of inhabitants. They leave a fourth part of their lands uncultivated, and yet the land is excellent, which makes the loss so much the more to be lamented.

POLAND is bounded by the *Baltic-Sea* and *Livonia* on the north, by *Russia* on the east, by *Turky* and *Hungary* on the south, and by *Pomerania*, *Brandenburgh*, *Silesia*, and *Moravia* on the west. A kingdom of such extent, being 200 leagues in breadth, and 400 in length, would require numerous armies to guard its vast frontiers, and yet it can scarce pay 40,000 men. King *Stanislaus*, who governed it for some time, and who has shewn that he was capable of doing in a whole kingdom, what he has actually done in a single province of *France*; a king equally qualified for writing and acting, informs us, "that there are cities in *Europe*, whose treasury is richer than that of *Poland*; and that two or three merchants of *London*, or *Amsterdam*, trade for much larger sums than the income of all the lands belonging to the republic." Such a republic can never have made the reflection,

that

that the power of *Holland* was originally founded upon the art of catching and salting-herring.

BEFORE the sixth century, when the *Poles* were yet *Sar- General* *matians*, they had no kings, but lived without government in *history of* mountains and forests, having no habitations but waggons; *Poland*. always meditating some new invasion; bad troops for foot-service, but excellent cavalry. It is something surprising, that a barbarous people, without a leader, and without laws, should stretch their empire from the *Tanais* to the *Vistula*, and from the *Euxine-Sea* to the *Baltic*: boundaries prodigiously distant from each other, and which they enlarged still further by the acquisition of *Bohemia*, *Moravia*, *Silesia*, *Lusatia*, *Misnia*, *Mecklenburg*, *Pomerania*, and the marches of *Brandenburg*. The *Romans*, to whom so large a part of the world submitted, never penetrated into *Sarmatia*.

THIS historical paradox shews what can be done by strength of body, a habit of living hardly, a natural love of liberty, and a savage instinct, which supplies the place of kings and laws. The *Sarmatians* were called robbers by civilized nations, who forgot that they themselves had begun in the same manner.

THE *Poles*, who took this name about the middle of the sixth century, are far from having preserved entire the inheritance left them by their ancestors. It is a long time since they lost *Silesia*, *Lusatia*, great part of *Pomerania*, *Bohemia*, and all that they possessed in *Germany*; and they have since lost *Livonia*, and the vast plains of the *Ukraine*. Many a great empire has, in like manner, sunk under its own weight.

ABOUT the year 550, *Leck* formed a design of civilizing the *Sarmatians*, though he was but a *Sarmatian* himself. He begun with cutting down trees, and erecting himself a dwelling. Other huts were soon raised round this model; the nation, hitherto erratic, became fixed; and *Gnesna*, the first city of *Poland*, took the place of a forest. The *Sarmatians* seem scarce to have known what eagles were, since we are told, that from their finding several nests of these birds in the trees which were cut down upon this occasion, the eagle came to be painted upon the *Polish* standards. But these fierce birds make their airies only upon the tops of high rocks, and *Gnesna* is situated in a plain. *Leck* soon drew the eyes of his equals upon him, and by displaying talents fit for government, as well as action, he became their master, with the title of duke, when he might as easily have assumed that of king.

FROM the time of this leader, down to the present age, *Poland* has been successively governed by other dukes, by vaivodes, now called palatines, by kings, queens, and queen-regents, with the intervention of frequent interregna. These last have been little better than so many times of anarchy. The regents had always made themselves hated. The few queens there were had scarce time to shew themselves. The vaivodes have always been oppressors. Among the dukes and kings, there have been some great princes; the rest have been mere warriors or tyrants. Such will always be the fate, in a great measure, of all the nations of the world; because it is not the laws, but men, that govern.

IN this long series of ages, the *Poles* reckon four classes of sovereigns. The heads of the three first races are *Leck*, *Piast*, and *Jagellon*; the fourth, which begins with *Henry* of *Valois*, forms a class by itself, because of the crown's passing from one family to another, without fixing in any.

IN the year 750, the *Poles* had not yet examined the question, Whether a woman might govern men? It had long before been decided in the East, that women were born to obey. *Venda*, however, reigned in *Poland*, and reigned with glory. The *Polish* historians relate, but we are not obliged to believe them, that a *German* prince, named *Ritiger*, won by the charms of this unfeeling beauty, demanded her for his wife at the head of an army; that she offered him battle; that the *German* troops refused to fight in a love-quarrel; that *Ritiger* killed himself; and that *Venda* threw herself into the *Vistula*, that she might no more disturb the peace of her subjects. Whatever becomes of the truth of this story, it is certain, that she would have done them greater service by continuing to govern them well.

FROM this time, the *Salic* law, or rather custom of *France*, was adopted in *Poland*; for the two queens that reigned there afterwards, *Hedwigia* in 1382, and *Anne Jagellon* in 1575, were advanced to the throne only by accepting the husbands which were appointed to support them in so exalted a station. *Anne Jagellon* was sixty years old when she was elected, but *Stephen Battori*, who married her to get the crown, thought that a queen was always young.

IN former ages, other ways had been laid open to arrive at royalty. In 804, the *Poles*, being embarrassed about the choice of a governor, offered their crown as a prize to the best runner; a practice antiently known in *Greece*, and which did not appear to them more singular than to annex the crown to birth. It was won by an obscure youth, who took the

name of *Laslo* II. The annals of that age say, that he retained, under the royal purple, the modesty and gentleness of his former fortune, and was fierce and audacious only when he took the field against the enemies of the state.

ALMOST all the *Poles* maintain, that their crown has always been elective; but they are little interested in the decision of this question, because they enjoy the thing contended for. If it was to be decided by a series of facts for six or seven centuries, it would be given against them, since it can be shewn, that, under the two first classes, the crown constantly passed from fathers to children, except in cases of the intire extinction of the reigning family. It was not till the end of the second class, that hereditary right was abolished to make way for election. The form of government has also had its revolutions. In the time of *Leck* it was absolute, perhaps too much so; but the nation afterwards felt its own strength, shook off the yoke of a single governor, and divided the authority between twelve vaivodes, or generals, with a view to weaken it. But these vaivodes, who were exalted upon the ruin of one throne, collected its shattered fragments, and formed them into twelve, which, by their mutual collisions, shook the very foundations of the state. The nation, amidst these dreadful agitations, regretted the government of a single person, without duly reflecting on what they had suffered by it. But the more prudent part sought after a man fit to govern a free people, and to restrain licentiousness, without encroaching upon liberty. Such an one was at length found in the person of *Cracus*, who gave his name to the city of *Cracow*, which he founded in the beginning of the seventh century.

THE extinction of his posterity after the first generation, put the sceptre again into the hands of the nation, who not knowing where to bestow it, had again recourse to the vaivodes, so lately proscribed. These last compleated the disorders introduced by the first. The *Hungarians*, who had long been under apprehensions from *Poland*, now resolved upon its destruction, and spread terror on all sides by a sudden invasion. The chiefs of the nation were hated and despised, the soldiers had no confidence in them, and the people were plunged in despair. In the midst of this confusion, an obscure man conceived a thought for saving his country. He drew the *Hungarians* into a narrow pass, where the greatest part of them were cut off. *Przemislaus*, (that was his name) became in one day the idol of his countrymen; and that wild people, who had as yet no idea of any other

The Conclusion of

title to the crown but virtue, placed it upon the head of their deliverer, who wore it with equal glory and success, by the name of *Lesko* I.

THIS restoration of absolute power did not last long without a fresh concussion. *Popiel* II. the fourth duke from *Przemislaus*, deservedly drew upon himself, by his crimes, the scandal of being the last prince of his family. Leaving no children, the most ruinous anarchy succeeded. The bastards of the ducal family on one side, and the twelve palatines on the other, were employed in rending out of each other's hands the reins of government; and these two principal factions engendered a hundred more. Every individual flew to arms, and right was made to consist in force only, courage in brutal fury, and safety in murder; till the nation, weary of tearing itself in pieces, (a thing which it had not done in a more uncivilized state) saw the necessity of taking speedy refuge under the government of a single person. The candidates met at *Cruswick*, a village in *Cujavia*; where an inhabitant of that country received them in his rustic cot, entertained them with a frugal repast, and displayed a sound judgment, an honest and humane heart, abilities superior to his condition, a resolute mind, and a love for his country, which these madmen did not feel in their own breasts. Ambitious men, who themselves despair of governing, chuse rather to submit to a third person, who has not entered into the competition, than to obey a rival. In the present case, they determined in favour of virtue; and by this means repaired in some measure, the mischiefs they had occasioned by their contests for the throne. *Piaſt* therefore was chosen king in the ninth century. The *Polish* historians will have it, that two angels were concerned in this event, though *Poland* had not at that time embraced Christianity. What they relate of the good government of *Piaſt* is supported by better proofs.

THE princes of this family, who succeeded one another, continually increased their authority, which even seemed to be more absolute than ever, under *Boleslaus* I. in the tenth century. Till this time the sovereigns of *Poland* had only the title of duke. Two powers, the emperor and the pope, were then contending for the right of making kings. The pope miscarried in his pretensions; and it was the emperor *Otho* III. who respecting the virtues of *Boleslaus*, invested him with the regal dignity, in his passage through *Poland*. One would scarce imagine, that with this instrument of despotism, the first king of *Poland* laid the foundations of a republic. This hero, after having penetrated into the heart of the empire, and extended his conquests as far as the con-

fluence of the *Elbe* and the *Sala*, where he erected three columns as monuments of his glory, after having twice subdued *Russia*, began at last to think seriously; and considering on one side, that his enemies were subdued, and on the other, his subjects exhausted and ruined, and their wounds, still bleeding, had the humanity to weep over his victories. Hitherto he had reigned without a council; but he now created one, consisting of twelve persons of distinguished merit.

THE nation, which had hitherto obeyed implicitly, now turning its eyes towards liberty, discovered with pleasure the first image of it; for this council might in time become a senate. We have seen, that the *Poles* had long ago abolished monarchy to make way for twelve *voivods*; and this transient idea of a republic had never been intirely defaced. Though the *Polish* kings, after the restoration of the old constitution, had regularly succeeded one another by hereditary right, yet there still remained a persuasion, that there were circumstances in which the nation might resume the crown; and it exerted this right by deposing *Miecislav III.* a bad prince, in the twelfth century. Instances of this sort were repeated more than once in the thirteenth century.

A NATION, which has proceeded so far as to depose its kings, has nothing to do but to chuse its materials for erecting the edifice of liberty, and time will do the rest. The banishment of *Boleslaus II.* after the patience of his subjects had been exhausted by his barbarous behaviour, was favourable enough for such an undertaking, there being scarce any absolute sovereign in *Europe*. The nobles in *France*, *England*, *Sweden*, *Denmark*, *Italy*, and *Sicily*, confined the authority of their princes within very narrow limits. The *Spaniards* have not to this day forgot the ancient form of inaugurating their kings. "We, who are as good as you, make you our king, upon condition, that you will observe our laws; otherwise not." The *Poles* too had laid some restraints on the regal power; but this power being always ready to overleap its bounds, they still thought it too extensive, for their kings made war and peace at their own pleasure.

IN the 14th century, *Casimir the Great*, being impatient to put an end to a long war, made a treaty of peace, which the enemy required to be ratified by all the estates of the realm. Being assembled for this purpose, they refused their concurrence; and from this time were convinced, that it was not impossible to establish a republic, and at the same time to keep a king. The foundations of this constitution were

were laid even before the death of *Casimir*, who having no son, proposed his nephew *Lewis*, king of *Hungary*, for his successor. The *Poles* gave their consent; but it was upon such conditions as laid heavy fetters upon absolute power. *Lewis* himself in the latter part of his life, when he had no hopes of begetting an heir to the throne, pitched upon his son-in-law *Sigismund* to succeed him, with the approbation of the *Poles*, which he purchased by ceding to them fresh privileges: but the *Poles* were not contented with having in some measure disposed of the crown, by their consent being asked; they were resolved to strike a decisive blow, by abolishing the succession. If either of *Lewis's* two daughters had a right to the crown, it was undoubtedly his eldest, the princess *Mary*, wife to *Sigismund*; they therefore rejected both her and her husband, and gave the crown to *Hedwigia*, the younger, upon condition that she would take no husband but of their appointing.

AMONG the competitors that appeared on this occasion, *Jagellon* displayed the lustre of the crown of *Lithuania*, which he promised to incorporate with that of *Poland*. This offer was certainly considerable; but it would have been nothing, if he had not subscribed to the republican form of government. Upon this condition he married *Hedwigia*, and was declared king.

First establishment of the republic of Poland.

A REPUBLIC was now established, composed of three estates; the king, the senate, and the equestrian order. The king's portion was majesty, power fell to the senate, and liberty was the share of the equestrian order; an order including all the rest of the nobility, and which soon set up tribunes, by the name of deputies. These deputies represent the whole equestrian order in the general assemblies of the nation, called diets, and put a stop to all proceedings there, whenever they please, by their right of *Veto*. The commonwealth of *Rome* had no king, but the commons were reckoned as one of its three orders, sharing the sovereign power with the senate and the knights; and the majesty of the *Roman* people was extolled both at home and abroad. *Poland*, actuated by different principles, has placed its people upon a level with the cattle that till the ground. The senate, which holds the balance between the king and liberty, can look without emotion upon the slavery of five or six millions of men, who were much happier of old when they were *Sarmatians*.

WHILE the commonwealth of *Poland* was yet in its infancy, *Jagellon* seemed to forget upon what conditions he reigned. An edict issued by him was found contrary to the oath

oath he had taken, and the new republicans hewed it in pieces with their sabres before his face. But the reign of *Sigismund Augustus* was the æra when the republican pride displayed itself in the haughtiest manner.

THIS king dying in 1573 without children, the *Poles* took this opportunity of guarding their liberty with new bulwarks. They examined into their old laws, limited many, extended some, and abolished others; and after many debates, it was agreed that the kings elected by the nation should make no attempts to get their successors appointed, that they should not so much as propose any one to the state for this purpose, and consequently should never assume the title of heirs of the kingdom; that they should always have about them sixteen persons by way of council, without whose concurrence they should neither receive foreign ministers, nor send any to other princes; that they should not levy new troops, nor order the nobility on horseback without the consent of all the orders of the republic; that they should admit no foreigners into the council of the nation, nor confer upon them any office, dignity, or barony; and lastly, that they should not marry, without having first obtained the permission of the senate and equestrian order.

THE whole interregnum was spent in contriving how to guard against what was called the encroachments of the throne. The republican language became henceforward the prevailing stile in all assemblies of state. *Henry of Valois* was shocked at it upon his arrival in *Poland*, and at his coronation in 1574. But a few months after, the castellan of *Sandomir* was deputed, with five others, to notify to him his approaching deposition, if he did not more punctually discharge the duties of the throne. Soon after, his precipitate flight put an end to the complaints of the nation, and to his reign together.

To these spirited attacks, made at different times, it is ^{The Po-}owing that *Poland* has retained royalty without fearing its ^{lish repub-} kings. A king of *Poland*, at his very coronation, and when ^{lic bow} he swears to the *Pacta Conventa*, absolves his subjects from ^{tuted.} their oath of allegiance, in case he violates the laws of the republic.

THE legislative power belongs essentially to the diet, which the king is obliged to call together every two years; and in case of his failure, the republic has a right to assemble by its own authority. The little diets or dietines of every palatine precede the great one; and in these they prepare the matters that are to be discussed in the general assembly, and elect the
re-

representatives of the equestrian order, out of which is composed the chamber of deputies. The persons of these deputies or tribunes are held as sacred. The old castle of *Warsaw*, in which the kings of *Poland* formerly resided, is the place where the diet meets. In order to form an idea of the senate, which is the soul of this body, we must cast our eyes upon the bishops, palatines, and castellans. The two latter of these dignities are less known than the former. A palatine is the chief of the nobility within his own palatinate, presides at all their assemblies, leads them to the field of election when a king is to be chosen, and to the field of battle, when the *Polish* is assembled, or the *Polish* gentlemen, in virtue of the king's summons to war. He has also a right to fix the price of commodities, and to regulate weights and measures: in short, he is a governor of a province. A castellan enjoys the same privileges within his own district, which always makes part of a palatinate; he represents the palatine in his absence. The castellans were formerly governors of the strong castles and royal cities; but these governments are now in the hands of the starosts, who also administer justice either in their own persons, or by their deputies. The starost of *Samogitia* is the only one who has a seat in the senate; but there are in it two archbishops, fifteen bishops, thirty-three palatines, and eighty-five castellans, in all 135.

THE ministers of state have a seat in the senate, without being senators; these are the grand-marshals, grand-chancellors, vice-chancellors, grand-treasurers of the crown and of *Lithuania*; with the marshals of the courts of *Poland* and *Lithuania*; in number ten, two of each denomination, by reason of the union of the two states. The grand-marshal is the third person in the kingdom, having only the king and the primate above him. As master of the palace, he appoints ambassadors their days of audience; and exercises an almost absolute authority in the court, and for three leagues round it. He provides for the safety of the king's person, and the preservation of the public peace: he takes cognizance of all crimes within his district, and judges without appeal; nor can his sentences be reversed but by the whole body of the nation. It is also his business to assemble the senate, and keep in order those who would disturb it; for which purposes he has always a body of troops at his command. The marshal of the court can exercise no jurisdiction but in the absence of the grand-marshal. The grand-chancellor is keeper of the great seal, as the vice-chancellor is of the privy-seal. One of them is always a bishop, with a jurisdiction in ecclesiastical matters; and all answers given in the king's name upon public occasions, must be given by one of these two officers.

The

The grand-treasurer is entrusted with the revenue of the republic, he *Poles* being very careful not to leave this money at the disposal of the king. A vote of the whole nation, or at least a *senatus consultum*, directs how it shall be employed; and the grand-treasurer is accountable to the nation only.

THERE is very little resemblance between these ministers and those of other courts. They are appointed indeed by the king, but the republic only can turn them out. Nevertheless, as they are connected with the crown, which is the source of all favours, and as they are men, the republic has not thought fit to allow them a deliberative vote in the senate.

THE first man in the senate is the archbishop of *Gnesna*, commonly called the primate. By virtue of his office, he is legate of the holy see, and censor of the kings of *Poland*: he is himself in some measure a king in every vacancy of the throne, during which he takes the name of *Interrex*; and the honours he receives are proportioned to the dignity of his station. He never exercises his censorship but with applause. If the king does not listen to his remonstrances in private, and persists in bad measures, it is in full senate, or in the diet, that the primate arms himself with all the power of the laws to reclaim him; and the mischief is generally put a stop to.

WHEN the diet is not sitting, the springs of government are kept in motion by the senate, under the inspection of the king; but the king can neither by authority nor violence over-rule their suffrages. The liberty they possess is visible even in their outward forms; for the senators are seated in arm-chairs, and as soon as the king is covered, they follow his example. However, the decrees of the senate, when the diet is not sitting, are only provisional; but when the diet is assembled, the senate, together with the king and the chamber of deputies, has a legislative power.

THE first thing done in a diet, is always to read the *Pacta Conventa*, containing the obligations which the king has entered into with his people; and if he has failed in any particular, every member of the assembly has a right to insist upon its being better observed for the future. In the other sittings, which are of six weeks continuance, the usual duration of a diet, are settled all the concerns of the nation; such as, the nomination to vacant dignities, the disposal of the crown lands to such as have served long in the army with distinction, the passing the grand treasurer's accounts, the diminution or augmentation of taxes as circumstances require, the negotiations with which the ambassadors of the republic have been entrusted, and the manner in which they have

have executed their commissions; the alliances to be formed or broken, the making of peace and war, the abrogating or passing laws, and the strengthening of public liberty. The last five days, called the great days, are set apart for uniting all the votes. Every decree, to have the force of a law, must be ratified by the unanimous consent of all the three orders; the opposition of a single deputy undoes every thing. This privilege is considered as the most sacred institution of the commonwealth; and a sure way of being torn in pieces would be to propose its abolition. It may sometimes do good, but upon the whole much more mischief. A single deputy may thus not only annul a good decree, but if he has a quarrel with all, he has nothing to do but to make a protest, and leave the assembly, and the diet is instantly dissolved. The remedy against these dissolutions is a confederacy, in which matters are decided by a majority of votes, without paying any regard to the protests of the deputies; and one confederacy is frequently formed against another. The acts of these confederacies must afterwards be ratified or annulled by a general diet. All this must needs occasion great convulsions in the state, especially if the army comes to meddle in the dispute.

*Manner of
electing a
king of
Poland.*

As soon as the throne is vacant, all the courts of justice, and other ordinary springs of the machine of government, remain in a state of inaction, and all the authority is transferred to the primate, who, as above observed, in quality of interrex, has in some respects more power than the king himself; and yet the republic takes no umbrage at it, because he has not time to make himself formidable. He notifies the vacancy of the throne to foreign princes, which is an effect proclaiming that a crown is to be disposed of; he issues the universals or circular letters for the election; gives orders to the starosts to keep a strict guard upon the fortified places, and to the grand-generals to do the same upon the frontiers, towards which the army marches.

THE place of election is the field of *Wola*, at the gates of *Warsaw*. All the nobles of the kingdom have a right of voting. The *Poles* encamp on the left side of the *Vistula*, and the *Lithuanians* on the right, each under the banners of their respective palatinates, which makes a sort of civil army, consisting of between 150 and 200,000 men, assembled to exercise the highest act of freedom. Those who are not able to provide a horse and a sabre, stand behind on foot, armed with scythes, and do not seem at all less proud than the rest, as they have the same right of voting.

THE field of election is surrounded by a ditch, with three gates, in order to avoid confusion, one to the east for *Great Poland*,

Poland, another to the south for *Little Poland*; and a third to the west for *Lithuania*. In the middle of the field, which is called *Kolau*, is erected a vast building of wood, named the *Szopa*, or hall for the senate, at whose debates the deputies are present, and carry the result of them to the several palatinates. The part which the marshal acts upon this occasion is still more important than in ordinary diets; for, being the mouth of the nobility, he has it in his power to do great service to the candidates; he is also to draw up the instrument of election, and the king elect must take it only from his hand.

It is prohibited, upon pain of being declared a public enemy, to appear at the election with regular troops, in order to avoid all violence. But the nobles, who are always armed with pistols and sabres, commit violence against one another, at the time that they cry out "liberty!"

ALL who aspire openly to the crown are expressly excluded from the field of election, that their presence may not constrain the voters. The king must be elected *nemine contradicente*, by all the suffrages without exception. The law is founded upon this principle, that when a vast family adopts a father, all the children have a right to be pleased. The idea is plausible in speculation; but if it was rigorously kept to, *Poland* could have no such thing as a lawful king. They therefore give up a real unanimity, and content themselves with the appearance of it; or rather, if the law which prescribes it cannot be fulfilled by means of money, they call in the assistance of the sabre.

BEFORE they come to this extremity, no election can possibly be carried on with more order, decency, and appearance of freedom. The primate, in few words, recapitulates to the nobles on horseback, the respective merit of the candidates, which has already been examined in the dietines; he exhorts them to chuse the most worthy, invokes heaven, gives his blessing to the assembly, and remains alone with the marshal of the diet, while the senators disperse themselves into the several palatinates, to promote an unanimity of sentiments. If they succeed, the primate goes himself to collect the votes, naming once more all the candidates. *Szoda*, answer the nobles, "That is the man we chuse," and instantly the air resounds with his name, with cries of *vivat*, and the noise of pistols. If all the palatines agree in their nominations, the primate gets on horseback, and then the profoundest silence succeeding to the greatest noise, he asks three times if all are satisfied; and after a general approbation, three times proclaims the king; and the grand-marshal of the crown repeats the

the proclamation three times at the three gates of the camp. How glorious a king this, if endued with royal qualities! and how incontestable his title in the suffrages of a whole people!

THIS sketch of a free and peaceable election is by no means a representation of what usually happens. The corruption of the great, the fury of the people, intrigues and factions, the gold and the arms of foreign powers, frequently fill the scene with violence and blood.

Military
establishment
of the
Poles.

THE nobility having seized the reins of government with all the honours and emoluments of the state, have thought themselves obliged to defend it too, and to leave all the rest of the nation to cultivate the lands. *Poland* is at present the only country in the world whose whole cavalry is made up of gentlemen, of which the grand duchy of *Lithuania* furnishes a fourth part; and in this cavalry consists the chief strength of the state, for the infantry is scarce reckoned as any thing. This army, or rather these two armies, the *Polish* and the *Lithuanian*, have each their grand general, independent of one another. It has been already observed, that the office of grand-marshal is first in dignity after the primacy; but the grand-general is superior in power, being unconfined by almost any bounds but what he prescribes to himself; and this great authority is suspended only when the king commands in person. The two armies have also each of them a general, whose functions are confined to the field, called the petty-general, who has no authority but what the grand-general chuses to give him, and who supplies his absence. A third officer of note is the stragenik, who commands the van. There is also kept up in *Poland* a third body of troops, consisting of foot and dragoons, the institution of which is of no great antiquity. It is called the foreign army, and made up almost intirely of *Germans*. When the whole is complete, which seldom happens, the ordinary defence of *Poland* is about 48,000 men. A fourth army, the most numerous and the most useless of all, is the *Polspolite*. In case of necessity, more than 150,000 gentlemen would mount their horses, in order to submit only to such discipline as they liked; to mutiny, if they were detained more than a fortnight in the place appointed them to meet in, without marching; and to refuse to serve, if it should be necessary to pass the frontiers. Another mischief is, that the two bodies of troops which are its ordinary defence, the *Polish* army and the *Lithuanian*, being commanded by two grand-generals, independent of each other, are without that principle of union which makes forces act in concert. It has happened more than once, that when one has marched, the other has halted: they have even been known to threaten each other.

• THE

THE *Poles* are born soldiers; and though they resemble their ancestors, the *Sarmatians*, much less than the *Tartars* do theirs, yet there are still remaining among them some *Sarmatian* features. For instance, they are frank and haughty; which last quality is natural enough in a gentleman who elects his own king, and may come to have that honour himself. They are also extremely passionate, affairs being often decided sword in hand by the representatives, in their national assemblies. Hospitality is a virtue much cultivated among them, and was learnt from the *Turks* and *Tartars*. The *Poles* are brave, robust, and inured to cold and fatigue; but they have departed from the simplicity and frugality of the *Sarmatians*. To the very end of the reign of *Sobieski*, a few wooden chairs, a bear's skin, a pair of pistols, and two boards covered with a mattress, was all the household furniture of a nobleman in decent circumstances; and a suit of furs was his dress. Luxury began to get footing under *Augustus II.* and the *French* fashions, already adopted in *Germany*, were added to the magnificence of the east, which displays itself more in pomp than elegance. The *Poles* love money, but not with a view of hoarding. Their stateliness is such, that a woman of quality never stirs abroad but in a coach and six, though it were only to cross a street. These women, however, are far from being delicate. They mix with the men in competitions at public games, in hunting, and the pleasures of the table; and frequently take a journey of 100 or 200 leagues in a sledge, without any apprehensions about inconvenient lodgings, or the badness of the roads.

PERSONS who travel in *Poland* find that good morals are of more value than good laws. The number of forests, the distance of habitations, the custom of travelling by night as well as by day, the negligence of the starosts, with regard to the safety of the roads, all contribute to favour robbery and murder, and yet an instance of either is scarce known in ten years.

THE extremes of liberty and slavery seem to be contending which shall ruin *Poland*. The nobility can do whatever they please; and the body of the nation groans in servitude. Wherever the great have tyrannically trampled upon the people, the latter have revenged themselves by giving up their oppressors into the hands of an absolute monarch. That all men are born upon a footing of equality is a truth which will never be eradicated from the human mind; and if an inequality of condition is become necessary, it must be alleviated by the enjoyment of natural liberty, and equal laws. A *Polish* noble, whatever crime he has committed, cannot be

taken into custody, till he has been condemned in an assembly of all the states of the realm; which is, in effect, furnishing him with all imaginable means to escape: but, whoever is not nobly born, is a mere cypher in the city, or a slave in the country; and it is certain, that every state is undone where the plebeian has no possibility of rising, but by overturning the whole constitution. In consequence of the slavery of the people, *Poland* has very few artificers or tradesmen. In all their wars, they are forced to hire foreign engineers; there is no such thing among them as a school for painting; architecture is yet in its infancy; and theatrical entertainments they have none. They write history without taste, know little of the mathematics, and less of true philosophy; they have no public building of any note, and not one great city in all the kingdom; even *Warsaw* does not contain 60,000 souls.

Dantzic, But we must except *Dantzic*, and some other trading towns, which are distinct republics, and governed by their respective magistrates. The duchy of *Courland* is besides reckoned a province of *Poland*, but the *Courlanders* elect their own princes, and are governed by their own laws. They are influenced however in their choice, either by the *Poles* or the *Russians*, and the latter seem to have the greatest influence on them at present by reinstating *John Ernest Biron*, duke of *Courland* and *Semigallia*, in exclusion of prince *Charles* of *Saxony*, who was elected to that dignity in *September 1758*. As to *Ducal Prussia*, reputed another province of this kingdom, the crown of *Poland* acknowledged it to be independent in 1663, upon condition that it should revert to it on failure of male issue. The elector of *Brandenburg*, *Frederic III.* duke of *Prussia*, first assumed the stile of king of this country in 1700.

Kings of We have mentioned the chief dukes and kings of *Poland*
Poland to as far as the æra of the establishment of the republic, and as
the present far as *Henry of Valois*, who abdicated the crown of *Poland*
time. or succeeding to that of *France*. *Stephen Batori*, prince of
Transylvania, was elected in his room in 1575. He made
 it a rule with himself to dispose of all honours and employ-
 ments according to merit. He reformed the manifold abuses
 which had crept into the administration of justice; maintained
 peace within the kingdom, and kept in awe the *Tartars*,
Muscovites, and *Cossacs*. His reign lasted ten years, a space
 long enough for his own glory, but too short for the good
 of the republic. *Sigismund III.* prince of *Sweden*, succeeded
 him in the throne, but did not supply his place, having nei-
 ther the same great qualities, nor the same good fortune. He
 lost an hereditary kingdom to gain an elective one. His
 sons,

sons, *Uladislaus VII.* and *Casimir V.* both succeeded him. The first, who ascended the throne in 1632, invaded *Russia*, and took the capital city of *Moscow*, obliging the *Russians* to cede the province of *Smolensko* to *Poland*. He spent the fifteen years of his reign in acquiring the love of his subjects. The second, from a jesuit became a cardinal, and from a cardinal a king. In his reign, *Charles Gustavus* king of *Sweden*, in one year, (1655) made an intire conquest of *Poland*, and *Casimir* fled into *Silesia*; but the *Swedes* retiring next year, *Casimir* was restored: whereupon he entertained *German* forces to secure his possession; but the *Poles*, apprehending he intended to make himself absolute, deposed him. He retired into *France*, and became abbot of *St. Germain*. *Michael Wiesznowieski* was next elected in 1670. In his reign the *Turks* conquered the province of *Podolia*, and besieged *Leopol*; but compelling the *Poles* to pay them an annual tribute, they abandoned *Leopol*. A new war breaking out, *John Sobieski*, the crown-general, gained a great victory over the *Turks*; but the *Poles* refusing to keep the field any longer, he obtained no great fruits of his victory. King *Michael* dying in 1674, the *Poles* elected *John Sobieski* their king, in regard of his services against the *Turks*. This is the illustrious *Sobieski*, a name revered to this day in *Poland*, who joined the duke of *Lorrain*, the imperial general, when the *Turks* besieged *Vienna* in 1683, and obtained that decisive victory, which compelled the infidels to abandon *Hungary*, not long after. On his death, *Frederic Augustus*, elector of *Saxony*, was chosen king of *Poland* in 1698, in opposition to the prince of *Conti*, who was proclaimed king by the *French* faction, but obliged to retire into *France*. The year following, at a treaty between the *Turks*, and the *Germans* and *Poles*, at *Carlowitz*, the *Turks* restored *Podolia* with its capital *Kaminieck*, to *Poland*. King *Augustus* in 1700, having entered into a confederacy with the *Danes*, *Russians*, and *Brandenburghers*, against *Charles XII.* king of *Sweden*, was defeated in several battles by the *Swedes*, who deposed him, and advanced *Stanislaus Leszczinski* to the throne of *Poland* in 1704. King *Stanislaus* remained on the throne of *Poland* till the year 1709, when *Charles XII.* being defeated by the *Russians* at *Pultowa*, and obliged to take refuge in *Turky*, king *Augustus* re-ascended the throne of *Poland*, though he had sworn not to disturb *Stanislaus* in the possession of it. Dying in 1733, his son *Augustus III.* was advanced to the throne of *Poland*, by the interest of the *Austrigns* and *Russians*, though the *French* faction had proclaimed king *Stanislaus*, who retiring to *Danitzic*, was besieged in that city by the *Saxons* and *Russians*, and escaping from thence, retired into *France*: whereupon his party sub-

mitted and swore allegiance to king *Augustus*, who died in *October* 1763. This prince did not seem to be much in the affection of the *Poles*; for though the king of *Prussia* had, in the late war, plundered *Saxony*, and taken the capital city of *Dresden*, which he kept possession of for some time, the *Poles* made not the least motion in his defence. On the 6th of *September*, 1764, the ceremony of the election of count *Stanislaus Poniatowski* to the throne of *Poland*, passed with the most perfect unanimity of the suffrages of the whole nation, delivered by the different palatinates assembled for that purpose: and the next day he was proclaimed by the name of *Stanislaus Augustus*, and conducted to the court and palace through the acclamations of several thousands of spectators.

CHAP. X.

Of the Russian Dominions in Europe.

pire of
Russia.

THE empire of *Russia* is the most extensive in the world. It measures from west to east upwards of 2000 common leagues, and upwards of 800 from south to north, in its greatest breadth: it borders upon *Poland* and the *Frozen-Sea*: it touches *Sweden* and *China*: its length, from the isle of *Dago*, to the west of *Livonia*, as far as its most eastern boundaries, comprehends near 170 deg. so that, when it is noon in the west, it is near midnight in the east of the empire. What is now comprehended under the name of *Russia*, is more vast than all the rest of *Europe*, than the *Roman* empire ever was, or that of *Darius* conquered by *Alexander*; for it contains more than 1,100,000 square leagues. The *Roman* empire and that of *Alexander* contained each but 550,000; and there is not a kingdom in *Europe* that makes a twelfth part of the *Roman* empire. Length of time, and wars, such as *Peter the Great*, are still required for making *Russia* as populous as more southern countries.

Livonia.

THE *Russian* empire is now divided into sixteen great governments, of which several contain immense provinces.

THE nearest province to us is that of *Livonia*. It is one of the most fertile of the north. Its inhabitants were pagans in the twelfth century. Some merchants of *Bremen* and *Lubeck* traded there; and the knights of the Teutonic order seized upon it in the thirteenth century, and kept their ground, till *Albert*, margrave of *Brandenburg*, grand master of these conquering knights, made himself master of *Livonia* and *Brandenburg-Prussia* about the year 1514. The *Russians* and *Poles*

Poles then began to contest the right to that province. The *Suedes* soon after entered it. All these powers ravaged it for a long time. It was conquered by *Gustavus Adolphus*, and ceded to *Sweden*, in 1660, by the famous peace of *Oliva*. Lastly, the czar *Peter* conquered it from the *Suedes*.

FARTHER north is the government of *Revel* and *Estonia*. *Revel* was built by the *Danes* in the thirteenth century. The *Suedes* possessed *Estonia* since the country put itself under their protection in 1561. This is also one of *Peter's* conquests. On the borders of *Estonia* is the gulph of *Finland*. Eastward of this sea, and at the junction of the *Neva* and the lake of *Ladoga*, *Petersburg*, the newest and finest City of the empire, was built by the czar *Peter*, notwithstanding all the obstacles that opposed its foundation. It rises on the gulph of *Cronstadt*, in the midst of nine branches of rivers, which divide its quarters. An impregnable castle occupies the centre of the city, in an isle formed by the great current of the *Neva*. Seven canals, formed out of the rivers, wash the walls of a palace, those of the admiralty, and of the yards for ship-building and several manufactures. Thirty-five great churches are so many ornaments to the city; five of which, as an example of toleration to other nations, are allotted to foreigners, whether Catholics or Reformed. There are five palaces; the old one called the summer-palace, situated on the river *Neva*, is inclosed by an immense balustrade of fine stone all along the shore. The new summer-palace, near the triumphal arch, is one of the finest pieces of architecture in *Europe*. The buildings raised for the Admiralty, the Corps of Cadets, the Imperial Colleges, the Academy of Sciences, the Exchange, the Merchants Warehouse, and that of the Gallies, are all magnificent monuments. The police, or mansion-house, that of the public pharmacy, where all the vessels are of porcelain, the court-warehouse, the foundery, the arsenal, the bridges, the market-places, the squares, the lodges for the horse and foot-guards, contribute equally to the embellishment and security of the city. It is computed that there are actually 400,000 souls in it. In the environs are pleasure-houses, which may justly astonish travellers by their magnificence; of one in particular the jetteaus and cascades are much superior to those of *Versailles*. There was nothing here in 1702: the place was an impassable marsh. *Petersburg* is reputed the capital of *Ingria*, a small province conquered by *Peter the Great*. *Wiburg* also conquered by him, and the part of *Finland* lost and ceded by *Sweden* in 1742, make another government.

The Conclusion of

HIGHER up to the north is the province of *Archangel*, a country intirely new to the southern nations of *Europe*. It had its name from *St. Michael*, the archangel, under whose protection it was put, long after the *Russians* had embraced Christianity, which they did not till the beginning of the eleventh century. It was not till the middle of the sixteenth that this country was known by other nations. The *English*, in 1533, seeking a passage through the north and east seas to the *East-Indies*, discovered the port of *Archangel* in the *White-Sea*. In this desert there was only a convent, with the little church of *St. Michael the Archangel*. From this port, having ascended the river *Quina*, they arrived in the midst of the country, and at last at the city of *Moscow*. They easily made themselves masters of the commerce of *Russia*, which from the city of *Novgorod*, where it was carried on by land, was transferred to this sea-port. It is, indeed, inaccessible seven months of the year; however, it was of much greater utility than the fairs of the great *Novgorod*, which sensibly decayed by the wars against *Sweden*. The *English* obtained the privilege of trading there without paying any duty, and it is so all nations ought, perhaps, to trade together. The *Dutch* soon shared with them the commerce of *Archangel*. Long before this the *Genese* and *Venetians* had settled a trade with the *Russians* by the mouth of the *Tenar*, where they built a town called *Tana*: but, since the ravages of *Tamerlane* in this part of the world, this *Italian* branch of trade has been destroyed. That of *Archangel* subsisted with great advantages to the *English* and *Dutch*, till *Peter the Great* opened the *Baltic* to his states.

Russian-Lapland, in the government of Archangel.

RUSSIAN-LAPLAND, the third part of that country, the two others belonging to *Sweden* and *Denmark*, lies to the west of *Archangel*. It is a very large tract, taking up about eight degrees of longitude, and extending in latitude from the polar circle to *Cape North*. The inhabitants were concluded by antiquity by the name of *Troglodytes*, and septentrional pygmies. This appellation suited indeed men living in caverns, and generally not more than three cubits high. They are such as they were then, of a tan-colour, tho' the other northern people are white; almost all diminutive, whilst their neighbours, and the people of *Iceland*, under the polar circle, are of high stature. They seem made for their mountainy country, nimble, well-set, robust; their skin hard, the better to resist cold; their thighs and legs thin and small; their feet little, to skip and clamber with greater facility over the rocks their whole country is covered with; yet they are passionate lovers of this country, which they alone can

be fond of, not being able to live elsewhere. All these particulars shew, that the *Laplanders* are indigenes as well as their animals, and that nature has made them for one another. The inhabitants of *Finland* and *Swedish-Lapland* adored formerly an idol they called *Jumalac*; and since the time of *Gustavus Adolphus*, to whom they are indebted for the name of Lutherans, they call *Jesus Christ* the son of *Jumalac*. The *Muscovite-Laplanders* are now reckoned to belong to the *Greek church*; but those who lead a vagabond life towards the mountains of *Cape North*, content themselves with adoring a God under some gross forms. This kind of men, few in number, have also few ideas, and they are happy in not having more, as then they must have new wants which they could not satisfy: they live contented, and to a great age, without sickness, scarce drinking any other liquor but water in the coldest climate. •

In going up the *Duina*, from north to south, one arrives in the midst of the country about *Moscow*, the capital of the empire. This city was for a long time the centre of the *Russian states*, before they were extended towards *China* and *Persia*. *Moscow*, situated in $55 \frac{1}{2}$ deg. of latitude, in a soil less cold and more fertile than *Petersburg*, lies in the middle of a large and beautiful plain, on the river *Moskwa*, and two other small ones, that empty themselves with it into the *Occa*, and afterwards increase the *Volga*. This city, in the thirteenth century, was only an assemblage of huts, peopled with the wretches oppressed by the race of *Gengis-kan*. The *Cremelin*, which was the residence of the grand-dukes, was not built till the fourteenth century. Some *Italian architects* had the conducting of it; the taste was *Gothic*; the same then prevailed throughout *Europe*, as well for palaces as churches. The earl of *Carlisle*, ambassador from our king *Charles II.* in 1663, to the czar *Alexis*, complains, in his relation, that he neither found any convenience of life, in *Moscow*, nor inn on the road, nor assistance of any kind. He was disgusted to see that the greater part of the boyards had no other beds than planks, or benches, on which a skin, or some other covering was laid; this was the antient custom of all people: the houses, almost all of wood, were without furniture, the dining-tables without linen, no pavement in the streets, nothing agreeable and convenient, very few artificers, and these bungling ones, and only labouring at works of necessity. This people would have appeared *Spartans* had they been sober. But the court, on days of ceremony, appeared like that of a king of *Persia*. The earl of *Carlisle* says, that he saw the czars and his courtiers robes covered

with gold and precious stones. These cloaths were not manufactured in the country: however, it was evident, that the people were capable of being made industrious, since they had cast at *Moscow*, long before, in the reign of the czar Boris Godouno, the largest bell that is in *Europe*, and could produce, in the patriarchal church, some silver ornaments, which were not wrought without great pains. These works, conducted by *Germans* and *Italians*, were transitory efforts, it is industry, and the multitude of arts continually put in practice, that make a nation flourishing. *Poland* then, and other neighbouring countries, were not superior to the *Russians*. Manual arts were not brought to greater perfection in the north of *Germany*, and the politer arts were scarce better known there in the middle of the seventeenth century. Though *Moscow* had nothing then of the magnificence and arts of our great cities in *Europe*, yet its circumference of 20,000 paces; the part called the *Chinese* town, where the curiosities of *China* were exposed to sale; the spacious quarter of the czar's palace; some gilt domes and lofty towers of a singular construction, in short, the number of inhabitants, amounting to near 500,000; all this made *Moscow* one of the most considerable cities of the world. *Theodore*, or *Fædor*, *Peter the Great's* eldest brother, began to polify *Moscow*: he had several large houses built of stone, tho' without any regular architecture: he encouraged his principal courtiers to build, advancing them money, and furnishing them with materials. It is to him the *Russians* are indebted for the first breed of fine horses, and some useful establishments. *Peter*, who did all, took care of *Moscow*, whilst he was building *Petersburg*, he had it paved, and adorned and enriched it with edifices and manufactures; and lastly, within these few years, *M. de Shaghalow*, chamberlain to the late empress *Elizabeth*, has had the honour of founding in it an university.

Smo'en-
sko.

To the west of the duchy of *Moscow* is that of *Smolensko*, part of the ancient *European-Sarmatia*. The duchies of *Muscovy* and *Smolensko* composed *White-Russia*, properly so called. *Smolensko*, which belonged first to the grand dukes of *Russia*, was conquered by the grand duke of *Lithuania*, in the beginning of the fifteenth century, and retaken by its former masters a hundred years after. *Sigismund III.* king of *Poland*, seized upon it in 1611. The czar *Alexis*, *Peter's* father, recovered it in 1654, and since this time it always made a part of the *Russian* empire.

Govern-
ments of

THE province of *Novogorod* lies between *Petersburg* and *Smolensko*. It is said, that in this country was the first settle-
ment

ment of the antient *Slavonians*, whose language extended Novogorod throughout the north-east of *Europe*: they built the city of *rod and Great-Novogorod*, situate on a navigable river from its source, *Kiovia*. This city long enjoyed a flourishing commerce, and was a *Ukrain*. powerful ally of the hanse-towns. The czar *Ivan Basilowitz*, conquered it in 1467, and brought away with him all its riches, which contributed to the magnificence of the court of *Moscow*, almost unknown till then.

To the south of the province of *Smolensko* lies that of *Kiovia*, which is the *Little Russia*, the *Red Russia*, or the *Ukrain*, crossed by the *Dnieper*, which the *Greeks* call *Boristhenes*. The difference of these two names, the one hard to be pronounced, the other melodious, serves to shew, with an hundred other proofs, the harshness of the northern dialects, compared with the graces of the *Greek* tongue. The capital, *Kiow*, formerly *Kisowia*, was built by the emperors of *Constantinople*, who made a colony of it. Some *Greek* inscriptions, of 1200 years standing, are still to be seen there. It is the only town of antiquity in these countries, where men have lived so many ages without building walls. There also the grand dukes of *Russia* resided in the eleventh century, before the *Tartars* subjected *Russia*.

THE *Ukrainians*, called *Cossacs*, are a collected body of ancient *Roxelans*, *Sarmatians*, and *Tartars*. This country made part of the ancient *Scythia*. Nature seems lavish in it of her favours to men; but the men have not seconded nature, diving upon fruits produced by a land equally uncultivated and fertile, and living still more upon rapine; fond to an excess of a happiness preferable to all things, liberty; and yet having served by turns *Poland* and *Turky*. They gave themselves up lastly to *Russia* in 1654, and, though not disposed to be intirely subject, *Peter* made them so. The other nations are distinguished by their towns and villages, and divided into ten districts; a chief, called *hitman*, was elected by a plurality of votes to govern them, but without supreme power. It is now a lord of the court the *Russian* sovereigns send them for *hitman*, whose power resembles that of a governor of certain states, which still retain some privileges. At first, the inhabitants of this country were all Pagans and *Mohammedans*: they were baptized Christians of the church of *Rome* when they served *Poland*; and now, since they belonged to *Russia*, are baptized Christians of the *Greek* church. Among them are comprehended those *Zaporavian Cossacks*, who, in some measure, are such enterprising courageous robbers, as were formerly the free-booters. What distinguishes them from all other people is, that they never suffer

suffer women in their habitations, as it is pretended the *Amazons* did not suffer men. The women that serve them for population dwell in other isles of the river. There is no marriage, no family among them: they inlist the males in their militia, and leave the females to their mothers. The brother has often children by his sister, and the father by his daughter. No other laws subsist among them but customs, established by necessity; however, they have some priests of the *Greek* church. Not long since the fort *St. Elizabeth* has been built on the *Borisphenes*, to restrain and keep them within bounds. They serve in the *Russian* army as irregular troops, and behave like *Tartars* to those that fall into their hands.

Govern-
ment of
Belgorod,
Veronise,
and Nisch-
gorod.

IN going up to the north-east of the province of *Kiovvia*, between the *Borisphenes* and *Tanais*, you find the government of *Belgorod*, as extensive as that of *Kiovvia*. It is one of the most fertile provinces of *Russia*, furnishing *Poland* with prodigious numbers of large cattle, known by the name of *Ukrain* oxen. These two provinces are secure from the incursions of the *Little-Tartars*, by lines extending from the *Borisphenes* to the *Tanais*, and defended by forts and redoubts. Going still farther north, and passing the *Tanais*, you enter the government of *Veronise*, which extends to the *Palus-Meotis*. It was near the capital, called *Voronesteh*, at the mouth of the river of the same name, that *Peter the Great* had his first fleet built; an enterprize which none had a notion of before, throughout those vast states. The government of *Nischgorod*, fertile in corn, and watered by the *Volga*, is the next that presents itself.

THESE are all the *Russian* territories in *Europe*; those in *Asia* have been already treated of.

State of
Russia be-
fore Peter
the Great.

IT is very probable, that *Russia* had been much more populous than at present, in the time when the small-pox from the heart of *Arabia*, and the other from *America*, had not yet ravaged these climates, where they have taken root. These two plagues, whereby the world is more depopulated than by war, have been introduced, the one by *Mohammad*, the other by *Columbus*. The original pestilence of *Africa* rarely infected the countries of the north. In short, the people of the north, from the *Sarmatians* to the *Tartars* beyond the great wall, having overwhelmed the world with their irruptions, this ancient seminary of men must have been strangely diminished.

THE customs, modes of dress, and manners of *Russia*, were always more in imitation of *Asia* than *Christian Europe*: such was the ancient custom of receiving the people's tribute in

in commodities, and of defraying the expences of ambassadors on their route, and during their residence. The long gown on days of ceremony seemed more noble than the short garb of the western nations of *Europe*. A tunic, lined with furs, a long simar, enriched with precious stones on solemn days, and the sort of high turbans that raise the stature, were a more agreeable spectacle than close coats and perukes, and withal suited better cold climates; but this ancient manner of cloathing of all nations seems less adapted to war, and less commodious for labour. The far greater part of their other customs were gross and rustic; but we must not imagine that their manners were as barbarous as represented by so many writers.

THE *Russian* government resembled that of the *Turks*, by the militia or *strelitz*, which, like that of the *Janissaries*, sometimes disposed of the throne, and troubled the state almost always as much as they supported it. These *strelitz* were to the number of 40,000 men. Such of them as were dispersed in the provinces subsisted by robbery; those of *Moscow* lived as citizens, traded, but were in no subjection, and carried their excesses to insolence.

THE state did not possess five millions of rubles. This revenue was sufficient when *Peter* came to the crown, for keeping within the bounds of the ancient frugality; but it was not the third part of what was necessary for making a considerable figure in *Europe*.

THE religion of the state was, ever since the eleventh century, that which is called the *Greek*, in opposition to the *Latin*; but there were more *Mohammedan* and Pagan countries than Christian. *Siberia*, as far as *China*, was idolatrous; and, in more than one province, all kind of religion was unknown. It is pretended that a princess, by name *Olga*, introduced it, towards the close of the tenth century. She was baptized at *Constantinople*, and called *Helen*. Her example did not at first make a great number of proselytes. Her son *Sowastolaw*, who reigned a long time, was not of the same way of thinking; but her grandson, *Volodimer*, born of a concubine, having assassinated his brother, to reign in his place, and having sought for the alliance of the emperor *Basil* of *Constantinople*, did not obtain it but on condition of being baptized. It is at this epocha, of the year 987, that the *Greek* religion began in effect to be established in *Russia*. The patriarch *Photius*, so famous for his immense erudition, his disputes with the *Roman* church, and his misfortunes, sent proper persons with a commission to baptize *Volodimer*, in order to add that part of the world to his patriarchate. *Volodimer*

Iodimer finished therefore the work begun by his grandmother. A *Greek* was the first metropolitan, or patriarch of *Russia*; and hence it is, that the *Russians* have adopted in their language, which is the *Slavonian*, an alphabet taken partly from the *Greek*. These superior prelates soon after their institution, would share the authority with the czars. It was reputed a small matter that the sovereign walked bare-headed once a year before the patriarch, leading his horse by the bridle. This exterior respect served only to irritate their thirst after power; but this mad temper for affecting and exerting power occasioned great troubles here as well as elsewhere.

RUSSIA, which is entirely indebted to *Peter the Great* for its influence on the affairs of *Europe*, had none, since it embraced Christianity, till his time. In the reign of *Heraclius*, and sometimes after, it was seen to arm on the *Black-Sea* 40,000 small barks, and appear before *Constantinople* to besiege it, and impose a tribute on the *Greek Cæsars*. But *Vodimer*, taken up with the care of introducing Christianity, and perplexed by the intestine troubles of his family, weakened still more his states by dividing them among his children. They almost all became a prey to the *Tartars*, who, during 200 years, kept *Russia* in subjection. *Ivan Basilides* delivered and aggrandized it; but after his reign civil wars brought it to ruin.

BEFORE *Peter the Great*, *Russia* wanted much of being as powerful, of having as many lands cultivated, as many subjects, as great revenues, as in our days. It possessed nothing in *Finland*, nothing in *Livonia*; and *Livonia* alone is worth more than all *Siberia* was for a long time. The *Cossacks* were not properly subjected; the people of *Asracan* obeyed but indifferently; and the little commerce carried on was scarce attended with any advantage. The *White-Sea*, the *Baltic*, the *Euxine*, that of *Asoph*, and the *Caspian*, were entirely useless to a nation that had not one ship, and even wanted a term in its language to express a fleet. If nothing more was wanting than to be superior to the *Tartars*, and the people of the north, *Russia* enjoyed that advantage; but it was necessary to equal policed nations, and to be some time or other in a condition to surpass several. Such an enterprize appeared impracticable, because it had not one ship on the seas, was absolutely ignorant of military discipline by land, did scarce encourage the most simple manufactures, and even neglected agriculture, the primum mobile of all. Attention and encouragement are great requisites to well-governing.

THIS want of cultivating the necessary arts shews sufficiently that the *Russians* had not an idea of the politer, which become necessary in their turn, when all the rest are had. They might have sent some natives of the country for information among strangers; but the difference of language, manners, and religion were against it; a law also of state and religion, equally sacred and pernicious, forbade the *Russians* to go out of their country, and seemed to condemn them to eternal ignorance. They possessed the largest states of the universe, and every thing was to be done in them. In short, *Peter* was born, and *Russia* was formed.

PETER's family was on the throne since the year 1613. *Russia* before this time had experienced revolutions, which still kept a reformation and arts at a distance. Such is the fate of all human societies. There were never worse troubles in any kingdom. The tyrant *Boris Godunow* had assassinated in 1597, the lawful heir *Demetrius*, and usurped the empire. A young monk assumed the name of *Demetrius*, pretended to be the prince that escaped out of the hands of the assassins, and assisted by the *Poles*, and a great party which tyrants have always against them, expelled the usurper, and usurped himself the crown. His imposture was discovered as soon as he became master, and the people being dissatisfied with him, he was put to death. Three other spurious *Demetrius*'s successively started up. This series of impostures supposed a country over-run with disorder: the less men are civilized, the more easy it is to impose upon them. The *Poles*, who began the revolution, by setting up the first pretended *Demetrius*, were on the point of reigning in *Russia*. The *Swedes* divided the spoil on the side of *Finland*, and pretended also to the throne. The state was threatened with intire ruin.

IN the midst of these calamities, an assembly composed of the principal Boyards, elected for sovereign in 1613, a youth of fifteen years of age. This did not seem to be a sure means of putting an end to the troubles. The name of this youth was *Michael Romanow*; he was grandfather of the czar *Peter*, and son of the archbishop of *Rostow*, surnamed *Philaretus*, and of a nun, related by the mother's side to the former czars. This archbishop was a powerful lord, and was forced by the tyrant *Boris* to become a priest; his wife *Sheremet* was also obliged to take the veil; such was the ancient custom of the western Christian *Latin* tyrants: that of the *Greek* Christians was putting out the eyes. The tyrant *Demetrius* conferred the archbishoprick of *Rostow* on *Philaretus*, and sent him ambassador into *Poland*. The *Poles*, then

The Conclusion of

at war with the *Russians*, imprisoned him, contrary to the law of nations, which indeed all these people were ignorant of. It was during his detention that the young *Romanow*, his son, was elected czar. The father was exchanged for some *Polish* prisoners, and the young czar created him patriarch: in short, he became the real sovereign under the name of his son.

If such a government may appear singular to strangers, what will they think of the czar *Michael Romanow's* marriage? The *Russian* monarchs did not seek out for wives in other states since the year 1490. It seems, that after they were possessed of *Casan*, and *Astracan*, they followed in almost all particulars the *Asiatic* customs, especially that of intermarrying only with their subjects. What still more resembles the customs of ancient *Asia* is, that, to marry a czar, the most beautiful young women of the provinces were brought to court; the great mistress of the court received them into her apartments, lodged them separately, and made them all eat together: the czar saw them, either under a borrowed name, or without disguise. The wedding-day was fixed, though the choice was not yet known; and, on that day, a wedding-garment was presented to her on whom the secret choice had fallen; other cloaths were distributed to the pretenders, who returned home. It was in this manner that *Michael Romanow* married *Eudoxia*, the daughter of a poor gentleman called *Streshnew*. He was cultivating his lands himself, with his domestics, when the chamberlains, sent by the czar with presents, informed him that his daughter was on the throne. The name of this princess is still dear to *Russia*. All this is foreign to our manners, and yet is not less respectable.

It is necessary to say, that before the election of *Romanow*, a considerable party had elected the prince *Ladislaus*, son of *Sigismund III*, king of *Poland*. The neighbouring provinces to *Sweden* had offered the crown to a brother of *Gustavus Adolphus*. Thus *Russia* was in the same situation *Poland* has often been in, where the right of electing a monarch proves generally the source of civil wars. But the *Russians* did not imitate the *Poles*, who make a contract with the king they elect. Though they had experienced the fatal effects of tyranny, they submitted to a young man, without requiring any thing of him.

RUSSIA was never an elective kingdom; but the male line of the ancient sovereigns having failed, and six czars, or pretenders, having perished unfortunately in the late troubles, there was a necessity for electing a monarch. This elec-

election caused new wars, with *Poland* and *Sweden*, which fought for their pretended rights to the throne of *Russia*. Such rights, of governing a nation against its will, never subsist for any long time. The *Poles*, on one side, after pillaging the country as far as *Moscow*, which was the way of conducting military expeditions in those days, concluded a truce of fourteen years: *Poland*, by this truce, remained in possession of the duchy of *Smolensko*, where the *Boristhenes* has its source. The *Swedes*, having made peace also, remained possessed of *Ingria*, and deprived the *Russians* of all communication with the *Baltic*; so that this empire remained more than ever separated from the rest of *Europe*.

MICHAEL ROMANOW reigned quiet after this peace, but made no change in his states that either corrupted or perfected the administration. After his death, which happened in 1645, his son, *Alexis Michaelowitz*, or the son of *Michael*, about sixteen years of age, reigned by hereditary right. He married as his father, and chose the most amiable among the maidens brought to him. His reign was troubled by bloody and furious seditions, by intestine and foreign wars. It was he, however, who first digested a code of laws, though imperfect: he introduced manufactures of linen and silk; he peopled the deserts about the *Volga* and *Kama* with *Lithuanian*, *Polish*, and *Tartar* families, taken in his wars. All prisoners, before his time, were the slaves of those into whose hands they fell; *Alexis* made them husbandmen: he established military discipline in his armies as much as he possibly could. In fine, he was worthy of being the father of *Peter the Great*; but he had not time to perfect any of his undertakings; an untimely death cut him off at the age of forty-six, in the beginning of the year 1677.

AFTER *Alexis*, son of *Michael*, all fell again into confusion. He left, by his first marriage, two princes and six princesses. The eldest, *Fædor*, ascended the throne at the age of fifteen. He was a prince of a weak and sickly constitution; but his merit was uninfluenced by his bodily infirmities. *Alexis*, his father, had him acknowledged for his successor the year before he died. The second son, *Ivan*, or *John*, was still worse used by nature than his brother *Fædor*, being almost deprived of sight and speech, as well as health, and often seized with convulsions. Of the six daughters born of this marriage, the only one famous in *Europe* was the princess *Sophia*, distinguished by the talents of her mind, but unhappily still better known by her evil designs on *Peter the Great*. *Alexis*, by his second marriage with another of his subjects, the daughter of the boyard *Nariskin*, left *Peter* and

and the princess *Nathalia*. *Peter*, born the 10th of *June*, new stile, was but four years old when he lost his father. The children of the second marriage were not beloved, and it was little expected that *Peter* would ever reign.

THE genius of the *Romanow* family was always bent upon policing the state; such was likewise the character of *Fædor*. But the war he was engaged in with the *Turks*, or rather with the *Crim-Tartars*, which continued with an equality of success, did not permit a prince of such an ill state of health to think of accomplishing so great a work. Observing, before his death, that his brother *Ivan*, too much disgraced by nature, was incapable of reigning, he nominated for heir of the *Russia's*, his second brother *Peter*, who was then only ten years old, but gave great hopes of extraordinary abilities. As to his sisters, if the custom of raising subjects to the rank of czarina was favourable to their sex, there was another that leaned hard on them. The daughters of the czars were then seldom married; most of them spent their lives in a monastery. However, *Sophia*, the third of the czar *Alexis's* daughters, by his first marriage, a princess of a wit equally superior and dangerous, having seen that her brother *Fædor* had but a little time to live, did not embrace the party of a convent, but finding herself between her two other brothers, who could not govern, the one by his incapacity, the other by his childhood, conceived the design of putting herself at the head of the empire.

FOEDOR was therefore scarce expired, when having secured in her interest the corps of the *strelitz* by bribes, and promises of an augmentation of pay and presents, she convened at her apartments an assembly of the princesses of the blood, the generals of the army, the boyards, the patriarch, bishops, and even the principal merchants; she represented to them, that the prince *Ivan*, by his right of seniority and merit, ought to have the empire, of which she hoped in secret to hold the reins. At the breaking up of the assembly, her emissaries stirred up every where the soldiery against the family of the *Nariskins*, and principally against the two *Nariskins*, brothers of the young czarina dowager, mother of *Peter* I. The *strelitz* were persuaded that *John*, one of these brothers, had taken the robes of a czar, had placed himself on the throne, and had attempted to strangle the prince *Ivan*; and to this was added the poisoning of the czar *Fædor* by a *Dutch* physician. In short, *Sophia* had put into their hands a list of forty lords, whom she called her enemies, and those of the state, and whom there was a necessity of massacring; and indeed, all were so served that were odious

to the strelitz, or suspected by *Sophia*. Examples of such horrors have been seen in all countries, in the time of troubles and anarchy.

THIS horrible execution ended by proclaiming sovereigns, in *June* 1682, the two princes *Ivan* and *Peter*, associating with them their sister *Sophia*, in quality of co-regent. Such were the steps by which she ascended in effect the throne of *Russia*, without being declared czarina; and such were the first examples *Peter the Great* had before his eyes. *Sophia* enjoyed all the honours of a sovereign; her bust upon the coins, the signature for all expeditions, the first place in the council, and the supreme power in all respects. She was a person of great wit, even made verses in her language, wrote and spoke well; an agreeable figure gave additional charms to so many talents; her ambition alone tarnished them.

SHE procured her brother *Ivan* to be married according to the custom, of which we have seen so many examples. The beauty of a young lady of the name of *Soltikoff* prevailed against the intrigues of all her rivals. In the midst of the solemnity of these espousals, the strelitz fomented a new insurrection on account of some religious disputes. It was quelled, but soon after followed by a more dangerous one, contrived by a *Russian* lord, to revenge himself on *Sophia's* ingratitude, to whose elevation he had contributed. The cause of religion and devotion was the mask of his designs; but, in the main, he did not pretend to less than the empire; and to rid himself of all future apprehensions, he resolved to massacre the two czars, *Sophia*, the other princesses, and all who were attached to the czarish family. The czars and princesses were obliged to retire to the monastery of the *Trinity*, within twelve leagues of *Petersburg*. Besides serving as a convent, it was also a palace and fortress, as *Mount Cassino*, *Corbie*, *Fulda*, *Kempton*, and so many others among the Christians of the Latin communion. The monastery of the *Trinity* belongs to the monks of St. *Basil's* institute; but it is environed with large ditches, and brick ramparts, mounted with a numerous artillery. The czarish family was there secure, rather by the strength than the sanctity of the place. From thence *Sophia* negotiated with the rebel, deceived, inveigled him half way, and procured him to be beheaded, with one of his sons, and thirty-seven strelitz, who accompanied him. His other associates and the strelitz, who had taken up arms for supporting his cause, were pardoned on making a proper submission.

The Conclusion of

AFTER these convulsions the state resumed an exterior tranquillity. *Sophia* had still the principal authority, abandoning *Ivan* to his incapacity, and keeping *Peter* in tutelage. To augment her power, she shared it with the prince *Basil Galitzin*, a person of considerable abilities, whom she made general in chief, administrator of the state, and keeper of the seals. *Peter's* talents, notwithstanding the endeavours of the princess *Sophia* to keep him in a state of ignorance, began daily more and more to shew themselves. When he was about seventeen years of age, he had the courage of being czar in effect, though *Ivan* had still but the name. This was enough to alarm *Sophia*. In conjunction with *Gallitzin*, she engaged anew the chief of the *strelitz* to sacrifice the young czar to their interests; the death of *Peter* was resolved on; the blow was ready to be struck, and *Russia* was on the point of being for ever deprived of the new existence it afterwards received. *Peter*, apprized of their designs, was again obliged to consult his safety in the convent of the *Trinity*, the usual asylum of the court when threatened by the soldiery. There, having called together the boyards of his party, he assembles a militia, confers with the captains of the *strelitz*, and invites to him some *Germans*, who had been long settled at *Moscow*, all attached to his person, because he already favoured strangers. *Sophia* and *Ivan* remain at *Moscow*, and conjure the corps of the *strelitz* to continue faithful to them; but the cause of *Peter*, complaining of an attempt against his person and mother, prevails over that of *Sophia*, and a czar, whose aspect alone was sufficient to banish all affection for him. All the accomplices were punished with a severity to which the country was then as much accustomed as to such base crimes. Prince *Gallitzin*, by the mediation of a relation in the czar *Peter's* interest, obtained his life; but he was stripped of all his wealth, which was immense, and banished on the road of *Archangel*. The princess *Sophia* was confined to a monastery in *Moscow*, after having remained a considerable time: this change was a sufficiently great punishment. From that moment *Peter* reigned. His brother *Ivan* had no other share in the government but seeing his name in the public acts: he led a private life, and died in 1696.

HISTORY will inform the reader of the acts of *Peter I*. They indeed afford such matter of good and solid entertainment, that few are unacquainted with them. Here it will be sufficient to observe, that he was justly surnamed *the Great*, the father and founder of that *Russian* empire which

which makes so glorious a figure at this day, and which will be known, as one of the greatest powers in the world, to latest posterity.

THIS great and good prince, dying in the beginning of ^{Successors} the year 1725, was succeeded by his second consort, the ^{of Peter} empress *Catharine*, a lady whom he had raised to his bed, ^{the Great.} purely from the consideration of her merit. She governed this great empire on the same principles by which it was founded; and, during her whole reign, was respected by her own subjects, and by all the powers of *Europe*, as the worthy successor of so great a monarch. Yet she enjoyed this high dignity but for a very short space, dying in the month of *May* 1727, and leaving the empire to the grandson of her deceased lord. *Russia*, from being governed by a woman, fell under the dominion of a child, who was the emperor *Peter* II. the last heir male of his family, and in the hands of an ambitious statesman, prince *Menzikoff*, the favourite of *Peter*, and no less so of the late czarina *Catharine*.

PRINCE *Menzikoff* was a man of boundless ambition, and at the time of the young emperor's accession; had the whole power of the empire in his hands. He had framed a design of raising his daughter to the rank of empress; and it is not improbable that he might have succeeded in this view, if he had not by an act of insolence incurred the young emperor's displeasure; who, though he was but twelve years old at his accession, yet had so much sense and spirit, that he disgraced and banished this too powerful subject, and confiscated all his estate. He afterwards raised the princes *Dolgorouki* to the highest employments in the empire, and actually espoused the princess *Catharine*, daughter to prince *Alexis*, and sister to the princes *Sergius* and *John*; but, before the marriage was consummated, he was seized with the small-pox, of which he died on the 19th of *January*, 1730.

UPON the death of the emperor *Peter* II. the regular succession in that empire was at a stand. According to the will of the empress *Catherine*, her eldest daughter *Anne Petrowna*, duchess of *Holstein*, ought to have been called to the throne; but she died the year after her mother, and left behind her a son, who was at that time about two years old. The senate and nobility of *Russia*, to avoid so tedious a minority, resolved not to adhere to this will; for which they established this pretence, that it was vacated by the declaration of the late emperor upon his death-bed, who had appointed another successor, though at first they could not agree among themselves whom they should declare this successor to

The Conclusion of

be ; by which it was very manifest, that notwithstanding their assertions, the young emperor in reality made no such declaration.

It has been reported, that some of the principal nobility had thought of changing the government into a republic ; but that, finding this would be impracticable, they framed a new scheme of rule, which was to govern the empire themselves, allowing only the name and ensigns of sovereign authority to one of the imperial family. The next consideration was, who this person should be ; and, after some debate, they cast their eyes upon the princess *Anna Iwanowna*, duchess of *Gourland*, of the imperial line indeed, but out of all the rules of succession. She was the second daughter of the emperor *Ivan*, or *John*, elder brother to *Peter the Great*, and for some time his associate in the empire ; but then she had an elder sister, *Catharine Iwanowna*, who was married to the duke of *Mecklenburg*, to whom, if the succession was to devolve first on the daughters of the elder brother, the imperial crown should have come ; but her husband was engaged in a kind of civil war with his nobility, and therefore it was given out, that for securing the peace and tranquillity of his subjects, the young emperor *Peter II.* had passed her by, and called her younger sister to the succession, which, soon after his death, she was invited to accept.

THE princes *Dolgorouki* and their faction, who took upon them the management of this affair, assigned the new empress a council, framed a constitution for the empire, and limited her authority as they thought proper ; to which regulations she readily consented : but as soon as the czarina was fixed upon the throne, she cancelled all these limitations, and banished the authors of them. She made choice of grave and wise men for her ministers, and gave the command of her armies to very able and experienced generals ; which enabled her to govern with great reputation, and to maintain the credit of her empire with regard to the rest of *Europe*, in as high a degree as any of her predecessors. She afforded the late emperor of *Germany*, *Charles VI.* powerful succours against the house of *Bourbon* ; she seated the late king of *Poland*, elector of *Saxony*, upon the throne of his father, notwithstanding all the arts, and in spite of the arms of *France* ; she made war against the *Turks* with great success, and in the course of the war totally ruined the power of the *Crim-Tartars*. In a word, she made her government as much revered, as, from the power of her extensive dominions, it ought to be, and concluded such alliances with foreign states, as were most proper for maintaining

taining that system of government which she laboured to establish.

SHE brought to her court her niece, the princess *Anne* of *Mecklenburgh*, daughter of her elder sister, and married her to prince *Anthony-Ulric*, of *Brusswie-Bevern*, resolved to call the issue of this marriage to the succession. The princess of *Mecklenburgh* was delivered of a son, on the 12th of *August* 1740, whom the czarina, according to the *Russian* constitution established by *Peter the Great*, named her successor, and directed, that the prince his father, and the grand-duchess his mother, should be his guardians; she likewise appointed a council about the young emperor, whom she thought the most capable of sustaining the weight of affairs, and of preserving things in that condition wherein she intended to leave them; so that there seemed no great reason to doubt the government might be carried on as well as in the former minority; and, flattered with these fair hopes, the empress *Anna Iwanowna* died, in *October* 1740.

THE emperor was immediately owned by the senate and people in his cradle; and the marquis de *La Chetardie*, the *French* minister, made his imperial majesty a long speech upon the occasion, in which he assured him, *Ivan* or *John*, sovereign of all the *Russias*, of the sincere friendship of *Lewis XV.* But, as if professions of *French* friendship were ominous to all princes, it was not long before it appeared, that this government could not subsist in the form in which it stood by the late empress's will.

PETER the Great left behind him a daughter, whose name was *Elizabeth Petrowna*, a lady of distinguished accomplishments, and then about thirty-eight years of age. She had lived at court, during the last reign, in a manner and under circumstances far enough from being suitable to her birth: and the prudence of her behaviour, joined to that magnanimity with which she had supported her misfortunes, had such an influence on all who beheld her, that she had long reigned in the hearts of the people, while others reigned upon the throne. At last, the whole *Russian* nation, princes, nobility, senators, soldiers, and even the populace, testified such an affection for her, that some who had served her father with fidelity, and now enjoyed the rewards of their services, resolved to hazard all for her deliverance, and to risque every thing to recover her just rights. They attempted it, and Providence gave a blessing to the attempt: this revolution happened in a single night. On the 5th of *December*, the princess *Elizabeth* was a kind of prisoner in the imperial palace.

lance, and on the 6th she was seated on the imperial throne, and the tongues of her subjects being set at liberty, saluted empress of all the *Russias*, by the unanimous voice of the people. The deposed emperor, *John II.* was confined at *Riga*, with his father and mother.

THE empress *Elizabeth* was the sooner possessed of the crown of her illustrious ancestors, than she gave the highest marks of those virtues which rendered her worthy of that elevation, and which her former circumstances had concealed. But her conduct appeared in nothing more wise and amiable, than in the care she took for settling the succession, which she knew must be fixed, before she could hope to see her government firmly established. She therefore resolved to send for her nephew, *Charles Peter Ulric*, the young duke of *Holstein*, who was the presumptive heir to the imperial crown, under the original establishment of *Peter the Great*. He was born the tenth of *February*, 1728, and soon after his arrival at *Petersburg*, was declared grand duke of *Russia*, and heir apparent to the empire; in which quality, he was also acknowledged by the Senate, as well as by all the nobility of that great empire, with the utmost cheerfulness possible.

IN 1745 he married the princess *Catharine* of *Anhalt-Zerbst*, by whom he had one son, *Paul Petrowitz*, born in 1754. On the decease of the empress *Elizabeth*, he ascended the throne, on the fifth of *January* 1762, by the title of *Peter III.* but was deposed on the 9th of *July* following, and in a week after died of poison. This prince stands accused of having observed no rules of prudence or moderation either in his public proceedings or private conduct. He had offended the clergy, who are a numerous, powerful, and popular body, by attacking their beads, which *Peter the Great* had attempted to demolish in vain, and what was still worse, by diminishing their revenues, and changing their ecclesiastical discipline and religious rites. He had offended the *Russian* grandees by his warm attachment to the prince of *Holstein* and the *Germans*. He had shocked all orders of the nation by his sudden and precipitate change of the political system which had been warmly pursued in the late war by his predecessor in favour of the house of *Austria*, and by his blind zeal and unbounded affection for the king of *Prussia*, whom he took for his infallible guide in religion, politics, music, war, and every thing else. Besides all this, his private intrigues with one of the nieces of chancellor *Woronzoff*, whom, it is said, he loved as well as he could, gave umbrage to the empress, whom he

— had

had never loved to much purpose; and it was even supposed that he had formed the design of shutting her up in a cloister, and of raising the countess of *Worenzoff* to the dignity of empress. But she found means to elude his designs; and it was she herself, at the head of 15,000 men, that seized the person of *Peter III.* being previously proclaimed sole and reigning empress of *Russia*, and her son, the great duke *Paul*, acknowledged as her lawful heir.

THE czar, her consort, when he first came into *Russia*, was indeed not much disposed to embrace the manners of the people. She, on the other hand, acted quite another part. She studied their language, assiduously complied with their customs in every thing, and expressed upon all occasions a great zeal for the *Greek* church. It was chiefly by her conduct that the emperor met with no opposition at his accession; and having so strong an instance of her power over the minds of the people, this revolution will appear less wonderful than, without considering these circumstances, it would seem. However, as she is a *German* by birth, and was bred a protestant, she cannot be supposed to have any partiality to the *Greek* church, whose doctrines are established in that empire; nor is it reasonable to imagine, that the *Russians* can naturally have more love for her than for her husband, on account of their being both *Germans*. If she was engaged to take this extraordinary step by any ambitious view, it is hardly possible that a revolution so founded can long subsist; and it must be allowed, that she is not altogether free from dangers and apprehensions, witness the conspiracies, though hitherto ineffectual, that have been set on foot to dispossess her.

BUT now, since the base and barbarous murder of the late emperor *John*, (in the castle of *Schlusselfberg*, to which he was removed since her reign) what must we think of the situation of her mind? Can it be at ease, or does she imagine that tranquility can dwell with her upon a throne which she has endeavoured to secure by such horrid measures? She has published a manifesto relative to that unfortunate prince, wherein she describes him from her own personal knowledge, and that of several, who in company with her, paid him a visit while alive, as a most miserable object, stupid, senseless, unable to read, and troubled with a very great impediment in his speech; that her intention in visiting him was to have given him some comfort, by assuring him that his life should be made easy; but that finding him so poor a creature, not only insensible of her intended kindnesses, but even unknowing of those he had about him, she found it

The Conclusion of

impossible to do any thing more for him, than leave him where she had found him, with proper conveniencies; and that from thence an attempt was made to rescue him by a desperate young officer, named *Rafil Mirowitz*, grandson to the first rebel that joined the famous *Mazeppa*; but that the guardians of his person, two officers of the garrison, sooner than deliver him up, agreed to put him to death. This manifesto, published to justify this execrable deed, is almost as unaccountable as the deed itself. It seems to have been drawn on a supposition, that all those for whom it is designed are destitute of both common sense and common humanity; for a very moderate portion of these must render this declaration an object of horror. The accounts of *Ivan's* mental disorder are known by many to be false, and the story of his deliverer (since put to death) is indeed marvellous: but while the voice of nations deplores the fate of the unfortunate *Ivan*, and the tears of humanity flow at the view of that innocent victim, (to guilt and fear) expiring under the blows of two execrable assassins, the defender of this bloody deed dares to make use of the name of Providence and its adorable decrees, and throws a motly mask of religion and politics over a scene of murder. The mind that is truly religious must tremble at this monstrous association.

**Government of
Russia.**

THE czar, *Peter the Great*, was the legislator of his dominions; and though no prince was more absolute than himself, yet it is certain that he aimed at setting some bounds to the power of his successors; and for this reason he established a senate, in which it is thought that he had the government of *France* in view, and that he meant that this should resemble the parliament of *Paris*, which it does in many respects, and in none more than this, that it serves to give a sanction, and the form and authority of laws to acts that spring from the will of the prince. But still the old constitution prevails, and the true government of *Russia* is, what it always was, despotic. In minorities indeed, and in other conjunctures, there seems to be an actual power attributed to the senate, which, to people at a distance, may represent the form of rule in *Russia* as a limited government; but when we come to examine it more closely, we shall perceive so strict a conformity between the will of the prince and the decrees of this assembly, as must sufficiently convince us, that the imperial power is rather strengthened than controuled by their proceedings. As to the several colleges, as they are stiled in *Russia*, or as called by us, boards, to which the various branches of the administration are assigned, though the form

form is *German*, yet the thing is *French*; and *Peter the Great* contrived them after the model of the several councils in *France*. The high-chancellor is generally considered as the prime minister, and the vice-chancellor as his coadjutor.

It will not be amiss to observe here in concluding this *Security of* article, that the northern parts of the *Russian* empire, from the frontiers of the *Swedish* dominions to those of *China* and *Japan*, are guarded in such a manner as to be secure not only from danger, but from apprehensions; having on that side a sea, hitherto impenetrable, and through which, if any passage could be found, it must turn to the benefit, but can never prove of any disadvantage to the subjects of *Russia*, which is a point of great consequence, and is a blessing scarce known to any other country but this. The frontiers of the empire towards *China* are also inaccessible, as consisting of deserts impenetrable by armies, but which yield a tolerable passage for caravans; so that the *Russians* may, in a great measure, always reckon on the friendship of the *Chinese*; and whenever they apply themselves seriously thereto, may make this friendship turn to their advantage. The *Tartars*, inhabiting the countries between *Russia* and *Persia*, are no longer formidable to the *Russians*; on the contrary, they all respect them, and many of them have willingly submitted, and become their vassals. The *Caspian* sea, and the dominions which the *Russians* have on that side, give them a fair opening into *Persia*, which they have already improved so as to gain to themselves a very advantageous trade, and this by degrees may be extended perhaps as far as the *East-Indies*.

C H A P. XI.

Of SWEDEN.

Boundaries, soil, products, &c. of Sweden.

THE kingdom of Sweden is bounded by the *Baltic sea*, the *Sound*, and the *Categate* on the south; by the mountains of *Norway* on the west; by *Danish* or *Norwegian Lapland* on the north; and by *Russia* on the east. The soil, where capable of cultivation, is tolerably fruitful; but, for want of industry, the *Swedes* have not a competent supply of corn, and therefore import many sorts of grain from *Livonia*. Their cattle are small in size, their sheep bear a coarse wool, fit only for cloathing peasants; their horses are of a delicate kind: they have plenty of wild beasts, which are hunted for their flesh, as well as their hides and furs: fowl, both wild and tame, are in great plenty and good in their kind: their lakes are well stored with variety of fine fish: their woods and forests overspread great part of the country, and are for the most part of pines, fir, beech, birch, alder, juniper, and some oak. The air is excessive cold in winter, the mountains being for nine months covered with snow. They have no considerable manufactures, and yet they have a very great trade, and are very strong in shipping; the reason is, the produce of their land, notwithstanding its northern situation and barren soil, is an immense treasure, and makes up for their want of manufactures: this product is not only great, but inexhaustible in its fund, and consists of silver, copper, iron, timber, flax, hemp, pitch, tar, furs, and hides.

Silver mine.

THE silver they have peculiar to themselves, being found in no other place in all these parts of the world, except in *Norway*, and this is the product of one mine only, at a place called *Nola*. The ore in the mine lies 145 fathoms deep, the working of which has continued near 300 years, and yet, as they relate, is unexhausted. The mine itself is very curious, and strangers are often carried down to see it. The revenue of it to the crown is according to the degree of its being worked.

Iron and copper mines.

THEIR mines of iron and copper are very valuable indeed, and are a fund of wealth considerably greater than the mine of silver. They will support Sweden, perhaps, to the end of time; for, as the quantity is inexhaustible, so the advantage of working these mines is very great. Without this, Sweden, which is a poor and barren place, excepting some few vallies and flat countries on the sea-coast, would not be able, on any terms,

terms, to import such great quantities of the manufactures and product of other countries as they now do; but their copper and iron supply them with all things, and the balance is always very much in their favour, which is not to be wondered at, as before the calamitous wars they were engaged in with the *Russians*, which drained them both of men and money, the *Swedish* nation was a formidable power: and they tell us, that *Sweden* only, without including their provinces in *Germany*, furnished *Charles XII.* from the time of his first expedition against the king of *Denmark*, to his death at *Frederickshall*, above 300,000 men for soldiers, and, 227 tons of gold, either in specie, or bills of exchange made good in *Sweden*, or bills at *Hamburg*, when exchange failed from *Sweden*; and this was always made good in copper or iron. If this be true, and that we add to it the dreadful havock and destruction of the mines of copper, and of the iron-works, which the *Russians* made in their several invasions upon them at the end of that war, we need not wonder that the *Swedes* have been since in a low condition, in comparison to what they were, both as to real wealth and trade. The *Russians* carried away 70,000 tons of iron, besides copper; and did an irreparable damage, by destroying the copper mines, which had cost immense sums to bring to perfection; and by cutting down the woods, which were the life and support of the iron works. Notwithstanding all this, and other subsequent disasters, we see the *Swedes*, by an application never enough to be commended, recovering, and their government and gentry contributing to the repair of their mines, and exciting them vigorously to agriculture, and even to manufactures.

THE *Swedes* have two countries distant from their native one, in which they have still some interest; and these are *Finland* and *Pomerania*. In *Finland* they have very few ports ^{Territories out of Sweden.} At left, the *Russians* being possessed of *Elsingvas* and *Wiburg*. At *Abo*, and some other small places remaining to them, they drive a considerable trade in deals, which are very valuable in *England* and *Holland*, being of a good durable and uncommon kind of yellow fir. They also export the best masts for ships of any place, except *Wiburg*, in all those seas. The inland country is famed for good horses, and the *Finlander* horse were once esteemed the best cavalry in all *Germany*. In *Pomerania*, the *Swedes* have still the port of *Stralsund*, which is a very considerable, rich, trading city, and a good port; and the isle of *Rugen* is a large, fruitful, and well cultivated island; and from hence *Sweden* itself, in times of scarcity, is often supplied with corn. *Pomerania* is of note for

for the best oak timber and plank, and the *Swedes* have the greatest part of theirs from *Helze*, with which they build their ships of war at *Carelskroon*.

Navigation of the
Swedes.

THE *Swedish* navigation was very inconsiderable, till queen *Christina*, at the conclusion of the war in 1664, obtained from *Denmark* a freedom for all ships and merchandize, belonging to the *Swedish* subjects, in their passage through the *Sound*; and established in her own dominions that difference of custom which still subsists between *Swedish* and foreign ships, and is in the proportion of four, five, six, the first being called whole-free, the second half-free, and the last un-free: so that, where a whole-free *Swedish* ship pays 400 crowns, a half-free one pays 500, and a foreign vessel 600. But great as this advantage was, it had but little effect, till the *English* act of navigation bridled the *Hollanders*, and opened the intercourse between *England* and *Sweden*. Since that time their commerce has been much augmented, as well as ours, that way, and goods are transported by both, or either party, according to the various conjunctures of affairs. When *Sweden* has been engaged in a war, the *English* ships have had the whole employ; but, in time of peace, the advantage is so great on the *Swedish* side, and merchants so much encouraged, by freedom in customs, to employ their own ships, that *English* bottoms cannot be used in that trade, but only when *Sweden* is unprovided with a number of ships sufficient for the transportation of their own commodities.

History
and constitution of
Sweden.

THE *Goths*, the ancient inhabitants of this country, have had the reputation of subduing all the southern nations in *Europe*; but it is not to be supposed that this nation singly could effect those mighty conquests: they were, no doubt, joined by the *Normans*, *Danes*, *Saxons*, *Vandals*, and other people, and by many adventurers in *Germany* and other countries through which they passed, in hopes of sharing the plunder of the world with them, and possessing warmer climates. It appears that the countries of *Scandinavia*, which were *Sweden*, *Denmark*, and *Norway*, were sometimes under the dominion of one prince, and at other times had each of them their respective sovereigns. In the year 1523, *Sweden* being subject to *Denmark*, *Gustavus Erickson*, a *Swedish* nobleman, assembled the miners of *Dalecarlia*, with whom he had lived under ground for some time, and joining other advocates of liberty, raised such a force, that he expelled the *Danes* out of this kingdom; in gratitude for which service, the *Swedes* first elected him their king, and afterwards made the crown hereditary in his family.

BUT

BUT we need not go higher in the *Swedish* history than *Gustavus Adolphus*, who ascended the throne of *Sweden* in 1611. He was a prince of great abilities, which manifested themselves so clearly in his youth, that the states thought fit to give him the intire administration of affairs soon after his accession to the crown, though he was then but eighteen. He found his kingdom the lowest and weakest, as he left it the greatest and most powerful in the north. He recovered from the *Danes* the fortresses they had taken from the *Swedes*. Then turning his arms against the *Russians*, he took from them great part of *Livonia*, *Ingermania*, and the city of *Hexholm*, the possession of which he secured by a treaty concluded under the mediation of *Great Britain*. The long war he maintained against the *Poles* proved very advantageous to *Sweden*, and procured for her the remaining part of *Livonia*, and the important city of *Riga*. He next declared himself the protector of the Protestants in *Germany* against the house of *Austria*. the power of which was then formidable to all *Europe*, and which nevertheless he broke in a short space of time, and with a very small force, having soon made himself master of *Stetin*, and a great part of *Pomerania*, and defeated the imperialists in the glorious battle of *Leipsic*, on the 7th of September, 1631. In the battle of *Lutzen*, on the 26th of November, 1632, the *Swedish* foot having routed the imperialists, and seized their cannon, the king thinking the horse did not advance fast enough to the pursuit, put himself before them in passing a small river, on the other side of which he was found dead, having his arm broke by one musket shot, and another entering his back, had passed through his body. There were great suspicions of treachery in this case. *Puffendorf* fixes it expressly upon the duke of *Saxe-Weimburgh*. However it was, the king's death was soon known; which instead of abating, heightened the courage of the *Swedes* into fury, so that when the imperialists were rallied, they again attacked and again defeated them, which circumstance does the highest honour to the *Swedish* troops. Thus fell this great conqueror in the arms of victory.

As he had extended the dominions, and raised the reputation of *Sweden* abroad, so he likewise acted the part of a legislator at home, and reduced the constitution of his country into order, which he would certainly have improved if he had lived to return into his own dominions. Sometimes a single genius changes intirely the condition and circumstances of a whole nation, as his indeed did the *Swedes*, and that of *Peter the Great* the *Russians*. In virtue of his regulations, the crown,

The Conclusion of

crown, which was before intailed only on the male line, descended to his daughter *Christina*, a child of six years old; which minority, though it seemed to threaten ruin, proved in reality the great security of *Sweden*; for the king of *Denmark* and the elector of *Brandenburg* remained firm to the engagements into which they had entered with *Gustavus*, and the rest of the allies became less apprehensive of the power of that crown, than they had been in the life-time of that king.

- THE chancellor *Axel Oxenstiern*, to whom the whole management of affairs in *Germany* was committed, made so right an use of these favourable circumstances, and managed all things so wisely and so well, that at the close of the war, which lasted several years, the *Swedes* were possessed of 100 fortified places, and had an army on foot of upwards of 100,000 men, which enabled them so effectually to maintain their pretensions, that on the conclusion of the peace of *Munster*, they had the country of *Pomerania*, with the duchies of *Bremen* and *Verden*, the city of *Wisnar*, a vote in the diets of the empire and circle of *Lower Saxony*; together with a million of crowns in ready money, as a satisfaction for their services.

As the war was glorious to the arms, so the peace was no less honourable to the councils of *Sweden*; and the young queen *Christina* was esteemed and courted by all the powers of *Europe*. She had a great deal of learning, and a very extensive capacity; but with these great qualities, there was a mixture of many defects. Her subjects would willingly have seen her married to her cousin prince *Charles Gustavus*; to which, however, neither she nor that prince were inclined, and therefore she very wisely chose to content all parties, by resigning to him the crown, which she did in an assembly of the states, held at *Upsal* in *May*, 1654, reserving only a pension to herself for the support of her dignity; and having embraced the Roman Catholic religion, she retired to *Rome*, where she lived with great magnificence to the time of her decease, which happened *April 9*, 1689.

CHARLES Gustavus, or *Charles X.* of *Sweden*, who ascended the throne by the abdication of queen *Christina*, was son of *John Casimir*, prince palatine of the *Rhine*, and *Catharine* of *Sweden*, daughter of *Charles IX.* and sister to *Gustavus Adolphus*. He conquered the greater part of *Poland* in three months time, to revenge the affront done him in protesting against his admission to the crown; but the powerful confederacy of the emperor, *Russia*, *Holland*, and *Denmark* against him, obliged him to relinquish his conquests on that side: he humbled *Denmark*, and his courage and virtues en-

abled him to make so great a figure, as not only to maintain the credit which the crown of *Sweden* had acquired, but to carry it even higher than it had risen under his glorious predecessor, the famous *Gustavus Adolphus*; but then it was built on the foundation he had laid. A fever cut short his days on the thirteenth of *February*, 1660, whilst he was still engaged in a war against some of the greatest powers in *Europe*.

CHARLES XI. his son and successor, was but five years old when he died. Things were kept in good order during his minority, the treaty of *Oliva* being then concluded, whereby the king of *Poland* renounced his claim to the crown of *Sweden*, and the republic all her rights to *Livonia*; a peace also was made at the same time with *Denmark*. This prince inquired after and corrected all abuses that had crept into the civil government, whilst former kings of *Sweden*, trusting all things to their ministers, minded nothing but war; and looked particularly into law-suits, sitting himself in the supreme court, and dispatching there more causes in seven years than before had been decided in twenty. By this means he gained the love of his subjects to such a degree, that the states of the kingdom consented, at his request, to take away a great part of the power which till then the senate had enjoyed; and made afterwards such farther alterations in the government, as rendered the king as absolute as any monarch in *Europe*. But such was his conduct, that the people being satisfied whatever grants or concessions they made were all for their own service, they thought they could never do too much for him; and indeed his reign is the strongest proof, that the surest way for a prince to make his will the law, is to govern by law. Thus, by a steady and prudent management, he supported his own power at home, and maintained the credit of the crown of *Sweden* abroad to the time of his decease, which happened on the fifth of *April*, 1697, aged forty-two.

His only surviving son and successor, *Charles XII.* was declared major by the states before he reached sixteen, notwithstanding the administration of the government was appointed to be continued in the hands of the dowager of *Charles X.* assisted by five senators till her grandson came to the age of eighteen. The general peace of *Ryswick* was concluded under his mediation in half a year after the declared term of his majority. His neighbour, however, taking advantage of his youth, formed a confederacy for attacking him on all sides, and this without the least provocation. The confederates were *Frederick IV.* king of *Denmark*, *Augustus II.* king of *Poland*, and the czar *Peter the Great*, all effected

as wise princes as any of their times; but influenced in it by their ambition, and the prospect they had of dividing amongst themselves the acquisitions of Sweden. Charles penetrated this scheme, landed an army in Zealand, and besieged Copenhagen, reducing in a very short time the king of Denmark so low, that he was constrained to make peace and desert the confederacy by a treaty signed at Travendahl August 8, 1700. The very same year he relieved Narva that was besieged by the czar, and obtained on the 20th of November the most compleat victory with the greatest inequality of forces that is recorded in modern history. He turned his victorious arms next against the Poles, forced them to depose king Augustus, and make choice of a new king, which they did the 5th of May, 1704, in the person of Stanislaus Leszinski, palatine of Posnania. He pushed his resentment still farther, by following Augustus into his hereditary dominions of Saxony, where he exhausted the country by excessive contributions, and imposed very hard conditions on that monarch himself, by the famous treaty which was concluded at Altranstadt, a village within two miles of Leipsick. We may truly affirm the year 1708 was that in which the glory of Sweden rose to its utmost height. Charles had then the balance of Europe in his hands, and might have prescribed terms to all its powers, from the critical situation of his own affairs and theirs; but his boundless ambition threw him very soon into a different condition. Desirous of completing his plan, towards which there wanted but one stroke, he marched through the Ukraine into Russia, resolved to drive the czar out of his territories, as he had forced the Dane to save his capital by a peace, and the Poles to depose a king who was his enemy. This produced the famous battle of Pultowa, which cost the Swedes 30,000 men, and obliged the king to take shelter in Turkey with a handful of people. This fatal engagement happened on the 27th of June, 1709, and made an open for his enemies to execute the projects they had formed ten years before, an opportunity which none of them let slip. The king of Denmark once more declared war, and made a descent upon Schonen; the king of Poland entered again into possession of his dominions; the Russians repossessed themselves of the most valuable part of the Swedish territories on the Baltic; and though at first the confederates kept some measures in Germany, yet at last they attacked and divided the Swedish territories there: the Prussians got the better part of Pomerania, and Bremen and Verden falling into the hands of the Danes, they disposed of them to the elector of Hanover.

HIS *Swedish* majesty returned into his dominions in November 1714, and very soon made his enemies sensible of his weakness. He found his territories exhausted, his own and his predecessors conquests lost, and scarce any friend or ally left; yet he maintained his absolute power over his own subjects, and prosecuted the war with inflexible resolution. He persisted in his former notions of destroying or deposing every prince with whom he was displeased. He meditated a descent upon *Zealand*, with a view once more to besiege *Copenhagen*, in which he failed; he engaged in some designs for disturbing the peace of *Great-Britain*, which were disconcerted; his last attempt was an invasion upon *Norway*, where he was shot before *Frederickshal*, on the 1st of *December*, 1718, dying as he lived, ill treated, but unconquered.

UPON his demise the states of *Sweden* declared his younger sister the princess *Ulrica Eleonora* queen, and her husband, the hereditary prince of *Hesse-Cassel*, generalissimo; for the war still continued. In 1720 that prince, having embraced the *Lutheran* religion, was raised to the throne of *Sweden*; and soon after peace was made with all the powers with whom *Sweden* had so long contended. By these treaties the *Swedes* recovered part of *Pomerania*, and the town of *Wismar*; but the king of *Prussia* kept the duchy of *Stetin*; the duchies of *Bremen* and *Verden* were left to *Hanover*, and the czar kept in general all his conquests.

In consequence of these steps, the face of affairs of *Sweden* has been intirely changed, and from being one of the most absolute, it became the most limited crown in *Europe*, the senate having recovered their ancient privileges, and the states having resumed and even extended their powers; so that the king does nothing of consequence without their approbation. The present constitution of the government consists of four estates with the king at their head: 1. The nobility and gentry. 2. The clergy. 3. The burgeses, and 4. The peasants. With the nobility and representatives of the gentry, the colonels, lieutenant-colonels, majors, and captains of every regiment sit and vote. The clergy elect one from every rural deanery, consisting each of ten parishes, which, with the bishops and superintendants amounting to about 200, represent that body. The magistrates and council of every corporation elect the burghers to represent them, of which there are four for *Stockholm*, and two for every town, amounting to about 150. The peasants chuse one of their own number, and not a gentleman, to represent them out of every district, amounting to about 250. All these generally meet at *Stockholm*, and, after the state of affairs has been

represented to them from the throne, they separate and sit in four several chambers or houses; in each whereof the votes of the majority conclude the rest; but every chamber negative in the passing any law. The senate, without whom the king can determine nothing, are reduced to fourteen, and are elected in the following manner; twenty-four of the nobility or upper house, twelve of the clergy, and twelve burgesses, chuse three persons, on a vacancy, and present them to the king, who appoints one of them to supply the vacancy; but two of a family cannot be of the senate at the same time, and the peasants have no vote in the election of a senator. When the king is absent or sick, the executive power is lodged in the senate, and the king has no more than the casting vote when present; but they are accountable to the diet for their administration. Every one of the superior courts of justice has a senator for its president; and there are councils or boards established to manage the public revenues, as a war-office, commissioners of the admiralty, others for the mines, for commerce, and every other branch of business. Law-suits concerning the titles of estates are but of short continuance, all sales and alienations of lands being registered, as well as the incumbrances on them. People are allowed to plead their own causes if they think fit; and in so little reputation is the profession of the law in Sweden, that no gentleman will undertake it. Criminals for small thefts are condemned to labour in the public works, fortifications, buildings, and highways; and, what is peculiar to this country, they have courts of honour erected, where if any gentleman has received an affront, he may have satisfaction awarded him. There has been no instance of the punishment of popish priests here by castration, since it passed into a law.

THE prince of *Hesse*, who we have seen, was raised to the throne of *Sweden*, was not able to defend the kingdom against the *Russians*, who in 1741 invaded *Sweden*, plundered the country, and destroyed, as before mentioned, their copper and iron-works. There were some hopes that things would have gone better for *Sweden* after the great revolution in *Russia*, which placed the empress *Elizabeth* upon the throne; but after various negotiations, the war broke out again with greater heat than ever; and the *Swedes*, who had so often in former times beat the *Russians*, were now beaten by them over and over, the best part of their army made prisoners, and all the country of *Finland* lost, which reduced them to the hard necessity of making peace upon the best terms they could obtain.

IN the beginning of this war, *Ulrica Eleonora* the queen of *Sweden* dying without issue, the *Swedes* elected the duke of *Holstein-Gottorp*, son of the elder sister of *Charles XII.* to succeed to that crown after the death of the late king; but the duke rendering himself incapable of the crown of *Sweden*, by accepting the reversion of the *Russian* empire, the *Swedes* made choice of *Adolphus Frederick*, the duke of *Holstein-Eutin*, bishop of *Lubeck*, who is now upon the throne.

THE *Swedes* in support of their allies in the late war made a very indifferent figure; but this may be attributed to a division among themselves, the court being secretly attached to the king of *Prussia*, to whose third sister *Louisa Ulrica*, the king of *Sweden* is married.

THE *Swedes* are a race of men as hardy, patient, and robust, as any in *Europe*; and preserve in full vigour their abilities both in body and mind to a very advanced age. They have been always very justly esteemed a martial people, and though their force is much reduced, yet the troops they have are as good as ever. They profess the *Lutheran* doctrine, which is not only the faith by law established, but the only one tolerated among them. The nobility, gentry, and better sort of people, have all a tincture of learning, and very few have more; they have always been esteemed loyal to their princes, and have generally shewn themselves hearty friends to liberty, though they have been sometimes mistaken about it, and yet have persisted obstinately in their mistakes. As to the vices of the *Swedes*, they are at least as conspicuous as their virtues; they have a fickleness in their tempers, equally fatal to them in the pursuit of politics or learning; they have a great proportion of vanity, which displays itself particularly in furniture and equipage; for as to those expenses that make no show, these people are by nature little addicted to them. But the vice most predominant among them is envy, directed more especially against strangers, who if they thrive in trade, at court, or in the army, fill the people with an unaccountable malice and displeasure. And the same bad turn they are apt to take, even against their own countrymen, more especially if they spring from a low beginning, or rise at too quick a rate. They are not much inclined to manufactures, nor have they any true genius for trade, though they have good ships and skilful seamen.

C H A P. XII.

Of Denmark.

Division, boundaries, extent of the kingdom. THE kingdom of Denmark, one of the most ancient in Europe, is divided into two parts by the Baltic-Sea; namely, the peninsula annexed to the continent of Germany, and the islands. The former, which contains the duchy of Holstein, South-Jutland, or Sleswic, and North-Jutland, is bounded on the west and north by the German ocean; on the east, by that part of the sea called Categate, and the Middlefort-Sound; and, on the south, by the river Elbe. Its greatest length, from south to north, is about 224 miles; but its breadth, not including the islands, is not above 74 miles; and, in some places, much narrower. The islands, which make up the other part of this kingdom, are Zeeland, Funen, Langeland, Laland, Falster, and some others of less note.

Air, soil, commodities, trade, navigation, &c.

THE air, though very cold in Denmark, is not so sharp as in some places of Germany, though situated much more to the south; the vapours of the sea surrounding it, melting and dissolving the vitreous particles, carried by the wind from northern countries, before they arrive here. The soil, tho' in most places barren and mountainous, has good pastures, which feed vast herds of kine, and an excellent race of horses; but the country in general produces but little corn. It has no rivers navigable for vessels of any considerable burthen. There are lakes, which afford good quantity of fish; and the forests are abundantly stocked with venison of all sorts, and wild-fowl in great plenty. Its commodities for exportation are very few; cattle is the chief, which they sell to the Netherlands; but as for manufactures, they have so few as not to deserve notice.

• COPENHAGEN, in the island of Zeeland, is the capital of the kingdom, and is so called from its safe and commodious harbour, the name signifying "The Merchant's port;" and, indeed, it may justly be reckoned, in all respects, one of the best in the whole world. The chief trade of Denmark is carried on here, though there is some at Elsinour. But the trade of either of these cities is small, in comparison of that on the rest of the Baltic. Goods which sell best in Denmark, are salt, chiefly that of Spain and Portugal, rather than of France; but the wines and brandies of France are the most esteemed. Great quantities of paper are also

imported; gold and silver stuffs; silk and woollen stuffs, chiefly those of *Holland*; with spices and drugs. Tallow, hemp, cod, stock-fish, wheat and rye, are the chief commodities they export from *Zealand*.

THIS country enjoys the singular advantage of a sea-coast for the encouragement of navigation, and their king by that means has a tolerable good fleet; yet they have only the port of *Copenhagen* that is considerable; and some have asserted, that they scarce ever loaded one ship with their own productions and manufactures, to any part of the world. At present, indeed, in imitation of many other powers of *Europe*, they seem to give more than ordinary attention to the affairs of commerce and navigation, as well in the *East-Indies* as in *Europe*; and their merchants begin to increase, not only at *Copenhagen*, but at *Altena*, near *Hamburg*, who, indeed, are not, properly speaking, to be called merchants of *Denmark*, though many of them are *Danes*. They are admirably situated for the fisheries, great and small; that is, for the herring-fishery, and for the *North-Sea* cod-fishing, which is on their own coast; and for the whale fishery in *Greenland*; but they do not seem to exert themselves in any but the whale fishery, and that to no great degree; as, on the contrary, they buy their herrings, train-oil, and whale-bone of the *Dutch*; so indolent have they been till lately, and so averse to trade, that, though the best harponiers, and the best steersmen, and most skilled, in the whale-fishing, are found among the subjects of the king of *Denmark*, yet they generally go to *Greenland* in the service of the *Dutch*, the *Bremers*, or the *Hamburgers*.

By the means of *Norway*, now subject to the crown of *Denmark*, they supply *Great-Britain*, *Holland*, *France*, and *Spain*, with so great a quantity of fir-timber, deals, &c. that they load thereby upwards of 2000 ships a year, and return seven-eighths, at least, of the value in ready money. And some have complained in *England* of this timber trade being very detrimental to us; because we should rather encourage our own navigation, by building large bulky ships, such as are used by the *Danes* and *Swedes*, in order to import our own timber from *New-England*, *Nova-Scotia*, and *Newfoundland*.

In the history of these northern countries, mention being frequently made of the *Baltic*, we shall here, with some propriety, give an account of it, and the origin and nature of the toll paid at the Sound.

THE *Baltic* is an inland, or *Mediterranean-Sea*, so called from an ancient *High-Dutch* word, *Belt*, signifying a strait,

or narrow space; so that the *Baltic-Sea* is no more than the *Belt-Sea*, or *Narrow-Sea*. The opening of this sea into the ocean is called by the *Dutch* and us, the *North-Sea*, ~~as~~ the farther and inmost parts are called the *East-Seas*. The part called the *North Sea*, being the entrance of the *Baltic*, lies between the *Skaw*, or *Schagb*, on the south, and the *Naze* of *Norway* on the north. About 200 miles from the *Naze* east, and in the middle of the channel of this *North-Sea*, stand the islands of *Denmark*, ten in number, and in a kind of cluster, as if they were thrust together by the stream in the very entrance of the *Baltic Sea*. They block up indeed the passages, so as to leave no way into or out of the *Baltic*, but through some of the channels between them; the principal of which is called the *Sound*, passing between the island of *Zeeland* and the country of *Schonen* in *Sweden*.

THE loss of *Schonen*, though considerable to the *Danes*, in regard to the largeness and fruitfulness of the province, was yet more so, in respect to the dominion of this great passage. For, though the *Danes*, by the treaty of peace, have expressly retained their title to it, and receive toll from all ships that pass, except those of the *Swedes*, yet they do not esteem the security of that title so firm as they could wish; for, not being masters of the land on both sides, they may have the right, but not the power, to assert it upon occasion; and seem only to enjoy it according to their good behaviour; their stronger neighbours, the *Swedes*, being able to make use of the first opportunity given them to their prejudice.

As to the original and nature of this toll, it is said to have been, at first, laid by the consent of the traders into the *Baltic*, who were willing to allow a small matter for each ship that passed, towards maintaining of lights on certain places of that coast, for the better direction of sailors in dark nights. Hereupon this passage of the *Sound* became the most used; that other of the *Great-Belt* being in a little time quite neglected, as well because of the great conveniency of those lights to ships passing in and out of the *East-Sea*, as because of an agreement made, that no ship should pass the other way, that all might pay their shares; it being unreasonable, that such ships should have the advantage of those lights in dark or stormy winter nights, who avoided paying towards maintaining those fires, by passing another way in good weather.

BESIDES, if this manner of avoiding the payment had been allowed, the revenue would have been so insignificant, considering the small sum each ship was to pay, that the lights could not have been maintained by it; and the

Danes were not willing to be at the charge, solely for the use of their own trading ships, because they were masters of so few as made it not worth their while; the *Lubeckers*, *Dantzickers*, and merchants of other hanse-towns, being the greatest traders at that time in the northern parts of *Europe*, by which they arrived to a great height of power and riches; but there being no fixed rule or treaty to be governed by, with regard to the different bulk of the ships belonging to so many different nations, the *Danes* began, in process of time, to grow arbitrary, and exacted smaller or greater sums, according to the strength or weakness of those they had to deal with, or according to their friendship or discontent with those princes or states to whom the several ships belonged: therefore, the emperor *Charles V.* to ascertain this toll, concluded a treaty with the king of *Denmark*, which was signed at *Spire* upon the *Rhine*, and was in behalf of his subjects of the *Netherlands*, who had a great traffic in the *Baltic*, and agreed, that, as a toll-custom in the *Sound*, every ship of 200 tons, and under, should pay two rose-nobles at its entrance into, or return from the *Baltic*; and every ship above 200 tons, three rose-nobles. A rose-noble is worth about 18 s. sterling.

THIS agreement remained in force till such time as the United Provinces shook off the *Spanish* yoke; and then the *Danes*, taking an advantage of those wars, raised their toll to an extravagant rate, the troublesome times not affording the *Dutch* leisure to redress such a mischief. However, about the year 1600, they joined themselves with the city of *Lubec*, in opposition to such an extravagant toll as was taken from both of them; and from thenceforth the *Dutch* paid more or less, as fortune was favourable or adverse to them; but generally low. In 1647, the first treaty was made between *Denmark* and the United Provinces, as sovereigns for this toll; and they were obliged to pay a certain sum for each ship. This was to continue forty years; after which, if in the mean time no new treaty were made, that of *Spire* was to be in force. This treaty of 1647, expired in 1687, and the *Danes* agreed to make an interim treaty, till such time as the many differences between them and the *Hollanders*, in this and other matters, could be adjusted at leisure, and concluded by a more lasting and solemn one. This interim-treaty, which was but four years, expired in 1691; so that no new treaty being made and completed during that term, the ancient treaty of *Spire* remains in force, and no other.

THE treaties of the *English* with *Denmark* are grounded on those between the *Dutch* and that kingdom, and have ac-

ference to them, with a covenant, that we shall be treated as a nation in the strictest friendship with the *Danes*. The *French* have an advantage over other nations in passing the *Sound*, that their goods are not inspected; nor need they, if they will, pay the customs till three months after, on the master's declaration and bill of lading.

FROM this short history, it appears how slightly grounded the king of *Denmark's* title is to this right; which, from an easy contribution the merchants chose to pay for their own convenience, and whereof the king of *Denmark* was only treasurer or trustee, to see it fairly laid out for the common use, is grown to be a heavy imposition upon trade, as well as a kind of servile acknowledgment of his sovereignty of those seas; and is purely owing to his taking an advantage of the difficulties of the *Hollanders* during their wars with *Spain*, and the connivance of king *James I.* in prejudice of the *English*, he favouring the *Danes* upon account of his marriage to a daughter of that crown; and upon these two examples, all the lesser states were forced to submit.

NOR is it conceivable how it could be otherwise brought about, since it is very well known, that the passage of the *Sound* is not the only one into the *Baltic*, there being two others, called the *Greater* and the *Lesser-Belt*: the former is so commodious and large, that, during the wars between the *Danes* and the *Swedes*, the whole *Dutch* fleet chose to pass through it, and continued in it for four or five months together; and the *Danish* strength at sea never appeared yet so formidable, as to oblige the *English* and *Dutch* to chuse which passage it pleased. Beside the breadth of the *Sound*, in the narrowest part, is four *English* miles over, and every where of a sufficient depth; so that the king of *Denmark's* castles could not command the channel, when he was master of both sides, much less now he has but one. It is plain, therefore, this pretended sovereignty is very precarious, being partly founded upon a breach of trust, as well as on the carelessness of some princes concerned in it, to the great injury of trade.

THIS toll affords the king yearly a considerable profit, tho' much less than formerly. About the year 1640, it produced 240,000 rixdollars *per annum*; but, since 1645, it has not yielded above 80,000; and, in 1691, it did not extend to full 70,000.

History
and constitution
of
Denmark.

THE first inhabitants of *Scandinavia*, comprehending *Denmark*, *Norway*, and *Sweden*, descended from the *Scythians*, who had no fixed habitations. When they first settled in towns is uncertain. The *Cimbri*, a German nation, next possessed them.

themselves of *Jutland*, which from thence obtained the name of the *Cimbrian Chersonese*. The *Teutones*, another tribe of *Germans*, reduced *Zeeland*, *Funen*, and the rest of the *Danish* islands. The *Jutes* and *Angles* succeeded the *Cimbri* in the *Chersonese*, and from the *Jutes* this peninsula obtained the name of *Jutland*. In the fourth century, we find the inhabitants of these countries, and the north-west of *Germany*, called *Saxons*, a people very terrible to the *Roman* provinces of *Gaul* and *Britain*. They invaded and plundered the sea-coasts, and obliged the *Romans* to station their forces on these coasts, which were commanded by an officer styled, *Comes litoris Saxonici*; but the *Saxons* were not able to fix themselves in *Britain* till the decline of the *Roman* empire; when *Vortigern*, king of *South-Britain*, invited them over about the year 450, to defend his country against the *Picts* and *Scotts*. After they had repulsed those northern invaders, they quarrelled with the *Britons* who called them in, and at length made themselves entire masters of *South Britain*.

SAXONY, of which *Denmark* was then deemed a part, was at that time divided among several petty sovereigns and states, who were all united under *Gestrius*, their first king, about the year 797. The *Danes* and *Normans*, or *Norwegians*, invaded and harassed the coasts of *Gaul* and *Britain* in the eighth century, and continued their incursions till the year 1012; when *Svoin*, king of *Denmark*, made an entire conquest of *England*, and left it to his son *Canute*, who was king of *England*, *Denmark*, *Norway*, and *Swæath*, in the year 1020. The *Danes* and *Normans* also invaded *France*, entered the rivers *Seine* and *Loire* in their boats, burnt and plundered the country to the gates of *Paris*, about the same time they had reduced *England*; and the *French* were, at length, obliged to yield up *Normandy* and *Brittany* to *Rollo*, the *Norman* general, to preserve the rest of the kingdom.

THE kingdoms of *Denmark*, *Sweden*, and *Norway*, were after this governed by distinct sovereigns; but *Denmark* and *Norway* became united again by the marriage of *Aquin* king of *Norway* with *Margaret*, daughter and heiress of *Waldemar* king of *Denmark* in 1376. *Margaret* II. queen of *Denmark* and *Norway*, subdued *Sweden* about the year 1390, and *Sweden* was subject to *Denmark* till *Gustavus Erickson* rescued his country from their dominion in 1525. *Christiern* II. was then upon the throne of *Denmark*, but having drawn upon himself the contempt and hatred of the *Danes*, as well as of the *Swedes*, on account of his suffering himself to be governed by his concubine, he was at length deposed, his uncle *Frederic*,

deric, duke of *Holstein*, being elected and advanced to the throne of *Denmark* in his stead.

THIS prince, by confirming the great privileges of the nobility and clergy, maintained himself in possession of the kingdom to the time of his death, which happened after a reign of ten years, and left the crown to his son *Christiern III.* in whose time the Reformation took place, and the *Lutheran* religion was established by law in this country. *Frederic II.* succeeded his father in 1558, and was engaged in a long war with *Sweden*, which ended however in 1570, by a peace concluded under the mediation of the emperor and the kings of *France* and *Poland*; he died in 1588, when his son *Christiern IV.* ascended the throne. This monarch governed much longer than any of his predecessors, and in times full of calamity and trouble. *Frederic III.* his successor, was engaged by the *Dutch* to break with the *Swedes* in 1657, which had like to have proved fatal to him; for *Charles Gustavus* of *Sweden* laid siege to *Copenhagen*, and, had it not been for the powerful interposition of the *Dutch*, would, very probably, have taken the city, which he reduced to great extremities. At this juncture, however, it was, that the king, who, notwithstanding his misfortunes, was certainly as wise and brave a prince as any of his time, found means to change the constitution of *Denmark*, and, from one of the most limited and precarious, made it the most absolute sovereignty in *Europe*. According to their old form of government, the whole power of the nation was lodged in the gentry or nobility, for between these there was in those times no distinction. Every gentleman was a kind of prince in his own estate, and the farmers and countrymen were very little better than slaves. They sent, however, their representatives to the general diet, where they had scarce any thing more to do than to give their consent to taxes, by which they were oppressed to such a degree, that they might be justly esteemed the most wretched people upon earth. The nobility formed a distinct body in the states of the kingdom; and without their advice, the king could do nothing of importance; so, that in time of peace, he was very little better than president of the council, and in time of war no more than general of the army. The succession of the crown too was very precarious; for, though the son succeeded the father, yet it was by the consent of the nobility; so that the monarchy was, strictly speaking, elective, though in appearance hereditary. It is not at all wonderful that a king should be extremely uneasy in such circumstances, or that he should desire to fix himself and his family in an easier situation; but it is truly amazing

amazing, that, after losing a part of his dominions, and under circumstances of the greatest distress, a king should be able to do this without any foreign force, without bloodshed, and in less than a week's time; which, however, was what this prince projected, and happily achieved by the interposition of the commons, whose condition could not be worse under the government of a single person, than under such a variety of tyrants. The king governed after this with great wisdom and prudence ten years, and died universally beloved by his subjects, whose affections he gained by many acts of liberality, and by taking care that justice should be duly and speedily administered.

His son *Christiern V.* succeeded in 1670, and having put his affairs into very good order, and made several powerful alliances, he resolved to lay hold of this opportunity to recover part of what his predecessors had lost to the *Swedes*; but, that he might be in a better condition to do this, he resolved to make himself master, first, of the person of the duke of *Holstein*, in which he succeeded, but with very little advantage to his reputation; for the duke, suspecting nothing, in 1675, came to *Rensbourg* to visit him, and was there seized and put under a guard, till such time as he consented to relinquish the advantages he had gained by the treaty of *Roschild*; after which, the king made himself master of *Tonningen*, the strongest place in his dominions, and pursuing his advantage reduced likewise *Wisnar*. He had also some success in the beginning of the next year, but his good fortune did not continue long; for, being defeated by the *Swedes*, in the famous battle of *Lunden*, he was from that time never able to do much against them by land, though by sea he was fortunate; but at last made peace with that crown upon equal terms. He afterwards employed his forces against the city of *Hamburgh*, upon which the kings of *Denmark* always had pretensions, which, twice in his reign, he had made turn to good account. In the year 1694, on the death of the duke of *Holstein Gottorp*, his *Danish* majesty formed two claims upon that family, which were, for some time adjusted by the mediation of the emperor, and the kings of *Great-Britain* and *Sweden*, *William III.* and *Charles XII.* whose sister the duke of *Holstein* had espoused. But in the last years of his life these disturbances broke out again, and things were on the point of coming to a rupture, when the king died in the month of *September* 1699.

His son and successor *Frederick IV.* acted precisely on his father's principles, and resolved to compel the dukes of *Holstein* to remain dependent on the kings of *Denmark* for the future;

future; in order to which, he over-ran that country; and undertook the siege of *Tonningen*, which gave occasion to the long war in the north at the beginning of the present century. The *English* and *Dutch*, as guarantees of the late peace, sent a powerful fleet into the *Baltic*, and the king of *Sweden*, at the same time, besieged *Copenhagen*, so that the *Danes* were obliged to conclude the famous treaty of *Travendahl*, on the 18th of *August*, 1700. It was stipulated in this treaty, that the house of *Holstein* should, for the future, enjoy the same rights with other sovereigns; that the duke should be at liberty to raise troops, and build forts in his own dominions, provided they were two miles distant from any fortress belonging to the *Danes*, and at least a mile from their frontiers. It was likewise agreed, that the crown of *Denmark* should pay the duke of *Holstein* 250,000 crowns, and that the chapter of *Lubeck* should be at liberty to elect a prince of *Holstein* for their bishop.

In 1712, the king of *Denmark* availing himself of the misfortunes of *Charles XII.* took the town of *Stade* and the duchy of *Bremen*; but the same year his army was beaten by the *Swedes*, who afterwards burnt the fine town of *Altena* to the ground. In 1714 and 1715, he had great success against the *Swedes* both by sea and land; and, in 1716, he drove them entirely out of the places they had conquered in *Norway*, and in conjunction with the *Prussians* reduced *Wisnar*; after which he did not push the war with the same vigour for many years, but chiefly because he saw that his success would be less advantageous to himself than to his allies. This made him the more inclinable to peace, which was concluded under the mediation of *George I.* king of *Great Britain*, in 1720. By this treaty, his *Danish* majesty obtained all that he could reasonably expect; and, which to him was a matter of great consequence, he procured the guarantee of the king of *France* for the possession of the duchy of *Sleswick*, and the king of *Great-Britain* renewed his, which had been given before.

His son, the late king *Christiern VI.* ascended the throne of his ancestors with universal reputation. He had, in his father's life-time, been very attentive to the concerns of the *East-India* company, and had been in a great measure the support of it; which induced the people to hope that a particular regard for trade would be the principal view of his reign; and so indeed it proved. At his very accession to the government he made many changes, but all of them such as gave great satisfaction to his subjects. In 1732, he acceded to the treaty between the courts of *Vienna* and *Petersburg.* by

which

which he obtained their guarantee for his own, and became himself guarantee for their dominions, and of the Pragmatic Sanction. In virtue of a separate article of this treaty, the king obliged himself to pay the duke of *Holstein* a million of rixdollars, provided he renounced his pretensions on the duchy of *Sleswic*. In fine, during the course of sixteen years that he reigned, he never fell into one false step against the interests of his crown, or to the prejudice of his subjects; so that, as no prince of his time was more beloved or better obeyed while living, hardly any at their death have been more sincerely or universally lamented.

His son *Frederick V.* the present possessor of the throne, succeeded to it *July 26, 1746*, in the 23d year of his age. He espoused about three years before, the princess *Louisa of Great Britain*, by whom he has an heir apparent, *Christian*, born *January 29, 1749*. His queen died, *December 19, 1751*. The king has steadily pursued his father's measures, maintaining peace, improving the trade, and encouraging the industry of his subjects. His application to business, joined to a constant and well-regulated oeconomy, has enabled him not only to live within the bounds of his revenue, but to make considerable savings. It is incredible to what a degree the face of affairs has been changed within the time of his own and his father's prudent administration. New ports have been opened, which has been owing to the opening new channels of trade; the shipping of the *Danish* has been more than doubled, and the revenues of the crown have increased in the same proportion within that small space. The court is splendid without profusion, the king rich without oppression, the ministers attentive to the duties of their respective stations, not only from the example of their master, but from the sense they have that a contrary behaviour would infallibly draw upon them immediate disgrace. Adored at home, and respected abroad, the king is only attentive to preserve and promote the happiness of his subjects, in which he places his own.

TOWARDS the close of the late war, *Denmark* was somewhat alarmed by the disputes with the house of *Holstein*, which might have had serious consequences, if the *Russian* emperor *Peter III.* had lived to execute his intentions; but his untimely death put an end to them for the present. In this critical situation, the king of *Denmark* acted with prudence and circumspection, and though he shewed he was well disposed to compromise matters upon moderate terms, he discovered, at the same time, by the armaments made, that

that he was in a condition, in case of being attacked, to defend himself.

THE *Danes* have been formerly esteemed a very warlike nation, and though from the misfortunes in their wars with the *Swedes*, their power is much diminished; yet the credit of the *Danish* troops is still very good. The forces the king keeps up are very well paid and disciplined, and are numerous enough to secure his dominions against any invasion, more especially as his fleet is in excellent order, and as the *Danish* seamen and the *Norwegians* are justly reputed the best in the north.

THE laws of this country have been deservedly in reputation, as lying within a very narrow compass, and the administration of justice is so well looked after, that suits in this country are but few, and those very speedily determined. The king makes and repeals laws as to him appears necessary for the good of his subjects; but the crown has always used its power with much moderation and discretion: so that as *Denmark* may be said to be the only legal absolute government in *Europe*, perhaps, in the world, the people have had less reason to regret the change made by themselves than could well have been expected; and if their monarchs copy after the example of their present king, the *Danes* will feel fewer evils from the want of liberty, than in other nations are produced by the abuse of it.

C H A P. XIII.

Of Great Britain and Ireland, the principal of the European Islands.

THE island of *Great Britain* lies in longitude (*Teneriff Situation*, being the meridian) between $9\frac{1}{2}$ and $17\frac{1}{2}$, and between 50 and 59 deg. of north latitude. The southern division of this island, or that part of it called *England*, is of *Great-Britain*, bounded by *Scotland* on the north; the *German-Sea*, which separates it from *Germany* and the *Netherlands*, on the east; by the *English* channel, which divides it from *France*, on the south; and by *St. George's* channel, which separates it from *Ireland* on the west. It is 360 miles from north to south, and 300 in breadth from east to west, in the widest part.

The northern division, called *Scotland*, is bounded on the south by the *Irish-Sea* and *England*; on the east by the *German-Ocean*; on the north by the *Deucalidian-Sea*; and on the west by the *Atlantic-Ocean*: It is about 215 Scots miles in length; and in breadth, in the widest part, about 140.

IRELAND, situated between longitude 5. 40. and 10. 37. *Situation* west from *London*, and between 51. 16. and 55. 20. of north *and extent* latitude, is an island separated from *England* and *Scotland* by *St. George's* channel on the east; the *Irish-Sea* on the north and north-east; the mouth of *St. George's* channel on the south; and the *Atlantic-Ocean* on the west: It is reckoned to be about 300 miles in length, and 150 in breadth, or to bear proportion to *England* and *Wales* as 18 to 30.

A GREAT number of smaller islands lie round *Great Bri-* *Other* *islands.* *tain*: some single, as the *Ile of Wight*, the *Ile of Man*, &c. others, as it were, in clusters, as the *Orkney-Isles*, and other little slips, that are scattered all along the coasts of *Scotland*.

THE three kingdoms have, on all sides, very convenient *Advanta-* *ges in situ-* *ation, &c.* *harbours*, and are accommodated with navigable rivers in abundance, which convey to them the riches of the sea and of foreign nations. The advantage of the sea surrounding them, as it is a security against enemies, so it is also against the violent colds to which the climate would otherwise be exposed; for the tides and constant motion of the sea send us in a kindly sort of vapour, which qualifies the natural sharpness of the air, even to such a degree, that, in some parts of *France* and *Italy*, they feel more of the winter than we do in *England*. The soil in *England* and *Ireland* doth, in a great measure, owe its fertility to the same cause; the vapours not

only mollifying the air, and by that means nourishing every vegetable, but they also furnish us with gentle showers in their proper seasons; inasmuch, that our ancestors believed these must needs be the *Fortunate-Islands*, so much talked of by the Antients; as having, of all others, the best claim to those natural blessings and delights, with which they made them abound. It cannot be well determined, whether it was more the courage and vigour of these westerly inhabitants, than any natural cause, which gave rise to the opinion, that, the further west we go, the constitutions of the people are more firm, and their courage greater.

Face of the country. THAT part of *Great Britain* which lies towards the *West-ern-Ocean* is mountainous, as *Cornwall*, *Wales*, and many large tracts of *Scotland*; but the inner parts are, generally, a plain champaign country, abounding with corn and pasture. The most remarkable mountain, as it may be called, is that con- sidered ridge which runs from south to north, dividing, as it were, the whole island into the east and west parts, and is by some writers called the *English Apennine*.

Original of the inhabitants. The inhabitants of the several parts are of a different original: those of *Cornwall* and *Wales* are, in a great measure, the posterity of the ancient *Britons*; who, upon the invasion, first of the *Picts*, and then of the *Saxons*, betook themselves to those mountainous corners and out-skirts; and have ever since preserved both their language, and many of their families, from any mixture of foreigners. Of late years, indeed, the *Cornish* are come over to the *English* language, modes, and ways of living; and the *Welch* are not less polite. The *Scots* are originally *Irish*, but not without a mixture of *Picts*; who, though they were subdued by the former, and fell under their government, could not yet be intirely cut off, any more than the conquered usually are in other kingdoms. *Strabo*, *Camden*, *Usher*, *Stillingfleet*, and many other historians, are very positive, that the west parts of *Scotland* were peopled from *Ireland*; and the *Irish*, which is their language, puts it beyond all dispute; but the exact time when this did happen is a point the learned still differ about; while the natives are fond of their own extraordinary antiquity, and their neighbours will not suffer them to run up their original too high. As for *England*, though the *Britons* were for many hundred years in full possession of it, and, after that, the *Romans* made a considerable figure among us, yet we cannot well imagine there is much of the blood of either nation among us at this day. The real *Britons*, indeed, may, with some reason, value themselves upon their descent from the *Romans*, with whom, in such a vast length of time, they could not but

but have frequent intermarriages, and so incorporate themselves, as it were, into one people. This they may insist upon with more reason, and less vanity, than some among them do, who are fond of deriving their origin from the *Trojans*, at first hand; but whoever considers how the foreign wars, under the late emperors, cleared this kingdom of the *Romans*, and how the prevailing power of the *Saxons* swept off the miserable *Britons*, will have but a mean opinion of our title to a descent from either. It is true, we have more of the *Roman* language to shew than the *Welsh* have; but we have had it at second hand only, from the *Normans*; whereas the remains these produce have been derived to them from age to age, ever since their mutual correspondence with the *Romans*; so that the *Saxons*, and likewise the *Danes*, who for many years over-ran the whole kingdom, and the *Normans* who conquered it, are the principal ingredients of the *English* nation at this day.

AND, as we are a compound of the northern nations, and of the *Norman*, with *French*, so we seem to retain something of the temper and humour of both, keeping a mean between the two: the *Frenchman* is brisk, gay, and airy; the *Hollander* and *German* unactive, heavy, and unwieldy; the *Englishman* has neither so much of the first qualities, as to carry him to levity, nor of the second, so as to make him fairly chargeable with dulness; his *reason* does not out-run his judgment, nor his judgment suppress his fancy: this difference is very remarkable in two parts, wit, war and learning; in war, what more notorious than the slowness of the *Germans*, the quickness of the *French*, and the firmness and bravery of the *English*? In learning, nothing is more apparent than the bulks of lectures, comments, and common-places, which the first have given us; the little whimsies, airy sallies, and pert essays, we have had from the second; and the solid argument, substantial matter, and true philosophy, from the last. The *French*, indeed, have done great honour to learning, under the protection of *Lewis XIV.* who established a more lasting name by his eminent patronage of it, than by the progress of his arms: they have also this advantage, that their language, being understood in most parts of *Europe*, conveys their learning as far as it reaches. Could but our *English* tongue be settled in as many parts of the world, or would our great men make themselves masters of the Latin tongue, and write in a language so universally known, our books would undoubtedly make their own way; they would carry instruction abroad, and bring reputation to our own kingdom.

Commercial concerns, and interests of BUT, in the main point of view we propose to consider our present matter in, when it is duly considered what quantity of shipping and water-craft of every kind are employed in our home coasting trade round our islands; and likewise the shipping employed to and from *Great Britain and Ireland*, to our colonies in *America*; and what quantity our colonies employ among themselves: when these points are well weighed, our seamen and tonnage of shipping would, perhaps, intitle us to the character of a maritime power, tho' we had no commerce with other nations. Yet, if we had

no commerce with other nations, and our neighbouring potentates had, and a commerce so wisely regulated, that they were constant gainers by it; and we only carried on a domestic trade within our own territories; should we not be at a kind of stand, with regard to wealth and power, while other nations were daily increasing both? Was this the state of things, would it be possible to maintain ourselves an independent people? Must we not always be at the mercy of our most potent neighbours, and become vassals to their will?

LET any man conversant with the world, pass but a transient reflection on the state of mankind throughout the globe, and he will find, that scarce any thing prevails, but a conspiracy of civil, ecclesiastical, and military power against the liberties and properties of the whole human species, except in the little spots called *Great Britain and Ireland*, and their dependent dominions. And was it not the advancement of the commerce of this nation in the days of our great queen *Elizabeth*, that first enabled us to oppose those chains of slavery which were so resolutely forged for us in *Spain*? And has not our trade and navigation, ever since, been the only means, whereby we could keep pace with our enemies in riches and power, in order to defend ourselves against tyranny and oppression, to which almost the whole world is liable? Can any man consider these indisputable facts, and hesitate a moment, whether our trade is not still the only means left us, whereby we can protect ourselves from that bondage wherein other states are involved? Now, as this converse with the world is the honest way to strengthen and enrich a nation, and the great discourager of idleness and debauchery; and as we are situated by nature, and have genius proper for its cultivation, ought we not to make it our study to manage it to its highest capacity of advancement? which if we would in earnest pursue, war itself would be such an advantage and security to us, that we should not only be out of danger from our enemies, but command the trade of the world; and, on the contrary, if that be neglected, all the

the miseries, attendants on slavery and poverty, that shall happen to the nation, may be ascribed to our own improvidence and inactivity.

WE see every day, that the convenient situation of any estate gives an estimate, and raises its purchase; and, without convenience, life itself would be but a mere spiration, scarce worth the valuing: *Great Britain* and *Ireland* then, most certainly deserve to be valued and preferred to all nations on the earth, having both to so great advantage.

THEY are islands placed as a center to the circular globe, towards which, trade may draw a line from the whole circumference; they are blessed with a moderation of every element: no torrid zone scorches, nor frigid zone benumbs their natives, but a medium influence strengthens and beautifies their inhabitants, who are of regular shapes; neither an unwieldy nor pygmy breed; but fit to endure the toils of war, or peaceful labours on the land: our climate is temperate, that the sun neither exhales, nor the cold phlegmatizes the spirituous parts, but allows a temperature between both; so that our native imaginations are neither too airy for consideration, nor too dull for invention: the soil is highly prolific, and where barrenness appears on the surface, the bowels are enriched with valuable mines. No *Alpine* mountains, nor *Holland* bogs, but a delightful variety of hills and dales compass the land; so that even the parching sun burns up and chops the higher hills, the humble meadows thrive with verdure; and wide mighty flows drown the vales, the hills grow fruitful by watering our lands, when tilled, produce a grateful plenty in return to labour; our trees in general are lofty and well topped, and afford us all the conveniencies we can expect; our kingly oak so firmly fits our ships, that our royal navy will ever prove an invincible bulwark against any daring foe; our fruits are pleasant and useful; our cattle large, healthy, strong and numerous, and as good as the world produces for labour or for food; their skins are firm and of such contracted pores, that better leather is no where to be met with. Our wool is very good, and, if duly attended to, would equal the boasted *Segovia*; it is the parent of our chief manufactures, and gives us a plaudit in our cloth throughout the universe. We have fowl in plenty, and that plenty good. In the bosom of our native earth are hid riches, which are easily obtained by the artist and laborious, as tin, lead, copper, iron, coals, &c. Our land is plentifully veined with rivers, refreshing the earth, and affording variety and plenty of fish. In short, the nation is a verdant field, indented with harbours around it,

where our ships, from their natural situation, may ride out the tempestuous storm.

THE sea, by Providence, is a wall which surrounds us, to defend us from the Pharaoh that would enslave us; it is champion and servant too; for by our ships furrowing its waves, we send plenty out, and bring the riches of the most distant parts of the world into our possession. It is wonderful to think, how several sorts of fish, in numbers innumerable, at certain seasons, visit our coast by divine appointment and natural instinct, for our sustenance; and day by day are ready, not only to furnish us with food, but also to be made merchandize of, to the enriching of the nation.

It is very observable, how heaven blesses us by the course of the wind, that commonly blows westerly for above half of the year, which makes all our cape lands and bays, opposite to the *French* and *Dutch* coasts, good roads for our ships to ride with security; for we are on the weather, and the *French* on the lee-shore: besides, our anchor-hold is much better than either the *French* or *Dutch*; for we have generally a stiff clay, or hard gravel, whilst the *French* have only hard rocks or loose sands; and the *Flemings* and *Hollanders* a greater number of sands on their coast, their water of less depth, and consequently their ports choaked up with quick-sands. When our ships ride safe, even between our sands, by our country's being a weather shore.

THUS, in epitome, we see what a rich heiress, with an immense fortune, we enjoy: the gift of the great Father of the universe; but we should consider, when this portion was given, gratitude and duty were expected, that it might descend as a jointure to our posterity.

LINENS are the staple manufactures of *Scotland* and *Ireland*; and the encouragement of the linens and fisheries of the former, and the linens of the latter, can in no respect be injurious to *England*; but it is highly to the disadvantage of *England* to support either the *French*, the *German*, or the *Dutch* linens; because the balance is highly against her with the two former, and so likewise with *Holland*. Why does *Ireland* carry on the clandestine trade of wool with *France*, but because they have more than they can manufacture for themselves, or send in wool, or woollen yarn, to *England*? It is true, *England* encourages the importation of *Irish* wool, and woollen yarn; and this importation proving so beneficial, must convey an idea, how highly injurious the clandestine exportation of wool to *France* must prove to these kingdoms, as *France* not only supplies herself with woollen manufactures, but has interfered therein with us in foreign nations. None would

would imagine, we apprehend, that to suppose the *French* import, in time of peace, at least, double the quantity of *Irish* wool the *English* do, in any shape, is beyond the bounds of truth and probability: it is rather to be feared, that this will be thought a supposition far below the mark; yet, if *France* gains as much by it as *England*, we find it will not be less than two millions *per annum*. Should it be said, that *France*, obtaining the *Irish* wool clandestinely, makes it come dearer to them than it does to the *English* legally; and that therefore, the gain of *France*, by the manufacture of *Irish* wool, cannot be so great as it is to the *English*: to this it may be answered, that the greater quantity the *French* import, together with the benefits of exportation after dyeing, may be presumed to compensate more than the occasional disadvantage in point of price.

WITHIN now about thirty years, the possibility of *Irish* linens arriving at their present perfection, was looked upon as chimerical, and was treated as such, in the capital contest about taking off the drawback, upon the re-exportation of foreign linens: but fact and experience have demonstrated, that some worthy gentlemen were mistaken in their foresight. Nor are the linen manufactures the only point wherein those people, as well as the *Irish*, have wonderfully improved within these twenty years, but the *Irish* have really made considerable improvements in many other essential particulars, as in the raising of horses, cows, and turnips; in marling, gravelling, and liming land; in draining of bogs; in making butter and cheese; in spinning baize yarn; in rearing calves, and in working mines. Wherefore, from the extraordinary spirit of industry and zeal for the advancement of commerce in that country, we may hope to see their *Irish* equal those of any foreign country whatsoever. The wonderful improvements also, that have been made in *Scotland*, are no way inferior; and we have reason to expect, that the fisheries likewise will there increase, to the entire satisfaction of the united kingdoms.

THE *French* are the greatest rivals in our manufactures; but let care be taken to prevent their being supplied with wool from *England* and *Ireland*, and we shall soon see an alteration therein. It is true, they have wool of their own; but they cannot work it, so as to injure us at foreign markets, without ours or *Irish*. As this will be laying the axe to the root of the *French* commerce, does it not become the wisdom of the nation to think seriously of what so nearly and importantly concerns us?

The Conclusion of

EXPERIENCE has sufficiently convinced us, that war is not the way to put it out of the power of *France* to hurt us. Were we to exert the *British* bravery at the expence of an hundred millions more than we have done, it is certain, that under such incumbrances, we should grievously waste ourselves; but it is much to be doubted, whether we should gain any permanent advantage over *France*. For the art of war is now become a science, and indeed, a trading one; and *France* is often obliged to give their military people diversion abroad, lest they should be troublesome at home. War, therefore, every ten or twenty years seems to be necessary to that nation; but is not so to us, unless defensively. When the sword is drawn, besides those who immediately engage, do we not see other potentates, from various views and instigations, drawn in on either side; and what was at first a contest only between two, comes at last to involve twenty? Wherefore let us deal with *France*, and indeed, with all other nations, by the peaceable arm of commerce; let us beat them by our superior industry in the acquisition of such useful arts as will not only enrich our own people, but invite all hither who are oppressed in other countries; for plenty of people and of useful arts yield beneficial employment, and will give us such power, that no nation, nor any confederacy, will dare to insult us.

It is the maintaining the *British* empire in this situation, that ought to be the constant point of view to our statesmen and patriots, as of old among the *Greeks* and *Romans*. Our constitution, like theirs, is of a mixed nature; but one may without partiality or vanity affirm, that it is more happily compounded; so that majesty and liberty trespass not upon each other; the prerogative of the prince being without restraint, where it may be exerted for his subjects good, and the paramount prerogative being this, that the crown can do no hurt. It is most evident therefore, that at this day our princes can have no temptation to enterprize wars of conquest, as in former times; so that a true spirit of patriotism can never be shewn in opposing projects that will never be set on foot; and in this lies our great happiness, that, having no views or pretensions upon our neighbours, there is no solid, indeed, nor so much as a plausible ground for us to hate them, or they us. This is the true fundamental principle of our policy, that, in respect to the affairs of the continent, we are not to be governed by any of those temporary or accidental conveniencies, which very often, and that justly too, pass for reasons of state in other kingdoms; but by this single

gle rule of their acting in conformity to our natural interests, so far as is consistent with their own.

THERE is a distinction often made, chiefly by foreigners, between the interests and the commerce of *Great Britain*; but, in reality, this is a distinction without a difference; for the interest and commerce of the *British* empire are so inseparably united, that they may be very well considered as one and the same. For commerce is that tie, by which the several, and even the most distant parts of the empire, are connected and kept together, so as to be rendered parts of the same whole, and to receive not only countenance and protection, but warmth and nourishment from the vital parts of our government, of which, if we may be indulged so figurative an expression, our monarchy is the head, and our liberty the soul. Whatever therefore assists, promotes, and extends our commerce, is consistent with our interest; and whatever weakens, impairs, or circumscribes it, is repugnant thereto. We may easily, considering things in this light, (and if we consider them in any other, we shall deceive ourselves) derive from thence a true notion of the interest of *Great Britain*, and be able to judge when that interest is really pursued, and when it is either neglected or abandoned.

WE have omitted giving here any history of *Great Britain* and *Ireland*, and of their form of government, supposing them sufficiently known in our numerous histories, &c. already extant, and constantly publishing.

C H A P. XV.

Of the other European Islands.

WE shall begin with those in the *Atlantic Ocean*, and the first that occur, are, *Other islands of the Atlantic Ocean.*
 THE *Azores*, denominated also the *Terceras*, and *Western* Islands. They are situate between 25 and 32 degrees of west longitude, and between 37 and 40 north latitude, 900 miles west of *Portugal*, and as many east of *Newfoundland*, lying almost in the midway between *Europe* and *America*. They are subject to *Portugal*. *St. Michael's*, the most easterly island, is the largest of the *Azores*, being near an hundred miles in circumference; a mountainous but fruitful country, abounding in corn, fruit, cattle, fish, and fowl. This island was twice invaded and plundered by the *English*, who got a considerable booty in the reign of queen *Elizabeth*. *Terra* is esteemed the chief island on account of its having

The Conclusion of

the best harbour, and a good town, where the governor of these islands resides, as well as the bishop. This too is a mountainous country, but has a great deal of good arable and pasture grounds, and an excellent breed of cattle. Here the *Portuguese* fleet constantly put in, when they are homeward bound from *Brazil*, *Africa*, or the *East-Indies*.

THE *Faro-Islands* lie between *Iceland* and *Scotland*, and are subject to *Denmark*. They are very small and produce no corn. The inhabitants subsist chiefly on fish and wild fowl. There are also a great many small islands on the coast of *Norway*, the chief of which are *Malstrom* and *Histeren*.

ICELAND is situate between 10 and 20 degrees of west longitude, and 63 and 67 degrees of north latitude. The chief town is *Skalholt*, where the *Danish* governor resides. It is a poor barren country, and yields the sovereign little profit. The most remarkable thing in it is the volcano of mount *Heckla*. Corn will scarce grow in any part of this island, the inhabitants feed on the flesh of bears, wolves, and foxes, and make bread of dried fish ground to powder. Few trees grow here, but juniper-shrubs, birch, and willow. Their fish, with roots and herbs, are their greatest dainties.

EAST-GREENLAND is situate between 10 and 30 deg. of east longitude, and 76 and 80 deg. of north latitude. It is claimed by *Denmark*, but uninhabited. The chief whale-fishery is on the coast, which the *Dutch* have in a great measure engrossed to themselves. Whether *East-Greenland* be a continent or island, is uncertain; some imagine it to be contiguous to *West-Greenland*, but no man ever made the experiment.

WEST-GREENLAND is situate between the meridian of *London* and 50 deg. west longitude, and between 60 and 75 deg. north latitude. It is inhabited by a barbarous people, among whom the *Danes* have sent some missionaries to convert them to Christianity; but there are no towns in the country, nor any product that will tempt strangers to traffic with them. The fishery on the coast seems to be all that is worth contending for; and this the *Dutch* make very free with, notwithstanding the representations and menaces of the *Danes* upon that head. *West* and *East-Greenland* produce scarce any trees or herbage.

*Islands of
the Baltic-
Sea.*

The chief islands of the *Baltic-Sea*, are, 1. Those belonging to *Denmark*, of which *Zealand*, the chief and the seat of the government, is a barren soil: no wheat will grow here, and there is but little good pasture; great part of it is a forest, and reserved for the king's game. *Fyn*, the next largest island, has barely corn sufficient for the inhabitants. The island of *Laland* is a fruitful soil, and supplies *Copenhagen* with

with wheat. The islands of *Langland*, *Alster*, and *Mona*, are indifferently fruitful. 2. *Gothland*, *Åland*, and *Rügen*, are subject to *Sweden*. The last is part of *Swedish Pomerania*, separated from the continent by a narrow channel, not three miles over. The island is thirty miles long, and near as many broad, and is a plentiful country, abounding in corn and cattle; the chief town *Bergen*, which has no wall, any more than the other towns, and consists of about 400 houses. 3. *Usedom* and *Wollin*, subject to *Prussia*, which by being possessed of them, commands the navigation of the *Oder*. The passage between these two islands is called the *Swin*. 4. *Osel* and *Dagö*, subject to *Russia*. They both lie opposite *Livonia*.

The islands of the *Mediterranean* sea are,

Islands of the Medi-

1. *IVICA*, situate fifty miles east of *Valencia* in *Spain*, and as many south-west of *Majorca*. It is about thirty miles long, and twenty-four broad, a mountainous country, the chief produce salt, of which they export large quantities. It is subject to *Spain*, with

2. *MAJORCA*, which is situate about eighty miles south of the coast of *Catalonia*, and 100 miles east of *Valencia*. It is about sixty miles long, and forty-five broad. The country is mountainous, but produces corn, wine, oil, and fruit, and has several good harbours. This was the chief of those islands called by the ancients, *Boleares*, famous for their figs.

3. *MINORCA*, situate almost 100 miles south of the coast of *Catalonia* in *Spain*, and about twenty miles east of the island of *Majorca*, is thirty miles long, and twelve broad, incumbered with barren hills, and only valuable for its secure and capacious harbour of *Port Mahon*, where the largest fleets may ride safe from tempests, or enemies, the entrance being defended by platforms of guns, and fort strongly fortified. The *English* made a conquest of it in the year 1708, which was confirmed to them by the peace of *Utrecht*, in 1713; and the harbour has since been of infinite service to the *English*, as here they repair their ships, and here the merchant ships lie in safety till they can meet with convoys. In April 1756, this island was invaded by 13,000 *French* under the duke de *Richelieu*, who became masters of the whole by the surrender of *St. Philip's* castle, June 29 following, after a siege of two months, having been bravely defended by the late lord *Blakeney*, the lieutenant-governor: *Minorca* has since been restored to the *English* by the late definitive treaty of peace.

4. *CORSICA*, situate 100 miles south of *Genoa*, sixty south-west of *Leghorn* in *Tuscany*, and separated from *Sardinia* by the narrow strait of *Bonifacio*. It is 110 miles in length, and fifty in breadth. The face of the country is moun-

mountainous, rocky, and covered with wood. The air is pretty good, but the soil barren; however, it produces corn, and wine enough for the natives, but has very little to traffic with. It was taken from the *Saracens* by the *Genoese* and *Pisans*, who divided it between them for some time; but at length the *Genoese* expelled the *Pisans*, and their viceroy is governor of the island. The doge of *Genoa* is crowned at his accession as king of *Corfica*. The natives have for many years been in arms against their sovereigns, the republic of *Genoa*, for which they assign the tyranny of that government, while the *Genoese* charge them with being a seditious factious people. They were not long since reduced very low by the emperor of *Germany*, and afterwards by the *French*, who sent some forces to the assistance of the *Genoese*; but of late they have recovered under the spirited conduct of their general *Paoli*, and almost driven the *Genoese* out of the island.

5. *SARDINIA*, situate about 150 miles west of *Leghorn* in *Tuscany*, and 120 miles north-west of *Sicily*, is 140 miles in length from north to south, and sixty miles in breadth from east to west. It is very diversified with hills and vallies; the mountains in the north are very high. The climate is warm, and the air not reckoned healthful. The soil is very fertile, where it is manured, producing corn, wine, and oil, in great plenty; but the people are so indolent, that little improvement is made by tillage. The *Phenicians* and *Greeks* first sent colonies to this island, and erected several small states, as they had done in the south of *Italy* and *Sicily*. The *Carthaginians* succeeded them, and had almost the dominion of the whole island. The *Romans* dispossessed the *Carthaginians*. The *Saracens* invaded it in the eighth century, as they did *Naples* and *Sicily*. The republics of *Genoa* and *Pisa* recovered part of the island from them. Pope *Boniface* took upon him to transfer the island to the king of *Aragon*, who subdued the *Genoese*, *Pisans*, and the rest of the inhabitants, and annexed it to his own dominions; and it remained united to the crown of *Spain* till the allies made a conquest of it in 1708, and it was allotted to the emperor at the peace of *Utrecht* in 1713. The *Spaniards* recovered it in 1717, but were obliged to abandon it two years after, when it was conferred on the duke of *Savoy*, in lieu of the kingdom of *Sicily*, in 1719; and his son, the present king of *Sardinia*, is now sovereign of this island, the revenues of which scarcely exceed the charges of the government.

6. *SICILY*, divided from *Italy* by the narrow strait of *Messina*, which is not seven miles over. This island is 170 miles in length, and 100 in breadth. It lies in a warm cli-

climate, but the air is healthful, being refreshed by sea breezes on every side. Both hills and vallies are exceeding fruitful, no country producing more corn, wine, oil, and silk, in proportion to its dimensions; from whence old *Rome* was principally supplied with provisions when it abounded with people. The silk, raw or manufactured, with the other produce of the island, are exported in large quantities from *Messina*, where a consul from almost every nation in *Europe* resides, to manage and protect the trade of his nation; and of late years the *Sicilians* have traded with *Turky*, and the coast of *Barbary*, which they never did before their late king don *Carlos* ascended the throne. The most noted of the mountains in this island is that of *Etna*, now called *Gibello*, a terrible vulcano, situate in the province of *Val Demona*. This mountain is sixty miles in circumference, and at the top there is a basin of burning sulphur six miles round, from whence sometimes issue rivers of melted minerals that run down into the sea. The hill is so high, that round the basin there is a circle of snow great part of the year. Before any great eruption there is generally an earthquake. The port town of *Catania* was overturned by an earthquake in 1693, and 18,000 people perished by it. *Syracuse*, once the greatest city of the island, has been so often demolished by earthquakes, that very little of it remains at present. There are eight small islands, which lie near the north coast of *Sicily*, to which the inhabitants gave the name of *Aeolia* and *Vulcania*, feigned by the poets to be the seats of *Aeolus* and *Vulcan*, the chief of which is *Lipari*, from whence they are usually called the *Lipari Islands*. Two of them are vulcanoes, as *Strombolo* and *Hiera*. The small islands of *Levanzo*, *Maritima*, and *Favagnana*, lie at the west end of the island. *Sicily* was also called *Trinacria*, from its triangular form. The *Greeks* and *Carthaginians* divided it between them, but were both subdued or expelled by the *Romans*, who reduced it into the form of a province. It followed the fortune of *Italy* in its several revolutions, until the *Sicilian vespers* in 1282, when the natives massacred their *French* masters, who had then the dominion of it. The *French* were succeeded by the *Spaniards* until the year 1707, when they were driven from thence by the *Imperialists*; and at the peace of *Utrecht* this island was allotted to the duke of *Savoy*, with the title of king. The *Spaniards* invaded it in 1718, but were forced to abandon it again; and then it was conferred on the late emperor *Charles VI.* who held it till the year 1735, when the *Imperialists* were driven out of this island, and of all their *Italian* dominions; and don *Carlos*, the king of *Spain's* eldest son, by the princess of *Parma* his second queen, was advanced

The Conclusion of

to the throne of *Naples* and *Sicily*, which were confirmed to him by the subsequent peace, on condition of his relinquishing *Milan*, *Parma*, and all the rest of the emperor's *Italian* dominions, which the *Spaniards* and *French* had taken from him in that war.

7. *MALTA*, formerly *Melita*, situate in 15 degrees east longitude, and 35 degrees, 15 minutes north latitude, 60 miles south of *Cape Passaro* in *Sicily*, is of an oval figure, twenty miles long, and twelve broad. The air is clear and healthful, but excessive hot, when not cooled by the sea-breezes. The island is all a white soft rock, covered with a foot of good vegetable earth, producing great quantities of cotton, indigo, oranges, lemons, olives, figs, and other fruits, with great plenty of pulse and other garden-stuff; but very little corn or wine, with which the inhabitants are supplied chiefly from *Sicily*; nor have they any wood except fruit trees, on the island. The town of *Malta* or *Valetta*, is magnificently built, strongly fortified, and has an excellent harbour. *Charles V.* emperor of *Germany* and king of *Spain*, gave it to the knights of *St. John* of *Jerusalem* in 1530, whose predecessors distinguished themselves in the defence of the *Holy Land*, and the protection of the pilgrims who resorted thither. When the Christians were driven out of the *Holy Land* by the *Saracens*, these knights retired to *Cyprus*. They afterwards took the island of *Rhodes* from the Infidels, and defended it against all their power for 200 years; and then, surrendering it upon honourable terms, retired to *Malta*; and when *Solyman*, the *Turkish* emperor, invaded *Malta*, they obliged him to abandon the island, after he had lost 20,000 men before their walls. These knights consist of several Roman Catholic nations, and are all of ancient, noble families. The grand crosses, as they are called, are the heads of each nation, and are styled grand priors. Each of them has his convent of knights, and they have estates, or commanderies in the respective nations to which they belong. These priors elect a grand master, who is the chief commander in the island. They have a squadron of men of war, and land forces, and are engaged in a perpetual war against the *Turks*, *Algerines*, and other *Mahammedan* powers. The Knights make vows of celibacy and chastity; notwithstanding which, every man keeps as many concubines as he pleases, who are, for the most part *Grecian* beauties, which they take in the islands of the *Archipelago*, subject to *Turky*.

THERE are several other small islands on the coasts of *Italy*, particularly near *Naples* and *Tuscany*, the chief of which are, *Capri*, *Ischia*, *Procida*, *Ponza*, *Giglio*, *Elba*, *Pianosa*, *Capraria*,

praria, Gorgona, and Maloria. Of these *Capri* is much taken notice of for its noble ruins. It is situated at the entrance of the gulph of *Naples*, about three miles from the continent, being about four miles long, and one broad. This was the residence of the emperor *Augustus* for some time, and afterwards of *Tiberius* for many years. The most considerable ruin stands at the extremity of the eastern promontory, where there are still several apartments left, very lofty, and arched at the top. Some years ago, there was discovered a paved road, running under ground from the top of the mountain to the sea-side. What recommended this island, *Tiberius* was, the temperate healthful air, being warm in winter and cool in summer, and its inaccessible coast, which is so very steep, that a small number of men may defend it against an army. And here it is conjectured that emperor had different residences, according to the different seasons of the year. The whole island was cut out into easy ascents, adorned with palaces, and planted with as great a variety of groves and gardens as the ground would admit: and the works under-ground were more extraordinary than those on the surface; for the rocks were all under-mined with high-ways, grottoes, galleries, bagnios, and subterraneous retirements, which suited the brutal pleasures of that emperor, and were afterwards demolished by the *Romans*, in detestation of the unnatural and lascivious scenes which had been acted there. The rest of the islands on this coast do not merit a particular description; neither do the islands in the *Adriatic* and *Ionian* sea, four of which, *as Licsina, Corfu, Cephalonia, and Zant*, are subject to *Venice*; but *Leucudia* belongs to the *Turks*.

The principal islands of the *Archipelago*, or the *Egean* and *Levant* seas, are,

1. *NEGROPONT*, the ancient *Eubœa*, stretching from the south-east to the north-west, along the eastern coast of *Achaia* or *Livadia*, from which it is separated by a narrow channel, called the *Euripus*. The island is ninety miles long, and twenty-five broad in the widest part. Before the chief town of the same name, there usually lies a fleet of *Turkish* galleys, and the captain-bassa, or admiral of the *Turkish* fleet, is viceroy of this island, and the adjacent continent of *Greece*. The island abounds in corn, wine, and fruit; but what is most taken notice of, is the uncommon tides in the *Euripus*, or sea between the island and the continent. These are sometimes regular, and at others irregular; according to the age of the moon; from the three last days of the old moon to the 8th of the new, they are regular; on the 9th day they begin to be irregular, and flow

*Islands of
the Archi-
pelago.*

The Conclusion of

twelve, thirteen, or fourteen times in twenty-four hours, and ebb as often.

2. **LEMNOS**, or *Stalimene*, is situate on the north part of the *Archipelago*, of a square form, twenty-five miles in length of each side, about seventy miles south of *Mount Athos*, on the continent of *Greece*. It produces plenty of corn and wine, but its principal riches arise from a mineral earth, called *terra lemnia* and *figillata*, from a seal the *Turks* put upon every parcel that is sold to foreigners: it is said to have great virtues in healing wounds, expelling poison, stopping fluxes, &c.

3. **CIO**, or *Chios*, lies near the west coast of *Ionia* in the *Lesser Asia*, about eighty miles west of *Smyrna*, and is about 100 miles in circumference. It is a rocky mountainous country, not a river or spring in it, and no corn but what is brought from *Candia*, or the continent of *Asia*. They have wine in great plenty, which is reckoned the best in *Greece*, with oil and silk; and they have manufactures of silk, velvet, gold, and silver stuffs. Their most profitable plant is the lentisk-tree, from which the gum called *mastic* issues, the profit whereof the government in a manner monopolizes, obliging the natives to sell it to their agents at what price they please to set upon it. This island is populous, the inhabitants consisting of *Turks*, *Latins*, and *Greeks*, being computed at near 420,000. The *Greeks* are the most numerous. Their women are reckoned the greatest wits, as well as beauties, in this part of the world.

4. **SAMOS**, is situate near the coast of the *Lesser Asia*, almost opposite to *Ephesus*, scarce seven miles from the continent, being about thirty miles long, and fifteen broad. A chain of mountains runs through the middle of the island, being of white marble, but covered with a staple of good earth, producing wine, oil, pomegranates, silk, fruit-trees, and other plants. The muscadine wine is much admired; there is also fine wool which the *French* purchase. Here are great remains of antiquity, particularly of the ancient city of *Samos*, and of *Juno's* temple, patroness of the island. *Tournefort* says, there is nothing in the *Levant* to compare to them; abundance of marble pillars, which once supported temples or portico's, lie neglected by the *Turks*.

5. **PATMOS**, lies north of *Samos*, and is about twenty miles round. It is one of the barrenest islands in the *Archipelago*, full of rocks and stony mountains, without trees or herbage, and not a river or spring in the island which is not dry in summer; but the haven of *Scala* is one of the most commodious ports in the *Mediterranean*: the convent of *St. John* is situated three miles south of *Scala*; the building called the hermitage of the apocalypse, depending on the convent,

convent, has a very mean appearance; the chapel is about eight paces long and five broad; on the right of it is St. John's grotto, the entrance of which is seven feet high, with a square pillar in the middle; in the roof they shew a crack in the rock through which, according to their tradition, the Holy Ghost dictated the revelation, which St. John wrote in his banishment, which happened in the reign of *Damitian*, A. D. 95.

6. *RHODES* is situate twenty miles south-west of the continent of the *Lesser Austria*, and is about fifty miles long, and twenty-five broad. It abounds in good wine, fruit, and all manner of provision but corn, which is imported from the neighbouring continent. At the mouth of the harbour of *Rhodes*, which is fifty fathom wide, stood the colossus of brass, esteemed one of the wonders of the world, one foot being placed on one side of the harbour, and the other foot on the other side, so that ships passed between its legs: the face of the colossus represented the sun, to whom this image was dedicated; the height of it was seventy cubits (about 135 feet) and it held in one hand a light-house for the direction of mariners. The *Rhodian* were once the most considerable naval power in the *Mediterranean*, and instituted laws for the regulation of navigation and commerce, called the *Rhodian laws*, by which maritime causes were decided in all the provinces of the *Roman empire*. The knights of St. John of *Jerusalem* being obliged to retire from *Palestine*, invaded this island, and took it from the *Turks* about the year 1308, and defended it against all the power of that empire till the year 1522.

7. *CANDIA*, the ancient *Crota*, about 200 miles long, and sixty broad, is almost equally distant from *Europe*, *Asia*, and *Africa*. There are no considerable rivers in the island; *Lethe* is one of the largest streams. *Mount Ida* covers the middle of the island, and is for the most part a barren rock, scarce any tree or herbage upon it; but the vallies are full of vine-yards, olive-yards, myrtles, laurels, oranges, and lemons, intermixed with other fruits, and fine corn-fields: their wines, both white and red, are exquisitely good. The city of *Candia* or *Mutium*, the capital, is situate on a bay of the sea about the middle of the north side of the island, and was once a good harbour, but is at present choked up. The siege of this city is famous in history: the *Turks* invested it in the beginning of the year 1645, and the garrison having held out till the latter end of *September* 1669, surrendered at last upon honourable terms, after they had been stormed fifty-six times. The *Venetians* lost upwards of 80,000 men, and the *Turks* above 180,000, during the siege.

8. *CY-*

The Conclusion of

8. *Cyprus* lies opposite the coast of *Syria* and *Palæstina*, from which it is not above thirty miles distant. It is about 250 miles long, and 70 broad, and is supposed to have obtained the name of *Cyprus*, from the great number of cypresses that grow in it. The air is hot, dry, and not very healthful. The soil produces corn, wine, oil, cotton, salt, wool, and some silk. The traffic of the inhabitants is very considerable, and consuls from almost every *European* nation reside here. The chief town is *Nicosia*, the seat of the *Turkish* viceroys, and formerly the residence of kings. The chief mountain bears the name of *Olympus*, of which name there are several more in *Turkey*. Here are no springs or rivers but such as are produced by the annual rains. This island, anciently dedicated to *Venus*, has been under the dominion of the *Egyptians*, *Phœnicians*, *Persians*, *Greeks*, *Romans*, *Saracens*, *Venetians*, and *Turks*. *Richard I.* king of *England*, meeting with an unhospitable reception here, subdued the island, and transferred his right of it to *Guy Lusignan*, titular king of *Jerusalem*, whose descendants transferred it to the state of *Venice*, from whom the *Turks* took it in the year 1570, and have ever since remained in possession of it. While it was in the hands of the Christians it was well peopled; having 800 or 1000 villages; but it is so thinly inhabited at present, that half the lands lie uncultivated. The present inhabitants are *Turks*, *Jews*, *Greeks*, *Armenians*, and a few *Latin* Christians; but the *Greeks* are much the most numerous.

BESIDES these islands, several others were formerly of some note, as *Tenados*, *Skyros* or *Scirio*, *Lesbos* or *Mytelene*, *Delos* in the center of the *Cyclades*, which are about fifty in number, *Paros* and *Cytha*. *Santorini*, which is one of the southernmost islands in the *Archipelago*, of about thirty-five miles in circumference, is a kind of pumice-stone rock, covered over with about a foot of earth, raised out of the sea by a volcano, as were two or three other small islands near it: *Santorini* first appeared in the year 1707. The volcano, which formed this island, was preceded, in the adjacent islands, by violent convulsions of the earth, followed by a thick smoke which arose out of the sea in the day-time, and flames of fire in the night, accompanied with a dreadful roaring noise under ground, like thunder or the firing of great guns.

